

12 1/2 cm



ՀԱՅԱՍՏԱՆԻ  
ՆԱԽԱՐԱՐԱԿԱՆ



christoph Gottlieb von Murr über den  
wahren Ursprung der Rosenkreuzer, und  
des Freymaurerordens nebst einem Anhang  
zur Geschichte der Tempelherren. Sulzbach  
chez Jean Isaac Seidel. 1803 in 8° de 160 pag.

Christophe Théophile de Murr prétend, dans cette  
dissertation sur la véritable origine des frères de  
la Rose-Croix, et de l'ordre des francs-Maçons  
que la Confrérie des Rose-Croix se forma des  
partisans de Boehm qui publia sous le titre de  
l'acrore un livre rempli de rêveries et d'extravagances  
sur l'alchimie et l'apocalypse. Cet ouvrage fut traduit  
en Anglais et en hollandais. A peu près vers ce  
tems qu'il se forma une société de Bohemistes sous  
le nom de frères rose-croix; l'origine est  
incertaine. La confrérie de Rose croix en Anglet  
quitta le mot de Rose croix pour celui de Sophi,  
Sapienter. C'est du sein de cette société que naquit  
en Angl en 1693 l'ordre des francs-maçons qui eut  
pour but de propager la philanthropie et la liberté  
des cultes. M de Murr ajoute que Cromwell  
fut leur principal protecteur, et en quelque sorte  
leur chef.

AN  
Historical and Critical Account



OF THE  
L I F E  
O F

OLIVER CROMWELL,

Lord Protector of the Commonwealth of  
ENGLAND, SCOTLAND and IRELAND.

After the Manner of Mr. BAYLE.

Drawn from Original Writers and State Papers.

To which is added,

An APPENDIX of Original Papers,  
Now first published.

By WILLIAM HARRIS.

Ne quid falsi dicere audeat, ne quid veri non audeat.

CICERO.

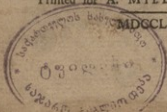
---

---

L O N D O N :

Printed for A. MILLAR in the Strand.

MDGCLXII.



Printed by J. G. ... 1797

T H E

REVISED  
EDITION

CONTENTS

CONTENTS

OF THE

REVISED EDITION

OF THE

WORKS

OF

JOHN MILTON

BY

THE REV. JOHN MILTON

OF

ST. JOHN'S COLLEGE, CAMBRIDGE

IN TWO VOLUMES

LONDON

Printed by J. G. ... 1797



## CONTENTS.

**C**ROMWELL's birth and parentage. Allied to the best families. Trade no disgrace to a gentleman, p. 1—3. Of the learning of Cromwell, p. 4. Vicious in youth, p. 5. Marries p. 6. Character of Mrs. Cromwell, p. 6—8. Reports concerning the poverty of Cromwell, p. 9. Reflections on them, p. 10. Of the Religion of Cromwell, p. 11. An original letter of his to Mr. Storie, p. 12. Of his enthusiasm, p. 13—23. Cromwell courteous and affable, and inclined to buffoonery, p. 24. Though on necessary occasions he kept state to the full, p. 27. Of his want of eloquence, p. 34. Mr. Hume censured, p. 35. Cromwell's speech to the Swedish ambassador commended, p. 36. Cromwell no bigot, p. 37. Mischief of bigotry, *ibid.* Cromwell the great Patron of religious liberty, p. 38—45. Falls in with the Puritans, p. 45. Short state of the case between them and the Prelatists, p. 46.

Character of Court-Prelates in the times of James and Charles I. p. 47. Of the severe measures taken in the times of the latter of these Princes, p. 50. Cromwell with others prepare to leave the kingdom, p. 55. Are stop'd by a proclamation, *ibid.* Reflections thereon, p. 56. Of Cromwell's opposition to the draining the Fens, p. 56. Of the parliament in 1641, p. 59. Justly celebrated for their noble deeds, p. 62—65. High characters of it by Mr. Sidney and Mr. Trenchard, p. 69. Account of the remonstrance of the state of the kingdom, p. 70—76. The Parliament puts itself in a state of defence—Is adhered to by Cromwell, who raises a troop of horse, and disciplines them in a most extraordinary manner. Praise of Cromwell's army by Lord Clarendon, p. 76—85. Of Cromwell's first actions in the War, p. 85. Lord Holle's charge of cowardice against him recited, p. 87. Hated and envied by very powerful persons. Account of a consultation to accuse him

# C O N T E N T S.

- of high treason, p. 90—93. *Of the dissimulation of Cromwell. Proofs of it. Its reconcileableness with enthusiasm, and other principles held by him. Politicians dispense with the rules of morality. Reflections thereon,* p. 94—106. *Of the self-denying ordinance—Reasons on which it was founded—Cromwell's speech in its favour—Whitlock's against it—Reflections thereon,* p. 107—119. *Cromwell by various votes exempted from the self-denying ordinance—Mistakes of Lord Clarendon,* p. 120—126. *Of the battle of Naseby—Copies of original letters relating to it—Fatal to Charles I.* p. 127—133. *Rewards bestowed by the parliament on Cromwell for his services—Complaints of offices and preferments being shared among members of Parliament—Reflections thereon,* p. 134—138.
- Character of Fairfax—Ambition of Cromwell—Major Huntington's account of his principles and practices—Vindicated by Milton,* p. 139—155. *The army, by the instigation of Cromwell, grow mutinous—Refuse to disband—Cause the parliament to erase out of their journals what was displeasing to them,* p. 156—166.
- Cornet Joyce seizes the King at Holmby—His Majesty refuses to return back—Relies on his supposed interest in the army. Mistakes of Clarendon and Perincheif,* p. 167—170.
- Cromwell breaks off all thoughts of friendship with Charles—Reasons of it—Reflections thereon,* p. 171—180.
- Cromwell defeats the Welch and Scots who appeared in behalf of the King—His Majesty by the army is seized at Newport, and carried to Hurst Castle—The house of commons purged—Petition of Colonel Pride's regiment to Fairfax—Spirit of the English royalists—Cromwell thanked by the parliament,* p. 181—190.
- The reasons alledged for purging the house of commons by Goodwin, Milton, and others. Reflections thereon. An apology for Cromwell,* p. 191—203.
- Cromwell has a principal hand in the death of Charles. Proofs of it,* p. 204—207.
- The execution of Charles loudly exclaimed against, and Cromwell reproached on the account of it. Reasons given by his advocates in defence of the deed. The 30th of*

# C O N T E N T S.



- January observed by the English merchants at Dantzick, in memorial of their deliverance from slavery, p. 208—210.
- The parliament act with great spirit and vigour. Account of their proceedings—Publish a declaration in vindication of their actions—Order the great transactions of the commonwealth to be published in Latin, French and English, p. 220—223.
- The war in Ireland continued by them. Cromwell appointed commander in chief in that kingdom. He takes Drogheda and puts the garrison to the sword. Reflections thereon. Ireland reduced. The gallant spirit of Lieutenant General Ludlow, p. 224—233.
- The Scots oppose the execution of Charles. Charles II. takes the covenant and is crowned in Scotland. The Scots prepare to invade England.—Fairfax resigns his commission. Cromwell appointed general in his room.—Sets forward for Scotland—The battle of Dunbar—Joy of the friends of Cromwell and the commonwealth. Charles II. marches to Worcester—Is totally overthrown—Scotland wholly subdued. Honours paid to Cromwell, p. 234—251.
- Rise and progress of the quarrel with the Dutch—The parliament send ambassadors to the States—Substance of their embassy—Behave with great spirit—St. John's speech at their departure—War commenced between the two nations—Declaration of the parliament hereupon—Patriotism and disinterestedness of Sir Henry Vane—Parliament concerned for the honour and interest of the nation—Their demands from the Dutch, p. 252—271.
- Vast designs imputed to the commonwealth of England—Courtied by all nations.—Obtains the highest reputation, p. 272—277.
- An act of oblivion passed by the parliament—Cromwell humane and benevolent, p. 278—280.
- Of the navigation act. Praised by Sir Josias Child, p. 281.
- Parliament projects an union with Scotland. Cromwell finishes it. Superiorities, lordships and jurisdictions abolished. Remarks on Mr. D. Irymple's censure of Cromwell, p. 284—287.
- Parliament proposes the new modelling the representation in par-

# C O N T E N T S.

- parliament. *The steps taken by them in it. Their plans excellent,* p. 288—293.
- Parliament attempts to reform the law, enact all law-proceedings to be in the English tongue, p. 294—296.
- The best pens sought out and rewarded by the parliament for writing in behalf of civil and religious liberty. Of Milton, Nedham, the Parkers and others, p. 297—305.
- Of the provision made for the state clergy and universities—Bishops, and dean and chapters lands sold—Of ecclesiastical Revenues—Produce of the sale of the bishops lands in the province of York. Chancellor Oxenstiern admires the great actions of the parliament, Mr. Hume censured, p. 306—315.
- Cromwell puts a period for a time to the commonwealth—Discourse between him and Whitlock concerning his taking on him the Kingship. Account of his turning the members out of the house—Censured by Whitlock, and Ludlow, p. 316—323.
- Justifications of Cromwell by himself and his apologists on this head—Remarks thereon—Cromwell and the commonwealth leaders characterised by Dr. Warburton, p. 324—329.
- Cromwell constitutes a council of state and calls a parliament—Account of their proceedings. Lord Clarendon's representation of them virulent and false.—Hatred of ecclesiastics—Parliament resign back their power into the hands of Cromwell. Remarks thereon, p. 330—340.
- Cromwell assumes the title of Lord Protector—Of the instrument of government—The Protector endeavours to justify himself to the army—Reasons given for the new settlement—His government, at first, almost universally acquiesced in, p. 341—351.
- Cromwell rivals the greatest of our monarchs in glory, and makes himself courted and dreaded by the nations around him. Proofs of it, p. 352—361.
- Cromwell gives peace to the Dutch—Conditions of it, p. 362—365.
- Of the medals struck by the Dutch, and the poetical panegrics made on Oliver on this occasion by the universities of Oxford and Cambridge, p. 366—369.
- Of the negotiations between England, France and Spain—
- Crom-



# C O N T E N T S.

- Cromwell censured by various writers for entering into a war with Spain, and leaguings with France—Reasons in behalf of his conduct on this occasion—A picture of Lewis XIV. in miniature—Cromwell's irresolution and delay justly blameworthy, p. 370—385.*
- Account of the expedition to Hispaniola—Reasons of the ill success there, p. 386—389.*
- Of the taking and settling of Jamaica—Cromwell's endeavours to settle it—A remarkable letter written by him to Major General Fortescue—Importance of Jamaica to Great Britain, p. 390—395.*
- Gallant actions performed by Admiral Blake—His magnificent burial—His excellent character—His body taken up and buried in a pit.—Politeness and humanity introduced by the Restoration, p. 396—399.*
- Dunkirk taken by the French, and immediately put into the possession of the English—Remarks on an Anecdote of Dr. Welwood's—The great use of state papers, p. 400—403.*
- Cromwell interposes in behalf of the Vaudois—Protestantism vindicated from the ridicule and misrepresentation of some late writers.—Cruel usage of the Vaudois—The Protector orders a collection through the kingdom for a supply of their necessities—Account of the negotiations carried on by him abroad for the redress of their grievances, p. 404—411.*
- Mr. Morland's panegyric on Cromwell—Other panegyrics on him, p. 412—416.*
- Ill character given of courts—Cromwell's distinguished by its sobriety and decency, p. 417—419.*
- The benches filled with able and honest judges—An account of them, p. 420.*
- Cromwell seeks out every where for men of abilities, and gives them proper employment, p. 422—427.*
- Favours learning, and is munificent to such as excell in science, p. 428—430.*
- Makes use of the method of kindness and condescension to his enemies, p. 431—434.*
- Of the revenue of Cromwell—force of oeconomy, p. 435.*
- Of the faults in Cromwell's government—Cruel edict against the episcopal clergy, p. 436—439.*

## C O N T E N T S.

- The cavaliers receive hard measure from the Protector—Extracts from the declaration in justification thereof—Remarks thereon—Proceedings of Cromwell deeply resented by the cavaliers, p. 440—445.*
- Account of Cromwell's Major-Generals—A commission to one of them at large—Their instructions—Their transactions, p. 446—451.*
- Cromwell makes use of pack'd juries on occasion, and displaces judges for refusing to follow his directions, p. 452.*
- Commits men illegally to prison, and permits them not the benefit of the laws—Reflections thereon, p. 454—457.*
- Of high courts of justice—Objections to them—Reflections thereon, p. 458—460.*
- Cromwell violates the privileges of parliament, p. 461.*
- Situation and circumstances of the protector considered, p. 475.*
- Cromwell refuses the offered kingship—Reasons alledged to induce him to accept it—Hindered by his nearest relations.—Probable consequences of his assuming the title of King.—Of his house of lords—Whether Cromwell could have maintained his government? p. 481—493.*
- Of his behaviour in his last sickness—His prayer—Some of his expressions. Tillotson's opinion of him, p. 494.*
- Various characters of Cromwell—Lewis XIV. characterized.—Dangerous to paint out the enemies of mankind in fine colours, p. 496.*
- Cromwell's memory celebrated by the best pens of his age—Time the great friend to truth, p. 498.*
- Appendix of original papers, p. 501.*

## E R R A T A.

- P. 16, l. 21, for *base* read *base*.
- P. 67, in the text, after *not*, add *double*.
- P. 69, l. 5, in the text, for *Chicheley*, read *Chicheley*.
- P. 178, l. 9, from the bottom, for *quam vis*, read *quamvis*.
- P. 220, l. 4, from the bottom, for *rigour*, read *vigour*.
- P. 252, l. 4, in the notes, for *illua*, read *illud*.
- Id. l. 5, for *antea*, read *ante*.
- P. 305, for *James I.* read *James II.*
- P. 513, l. 14, for *widome*, read *wisdome*.



T H E  
L I F E  
O F  
OLIVER CROMWELL.



*LIVER Cromwell*, son of *Robert Cromwell*, and *Elizabeth Stuart*, his wife, was born at *Huntington*, on the twenty fourth of *April*, one thousand five hundred ninety nine. His family, which was considerable, I shall give some account of in the note (A).

He

(A) *I shall give some account of his family.*] We are naturally inquisitive about the descents and alliances of those who have figured in the world. Whether they sprung from new or old families? whether their fathers were men of renown? or they themselves first gave lustre to their name? are questions usually asked by such as read or hear concerning them. To gratify the curiosity of the reader then, the following account

B

has

He was educated in grammar learning in the Free-school at *Huntington*, under Dr. *Thomas*

has been collected. ——— ‘ That his (*Oliver’s*) extraction by the father’s side, was from Sir *Richard Williams*, Knight, a gentleman of eminent note (says Sir *William Dugdale*) in the court of king *Henry VIII.* and son to *Morgan ap Williams* (a *Welchman*) by sister to *Thomas* lord *Cromwell* earl of *Essex*, is not to be doubted. Who being by his uncle preferred to the service of king *Henry*, was for that cause (and no other) called *Cromwell*, as is apparent enough from testimonies of credit (a).’ If I have not been misinformed, many gentlemen of the name of *Williams*, in *Wales*, value themselves on this descent of *Oliver Cromwell*. *Dugdale’s* account has been lately contested by a gentleman who thinks it ‘ more probable that this family descended by the females from *Ralph* lord *Cromwell* of *Tattenball* in *Lincolnshire*, the last heir male of which was lord High Treasurer in the reign of *Henry VI.* and one of his coheiresses married Sir *William Williams*, whose descendents might afterwards take the name of *Cromwell*, in hopes of attaining that title which *Humphry Bouchier*, a younger son of the then earl of *Essex*, who married the eldest of the coheiresses, actually had, and was killed at *Barnet* field, fighting on the side of king *Edward IV.* (b)—Which of these accounts is most probable must be left to the judgment of the reader.—However, this is certain, that Sir *Richard Cromwell* above mentioned was sheriff of *Cambridgeshire* and *Huntingtonshire* in the time of *Henry VIII.* was a great favourite and commander in the wars, and had grants of abbey lands in *Huntingtonshire* to the amount, as they were then rated, of three thousand pounds a year. His son, Sir *Henry*, was four times sheriff of the county. Sir *Oliver*, uncle to the Protector, gave king *James I.* the greatest feast that had been given

(a) Short View of the troubles in England, p. 458. Oxford, 1682 Folio.

(b) Biographia Britannica, vol. iii. Article Cromwell, note (A).

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

*Thomas Beard*, a minister of that town, from whence he was sent to *Cambridge*, entered into *Sydney-Suffex College*, April 23, 1616, and placed under the tuition of Mr. *Richard Howlett* (c).

(c) Peck's  
Defiderata  
curiosa, vol.  
ii. b. 7. p.  
66. Wood's  
Fasti, vol.  
ii. c. 88.

What progress in learning he made in the university we have no particular account of, but as he understood some *Latin*, and had a taste for polite literature, probably his

‘to a king by a subject, had a great estate, and was a  
‘zealous royalist (d),’ but ‘had his composition re-  
‘mitted by the parliament for his kinsman’s sake (e).’  
‘It is no wonder then to find a family of such a rank  
allied to the *Hampdens*, the *St. Johns*, and the *Bar-  
ringtons*, names of some of our most antient and emi-  
nent families.—Mr. *Coke* tells us, ‘his father being  
‘asked whether he knew the Protector, he said, Yes,  
‘and his father too, when he kept his brew-house in  
‘*Huntington* (f).’ *Dugdale* will explain this.—‘*Ro-  
bert Cromwell*, says he, though he was by the coun-  
‘tenance of his elder brother, (Sir *Oliver*) made a jus-  
‘tice of peace in *Huntingnshire*, had but a slender  
‘estate; much of his support being a brew-house, in  
‘*Huntington*, chiefly managed by his wife, who was  
‘sister to Sir *Robert Stewart* of the city of *Ely*, knight,  
‘and by her had issue this our famous *Oliver* (g).’

(d) Biog.  
Brit. ib.

(e) Whit-  
lock's Me-  
morials, 2d.  
edit. p. 300.

(f) Detec-  
tion, vol.  
ii. p. 57.  
Lond. 1694.

(g) Short  
View, p.

This every reasonable and considerate person will think no discredit to the family. For in *England* trade is not disgraceful to a gentleman. The younger brothers of our best families engage in it, and thereby raise themselves to fortune and independency, and advance the riches and power of their country. A much more honourable method of procuring a maintenance than following the levees of ministers and favourites, and engaging to execute their mischievous and fatal schemes!

time was not wholly misemployed there (B).

During his continuance at *Cambridge*, his father dying, he returned home to his mo-

(B) *He understood some Latin, and had a taste for polite literature.*] Here are my authorities. *Burnet* says, 'he had no foreign language, but the little *Latin* that stuck to him from his education, which he spoke very vitiously and scantily (b).' Another writer observes that 'The usurper loved, or affected to love, men of wit — Mr. *Walker* frequently waited on him, being his kinsman; and as he often declared, observed him to be very well read in the *Greek* and *Roman* story (i).' The following passage I give at length, not doubting the reader will be pleased with it. 'When *Cromwell* took on him the protectorship, in the year 1653, the very morning the ceremony was to be perform'd, a messenger came to Dr. *Manton*, to acquaint him that he must immediately come to *Whitehall*: the Doctor asked him the occasion; he told him he should know that when he came there. The Protector himself, without any previous notice, told him what he was to do, *i. e.* to pray upon that occasion: the Doctor laboured all he could to be excused, and told him it was a work of that nature which required some time to consider and prepare for it. The Protector replied, That he knew he was not at a loss to perform the service he expected from him; and opening his study-door, he put him in with his hand, and bid him consider there; which was not above half an hour: the Doctor employed that time in looking over his books, which he said was a noble collection (k).' *Manton* was a judge.

These passages do not indeed prove *Oliver's* application in the university; but as a taste for books and learning is generally acquired in the early part of life, 'tis no way improbable that he form'd it there.

(b) *History of his own times*, Dutch edit. 2amo. p. 100. 1725.

(i) *Waller's Life* prefix'd to his *Poems*, p. 30. Lond. 1722. 12mo.

(k) *Life of Dr. Manton*, p. 20. 8vo. Lond. 1725.

OLIVER CROMWELL.



ther, who after some time sent him to *Lincolns Inn*, where, instead of applying himself to the study of the law, he learn'd the follies and vices of the town (c).

This

(c) *Instead of studying the law, he learn'd the vices and follies of the town.*] His small proficiency at *Lincolns Inn*, we may, I think, fairly enough conclude from the following passage of a profess'd panegyrist. 'He came to *Lincolns Inn*, where he associated himself with those of the best rank and quality, and the most ingenuous persons; for though he were of a nature not averse to study and contemplation; yet he seem'd rather addicted to conversation and the reading of men, and their several tempers, than to a continual poring upon authors (l).' But this is by no means sufficient to give us an idea of *Oliver* in his younger years. We are by one writer furthermore told, that 'the first years of his manhood were spent in a dissolute course of life, in good fellowship and gaming (m).' *Dagdale* is more large. 'In his youth, says he, he was for some time bred up in *Cambridge*; [he omits his being at one of the inns of court] where he made no great proficiency in any kind of learning; but then and afterwards sorting himself with drinking companions, and the ruder sort of people (being of a rough and blustering disposition) he had the name of a Royster amongst most that knew him; and by his exorbitances so wasted his patrimony; that, having attempted his uncle *Stewart* for a supply of his wants, and finding that by a smooth way of application to him he could not prevail, he endeavour'd by colour of law to lay hold of his estate, representing him as a person not able to govern it. But therein he failed (n).'

(l) *Portraiture of his royal highness Oliver*, p. 8. 12mo. 1659.

(m) *Warwick's Memoirs*, p. 249. 8vo. Lond. 1702.

(n) *Short View*, p.

*Wood* observes, 'that his father dying whilst he was at *Cambridge*, he was taken home and sent to *Lincolns*

This involved him in expences which his fortune would ill bear, and reduced him to some difficulties. But his vices were of no long continuance. He soon recovered himself, and at the age of twenty one years, married *Elizabeth* (D) daughter of Sir *James Bouchier*,

‘ *Inn* to study the common law, but making nothing  
 ‘ of it, he was sent for home by his mother, became  
 ‘ a debauchee, and a boysterous and rude fellow (e).’  
 Thus, according to these writers, *Oliver* mispent his  
 time, and fell into vice; and tho’ very probably his  
 faults are heightened by the authors here quoted, yet I  
 make no doubt but there is some foundation for the  
 charge. For in a letter to *Mrs. St. John*, his cozen,  
 dated *Ely*, 13th *Oct.* 1639, he has the following ex-  
 pressions. ‘ You know what my manner of life hath  
 ‘ been. O, I lived in, and loved darkness, and hated  
 ‘ the light; I was a chief, the chief of sinners. This  
 ‘ is true, I hated godliness, yet God had mercy on  
 ‘ me (f).’ Which words undoubtedly imply some per-  
 sonal vice or other to which he had been addicted,  
 though we cannot, at this distance, well tell what it  
 was with certainty.

(D) *He married Elizabeth Bouchier— who showed  
 due submission to him.*] The *Bouchiers* were antient as  
 a family; from hence probably arose the spirit and pride  
 of *Mrs. Cromwell*. Whether these led her into any in-  
 decencies with respect to her neighbours, appears not  
 even from the foes of the family. With regard to her  
 husband she had merit, *i. e.* she was affectionate, obe-  
 dient, submissive, and desirous to please: qualities vastly  
 beyond any which result from birth, beauty, parts or  
 wealth. What led me to consider her in this light, is  
 the following letter to *Oliver*, which will be read I dare  
 say with pleasure, especially as it is the only one of  
 hers which has been handed down to posterity.

*De-*

(e) *Fassi*,  
 vol. ii. c. 33.

(f) *Thur-*  
*loe's State*  
*Papers*, vol.  
 i. p. 1. Fol.  
 Lond. 1742.



OLIVER CROMWELL.

*Bouchier*, of *Effex*, knight, said to be a wo-  
 man of spirit and parts, and not wanting in  
 pride (g), tho' she shewed all due submis-  
 sion to her husband. Soon after his mar-  
 riage he settled at *Huntington*, his native  
 country; but upon the death of his uncle,  
 Sir

(g) See  
 Heath's  
 Flagellum,  
 p. 4.

*December the 27th, 1650.*

*My Dearist,*

I Wonder you should blame me for writing nowe  
 oftner, when I have sent thre for one: I can-  
 not but think they ar miscarid. Truly if I knog my  
 one hart I should ase soune neglect myself ase to the  
 least thought towards you, hoe in douing of it I must  
 doe it to myself; but when I doe writ, my dear, I  
 seldome have any satisfactore anser, wich makse me  
 think my writing is flited, as well it mae; but I can-  
 not but think your love covene my wekniss and in-  
 firmetis. I should rejoyes to hear your desire in see-  
 ing me, but I desire to submit to the providens of  
 God, howping the Lord, houe hath seperated us,  
 and heth oftune brought us together agane, wil in  
 heis good time breng us agane, to the prafe of heis  
 name. Truly my lif is but half a lif in your abseinsfe,  
 deid not the Lord make it up in heimsel, which I  
 must acknoleg to the prafe of heis grace. I would you  
 would think to writ sometims to your deare friend me  
 Lord Chef Justes, of hom I have oftune put you in  
 mind: and truly, my deare, if you would think of  
 what I put you in mind of sume, it might be of as  
 much purpos ase others, writting sumetims a letter  
 to the Presedent, and sometims to the Speiker. In-  
 deid, my deare, you cannot think the rong you doe  
 yourself in the whant of a letter, though it wer but  
 seldome. I pray think of, and soe rest yours in all  
 faithfuhnise,

ELIZ. CROMWELL (r).

B 4

In

(r) Milton's  
 State Pa-  
 pers, by  
 Nickolls, p.  
 40. Fol.  
 Lond. 1743.

Sir *Robert Stewart*, who left him an estate of between four and five hundred pounds a year, he removed to the isle of *Ely*. Here again it is said that he fell into great streights and difficulties, through an excess of superstition; though the accounts given of it (E) are,

In conformity to the representations of others I have mentioned Mrs. *Cromwell's* spirit and pride: how the latter appear'd I know not. It is not said that she lov'd state and magnificence, that she was delighted with flattery, or fond of power. Nor do I remember to have seen any addresses made to her either by the court divines, or poets of her age, though her husband, and her son *Richard* had store of them. So that I should rather conclude her meek and humble, than proud and high-spirited; though we have no facts given us from whence we may draw the one or the other conclusion. What confirms me in the opinion of her real good character is, that *Dugdale* and *Bates*, who have drawn the most ugly pictures of *Cromwell*, have left hers untouched, which I'm perswaded they would not have done, could they have found any thing to fasten on. *Bates*, being physician to the family, must have had opportunities sufficient for information; and after the restoration it was making court to abuse any part of *Oliver's* family.

I am confirmed in my opinion of Mrs. *Cromwell*, by the following passage in *Ludlow*, which I observ'd not till I had written the above. 'He [the Protector] removed from the *Cock-pit*, which house the parliament had assign'd him, to take possession of *Whitehall*, which he assign'd to himself. His wife seem'd at first unwilling to remove thither, tho' afterwards she became better satisfied with her grandeur (s).'

(E) *He fell into streights and difficulties through an excess of superstition.* Let us hear what is said on this

head

(s) Memoirs, vol. ii. p. 488.

are, in my opinion, far enough from being probable.

Cer-

head by writers prejudiced against his memory. ' Ado-  
 ' lescens cum fœmina nobili confarreavit; sed brevi  
 ' postea tum sua tum materna bona, (pater enim ante  
 ' defunctus erat) effusus in luxum, funditus dilapidavit,  
 ' adeo ut ad restim propemodum redigeretur. Dein  
 ' agens resipiscentiam, concionibus sacris, lectionibus  
 ' piis, & mortificationis operibus totus vacat; conducto-  
 ' que zythopario, *velut rem familiarem quam antè de-*  
 ' *coxerat recocturus*, eidem dat operam, simul & agri-  
 ' culturæ. Ab eo tempore, avunculo illum summopere  
 ' petroso, *Roberto Stewards* equiti, regionum quorun-  
 ' dam & clericorum operâ conciliatus est, hæresque  
 ' tandem scriptus. Patrimonio tamen paulò post ad  
 ' assem pessundato, statuit *Newam Angliam* proficisci,  
 ' omniaque in hunc finem preparat (t).<sup>1</sup> i. e. ' In his  
 ' youth he married a gentlewoman, but by his profuse  
 ' and luxurious way of living, in a short time he squan-  
 ' dered away both his mother's and his wife's estate, so  
 ' that he was almost reduced to beggary. Afterwards,  
 ' assuming the behaviour of a penitent, he gave him-  
 ' self wholly up to the hearing of sermons, reading of  
 ' godly books, and works of mortification; and hav-  
 ' ing got a brewhouse, he applied himself to the brew-  
 ' ing trade, and also to husbandry. After that his un-  
 ' cle Sir *Robert Stewart*, who had an aversion to him,  
 ' being reconciled by the means of some clergymen and  
 ' courtiers, left him his fortune. But shortly after,  
 ' having again run out of all, he resolved to go to *New*  
 ' *England*, and prepares all things for that end.'

(t) Elenchi  
 Motuum  
 nuperorum  
 in Anglia ab  
 Georgio Ba-  
 teo, pars se-  
 cunda, p.  
 219, 8vo.  
 Lond. 1663.

*Dugdale*, after having spoken of ' his most formally  
 ' canting in their [the *Paritans*] demure language and  
 ' affected tone, and frequenting the sermons of the  
 ' fiercest *Beautefeous*,' tells us ' he was necessitated  
 ' through his low condition to quit a country farm,  
 ' which he held at *St. Ives*, and betake himself to

' mean



Certain 'tis, he was very regular at this time in his whole behaviour, publickly ad-  
dicted

(s) Short  
View, p.  
460.

' mean lodgings in *Cambridge* (u). This necessity another writer lays upon his overmuch religion, which induc'd him to have long prayers with his family in a morning, and again in the afternoon, at which his plowmen and all his country servants always attended. Mr. *Hume*, after his manner, has improv'd upon all these writers. ' All of a sudden, the spirit of reformation seized him; he married, affected a grave and composed behaviour, entered into all the zeal and rigour of the puritanical party, and offered to restore to every one whatever sums he had formerly gained by gaming. The same vehemence of temper which had transported him into the extreams of pleasure, now distinguished his religious habits. His house was the resort of all the zealous clergy of the party; and his hospitality as well as his liberalities to the silenced and deprived ministers, proved as chargeable as his former debaucheries. Tho' he had acquired a tolerable fortune by a maternal uncle, he found his affairs so injur'd by his expences, that he was obliged to take a farm at *St. Ives*, and apply himself, for some years, to agriculture, as a profession. But this expedient served rather to involve him in further debts and difficulties. The long prayers which he said to his family in the morning and again in the afternoon, consumed his own time and that of his plowmen; and he reserved no leisure for the care of his temporal affairs (x). There is a deal of confusion in all these accounts, and I believe, at the bottom, but little truth. For who can think that *Oliver*, tho' certainly an enthusiast, had so little sense as to run himself out after such a ridiculous manner? No man better knew than himself that there was a season for every thing, and tho' he loved to pray, and preach too on occasion, yet he was never known in any other part of life to neglect

(x) History  
of Great  
Britain, vol.  
ii. p. 45.  
4to. Lond.  
1757.

dicted to no vice, but a professor of religion even to a degree of (F) enthusiasm, to which through

left his affairs. Mr. *Hume* should have known too, that the clergy with whom *Cromwell* associated, were not of a temper to ruin even the most hospitable: good cheer was far enough from being their chief object. But waving all this, I would be glad to know how these accounts of his poverty are to be reconcil'd with the known facts of his being elected a member of parliament in 1628; and the successful opposition he actually made to the earl of *Bedford*, and other great men, in the business of draining the Fens?

Sir *Philip Warwick*, an eminent royalist, lived some time near *Huntington* (y), and convers'd with Dr. *Sim-* (y) *Me-*  
*cott*, *Cromwell's* physician, from whom he learn'd many *moirs*, p.  
particulars: but he is totally silent on this head, and 249.  
therefore very probably there is no truth in what is above related.

Since writing the above, I find *Cromwell* speaking concerning his situation in life in the following manner. 'I was by birth a gentleman, living neither in any considerable height, nor yet in obscurity.' Words spoken to his parliament *Sept.* 12, 1654, and abundantly sufficient to confute the idle stories in this note recited. *Milton* also, speaking concerning him, says, 'Is matura jam atque firmata ætate, quàm & pri-  
'vatus traduxit, nulla re magis quam religionis cultu  
'purioris, & integritate vitæ cognitus, domi in occulto  
'creverat'——— *i. e.* 'Being now arrived to a ma-  
'ture and ripe age, which he spent as a private person, (x) *Milton's*  
'noted for nothing more than the cultivation of pure *Prose*  
'religion, and integrity of life, he was grown rich at *Works*,  
'home (z).'  
'—After this, I hope, we shall hear no more of *Oliver's* extreme poverty. *vol. ii.*  
*p. 395.*  
*quarto,*  
*Lond. 1753.*

(F) *He was a professor of religion even to a degree of enthusiasm.*] The reader who has seen nothing but modern manners, may wonder to hear religion made part  
of note (r).  
See also the quotation from *Clarendon* in

through the remaining part of his life he seemed greatly inclined.

This,

of a great man's character. He who should now even but make the least public pretence to it, would go near to be ridicul'd for a fool or a fanatic. The *Brutes*, the *Wrongheads*, the *Fribbles* have figured so long, that they are become very familiar, and deem'd top character. But in the last century things were otherwise: a man's being religious was thought one qualification even for a post in the army, and mentioned as such by Lord *Strafforde* (a), and we well know that the appearance of religion was kept up by gentlemen of the most distinguish'd rank. So that *Oliver's* religion was meritorious in the eyes of those around him, and tended much to advance his character.

(a) Letters  
and Dis-  
patches,  
vol. i. p. 17.  
fol. Lond.  
1739.

And that he was really religious, seems to appear from the following letter most generously permitted to be transcribed for me, by the trustees of the *British Museum*. It is written to Mr. *Storie*, and dated *St. Ives*, *Jan. 11, 1635*.

MR. *Storie*, amongst the catalogue of those good  
 workes which your fellowe citycenes and our  
 cuntrie men have donn, this will not be reckoned for  
 the least that they have provided for the feedinge of  
 soules: buildinge of hospitalls provides for mens bo-  
 dyes, to build materiall temples is iudged a worke of  
 pietye, but they that procure spirituall food, they that  
 builde up spirituall temples, they are the men truly cha-  
 ritable, trulye pious. Such a work as this was your  
 erectinge the lecture in our cuntrie, in the which you  
 placed Dr. *Welles*, a man of goodnesse and industrie  
 and abilitie to doe good every way: not short of any  
 I knowe in *England*, and I am perswaded that si-  
 thence his cominge, the Lord by him hath wrought  
 much good amongst us. It only remains now that  
 he whoe first moved you to this, put you forward

to

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



' to the continewance thereof, it was the Lord, and  
 ' therefore to him lift we up our harts that he would  
 ' perfect itt. And surely Mr. *Storie* it were a piteous  
 ' thinge to see a lecture fall in the hands of soe manie  
 ' able and godly men as I am perswaded the founders  
 ' of this are, in these times wherin wee see they are  
 ' suppressed with too much hast, and violence by the  
 ' enemies of God, his truth, far be it that soe much  
 ' guilt should sticke to your hands, who live in a citye  
 ' so renowned for the clere shininge light of the gospel.  
 ' You knowe Mr. *Storie* to withdrawe the pay is to  
 ' lett fall the lecture, for whoe goeth to warfare at his  
 ' owne cost. I beseech you therefore in the bowells  
 ' of Christ Jesus putt it forward and let the good man  
 ' have his pay. The soules of God his children will  
 ' blese you for it: and soe shall I, and ever rest

' *Your lovinge friend in the Lord,*

' OLIVER CROMWELL.

' Commende my hearty love to Mr. *Busse*, Mr.  
 ' *Beadly*, and my other good friends. I would  
 ' have written to Mr. *Busse*, but I was loath to  
 ' trouble him with a longe letter, and I feared  
 ' I should not receive an answer from him,  
 ' from you I expect one soe soon as conveni-  
 ' ently you may. *Vale*. To my very lovinge  
 ' friend Mr. *Storie*, at the sign of the *Dogg* in  
 ' the *Royal Exchange London*, d<sup>10</sup>. these.'

The importance of this letter to *Cromwell's* character will excuse the length of it, especially as 'tis an original, and now first published.

But he not only practised the external duties of religion (real inward religion appears not to men, but by its fruits) but he was carried away into enthusiasm. He fancied himself favoured and distinguished by heaven; that God in answer to his prayers afforded him supernatural illumination and assistance.—' I had occasion to converse with Mr. *Cromwell's* physician, Dr.

' *Simcott,*

' *Simcott*, who assured me, that for many years his pa-  
 ' tient was a most splenetick man, and had phanfyces  
 ' about the cross in that town; and that he had been  
 ' called up to him at midnight and such unseasonable  
 ' hours very many times, upon a strong phancy, which  
 ' made him believe he was then dying; and there went  
 ' a story of him, that in the day-time lying melancholy  
 ' in his bed, he believed that a spirit appeared to him,  
 ' and told him he should be the greatest man (not men-  
 ' tioning the word King) in this kingdom. Which his  
 ' uncle *Sir Thomas Steward*, who left him all the little  
 ' estate *Cromwell* had, told him was traiterous to re-  
 ' late. The first years of his manhood were spent in  
 ' a dissolute course of life—but—when he was civiliz'd  
 ' he joined himself to men of his own temper, who  
 ' pretended unto transports and revelations (b).——

(b) War-  
wick, p.  
249.

The following extracts from some of *Oliver's* letters will,  
 perhaps, better than any thing else illustrate this part  
 of his character. ' Truly noe poore creature hath  
 ' more cause to putt forth himselfe in the cause of his  
 ' God, then I. I have had plentiful wadges before  
 ' hand; and I am sure I shall never earn the least mite.  
 ' The Lord accept mee in his Sonn, and give me to  
 ' walk in the light, and give us to walk in the light,  
 ' as hee is in the light. He it is that inlighteneth our  
 ' blacknesse, our darknesse. I dare not say, hee hi-  
 ' deth his face from mee; hee giveth me to see light in  
 ' his light: one beame in a darke place hath exceed-  
 ' inge much refreshment in it; blessed be his name for  
 ' shininge upon soe darke a hart as mine (c).' This  
 ' was written in 1638.——In a letter to the lord *Whar-*

(c) Tharloe,  
vol. i. p. 1.

' *ton*, dated *Sept. 2, 1648*, we have the following pas-  
 ' sages. ' I beseech the Lord make us sensible of this  
 ' great mercye heere [the victory over the *Scots* under  
 ' Duke *Hamilton*, I suppose] which surelye was much  
 ' more then \* \* \* \* \* the house expresseth. I trust  
 ' \* \* \* \* \* the goodnesse of our God, time and op-  
 ' portunitye to speak of itt with you face to face.  
 ' When we think of our God, what are wee! oh!  
 ' his mercye to the whole societye of Saints, despised,  
 ' ' jcered



' jeered Saints. Let them mocke onn. Would we  
 ' were all Saints; the best of us are (God knows)  
 ' poore weake Saints, yet Saints; if not sheepe, yet  
 ' lambs, and must bee fed. We have daily bread and  
 ' shall have itt, in despite of all enemies. There's  
 ' enough in our fathers house, and he dispenfeth itt as  
 ' our eyes \* \* \* \* bekind, then wee can \* \* \* \* we  
 ' for him. I thinke thorough these outward mercyes  
 ' (as we call them) faith, patience, love, hope, all are  
 ' exercis'd and perfected, yea Christ formed, and  
 ' growes to a perfect man within us. I knowe not  
 ' how-well to distinguish: the difference is only in the  
 ' subject: to a worldly man they are outward: to a  
 ' Saint, christian: but I dispute not. My lord I re-  
 ' joice in your perticular mercye. I hope that is foe to  
 ' you; if foe it shall not hurt you, nor make you plott  
 ' or shift for the younge baron to make him great.  
 ' You will say he is Gods to dispose off, and guide for,  
 ' and there you will leave him (d).

(d) Thur-  
 loc, vol. i.  
 p. 99.

In a letter to the governor of the castle of *Edinburgh*,  
 dated *Sept. 9, 1650*, he thus writes: ' We have said  
 ' in our papers with what hearts and upon what ac-  
 ' count we came; [into *Scotland*] and the Lord hath  
 ' heard us, though you would not, upon as solemne an  
 ' appeal as any experience can parallel. And although  
 ' they [the *Scot.*] seem to comfort themselves with be-  
 ' ing the sons of *Jacob*, from whom (they say) God  
 ' hath hid his face for a time; yet it's no wonder, when  
 ' the Lord hath lift up his hand so eminently against a  
 ' family, as he hath done so often against this [the  
 ' *Stuart*] and men will not see his hand, if the Lord  
 ' hide his face from such, putting them to shame, both  
 ' for it and their hatred at his people, as it is this day.  
 ' When they purely trust to the sword of the spirit, which  
 ' is the word of God, which is powerful to bring down  
 ' strong holds, and every imagination that exalts itself,  
 ' which alone is able to square and fitt the stones for the  
 ' new *Jerusalem*; then, and not before, and by that means,  
 ' and no other, shall *Jerusalem* (which is to be the  
 ' praise of the whole earth) the city of the Lord be  
 ' built,

(e) Thurloe,  
vol. i. p.  
159.

‘ built, the *Sion* of the holy one of *Israel* (e).’ The governor in his reply telling *Cromwell* the *Scott* ministers said, ‘ that they had not so learned *Christ* as to ‘ hang the equity of their cause upon events:’ he reassumed his pen on the same subject, and writes as follows: ‘ In answer to the witness of God upon our ‘ solemn appeal; you say, you have not so learned ‘ *Christ*, to hang the equity of your cause upon events. ‘ We could wish blindness hath not been upon your ‘ eyes to all those marvellous dispensations, which God ‘ hath wrought lately in *England*. But did not you so- ‘ lemnly appeal and pray? Did not we do so too? ‘ And ought not you and we to think with fear and ‘ trembling of the hand of the great God in this mighty ‘ and strange appearance of his? But can slightly call ‘ it an event. Were not both yours and our expect- ‘ ations renewed from time to time, whilst we waited ‘ upon God, to see which way he would manifest ‘ himself upon our appeals? And shall we after all ‘ these our prayers, fastings, tears, expectations, and ‘ solemn appeals, call these base events? The Lord ‘ pity you. Surely we fear, because it hath been a ‘ merciful and gracious deliverance to us. I beseech ‘ you in the bowels of *Christ*, search after the mind of ‘ the Lord in it towards you, and we shall help you by ‘ our prayers, that you may find it out; for yet (if ‘ we know our hearts at all) our bowels do in *Christ* ‘ *Jesus* earn after the godly in *Scotland* (f).’—Bishop *Burnet* tells us, ‘ that when *Cromwell* was in the great- ‘ est streights and perplexities, just before the battle at ‘ *Dunbar*, he called his officers to a day of seeking the ‘ Lord. He loved to talk much of that matter all his ‘ life long afterwards. He said he felt such an enlarge- ‘ ment of heart in prayer, and such quiet upon it, that ‘ he bade all about him take heart, for God had cer- ‘ tainly heard them, and would appear for them. Af- ‘ ter prayer they walked in the Earl of *Roxborough*’s ‘ gardens that lay under the hill; and by prospective ‘ glasses they discerned a great motion in the *Scottish* ‘ camp. Upon which *Cromwell* said, God is deliver- ‘ ing

(f) 14.  
p. 161.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

ing them into our hands, they are coming down to us (g). The event was conformable to his expectation.

(g) Burnet's History of his own times, vol. I. p. 31. 22mo4 Dutch edit. See Cromwell's letter to Lenthall in note (L.).

*Whitlock*, who well knew the man, writes as follows: 'From the council of state *Cromwell* and his son *Iretch* went home with me to supper, where they were very cheerful, and seemed extremely well pleased; we discoursed together till twelve a-clock at night, and they told me wonderful observations of God's providence, in the affairs of the war, and in the business of the army's coming to *London*, and seizing the members of the house, in all which were miraculous passages (b).'

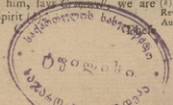
(b) Memorials, p. 384.

These passages are, I think, abundantly sufficient to establish the enthusiasm of *Cromwell*. However, that the reader may determine the better, let him attend to the following anecdotes which seem to indicate him an hypocrite. 'His rude cant and spiritual simplicity were downright affectation: than which nothing can be more evident from *Mr. Waller's* observation, and his confession to him. *Mr. Waller* often took notice, that in the midst of their discourse a servant has come in to tell them such and such attended; upon which *Cromwell* would rise, and stop them, talking at the door, where he could over-hear them say, The Lord will reveal, The Lord will help, and several such expressions; which when he return'd to *Mr. Waller* he excus'd, saying, Cousin *Waller*, I must talk to these men after their own way; and would then go on where they left off. This created in *Mr. Waller* an opinion that he secretly despised those whom he seem'd to court (i).'

(i) *Waller's* Life, p. 30.

And the author of the *Political history of the age*, thinks 'the enthusiasm of *Cromwell* entirely assum'd and politic; quoting the following anecdote from *Oli-ver St. John*, in proof of it, viz. That being one day at table with his friends, and looking for the cork of a bottle of champaign which he had opened, on being informed, that some person attended for admittance to see him, Tell him, says *Cromwell*, we are in search of the Holy Spirit

(2) Monthly Review, for Aug. 1757.



These are the passages which seem to destroy the enthusiasm of *Oliver*; seem, I say, to destroy it,—for allowing their truth, in my opinion, they do not in reality do it.—For what do they prove, but that *Cromwell* sometimes talked inconsistently with his principles? or being at times less under their power, he indulged himself in jesting and raillery, to which he was naturally prone? If two or three casual expressions are to determine a man's character in opposition to his whole speech and behaviour, woe be to those who think themselves virtuous and good. Whoever will consider the times in which *Oliver* liv'd; the part he bore in the transactions of them; his real principles with respect to returns of prayer; and his opinion express'd in his last moments, will not be long at a loss to determine about his real enthusiasm.

1. The times in which *Oliver* liv'd were times of reformation. Now ' a reformation is seldom carried on  
' without a heat and a vehemence which borders upon  
' enthusiasm; and as *Cicero* hath observed that there  
' never was a great man *sine afflatu divino*, so in times  
' of religious contests, there seldom was a man very  
' zealous for liberty civil and evangelical, and a declared  
' and active enemy to insolent tyranny, blind superstition,  
' political godliness, bigotry and pious frauds,  
' who had not a fervency of zeal which led him on  
' some occasions somewhat beyond the sober bounds of  
' temperate reason. When men are thus dispos'd, and  
' have animated each other, and are inflam'd by opposition,  
' persecution, and ill usage, they are strongly  
' inclin'd to suspect a divine interposition, and to explain  
' every strange appearance that way. The impetuosity  
' spreads far and wide, and seizes even upon  
' children (1).

(1) Justin's  
Remarks on  
ecclesiastical  
history,  
vol. ii.  
p. 370.

Another ingenious writer speaking concerning these times observes, ' That in the high ferment of national  
' spirit, not only did the animosities usual amidst the  
' flames of civil war, spread violently, on both sides;  
' but that which was peculiar to the complexion and  
' temper of the people of that age; extravagant conceits

## OLIVER CROMWELL.



' ceits of a religious kind, operated in the most forcible  
 ' manner imaginable. The crude mixture of religio-  
 ' ous and political opinions which is commonly found  
 ' among the bulk of a people, being then shook to the  
 ' very bottom; it was no wonder, that, together with  
 ' the most shining instances of military skill and bravery,  
 ' of penetrating sagacity and judgment in the manage-  
 ' ment of particular conjunctures and events, of bold-  
 ' ness, vigilance, and address in planning and execut-  
 ' ing the most dangerous enterprizes; there may also  
 ' be discerned many evidences of a wild and enthusi-  
 ' astic genius affecting the manners and actions of the  
 ' popular leaders (m).

(m) Nation-  
 al spirit,  
 considered,  
 as a natural  
 source of  
 political li-  
 berty, p. 40.  
 8vo. Lond.  
 1758. 2d.  
 edit.

2. Not only the times in which *Oliver* liv'd, but the  
 characters he bore, and the great and surprizing ac-  
 tions he perform'd, will lead us very naturally to sup-  
 pose that he might really think himself under the divine  
 guidance. The age of *Cromwell* was an age of won-  
 ders. The king and his nobles were brought low;  
 the poor and the mean were exalted; the foolish things  
 of the world confounded the wise, and the weak things  
 of the world confounded the things which were mighty;  
 and base things of the world, and things which were de-  
 spis'd, yea things that were not, comparatively, brought  
 to nought things that were. No wonder things so  
 marvellous, were deem'd by him and others to be the  
 Lord's doings in a peculiar manner, since they were  
 so much out of the usual course. And as to himself in  
 particular, from small beginnings he had rose to such  
 heights of power and reputation, and done such very  
 extraordinary things, that it must have been very dif-  
 ficult for a man of his constitution, to have forborn  
 thinking that he was personally favour'd by heaven in his  
 undertakings. ' A magistrate convinc'd of the being of  
 ' a God and a Providence, and conscious that every  
 ' purpose of his heart intends the honour of that God  
 ' and the good of the people he governs, cannot help  
 ' believing himself under the special care of the Deity.  
 ' This flows from the very reason and nature of things,  
 ' and can never be otherwise: God, as surely as he  
 ' exists,

This, however, spoil'd not his good nature, nor rendered him sour, morose, or severe.

On

exists, must necessarily favour such a man, and every such man must as necessarily be convinc'd that God does so favour him.—And such a persuasion will always have more or less influence on the mind, as it falls in with a constitution more or less inclin'd to superstition or enthusiasm, which is apt to impute every laudable thought, and every successful action to the special suggestion and assistance of heaven (n).'

(n) Middleton's Tracts, p. 200. 4to. Lond. 1752.

3. *Cromwell's* real opinion concerning returns of prayer will clearly shew his enthusiasm. What follows may, I believe, be depended on. 'I had heard from several (and it had been confirm'd to me by Mr. *Jeremy White*, who liv'd at *Whiteball* at the very same time with Mr. *Howe*) that the notion of a particular faith in prayer, prevail'd much in *Cromwell's* court; and that it was a common opinion among them, that such as were in a special manner favour'd of God, when they offer'd up prayers and supplications to him for his mercies, either for themselves or others, often had such impressions made on their minds and spirits by a divine hand, as signify'd to them, not only in the general, that their prayers would be heard, and graciously answered, but that the particular mercies that were sought for, would be certainly bestowed; nay, and sometimes also intimated to them in what way and manner they would be afforded; and pointed out to them future events before hand, which in reality is the same as inspiration. Having heard of mischief done by the prevalence of this notion, I took the opportunity that offer'd, when there was nothing to hinder the utmost freedom, to enquire of Mr. *Howe*, what he had known about this matter, and what were his apprehensions concerning it? He told me the prevalence of the notion

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



On the contrary, from most indisputable  
 autho-  
 411000=11  
 416=0101006

‘ tion that I mentioned at *Whitehall*, at the time when  
 ‘ he lived there, was too notorious to be called in ques-  
 ‘ tion; and that not a little pains was taken to cultivate  
 ‘ and support it; and that he once heard a sermon  
 ‘ there, (from a person of note) the avow’d design of  
 ‘ which was to maintain and defend it. He said he  
 ‘ was so fully convinced of the ill tendency of such a  
 ‘ principle, that after the hearing this sermon, he  
 ‘ thought himself bound in conscience, when it came  
 ‘ next to his turn to preach before *Cromwell*, to set  
 ‘ himself industriously to oppose it, and to beat down  
 ‘ that spiritual pride and confidence, which such fan-  
 ‘ cied impulses and impressions were apt to produce  
 ‘ and cherish. He told me, he observed that while  
 ‘ he was in the pulpit, *Cromwell* heard him with great  
 ‘ attention, but would sometimes knit his brows, and  
 ‘ discover great uneasiness. When the sermon was  
 ‘ over, he told me a person of distinction came to him,  
 ‘ and ask’d him if he knew what he had done? and  
 ‘ signified it to him as his apprehension, that *Cromwell*  
 ‘ would be so incens’d upon that discourse, that he  
 ‘ would find it very difficult ever to make his peace  
 ‘ with him, or secure his favour for the future. Mr.  
 ‘ *Howe* replyed, that he had but discharged his consci-  
 ‘ ence, and could leave the event with God. He told  
 ‘ me he afterwards observed, *Cromwell* was cooler in  
 ‘ his carriage to him than before; and sometimes he  
 ‘ thought he would have spoken to him of the matter,  
 ‘ but he never did, and rather chose to forbear (s).’

(s) Calamy's  
 life of Howe,  
 p. 21. 8vo.  
 Lond. 1724.

4. His discourse in his last sickness to his wife, plain-  
 ly manifests the enthusiasm of his temper. Take it as  
 related by his physician *Bates*. ‘ Sed nec animo solum  
 ‘ ægrotat; [he had been just speaking of his domestic  
 ‘ vexations] febre siquidem brevi post laticâ & lentâ  
 ‘ corripitur, quæ tandem spuriam in tertianam dege-  
 ‘ neravit. Profecto per septimanam morbo, absque

authorities, we are assured, that he was  
 cour-

ulla periculi indiciis, (utpote nunc istam mali spe-  
 ciem, nunc aliam præ se ferente;) ut ne prohiberét  
 secundo die ab ambulando forás. Post prandium autem  
 accedentibus ad eum quinque quos habebat medicis,  
 quidam ex tactu pulsus intermississe pronunciat: quo  
 audito ille subito consternatus ore pallet sudatiunculas  
 patitur, & ferè deliquium, jubétque se ad lectulum  
 deportari; atque ibi cardiacis refocillatus, supremum  
 condidit testamentum, sed de rebus privatis & domes-  
 ticis. Manè summo, cum unus è cæteris visitatum  
 veniret, percontatur, quare vultus ei adeo tristis.  
 Cumque responderet, ita oportere, si cui vitæ ac sa-  
 lutis ejus pondus incumberet; Vos (inquit) medici  
 me creditis intermoriturum: dein cæteris amotis (uxo-  
 rem manu complectens) ita hunc affatur, Tibi pro-  
 nuncio, non esse mihi hoc morbo moriendum; hujus  
 enim certus sum. Et quia intentiori aspectantem  
 oculo ad ista verba cerneret, Tu me (inquit) nè cre-  
 das insanire; verba veritatis eloquor, certioribus in-  
 nixus quam vobis Galenus aut Hippocrates vester  
 suppeditat rationibus. Deus ipse hoc responsum præ-  
 cibus dedit non meis unius, verum & eorum quibus  
 arctius cum illo commercium & major familiaritas.  
 Pergite alacres, excussa penitus à vultu tristitia, mé-  
 que instar servuli tractate. Pollere vobis licet pru-  
 dentia rerum; plus tamen valet natura quam medici  
 simul omnes; Deus autem naturam longiori superat  
 intervallo (p). — *i. e.* But all his distemper was  
 not in his mind alone; for shortly after he was taken  
 with a slow fever, that at length degenerated into a  
 bastard tertian ague. For a weeks time the disease  
 so continued without any dangerous symptoms, (as  
 appearing sometimes one, and sometimes another  
 kind of distemper) that every other day he walked a-  
 broad: but after dinner his five physicians coming to  
 wait upon him, one of them having felt his pulse,  
 said

(p) Elenchi,  
 pars 2da,  
 p. 215.



courteous and obliging, affable and condescending,

‘ said that it intermitted : at which suddenly startled,  
 ‘ he looked pale, fell into a cold sweat, almost fainted  
 ‘ away, and orders himself to be carried to bed, where  
 ‘ being refreshed with cordials, he made his will, but  
 ‘ only about his private and domestic affairs. Next  
 ‘ morning early, when one of his physicians came to  
 ‘ visit him, he asked him, why he look’d so sad ? and  
 ‘ when he made answer, that so it becomes any one,  
 ‘ who had the weighty care of his life and health upon  
 ‘ him : Ye physicians, said he, think I shall die. Then  
 ‘ the company being removed, holding his wife by the  
 ‘ hand, to this purpose he spoke to him, I tell you I  
 ‘ shall not die of this disorder,—I am sure of it. And  
 ‘ because he observed him to look more attentively  
 ‘ upon him at these words, Don’t think, said he, that  
 ‘ I am mad ; I speak the words of truth, upon surer  
 ‘ grounds than your Galen or Hippocrates furnish you  
 ‘ with. God Almighty himself hath given that an-  
 ‘ swer, not to my prayers alone, but also to the pray-  
 ‘ ers of those who entertain a stricter commerce, and  
 ‘ greater intimacy with him. Go on chearfully, ba-  
 ‘ nishing all sadness from your looks, and deal with  
 ‘ me as you would with a serving-man. Ye may have  
 ‘ skill in the nature of things, yet nature can do more  
 ‘ than all physicians put together ; and God is far more  
 ‘ above nature.’

*Burnet* confirms this account of the assurance of the divines concerning *Cromwell's* recovery (q). I will rest the evidence of the enthusiasm of *Oliver* here (though many more proofs can be brought of it) not doubting but it will appear strong and convincing ; and account, in some degree, for those actions and expressions which we shall meet with in the following sheets : account in some degree, I say ; for whoever thinks him wholly under the power of this principle, will be greatly mistaken. *Cromwell* ranks in this re-

(q) History  
 of his own  
 times, vol. i.  
 p. 130.

scending, and even strongly, at times (G),  
inclin'd

spect with *Mahomet*, and *Aurengzebe*, who were great masters of themselves, though, by nature, strongly tinctured with enthusiasm.

(G) *He was courteous and affable, and inclin'd to buffoonery.*] Here are the authorities. Sir *Philip Warwick* does honor to this part of his character in the following paragraph. 'In his conversation towards me he was ever friendly; tho' at the latter end of the day finding me ever incorrigible, and having some inducements to suspect me a tamperer, he was sufficiently rigid (r).' *Whillock*, even under a sense of an injury done him by *Cromwell*, owns he was 'good-natured (s).' His affability and condescension will appear also from the same writer. 'As they [*Cromwell* and *Iretton*] went home from my house, their coach was stopp'd and they examined by the guards, to whom they told their names; but the captain of the guards would not believe them, and threatned to carry these two great officers to the court of guard. *Iretton* grew a little angry, but *Cromwell* was chearful with the soldiers, gave them twenty shillings, and commended them and their captain for doing their duty (t).' In another place he writes as follows: 'The Protector often advis'd about this [The petition and advice] and other great businesses with the Lord *Brogbill*, *Pierpoint*, myself, Sir *Charles Wolfely* and *Thurlow*, and would be shut up three or four hours together in private discourse, and none were admitted to come in to him; he would sometimes be very chearful with us, and laying aside his greatness he would be exceeding familiar with us, and by way of diversion, would make verses with us, and every one must try his fancy; he commonly call'd for tobacco, pipes, and a candle, and would now and then take tobacco himself; then he would fall again to his serious and great business, and advise with us  
' in

(r) Memoirs, p. 247.

(s) Memoirs, p. 627.

(t) Id. p. 384.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

25  
54100000  
2100000000

inclin'd to practise some little arts of buffoonery.

But

‘ in those affairs ; and this he did often with us, and  
 ‘ our counsel was accepted and followed by him, in  
 ‘ most of his greatest affairs (u).’ These passages, (u) Memo-  
 rials, p. 656.  
 simply and artlessly told, strongly indicate the cheer-  
 fulness and pleasantry of *Cromwell*, and shew how  
 well qualified he was to conciliate the affection and re-  
 gard of those whom he thought it worth his while to  
 court (x). (x) See note  
 [xxx].

Let us now proceed to the buffoonery which is men-  
 tioned in the text. ‘ *Mr. Waller* lived mostly at *Bea-  
 consfield*, where his mother dwelt in her widowhood,  
 ‘ and often entertained *Oliver Cromwell* there, during  
 ‘ his usurpation, he being related to her. But not-  
 ‘ withstanding her relation to the usurper, and Colonel  
 ‘ *Hampden*, she was a royalist in her principles ; and  
 ‘ when *Oliver* visited her at *Beaconsfield*, she would  
 ‘ frankly tell him how his pretensions would end.  
 ‘ The usurper us'd merrily to throw a napkin at her in  
 ‘ return, and said he would not enter into further dis-  
 ‘ putes with his aunt ; for so he us'd to call her, though  
 ‘ not quite so nearly related (y). *Mr. Cowley* speaks (y) Waller's  
 Life, p. 4.  
 of ‘ his flinging of cushions, and playing at snowballs  
 ‘ with his servants (z).’—And *Mr. Ludlow* relates (z) Dis-  
 course con-  
 cerning the  
 government  
 of *Oliver  
 Cromwell*,  
 p. 95.  
 ‘ that *Cromwell* contriv'd a conference to be held in  
 ‘ *Kingstreet*, between those call'd the Grandees of the  
 ‘ house and army, and the Commonwealths-men, in  
 ‘ which the Grandees, of whom Lieutenant-general  
 ‘ *Cromwell* was the head, kept themselves in the clouds,  
 ‘ and would not declare their judgments either for a  
 ‘ monarchical, aristocratical, or democratical govern-  
 ‘ ment ; maintaining that any of them might be good  
 ‘ in themselves, or for us, according as Providence  
 ‘ should direct us. The Commonwealths-men declar-  
 ‘ ed that monarchy was neither good in itself, nor for  
 ‘ us.—Notwithstanding what was said, *Cromwell*  
 ‘ — pro-

But on necessary occasions he kept state

10

‘ — profess’d himself unresolv’d, and having learn’d  
 ‘ what he could of the principles and inclinations of  
 ‘ those present at the conference, took up a cushion  
 ‘ and flung it at my head, and then ran down the  
 ‘ stairs; but I overtook him with another, which  
 ‘ made him hasten down faster than he desired (a).’  
 This fact occur’d to Mr. *Hume*, but he could not re-  
 late it as it was.—Hear his words. ‘ After debates,  
 ‘ says he, on this subject [government] the most impor-  
 ‘ tant which could fall under the discussion of human  
 ‘ creatures, *Ludlow* tells us, that *Cromwell*, by way of  
 ‘ frolic, threw a cushion at his head; and when *Lud-*  
 ‘ *low* took up another cushion, in order to return the  
 ‘ compliment, the General ran down stairs, and had  
 ‘ almost broke his bones in the hurry (b).’—But to  
 proceed. At the signing of the warrant for the King’s  
 execution, we are told ‘ that *Cromwell* with his pen  
 ‘ mark’d *Harry Marten* in the face; and *Marten* did  
 ‘ the like to him (c);’ and also ‘ that whilst *Hugh*  
 ‘ *Peters* was shewing the lawfulness of the said execu-  
 ‘ tion, and, in his way, exciting them to it from the  
 ‘ pulpit, he laughed (d).’ I will add but one passage  
 more. ‘ *Minores ductores congiariis frequentius de-*  
 ‘ *vincire, nonnunquam in media cibatione, fame non-*  
 ‘ *dum pacatâ gregarios milites pulsatis tympanis intro-*  
 ‘ *mittere ut semefas rapterent reliquias. Robustos ac*  
 ‘ *vere militares nocivis & validis exercitiis tractare,*  
 ‘ *veluti pruna candente nonnunquam ocreis injectâ,*  
 ‘ *vel culcitrâ hinc indè in capita vibratis. Semel au-*  
 ‘ *tem præludiis hujusmodi probe lassos & risu laxatos*  
 ‘ *præfectos ad cordis apertionem provocavit; coque*  
 ‘ *modo ab incautis elicuit arcana quædam, quæ per-*  
 ‘ *petuis tenebris optabant postmodum involuta; dum*  
 ‘ *ipse, sententias omnium scrutatus, celaret suam (e).*’  
 i. c. ‘ He would often make feasts for the inferiour of-  
 ‘ ficers, and whilst they were feeding, before they had  
 ‘ sa-

(a) *Ludlow's Memoirs*, vol. i. p. 240. 8vo. Switzerland, 1698.

(b) *History of Great Britain*, vol. ii. p. 74.

(c) Exact and impartial account of the Trial of the Regicides, p. 247. 4to. Lond. 1660.

(d) *Id.* p. 162.

(e) *Bates's Elenchi*, part 2da. p. 179.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.




to the full (H); appear'd with the pomp and magnificence

' satisfied their hunger, cause the drums to beat and  
 ' let in the private soldiers to fall on, and snatch away  
 ' the half-eaten dishes. The robust and sturdy soldiers  
 ' he loved to divert with violent and hazardous exer-  
 ' cises; as by making them sometimes throw a burn-  
 ' ing coal into one another's boots, or cushions at one  
 ' another's heads. When the officers had sufficiently  
 ' laugh'd, and tired themselves with these preludes,  
 ' he would wheedle them to open their hearts freely;  
 ' and by that means he drew some secrets from the un-  
 ' wary, which afterwards they wished might have been  
 ' wrapp'd up in everlasting darknes; whilst he, in the  
 ' mean time, pumping the opinion of all others, con-  
 ' cealed his own.' Thus even diversions were made  
 ' subservient to his policy!

(H) *He kept state to the full, and appear'd on proper occasions with pomp and magnificence.* Cromwell was one of those genius's who are oftentimes buried in obscurity, through want of occasion of being known. Thousands spend their lives in retirement who are capable of greater things than most of those whose names are toss'd from every tongue, and voic'd for wise, skilful, able, or valiant. In times of peace these men are little notic'd or known; but they are overlook'd among the herd, or treated with a coolness or disregard which damps their ambition, and establishes their virtue. But when civil commotions arise, when the struggle is for liberty or enslavement, ' then a free and active spirit is rais'd which overspreads the country; every man finds himself, on such occasions, his own master, and that he may be, whatever he can make himself: he knows not how high he may rise, and is unaw'd by laws, which are then of no force: he finds his own weight, tries his own strength, and, if there is any hidden worth, or curbed mettle in him, certainly shews and gives it vent. Accordingly we

' see,



THE LIFE OF

and magnificence becoming the head of a

3113-101rich

(f) Enquiry into the Life and Writings of Homer.

' see, that the genius's produc'd at these times, give  
 ' great proof of reach and capacity, especially in politic  
 ' managements and civil affairs in the largest sense (f).  
 Cromwell verified these observations. I will give *War-*  
*wick's* account at large as a proof of it, especially as it  
 will afford pleasure to such of my readers as delight in  
 anecdotes, as, I believe, most do. ' The first time  
 ' I ever took notice of him [*Oliver*] was in the very  
 ' beginning of the parliament held in *Nov.* 1640, when  
 ' I vainly thought myself a courtly young gentleman :  
 ' (For we courtiers valued ourselves much upon our  
 ' good cloaths.) I came into the house one morning  
 ' well clad, and perceived a gentleman speaking (whom  
 ' I knew not) very ordinarily apparelled; for it was  
 ' a plain cloth suit; which seemed to have been made  
 ' by an ill country taylor; his linen was plain, and  
 ' not very clean; and I remember a speck or two of  
 ' blood upon his little band, which was not much lar-  
 ' ger than his collar; his hat was without a hatband :  
 ' his stature was of a good size, his sword stuck close  
 ' to his side, his countenance swoln and reddish, his  
 ' voice sharp and untuneable, and his eloquence full  
 ' of fervour; for the subject matter would not bear  
 ' much of reason; it being in behalf of a servant of  
 ' *Mr. Prynne's*, who had disperst libels against the  
 ' Queen for her dancing, and such like innocent and  
 ' courtly sports; and he aggravated the imprisonment  
 ' of this man by the council table unto that height,  
 ' that one would have believ'd, the very government  
 ' itself had been in great danger by it. I sincerely pro-  
 ' fess it lessened much my reverence unto that great  
 ' council, for he was very much hearkned unto. And  
 ' yet I liv'd to see this very gentleman, whom out of  
 ' no ill will to him I thus describe, by multiplied good  
 ' successes, and by real (but usurpt) power; (having  
 ' had a better taylor, and more converse among good  
 ' com-

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



rich and powerful people, and behav'd suitably

company) in my own eye, when for six weeks together I was a prisoner in his serjeant's hands, and daily waited at *Whitehall*, appear of a great and majestic deportment and comely presence (g).'

(g) Memoirs, p. 247.

Lord *Clarendon*, in the account lately published of his own life, gives us a representation of *Oliver's* behaviour in a committee, very little to his advantage. Here are his words: ' Mr. *Hyde* was often heard to mention one private committee, in which he was put accidentally into the chair, upon an inclosure which had been made of great wastes belonging to the Queen's manors, without the consent of the tenants, the benefit whereof had been given by the Queen to a servant of near trust; who forthwith sold the lands inclosed to the Earl of *Manchester*, Lord Privy Seal; who, together with his son *Mandevil*, were now most concerned to maintain the inclosure; against which, as well the inhabitants of other manors, who claimed common in those wastes, as the Queen's tenants of the same, made loud complaints, as a great oppression, carried upon them with a very high hand, and supported by power. The committee sat in the Queen's court; and *Oliver Cromwell* being one of them, appeared much concerned to countenance the petitioners, who were numerous, together with their witnesses; the Lord *Mandevil* being likewise present as a party, and by the direction of the committee, sitting covered. *Cromwell* (who had never before been heard to speak in the House of Commons) ordered the witnesses and petitioners in the method of the proceeding; and seconded, and enlarged upon what they said with great passion; and the witnesses, and persons concerned, who were a very rude kind of people, interrupted the council, and witnesses on the other side, with great clamour when they said any thing that did not please them; so that Mr. *Hyde* (whose

ably to the high rank in which he had plac'd himself.

Elo-

‘ (whose office it was to oblige men of all sorts to keep  
 ‘ order) was compelled to use some sharp reproofs, and  
 ‘ some threats, to reduce them to such a temper, that  
 ‘ the business might be quietly heard. *Cromwell* in  
 ‘ great fury reproached the chairman for being partial,  
 ‘ and that he discountenanced the witnesses by threat-  
 ‘ ning them; the other appealed to the committee, who  
 ‘ justified him, and declared that he behaved as he  
 ‘ ought to do; which more inflamed him, who was  
 ‘ already too much angry. When upon any mention  
 ‘ of matter of fact, or the proceeding before, and at  
 ‘ the inclosure, the Lord *Mandevil* desired to be heard,  
 ‘ and with great modesty related what had been done,  
 ‘ or explained what had been said, Mr. *Cromwell* did  
 ‘ answer, and reply upon him, with so much inde-  
 ‘ cency, and rudeness, and in language, so contrary,  
 ‘ and offensive, that every man would have thought,  
 ‘ that as their natures and their manners were as oppo-  
 ‘ site as it is possible, so their interest could never have  
 ‘ been the same. In the end his whole carriage was  
 ‘ so tempestuous, and his behaviour so insolent, that  
 ‘ the chairman found himself obliged to reprehend  
 ‘ him; and to tell him, if he proceeded in the same  
 ‘ manner, he would presently adjourn the committee,  
 ‘ and the next morning complain to the house of him,  
 ‘ which he never forgave; and took all occasions af-  
 ‘ terwards to pursue him with the utmost malice and  
 ‘ revenge, to his death (b).’

(b) Life of  
 Lord Cla-  
 rendon,  
 vol. i. p. 78.  
 3vo. Oxford  
 1759.

If one were to judge by this, *Cromwell's* manners were as rude as his dress uncourtly. But however, this same writer in another place confesses the alteration which was visible in him after he rose to dignity and power. ‘ As he grew into place and authority, says he, his parts seemed to be raised, as if he had concealed his faculties, till he had occasion to use them; and



# OLIVER CROMWELL.

31

and when he was to act the part of a great man, he did it without any indecency, notwithstanding the want of custom (i).

*Whitlock* has describ'd him two or three times in his public appearances: an account of these will explain what I mean by his keeping state to the full. His inauguration was magnificent. On the 26th of June, 1657, a place being prepared at the upper end of *Westminster-hall*, in the midst of it was a rich cloth of state set up, and under it a chair of state upon an ascent of two degrees, cover'd with carpets; before it a table and a chair by it for the speaker; on each side of the hall were seats built one above another, and cover'd for the members of the parliament; below them seats on the one side for the judges, and on the other side for the Lord Mayor and aldermen of *London*. About two of the clock in the afternoon the Protector met the parliament, and gave his consent to some bills; then the speaker and members went to their places in *Westminster Hall*, and the judges and aldermen took their places: a little time after this his Highness came attended with his own gentlemen, and with the heralds serjeants at arms: the officers, commissioners of the seal, and of the treasury, and his council: the Earl of *Warwick* carried the sword before him, and the Lord Mayor of *London* carried the city sword.

His Highness standing under the cloth of state, the speaker in the name of the parliament presented to him,

1. A robe of purple velvet, lined with ermin, which the speaker, assisted by me and others, put upon his Highness; then he delivered to him the Bible richly gilt and bossed; after that the speaker girt the sword about his Highness, and delivered into his hands the scepter of massy gold, and then made a speech to him upon those several things presented to him, wishing him all prosperity in his government, and gave him the oath; and Mr. *Manton* (k) by prayer recommended his Highness, the parliament, the council, the forces

Hist. of  
the Rebel-  
lion, vol. vi.  
p. 649.

(k) See  
note [a].

' forces by land and sea, and the whole government,  
 ' and people of the three nations, to the blessing and  
 ' protection of God. After this the people gave sever-  
 ' al shouts, and the trumpets sounding: the Protec-  
 ' tor sat in the chair of state, holding the scepter in his  
 ' hand; on his right side sat the ambassador of *France*,  
 ' on the left side the ambassador of the *United Provin-*  
 ' *ces*. Near to his Highness stood his son *Richard*, the  
 ' Lord Deputy *Fleetwood*, *Claypole*, master of the horse,  
 ' his Highnesses council and officers of state; the Earl  
 ' of *Warwick* held the sword on the right side of the  
 ' chair, and the Lord Mayor of *London* held the city  
 ' sword on the left hand of the chair; near the Earl of  
 ' *Warwick* stood the Lord Viscount *Lisle*, general  
 ' *Mountague*, and I, each of us having a drawn sword  
 ' in our hands. Then the trumpets sounded, and an  
 ' herald proclaimed his Highnesses title; and procla-  
 ' mation was made, and loud acclamations of the peo-  
 ' ple, God save the Lord Protector. The ceremonies  
 ' being ended, his Highness having his train carried by  
 ' the Lord *Sherwood*, Mr. *Rich*, the Earl of *Warwick's*  
 ' grandchild, and by the Lord *Roberts's* son, accompa-  
 ' nied by the ambassadors, and attended as before, went  
 ' in state to *Westminster Hall* gate, where he took his  
 ' rich coach. In the upper end of it himself sat in his  
 ' robes, in the other end sat the Earl of *Warwick*, in  
 ' one boot sat his son *Richard*, and I with a drawn  
 ' sword in my hand; and in the other boot sat the  
 ' Lord Viscount *Lisle*, and General *Mountague*, with  
 ' swords drawn in their hands; *Claypole* led the horse  
 ' of honour in rich caparisons, the life guard and other  
 ' guards attended the coach, the officers and the rest  
 ' following in coaches to *Whitehall* (1).—*Cromwell's*  
 reception of the *Swedish* ambassador will give us still a  
 clearer idea of his capacity for acting in the pompous  
 scenes of life. Take it from the author just cited.  
 ' His [the ambassador's] people went all hore, two and  
 ' two before him in order, according to their qualities;  
 ' the best men last; and next to him, the master of  
 ' the ceremonies next; before him, I on his right hand  
 ' and

(1) Memo-  
rials, p. 662.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

Elocution was not his talent. His public speeches



and *Strickland* on his left hand; they made a handsome shew in this equipage, and so went up to the council-chamber, where the ambassador repos'd himself, about a quarter of an hour, and then word being brought that the Protector was ready in the *Banqueting-house*, he came down into the court again, and in the same order they went up into the *Banqueting-house*. *White-ball* court was full of soldiers in good order, the stairs and doors were kept by the Protector's guards in their livery coats, with halberts, the rooms and passages in very handsome order; the *Banqueting-house* was richly hung with arras, multitudes of gentlemen in it, and of ladies in the galleries. The ambassador's people were all admitted into the room, and made a lane within the rails in the midst of the room. At the upper end upon a foot-pace and carpet, stood the Protector with a chair of state behind him, and divers of his council and servants about him. The master of the ceremonies went before the ambassador on the left side; the ambassador in the middle, betwixt me and *Strickland*, went up in the open lane of the room; as soon as they came within the room, at the lower end of the lane, they put off their hats: the ambassador a little while after the rest, and when he was uncover'd, the Protector also put off his hat, and answer'd the ambassador's three salutations in his coming up to him, and on the foot-pace they saluted each other as usually friends do: and when the Protector put on his hat, the ambassador put on his, as soon as the other. After a little pause, the ambassador put off his hat, and began to speak, and then put it on again; and whenever in his speech he named the King his master, or *Sweden*, or the Protector, or *England*, he moved his hat, especially if he mentioned any thing of God, or the good of *Christendom*, he put off his hat very low; and the Protector still answered him in the like postures of civility. The ambassador spoke in the *Swedish*

D

lan-

speeches in general are longwinded, obscure, flat (1) and ambiguous: but whether this was not

(m) Memo-  
rials, p. 623.

‘ language, and after he had done, being but short, his secretary did interpret it in *Latin*.—After his interpreter had done, the Protector stood still a pretty while, and putting off his hat to the ambassador, with a carriage full of gravity and state, he answered him in *English* (m).’—Though the ceremonials on these public occasions are, I apprehend, ordered and appointed by the proper officers, yet the man who (having spent forty years of his life in a manner almost wholly in obscurity and remote from courts, as *Oliver* had done) could act his part so gracefully in them, must have had a genius of a peculiar turn, and greatly superiour to the common class of men.—Mr. *Waller* seems therefore to have had reason for his complement to him in the following verses:

‘ Oft have we wonder’d, how you hid in peace  
A mind proportion’d to such things as these;  
How such a ruling sp’rit you cou’d refrain,  
And practise first over yourself to reign.  
Your private life did a just pattern give  
How fathers, husbands, pious sons shou’d live;  
Born to command, your princely virtues slept  
Like humble *David’s* while the flock he kept.’

I cannot close this note without observing the propriety of the *Swedish* ambassador’s making use of his native tongue in his public audience, and the Protector’s replying in his own language. It shews the value they each set on their respective countries, and their dislike of putting such a slight on them as to imagine their idiom unpolite or indeterminate. It would not have been amiss if the example had been followed.

(1) *Elocution was not his talent, &c.*] *Cromwell’s* want of eloquence has been observ’d by many writers. ‘ All virtues,

not partly out of design, may be a question, seeing

‘ virtues, says Mr. *Cowley*, being rightly divided into moral and intellectual, I know not how we can better judge of the former than by mens actions, or of the latter than by their writings or speeches. And for these latter (which are least in merit, or rather which are only the instruments of mischief where the other are wanting) I think you can hardly pick out the name of a man who ever was called great, besides him we are now speaking of, who never left the memory behind him of one wise or witty apothegm even among his domestic servants or greatest flatterers. That little in print which remains upon a sad record for him, is such, as a satyr against him would not have made him say, for fear of transgressing too much the rules of probability (n).’

Mr. *Hume* says that ‘ he was incapable of expressing himself on this occasion [the crown’s being offer’d him] but in a manner which a peasant of the most ordinary capacity, would justly be ashamed of.’ And after quoting a passage from the conference at *Whitehall* to support this assertion, he observes that ‘ the great defect in *Oliver’s* speeches consists not in his want of elocution, but in his want of ideas. The sagacity of his actions and the absurdity of his discourse, forms the most prodigious contraste that ever was known. The collection of all his speeches, letters, sermons, (for he also wrote sermons) would make a great curiosity, and with a few exceptions might justly pass for one of the most nonsensical books in the world (o).’ This gentleman’s great defects are want of consistency with himself, and regard to truth. In the passage here quoted he assures us that ‘ the great defect in *Oliver’s* speeches consists not in his want of elocution, but in his want of ideas:’ a few pages after he observes that *Cromwell* ‘ was not defective in any talent, except that of elocution (p).’ That he wrote sermons is a discovery of Mr. *Hume’s* own; I believe no writer worth naming

(n) Discourse concerning *Oliver Cromwell*, p. 87. Printed among his Works in 12mo. Lond. 1621.

(o) *Hist.* vol. ii. p. 79, 80.

(p) *Id.* p. 90.

seeing he could speak and write well on some occasions.

Bigo-

ever before said it; it is quite unsuitable to his character, and the times.

I have said in the text that his speeches, in general, are longwinded, obscure, flat, and ambiguous: this will appear to any who will be at the trouble to read his speech at the dissolution of his first parliament, and his speeches at the conference at *Whitehall*, of which I shall have occasion hereafter to give extracts. The reason of these defects seem to be sometimes the enthusiasm of his temper, which produc'd a kind of expression favouring of cant; other times his being necessitated to find excuses for refusing what he was desirous of; and most times a willingness to hide his real intentions. To which, probably, may be added his having been little used to speak in public assemblies, on public occasions, before he seiz'd the supreme power.—But design I'm perswaded had the greatest share in producing some of his oddest compositions. I have seen, and shall in the following sheets produce copies of original letters written by him, which shew that he knew well how to express himself; his letters to the govern'r of *Edinburgh* castle before mention'd are a farther proof of it; and the following speech made off hand to the *Swedish* ambassador confirms it.

‘ My Lord Ambassador, I have great reason to acknowledge with thankfulness, the respects and good affection of the King your master towards this commonwealth, and towards myself in particular, whereof I shall always retain a very grateful memory, and shall be ready upon all occasions to manifest the high sense and value I have of his majesty's friendship and alliance. My Lord, you are very welcome into *England*, and during your abode here, you shall find all due regard and respect to be given to your person, and to the business about which you come. I am very willing to enter into a nearer and more strict alliance and friendship with the King of *Sweden*, as that which

Bigottry (κ) made no part of *Cromwell's* character.

‘ which in my judgment will tend much to the honor  
 ‘ and commodity of both nations, and to the general  
 ‘ advantage of the protestant interest; I shall nominate  
 ‘ some persons to meet and treat with your lordship upon  
 ‘ such particulars as you shall communicate to them (g).’  
 Perhaps a better turn’d answer than this is not to be  
 found in *England* in *Cromwell's* age!—it shews what he  
 could do: though he seldom equall’d it.

(g) Whit-  
lock, p.  
622.

See also note

(κ) *Bigottry made no part of Cromwell's character.*  
 Bigottry ill becomes a great man, if a truly great man  
 is capable of it. In a politician it is a defect, in a sove-  
 reign a fault of the first magnitude. Woe be to that  
 country whose princes and ministers are tinctur’d with it.  
 There ecclesiastics reign—and the rule of ecclesiastics  
 has been always severe and tyrannical. Bigottry pro-  
 duc’d the massacres of *Paris* and *Ireland*; repeal’d the  
 edict of *Nantz*; annull’d the privileges of the *Moriscoes*  
 in *Spain*; drove the nonconformists out of *England*; and  
 depriv’d *Philip* the second of the *United Provinces*.  
 These were the effects of this fiend, black as the infer-  
 nal pit where it first was produc’d, and mischievous as  
*Satan* its parent. May all princes have it in abhorrence!  
 may they keep its favourers and abettors far from their  
 councils! vain else will be their endeavours for the pub-  
 lic, vain their hopes of perpetuating their fame. No  
 prince, ’tis well known, was ever well counsell’d by  
 priests. They have themselves too much in view; their  
 own order too much at heart—They cannot sacrifice  
 these though inconsistent with the welfare of the com-  
 munity, nor can they forbear preferring them to the  
 most useful members of it. But the bigot is the tool of  
 the priest. He must be so—from him therefore is to be  
 expected nothing truly generous. We know what *Car-*  
*dinal Granvall* did in *Spain*; what *Laud* in *England*;  
 but they had never been in a capacity of executing their  
 mad and destructive schemes, had they had masters less  
 bigotted. But *Cromwell* had a mind superior, he was

above the sway of these kind of men; there was nothing in him for them to work on, they therefore either never attacked him, or desisted. This will appear from his judgment concerning the nature of the ministerial function, and the bounds within which it ought to be confined; his fix'd opinion concerning liberty of conscience in matters of religion; and his behaviour towards men of the most different and opposite principles.

1. *Cromwell's* open and avowed judgment concerning the nature and bounds of the ministerial function, clearly leads us to conclude that he was free from bigotry. In his letter to the governor of *Edinburgh* castle dated *Sept. 9, 1656*; he says, 'The ministers in *England* are supported, and have liberty to preach the Gospel, though not to raile, nor under pretence thereof to overtop the civil power, or debase it as they please. No man hath been troubled in *England* or *Ireland* for preaching the Gospel, nor has any minister been molested in *Scotland* since the coming of the army hither. The speaking truth becomes the ministers of Christ. When ministers pretend to a glorious reformation, and lay the foundation thereof in getting to themselves worldly power, and can make worldly mixtures to accomplish the same, such as their late agreement with their King, and hopes by him to carry on their design, may know, that the *Sion* promised and hoped for, will not be built with such untempered mortar (r).'

(r) *Thurloe*, vol. i. p. 159.

In reply to the *Scottish* ministers saying 'they had just cause to regret, that men of civil employments should usurp the calling and employment of the ministry?' he asks, 'Are you troubled that Christ is preached? Is preaching so inclusive in your function? Doth it scandalize the reformed kirks, and *Scotland* in particular? Is it against the covenant? Away with the covenant if this be so. I thought the covenant and these could have been willing, that any should speak good of the name of Christ; if not, it is no covenant of God's



his own sentiments, and adher'd to the sect  
 he

approving, nor of the kirk's you mention, in so much  
 the spouse of Christ. Where do you find in Scripture  
 a ground to warrant such an assertion, that preaching  
 is included in your function? Tho' an approbation  
 from men hath order in it, and may doe well, yet he  
 that hath not a better warrant than that, hath none  
 at all. I hope he that ascended up on high may give  
 his gifts to whom he please; and if those gifts be the  
 seal of mission, be not envious, though *Eldad* and  
*Medad* prophesie.—Indeed you erre through the  
 mistake of the Scriptures; approbation is an act of  
 conveniency in respect of order, not of necessity to  
 give faculty to preach the Gospel. Your pretended  
 fear, least error should step in, is like the man, that  
 would keep all the wine out of the country, least men  
 should be drunk. It would be found an unjust and  
 unwise jealousie, to deny a man the liberty, he hath  
 by nature, upon a supposition he may abuse it: when  
 he doth abuse it, judge. If a man speak foolishly, ye  
 suffer him gladly, because ye are wise; if erroneously,  
 the truth more appears by your conviction; stop such  
 a man's mouth with sound words, that cannot be gain-  
 said: if blasphemously, or to the disturbance of the  
 publick peace, let the civill magistrate punish him:  
 if truly, rejoice in the truth. And if you will call  
 our speakings together, since we came into *Scotland*,  
 to provoke one another to love and good works, to  
 faith in our Lord Jesus Christ, and repentance from  
 dead works, to charity and love towards you, to pray  
 and mourne for you, and for the bitter returns to, and  
 incredulity of our professions of love to you, of the  
 truth of which we have made our solemn and hum-  
 ble appeals to the Lord our God, which he hath heard  
 and born witness to; if these things be scandalous to  
 the kirk, and against the covenant, because done by  
 men of civill callings, we rejoice in them, notwith-  
 standing what you say (i).—These are sentiments  
 which, however tinctur'd with enthusiasm, declare a

(i) Thurloe,  
 vol. i. p.  
 162.

he most approv'd;—but he spoke at all times with

mind free from bigotry, and incapable of being deluded by the cant of *heavenly mission, uninterrupted succession, indelible character*, and the *power of binding and loosing mens sins!* Oliver had a sufficient preservative in his own understanding against the principles and practices of these men who make use of such magical terms.

2. *Cromwell's* fix'd opinion concerning liberty of conscience in matters of religion, evinces his freedom from bigotry. No bigot has had sense enough to see the plain and just right which every man has to think and act for himself in matters purely of a religious nature; or to be convinc'd that unless men freely and voluntarily choose their religion, they can have no merit in the eyes of God or reasonable men; and consequently that they ought never to be debarr'd from acting according to their own choice. The bigot is always in the right; every man of a different belief is in the wrong; heaven is his own portion, but hell and damnation attend those who think and act opposite to him.—*Oliver* was not of this cast. He always profess'd it to be his belief that men had a right to think and act for themselves in matters of religion, and that as long as they behav'd peaceably they were free to dissent from the magistrate and the priest. *Mr. Ludlow* tells us, 'the liberty that was to be extended to tender consciences, was an engine by which *Cromwell* did most of his work (t).' And *Mr. Baxter* says, 'Liberty of conscience he pretended to be most zealous for (u).' What follows will I think plainly make it appear that he was indeed so.

*Milton*, in the following beautiful sonnet, which I believe every lover of virtue and the muses will read here with pleasure, addresses himself to him as the patron of this most glorious cause.

*Cromwell*, our chief of men, who through a cloud  
Not of war only, but detractions rude,  
Guided by faith and matchless fortitude,  
To peace and truth thy glorious way hast plough'd,  
And

(t) Memoir, vol. ii. p. 509.  
(u) Reliquiæ Baxterianæ, by Silvester, part ii. p. 205. Folio. Lond. 1696.

OLIVER CROMWELL.



with honour of those who differ'd from him,  
treated

And on the neck of crowned fortune proud  
Hast rear'd God's trophies, and his work pursued,  
While *Darwen* stream with blood of *Scots* imbrued,  
And *Dunbar* field resounds thy praises loud,  
And *Worcester's* laureat wreath. Yet much remains  
To conquer still; peace hath her victories  
No less renown'd than war: new foes arise  
Threatning to bind our souls with secular chains:  
Help us to save free conscience from the paw  
Of hireling wolves, whose gospel is their maw.

*Cromwell's* own sentiments concerning this matter will be best known from the following paragraphs in his speech at the dissolution of the parliament in 1654. He is rebuking them for their conduct, and among other things, says, \* When you were entered upon this government  
\* raveling into it, if you had gone upon that foot of ac-  
\* count, to have made such good and wholesome provi-  
\* sions for the good of the people of these nations, for  
\* the settling of such matters in things of religion as  
\* would have upheld and given countenance to a  
\* godly ministry, and yet would have given a just liberty  
\* to godly men of different judgments, men of the same  
\* faith with them, that you call the Orthodox ministry  
\* in *England*, as it is well known the independants  
\* are, and many under the form of baptism, who are  
\* found in the faith, only may perhaps be different in  
\* judgment in some lesser matters, yet as true christians  
\* both looking at salvation, only by faith in the blood  
\* of Christ, men professing the fear of God, and hav-  
\* ing recourse to the name of God as to a strong tower;  
\* I say you might have had opportunity to have settled  
\* peace and quietness amongst all professing godliness,  
\* and might have been instrumental, if not to have  
\* healed the breaches, yet to have kept the godly of all  
\* judgments from running one upon another, and by  
\* keep-

treated them with much respect and decency,  
and

‘ keeping them from being overrun by a common enemy, rendered them and these nations both secure, happy, and well satisfied.

‘ Are these done, or any thing towards them? Is there  
‘ not yet upon the spirits of men a strange itch? Nothing  
‘ will satisfy them, unless they can put their finger upon  
‘ their brethrens consciences, to pinch them there. To  
‘ do this was no part of the contest we had with the  
‘ common adversary; for religion was not the thing at  
‘ the first contested for, but God brought it to that issue  
‘ at last, and gave it to us by way of redundancy, and  
‘ at last it proved to be that which was most dear to us;  
‘ and wherein consisted this, more than in obtaining  
‘ that liberty from the tyranny of the bishops to all species  
‘ of Protestants, to worship God according to their  
‘ own light and consciences? for want of which many  
‘ of our brethren forsook their native countries to seek  
‘ their bread from strangers, and to live in howling wildernesses;  
‘ and for which also, many that remained  
‘ here were imprisoned and otherwise abused. Those  
‘ who were found in the faith, how proper was it for  
‘ them to labour for liberty, for a just liberty, that men  
‘ should not be trampled upon for their consciences? Had  
‘ not they laboured but lately under the weight of persecutions,  
‘ and was it fit for them to sit heavy upon others?  
‘ Is it ingenuous to ask liberty and not to give it? What greater  
‘ hypocrisy, than for those who were oppressed by the bishops,  
‘ to become the greatest oppressors themselves as soon as their  
‘ yoke was removed! I could wish that they who call for liberty  
‘ now also, had not too much of that spirit if the power were  
‘ in their hands. As for prophane persons, blasphemers,  
‘ such as preach sedition, the contentious railers, evil  
‘ speakers, who seek by evil words to corrupt good manners,  
‘ persons of loose conversations, punishment from the civil  
‘ magistrate ought to meet with them;

and openly declar'd for their toleration and  
encou-

' them; because if these pretend conscience, yet walk-  
' ing disorderly, and not according but contrary to the  
' Gospel, and even to natural light, they are judged of  
' all, and their sins being open, makes them subjects  
' of the magistrate's sword, who ought not to bear it in  
' vain (x).—In a speech to the parliament, *Ap.* 3, <sup>(x) Whit-</sup>  
1657, speaking concerning the provision made for liber- <sup>lock, p.</sup>  
ty of conscience in the *Humble Petition and Advice*, he <sup>614.</sup>  
made use of the following words: ' As to the liberty of  
' men professing godliness under the variety of forms  
' amongst us, you have done that, which was never  
' done before; and I pray God it may not fall upon the  
' people of God as a fault in them, or any sort of them,  
' if they do not put such a value on what was done,  
' as never was put on any thing since Christ's time, for <sup>(y) Thur-</sup>  
' such a catholick interest of the people of God (y).— <sup>loe, vol. 2</sup>  
These extracts fully evince *Cromwell's* judgment <sup>p. 757.</sup>  
concerning liberty of conscience, and make appear how  
zealous he indeed was to restrain men from injuring each  
other on the account of it: in a word, they shew the  
man, the christian, the politician. I must add,

3. That *Oliver's* practice was conformable to his  
principles. Though he declar'd himself an independant,  
(I suppose as that sect avowedly appear'd for civil and re-  
ligious liberty in its greatest latitude) yet he confin'd not  
his respect or his favours to them. He had great latitude  
of judgment, and conceiv'd that as 'twas very possible  
for wise and good men to differ in their opinions about  
many points of religion, yet being equally wise and ho-  
nest, they ought equally to be regard'd. We find  
*Manton* praying at his inauguration, *Baxter* preaching at  
his court, and *Calamy* consulted by him on a point of  
importance. These were all Presbyterians, little affected  
to him, but inclin'd to the royal interest. The episco-  
pals, many of them, were treated with equal favour  
and regard, though the party, as such, gave him a good  
deal of trouble. He sent for *Dr. Brownrig*, bishop of  
*Exeter*,

encouragement. Indeed he constantly was a friend to religious liberty, and an opposer

*Exeter*, and treated him with great outward respect; he saved *Dr. Barnard's* life at the taking *Drogheda*, and made him his almoner; he invited archbishop *Usher* to him, and us'd him with much civility, conversing with him about the advancement of the protestant religion at home and abroad, and promising him to make him a lease of some parts of the lands belonging to the archbishoprick of *Armagh* for 21 years, and at his death, order'd him to be inter'd with great pomp in *Westminster Abby*, where *Dr. Barnard* to a crowded audience preach'd his funeral sermon (z). *Dr. Parr*, from whom I have the above particulars, imputes *Cromwell's* ordering this so honourable an interment of *Usher's* corps, not only to a desire of advancing his own honor, but likewise to a design of punishing *Usher's* relations, by putting them to a great expence: but as he owns the Protector contributed two hundred pounds towards it, it is no way likely he had any such view. He probably thought, that sufficient for a very honourable burial—those who exceeded it were to blame themselves, if they were hurt thereby.—But 'tis very hard to please those who are dispos'd to find fault.—*Cromwell's* behaviour was also equally humane to such as profess'd opinions uncountenanc'd by the many in *Britain*. To *John Biddle* who was a Unitarian, and the father of the *English* Unitarians, in his banishment into *Silly*, he allowed a pension of an hundred crowns a year; he admitted *Jeremiah White* and *Peter Sterry* into the number of his chaplains, though few speculated more freely on the ends and designs of providence, or more out of the then road; and *John Goodwin*, though hated by the fashionable ecclesiastics, continued constantly in his favour (a).

Nor were even the Romanists that behav'd well, desitute of it. *Sir Kenelm Digby*, a man of quality, a philosopher and a catholic, in a letter to Mr. secretary *Thurloe*, dated *Paris*, *March* 18, 1656, has the following

(z) Part's  
Life of Usher,  
p. 73,  
& seq. fo-  
lio. Lond.  
1686.

(a) Life of  
Mr. Thom.  
Firmin, p.  
20. 8vo.  
Lond. 1698.

poser of spiritual tyranny. No wonder therefore that, in the first part of life, he fell (1) in

ing passages. ' My obligations to his Highness are so great, that it would be a crime in me to behave myself so negligently as to give cause for any shadow of the least suspicion, or to do any thing that might require an excuse or apology. I make it my business every where, to have all the world take notice how highly I esteem myself obliged to his Highness, and how passionate I am for his service, and for his honor and interest, even to the exposing of my life for them. — I should think my heart were not an honest one, if the blood about it were not warmed with any the least imputation upon my respects and my duty to his Highness, to whom I owe so much (b).' Mr. Prynne informs us, ' that Sir *Kenelm* was lodged by *Cromwell* at *Whiteball*; that he suspended penal laws against Romish priests; and protected several of them under his hand and seal (c).' 'Tis certain he wrote to the governor of *Virginia* in favour of Lord *Baltimore*, proprietor of *Maryland*, who was of the Catholic persuasion (d).

(b) *Thurloe*, vol. iv.

p. 592.

(c) True and perfect narrative of what was done, spoken by, and between

Mr. Prynne, &c. the 7th of May, 1659. 4to. without name of place or printer.

(d) *Thurloe*, vol. i. p. 724.

I will add but one thing more. 'Tis well known *Cromwell* (though a believer in the prophecies of the Old Testament, equally, to say the least, with our modern controvertists) was willing to harbour the *Jews* in *England*; that he appointed an assembly of men of several professions to consider of the expediency of it; and that 'twas not owing to him or his council that it prov'd lost labour.—All these considerations will, if I mistake not, abundantly make appear the truth of the text, that bigotry made no part of *Cromwell's* character. It may be said this was all policy—If it was—it was not the policy of bigots, who break through every tie, human and divine, in order to promote their implanted nonsense and superstition.

(v) *He fell in with the puritans, greatly oppressed.*]

The controversy between the prelatists and the puritans will

in with the puritans, greatly oppressed

will appear in the eyes of most, in this age, as very trifling and insignificant, and very unworthy of the attention which was formerly paid it. They were a stiff kind of men, many of them, of both sides; of weak capacities or uninform'd understandings; who impos'd unreasonably, and resisted obstinately. But on the behalf of the puritans, it must be observ'd that they always pretended conscience for their nonconformity, and, probably, as they were very great sufferers, they were sincere. This recommended them, as well as their regular behaviour, to the favour of the friends of civil liberty, and the lovers of virtue. These gentlemen, probably, saw many of their weaknesses, but they approv'd their honesty and integrity, us'd their interest to bring them out of trouble, and generously help'd them in their difficulties.—Another thing there was, which added not a little to their worth in the eyes of many of the most considerable persons of those times, namely, an adherence to the doctrinal articles of the church of *England*, in the sense of the compilers, and a strong aversion to popery. The gentry then read and wrote books of religious controversy, and very many of them became converts to their party.—But however, this is certain, the puritans were sufferers; sufferers for conscientiously refusing to practise things which, in the opinion of their adversaries, were of no worth or value; sufferers from men who pretended to be rulers and governors in a Protestant church, whose doctrines they disown'd in many points; and sufferers from men whose pride, ambition, avarice, and cruelty had render'd them odious to the people in general, as well as to wise and considerate men. These persons here meant were court-prelates, in the times of *James* and *Charles* I.

Such as for their bellies sake  
Creep, and intrude, and climb into the fold.



# OLIVER CROMWELL.

account of their nonconformity, and appear'd



Of other care they little reck'ning make,  
Than how to scramble at the shearers feast,  
And shove away the worthy bidden guest.  
Blind mouths! that scarce themselves know how to hold  
A sheep-hook, or have learn'd ought else the least  
That to the faithful herdsman's art belongs!  
What recks it them? what need they? They are sped;  
And when they list, their lean and flashy songs  
Grate on their scrannel pipes of wretched straw;  
The hungry sheep look up, and are not fed,  
But swoln with wind, and the rank miff they draw,  
Rot inwardly, and foul contagion spread:  
Besides what the grim wolf with privy paw  
Daily devours apace, and nothing said. MILTON.

This is not merely a poetical exaggeration. Soon after these lines were written, a polite writer, who declares himself no puritan, speaks of these bishops in the following terms.—‘ The more our prelates enjoy, the  
‘ more still they seek; and all our three kingdoms are  
‘ grown so sick of their pride, injustice, and pragma-  
‘ tical faction, that scarce any remedy but blood-let-  
‘ ting can cure them. We find in Scripture the most  
‘ high and holy offices of religion performed by princes,  
‘ even amongst and above the greatest of priests; but  
‘ we scarce find any instance at all where priests inter-  
‘ meddled with any state affairs, either above or under  
‘ princes: and yet with us now the employing and en-  
‘ trusting of clergymen in temporal businesses, is held as  
‘ politick as it was in the times of popery: although no  
‘ time could ever justly boast of that use. But to pass  
‘ over temporal businesses, how violently have our bi-  
‘ shops been in their own canons about ceremonies, and  
‘ indifferencies? and what disturbance hath that vio-  
‘ lence produced? They strive as for the beauty and  
‘ glory of religion, to bring in the same forms of li-  
‘ turgy, the same posture of the communion-table, the  
‘ same gesture at the communion, &c. in all our three

as their advocate both in the country and the

‘ dominions; as if uniformity were always beautiful:  
 ‘ and yet we see all men are created with several faces,  
 ‘ voices, and complexions, without any deformity to  
 ‘ the universe.’—This is a fine thought, and has been  
 frequently made use of by our best advocates for toleration.—The same writer, speaking of the same men, asserts that ‘ in the high commission, at the council table,  
 ‘ in the star chamber, and the chequer, churchmen are  
 ‘ now more active than in their own consistories, and  
 ‘ yet their ambition further aims (as ’tis said) to the chancery, court of requests, &c. which could not chuse  
 ‘ to redound to the scandal of religion, the obstruction  
 ‘ of justice, and vexation of the subject. If there were  
 ‘ not learned and skilful men enough in policy and law  
 ‘ to serve the King, unless divinity were depriv’d of  
 ‘ some of her followers, there were some seeming umbrage why the King might borrow of God; but when  
 ‘ God’s more holy office is neglected, that the King’s  
 ‘ meaner may be the worse administr’d, the world much  
 ‘ gazes and wonders at it (e).’ We may naturally  
 enough imagine men thus ambitious of power and wealth were not overstocked with real religion! and we may, with like probability, conclude that pretences to conscience in their eyes had but an odd and ridiculous appearance! and consequently that the persons who made use of them to justify their opposition to their injunctions would fare little the better for them. I will not enter here into the particulars of the hardships and oppressions which the puritans underwent from the prelates, and the high hand which was carried by these latter over all who opposed them. I have given a sketch of it elsewhere, and must refer such as may be uninform’d thither (f). However, the following short litany may not be unacceptable even to those who are best acquainted with their transactions. It shews their behaviour, and the sense men then had of it.

(e) Discourse concerning Puritans, p. 36. 4to. Lond. printed for Robert Bostock, 1641.

(f) Historical and critical account of the Life of Charles I. p. 222.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



parliament; that he censur'd and oppos'd

the

## *A short LETANIE.*

From this prelatical pride and their lordly dignities ;  
From all their superstitious vanities, and Popish ceremonies ;

From their late innovations and mischievous policies ;  
From the cursed oath *ex officio*, and high commission cruelties ;

From their Romish clergy, and the peoples unfufferable miseries ;

From their greedy gainful visitations, and the churchwardens enforced perjuries ;

From their most corrupt courts, and their vexing slaveries ;

From all their fruitless shadows, and hypocritical formalities ;

From their hatred and malice against Christ's appointed ordinances ;

From their needlessly devised and troublesome conformities ;

From all their illegal proceedings, and oppressing tyrannies ;

From their sinful synods, and all their papal hierarchy ;

From *Abaddon* and *Ape'lyon*, with their priests, jeffuits, their favourites, and all their furious blasphemers ;

*Good Lord, deliver us (g).*

(g) Short View of the prelatical church of England, p. 39. 4<sup>o</sup>.

From this little satyr appears how ill beloved, yea hated, these men were, how tyrannical and cruel they were deem'd ! To oppose these then must have been meritorious ; to screen such as were oppress'd by them, humane and charitable. *Cromwell* did this as much as lay in his power. When the puritans were like to come into trouble, he would attend on *Dr. Williams*, bishop of *Lincoln*, at *Bugden*, and speak in their behalf (h). What his success was appears not : probably but small, for *Williams* being jostled out of favour by the arts of

(h) See *Phillips's Life of Williams*, p. 290. 8vo. Cambridge 1700.

the court-prelates; and even prefer'd freedom in a foreign land (M) to the slavery and oppression

*Laud*, and *Buckingham*, to the latter of whom he had been a servile tool, was fearful of shewing favour, lest his adversary might get a farther advantage over him.— In the parliament 1628, we find *Cromwell* in a ' committee concerning the pardons granted by the King [Charles] since the last session, to certain persons questioned in parliament. And we are told that he inform'd the house what countenance the bishop of *Winchester* did give to some persons that preached flat popery, and mentioned the persons by name, and how by this bishop's means, *Mauwaring* (who by censure the last parliament, was disabled for ever holding any ecclesiastical dignity in the church, and confessed the justice of that censure) is nevertheless preferred to a rich living. If these be the steps to church-preference (said he) what may we expect (i) ?' But these efforts of his, as well as of the greatest and best men in the house of commons, were ineffectual. They were protected by *Charles*, who would rather dissolve a parliament, than degrade a court-prerogative-bishop.

(i) Rushworth's Collections, vol. 5, p. 655. folio, Lond. 1659.

(M) *He prefer'd freedom in a foreign land to the slavery and oppression which were continually increasing at home.* *Charles I.* and his ministers were bent on introducing uniformity in religion, and despotism in the state. They met with opposition in parliaments—and therefore parliaments for a long course of years were laid aside. Private persons spoke and wrote against the measures pursued; but they got nothing for their pains but fines, imprisonments, or barbarous corporal punishments. The courts of law indeed were open—but they were properly the King's courts. The prerogative was what they maintain'd and enlarged to the utmost of their power, and no man had a chance to succeed in them, who would not submit to it. In short, the judges declared in effect that the King's will was law, and that the property of the subject, was indeed his. After *Hampden's* stand

pression which were continually increasing

stand in the great case of ship-money, and the infamous determination of the much greater part of the bench, all was profound silence; a dead calm succeeded; every one look'd about him for a place of refuge and retreat from the iron hand of power. For it was manifest there was no redress, and that the men at the helm were for an unrelenting severity. Let us hear *Laud*, in his epistle dedicatory to his master. ' God forbid I should ever offer to persuade a persecution in any kind, or practise it in the least.—But on the other side, God forbid too, that your Majesty should let both laws and discipline sleep for fear of the name of persecution, and in the mean time let Mr. *Fisher* and his fellows angle in all parts of your dominions for your subjects. If in your grace and goodness you will spare their persons: yet I humbly beseech you to see to it, that they be not suffered to lay either their weels, or bait their hooks, or cast their nets in every stream, lest that temptation grow both too general, and too strong. —Now as I would humbly beseech your Majesty to keep a serious watch upon these fishermen,—so I would not have you neglect another sort of anglers in a shallower water. For they have some ill nets too. And if they may spread them, when, and where they will, God knows what may become of it. These have not so strong a back abroad, as the Romanists have, but that's no argument to suffer them to increase. They may grow to equal strength with number. And factious people, at home, of what sect or fond opinion soever they be, are not to be neglected. Partly because they are so near; and 'tis ever a dangerous fire, that begins in the bed straw; and partly, because all those domestick evils, which threaten a rent in church or state, are with far more safety prevented by wisdom, than punished by justice.' Thus speaks the great director of affairs to his master. A little afterwards, he says, ' I know it is a great ease to let every

at home. But his intentions were frustrated,  
and,

‘ thing be as it will, and every man believe, and do as  
 ‘ he list. But whether governors in state or church do  
 ‘ their duty therewhile, is easily seen, since this is an  
 ‘ effect of no King in *Israel*. The church of Christ  
 ‘ upon earth may be compared to a hive of bees, and  
 ‘ that can be no where so steadily plac’d in this world,  
 ‘ but it will be in some danger. And men that care  
 ‘ neither for the hive nor the bees, have yet a great  
 ‘ mind to the honey. And having once tasted the  
 ‘ sweets of the churches maintenance, swallow that for  
 ‘ honey, which one day will be more bitter than gall  
 ‘ in their bowels. Now the King and the priest, more  
 ‘ than any other, are bound to look to the integrity of  
 ‘ the church in doctrine and manners, and that in the  
 ‘ first place. For that’s by far the best honey in the  
 ‘ hive. But in the second place, they must be careful  
 ‘ of the churches maintenance too, else the bees shall  
 ‘ make honey for others, and have none left for their  
 ‘ own necessary sustenance, and then all’s lost. For  
 ‘ we see it in daily and common use, that the honey is  
 ‘ not taken from the bees, but they are destroyed first.  
 ‘ Now in this great and busy work the King and the  
 ‘ priest must not fear to put their hands to the hive,  
 ‘ though they be sure to be stung. And stung by the  
 ‘ bees, whose hive and house they preserve. It was  
 ‘ King *David’s* case, (God grant it be never yours)  
 ‘ They came about me (saith the Psalm 118) like bees.  
 ‘ This was hard usage enough, yet some profit, some  
 ‘ honey might thus be gotten in the end: and that’s the  
 ‘ King’s case. But when it comes to the priest, the  
 ‘ case is alter’d; They come about him like wasps, or  
 ‘ like hornets rather; all sting, and no honey there.  
 ‘ And all this many times for no offence, nay some-  
 ‘ times for service done them, would they see it.—  
 ‘ Now one thing more let me be bold to observe to your  
 ‘ Majesty, in particular, concerning your great charge,  
 ‘ the church of *England*. ’Tis in an hard condition.

‘ She

and, with the rest of the nation, he was made

She professes the antient catholick faith; and yet the Romanist condemns her of novelty in her doctrine. She practises church government, as it hath been in use in all ages, and in all places, where the church of Christ hath taken any rooting, both in, and ever since the Apostles times; and yet the seperatist condemns her for antichristianism, in her discipline. The plain truth is, she is between these two factions, as between two millstones; and unless your Majesty look to it, to whose trust she is committed, she'll be ground to powder, to an irreparable both dishonour, and loss to this kingdom. And 'tis very remarkable, that while both these pres hard upon the church of *England*, both of them cry out upon persecution, like froward children, which scratch, and kick, and bite, and yet cry out all the while, as if themselves were killed (*k*). These passages, long as they are, will be deem'd curious by many. They discover the man, and his measures, and shew what his adversaries had to expect. Lord *Strafforde*, though of a much more elevated understanding, came not a whit behind the prelate in rigour. His own account of part of a speech at the council board, in *England*, written to his intimate friend, Sir *Christopher Wandesford*, master of the rolls in *Ireland*, will fully shew this. I will give his justification of himself, on the accusation of rigour, at large.—‘ I craved admission to justify myself in some particulars, wherein I had been very undeservedly and bloodily traduc'd. So I related unto them all that had past betwixt myself, Earl of *St. Albans*, *Wilmot*, *Mountmorris*, *Piers*, *Cresby*, and the jury of *Galway*, that hereupon touching and rubbing in the course of my service upon their particulars, themselves and friends have endeavoured to possess the world, I was a severe and an austere hard-conditioned man, rather indeed a basha of *Buda*, than the minister of a pious and christian King. Howbeit, if I were not much mistaken in

(2) Dedication to his conference with Fisher, p. 10---14. Folio. Lond. 1673.

made to feel and fear the yoke of tyranny.

3113-1110 We

' myself, it was quite the contrary, no man could shew  
 ' wherein I had expressed it in my nature, no friend I  
 ' had would charge me with it in my private conversa-  
 ' tion, no creature had found it in the managing of my  
 ' own private affairs, so as if I stood clear in all these  
 ' respects, it was to be confessed by any equal mind  
 ' that it was not any thing within, but the necessity of  
 ' his Majesties service, which enforced me into a seem-  
 ' ing strictness outwardly. And that was the reason in-  
 ' deed, for where I found a crown, a church, and a  
 ' people spoil'd, I could not imagine to redeem them  
 ' from under the pressure with gracious smiles and gentle  
 ' looks, it would cost warmer water than so. True it  
 ' was, that where a dominion was once gotten and set-  
 ' tled, it might be stayed and kept where it was by soft  
 ' and moderate counsels, but where a sovereignty (be it  
 ' spoken with reverence) was going down the hill, the  
 ' nature of men did so easily slide into the paths of un-  
 ' controul'd liberty, as it would not be brought back  
 ' without strength, not to be forced up the hill again  
 ' but by vigour and force. And true it was indeed, I  
 ' knew no other rule to govern by, but by reward and  
 ' punishment, and I must profess that where I found a  
 ' person well and intirely set for the service of my mas-  
 ' ter, I should lay my hand under his foot, and add to  
 ' his respect and power all I might, and that where I  
 ' found the contrary, I should not handle him in my  
 ' arms, or sooth him in his untoward humour, but if he  
 ' came in my reach, so far as honour and justice would  
 ' warrant me, I must knock him soundly over the  
 ' knuckles, but no sooner he become a new man, ap-  
 ' ply himself as he ought to the government, but I also  
 ' change my temper, and express myself to him, as  
 ' unto that other, by all the good offices I could do him.  
 ' If this be sharpness, if this be severity, I desired to be  
 ' better instructed by his Majesty and their lordships,  
 ' for in truth it did not seem so to me; however, if I  
 ' were



# OLIVER CROMWELL.

We know little more of *Cromwell's* ac-  
tions,

‘ were once told, that his Majesty liked not to be thus  
 ‘ served, I would readily conform myself, follow the  
 ‘ bent and current of my own disposition, which is to  
 ‘ be quiet, not to have debates and disputes with any.  
 ‘ Here his Majesty interrupted me and said, that was no  
 ‘ severity, wished me to go on in that way; for, if I  
 ‘ served him otherwise, I should not serve him as he  
 ‘ expected from me (l).’ Thus it was the welfare of  
 the church, and the necessity of his Majesty’s service, re-  
 quired persecution and oppression, and forc’d these men,  
 if you’ll believe them, to act contrary to their own in-  
 clinations.—But whatever was the occasion, the go-  
 vernment, of which they had the chief direction, was  
 very severe. ‘ The severe censures in the star-chamber,  
 ‘ and the greatne’s of the fines, and the rigorous pro-  
 ‘ ceedings to impose ceremonies, the suspending and  
 ‘ silencing multitudes of ministers, for not reading in  
 ‘ the church the book for sports to be exercis’d on the  
 ‘ Lord’s day, caused many of the nation both ministers  
 ‘ and others to sell their estates and to set sail for *New*  
 ‘ *England*, where they held a plantation by patent from  
 ‘ the King (m).’ ‘ The Lord *Broske*, and the Lord *Say*  
 ‘ and *Seale* had actually pitched upon a spot in *New*  
 ‘ *England*, whither they purposed to transport them-  
 ‘ selves, when the excesses of the court threatened de-  
 ‘ struction to the freedom of their country. In 1635,  
 ‘ the two lords sent over Mr. *George Fenwicke* to pre-  
 ‘ pare a retreat for them and their friends, in conse-  
 ‘ quence of which a little town was built, and called by  
 ‘ their joint names *Saybrooke* (n).’ Among others, thus  
 inclined, was the patriot *Hampden*, and his cousin *Oli-*  
*ver Cromwell* (o): but being on board they were stop’d  
 by a proclamation, whereby ‘ all merchants, masters  
 ‘ and owners of ships were forbidden to set forth any  
 ‘ ship or ships with passengers, till they first obtained  
 ‘ special licence on that behalf from such of the lords  
 ‘ of his Majesties privy council as were appointed for

(l) Letters  
and Dif-  
patches, vol.  
ii. p. 20.

(m) Rush-  
worth, vol.  
ii. p. 410.

(n) Wal-  
pole’s Cata-  
logue of  
Royal and  
Noble Au-  
thors, vol. i.  
p. 276.

(o) Neale’s  
History of  
the Puri-  
tans, p. 333.  
vol. ii. 8vo.  
Lond. 1733.

tions, (his opposition to the draining (N) of the fens, projected by a powerful nobleman, excepted) till the parliament summoned, through

‘ the business of foreign plantations.’ Nothing could be more barbarous than this! To impose laws on men which in conscience they thought they could not comply with; to punish them for their non-compliance, and continually revile them as undutiful and disobedient subjects by reason thereof, and yet not permit them peaceably to depart and enjoy their own opinions in a distant part of the world, yet dependant on the sovereign: to do all this, was base, barbarous and inhuman. But persecutors of all ages and nations are near the same: they are without the feelings and without the understandings of men. *Cromwell* or *Hampden* could have given little opposition to the measures of *Charles* in the wilds of *North America*. In *England* they engag’d with spirit against him, and he had reason to repent his hindring their voyage. May such at all times be the reward of those who attempt to rule over their fellow men with rigour: may they find that they will not be slaves to Kings or priests! But that they know the rights, by nature conferr’d on them, and will assert them! This will make princes cautious how they give themselves up to arbitrary counsels, and dread the consequences of them. And may every minister, who forgets or tramples on the laws of humanity, have his character at least as much branded as are *Sirafford’s* and *Laud’s*.

(N) He opposed the draining of the fens, &c. ] The fenny country reaches sixty eight miles from the borders of *Suffolk*, to *Wainfleet* in *Lincolnshire*, and contains some millions of acres in the four counties of *Cambridge*, *Huntington*, *Northampton* and *Lincoln*. The draining of it had frequently been considered and debated in Parliament in former times; but, though deem’d useful, was laid aside, through fear that it would soon return to its old state, like the *Pontine marshes* in *Italy*, after their draining.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



through necessity, by *Charles I.* in *November*, one thousand six hundred and forty; a parliament ever memorable in the *British* annals!

ing (p). 'The Earl of *Bedford*, and divers of the principal gentlemen, whose habitations confined upon the fens, and who, in the heat of summer, saw vast quantities of lands, which the fresh waters overflowed in the winter, lie dry and green, or drainable: whether it was publick spirit, or private advantage, which led them thereunto, a stranger cannot determine; they make propositions unto the King to issue out commissions of sewers to drain those lands, and offer a proportion freely to be given to the crown for its countenance and authority therein: and as all these great and publick works must necessarily concern multitudes of persons, who will never think they have exact justice done to them for that small pretence of right they have unto some commons; so the commissioners, let them do what they can, could never satisfy such a body of men. And now the King is declared the principal undertaker for the draining; and by this time the vulgar are grown clamorous against these first popular lords and undertakers, who had joined with the King in the second undertaking, though they had much better provisions for them than their interest was ever before: and the commissioners must by multitudes and clamours be withstood; and, as a head of this faction, *Mr. Cromwell*, in the year 1639, at *Huntington*, appears; which made his activity so well known to his friend and kinsman, *Mr. Hampden*, that he, in this parliament, gave a character of *Cromwell*, of being an active person, and one that would fit well at the mark (q).'  
 —*Dugdale* tells us, 'his boldness and eloquence in this business gained him so much credit, as that, soon after, being necessitated, through his low condition, to quit a country farm, which he held at *St. Ives*, and betake himself to mean lodgings in *Cambridge*, the schismatical party there chose him

(p) *Cambden's Britannia* by *Gibson*, vol. i. c. 480, 490. Fol. Lond. 1722.

(q) *Warwick*, p. 250.

nals! ever to be celebrated and admired by the lovers of liberty, for its resolution, firmness

him a burges, for their corporation, in that unhappy long parliament, which began at *Westminster* the third of *November 1640* (r).? What were *Cromwell's* motives to oppose the drainings of the fens is hard, at this distance of time, to say. Ignorance of its utility, suppos'd injury to the common people, who pastured their cattle there, or a desire of ingratiating himself with the country to whom this project was odious, may separately or jointly have occasioned it. However his successful opposition gave his enemies an occasion afterwards to dignify him with the title of 'Lord of the Fenns (s).' The reader may perhaps be pleased to hear, that, long since the times I am now writing of, 'the county of *Cambridge* hath received a very considerable improvement, by draining the fens in the isle of *Ely*, a work that was carried on at a vast expence, but has at last turned to double account, both in gaining much ground, and mending the rest; and also in refining and clearing the air of this country (z).' It were to be wished we had more of such improvements.—Since writing the above, I find an act of parliament, passed in the year 1649, for draining the great level of the fens. In the preamble of this act it is said, 'That whereas the said great level, by reason of frequent overflowings of the rivers — have been of small and uncertain profit, but (if drained) may be improved and made profitable, and of great advantage to the commonwealth, and the particular owners, &c.—And whereas *Francis*, late Earl of *Bedford*, did undertake the said work, and had ninety-five thousand acres, parcel of the said great level, decreed and set forth, in *October*, in the thirteenth year of the reign of the late King *Charles*, in recompense thereof; and he and his participants, and their heirs and assigns, have made a good progress therein, with expence of great and vast sums of money;

(r) Short View, p. 460.

(s) Mercurius Aulicus, Nov. 5. 1643.

(z) Gibbon's Cambden, vol. i. p. 479.

ness and public spirit! In this memorable period *Oliver* joined the glorious band (o) of

pa-

ney;—but by reason of some late interruptions, the works there made have fallen into decay: Be it therefore enacted and ordained, that *William*, now Earl of *Bedford*, &c. in recompence of the aforesaid charge and adventure, and for bearing the charge of draining, and maintaining the works from time to time, shall have and enjoy the said whole ninety-five thousand acres.

*Oliver Cromwell*, Lieutenant-General, is appointed one of the commissioners, to hear, determine, order, adjudge and execute all such things as are prescribed by this act.—Another act passed *May* 26, 1654, under the protectorship of *Cromwell*, for the same purpose (u). From these acts of parliament it plainly appears, that, whatever opposition was made to *Lord Bedford*, and the other undertakers, yet it hindered not their proceedings; that the parliament of the commonwealth of *England* was attentive to the publick utility; and that *Cromwell* was wise enough to overcome his prejudices, and join in promoting the common good.

(u) Scobell's collection of acts and ordinances, *May* 1649, and *May* 1654. Fol. Lond. 1658.

(o) *He joined the glorious band of patriots*] 'Tis well known how hateful the measures of the court were at the meeting of this parliament. Every thing unpopular, unjust and odious had been put in practice, in order to be able to do without parliaments, and to rule by will and pleasure. Those who had suffered for their opposition to injustice and tyranny, were now the favourites of the people. They were applauded and caressed every where; nor could any, with safety, open their mouths against them. In this temper were the people when *Charles*, by dire necessity, was compelled to call this ever-memorable parliament. The people rejoiced; they hoped the time was now come when they might utter their grievances with impunity, and expect redress. Accordingly they, for the most part, took great care in the choice of their representatives, as esteeming it of the utmost importance to their religion and liberties. Whoever hoped for the honour of a

patriots, who wished well to their king, their country, their religion and laws. Here, almost

seat in parliament must, at least, have promised fair, and appeared hearty in the cause of his country. Men of this character were not wanting; and, though some friends to tyranny, and future apostates, found means to enter, the majority were honest and upright, of fair intentions and firm resolutions.—Lord *Clarendon*, speaking of them, says, “In the house of commons were many persons of wisdom and gravity, who being possessed of great and plentiful fortunes, though they were undevoted enough to the court, had all imaginable duty for the King, and affection for the government established by law or antient custom; and, without doubt, the major part of that body consisted of men who had no mind to break the peace of the kingdom, or to make any considerable alteration in the government of church and state; and therefore all inventions were set on foot from the beginning to work on them and corrupt them, by suggestions “of the dangers which threatened all that was precious to the subject in their liberty and their property, by overthrowing or overmastering the law, and subjecting it to an arbitrary power, and by countenancing popery to the subversion of the protestant religion;” and then, by infusing terrible apprehensions into some, and so working upon their fears “of being called in question for somewhat they had done, by which they would stand in need of their protection;” and raising the hopes of others, “that, by concurring with them, they should be sure to obtain offices, and honours, and any kind of preferment.” Though there were too many corrupted and misled by these several temptations, and others who needed no other temptations than from the fierceness of their own natures, and the malice they had contracted against the church and against the court; yet the number was not great of those in whom the government of the  
rest

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

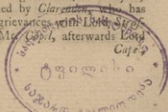
most immediately, *Cromwell* was appointed of a committee, with *Mr. Hampden*, *Mr. Stroode*,  
Alder-

rest was vested, nor were there many who had the absolute authority to lead, though there was a multitude disposed to follow (x). What their views and designs were, the same author tells us——‘ There was observed a marvellous elated countenance in many of the members of parliament before they met together in the house; the same men who, six months before, were observed to be of very moderate tempers, and to wish that gentle remedies might be applied, without opening the wound too wide, and exposing it to the air, and rather to cure what was amiss, than too strictly to make inquisition into the causes and original of the malady, talked now in another dialect both of things and persons; and said that they must now be of another temper than they were the last parliament; that they must not only sweep the house clean below, but must pull down all the cobwebs which hung in the top and corners, that they might not breed dust, and so make a foul house hereafter; that they had now an opportunity to make their country happy, by removing all grievances, and pulling up the causes of them by the roots, if all men would do their duties; and used much other sharp discourse to the same purpose (y).’ And what is there marvellous in this? These men had, by very late and fresh experience, found that the King was obstinately bent on his old courses, cherished the same tools of tyranny, hated the sons of freedom, and even dared to imprison men for doing their duty in parliament: I say, they had lately had new proofs of it, and therefore were not to be blamed for their sharp discourse, or sharper actions.

(x) History of the Rebellion, vol. 1. p. 184.

(y) Id. p. 171.

Immediately, on the opening of this parliament, we find great complaints made of grievances, not only by *Mr. Pymme* (alone mentioned by *Clarendon*, who has confounded the business of grievances with *Lord Straford's* affair) but also by *Mr. Cooper*, afterwards *Lord*



Alderman *Pennington*, Sir *Edward Hungerford*, Mr. *Kirton*, Mr. *Holles*, Mr. *Valentine*,  
Mr.

*Capel*, Sir *Henry Bellasis*, Sir *John Wray*, Sir *Hugh Cholmely*, Sir *Philip Musgrave*, Sir *Francis Seymour*, Sir *John Packington*, Sir *Thomas Barrington*, Sir *John Colepepper*, and others. The grievances were threefold; 1. some against the privilege of parliament; 2. others to the prejudice of religion; and, 3. another sort against the liberty of the subject. These were enlarged on with no unnatural warmth; their illegality and hardship manifested; the instruments of oppression pointed out, and their demerits displayed; and remedies for removing the grievances were mentioned, *viz.* by declaring the law where it was doubtful, and providing for the execution of the law where it was clear (z). And to the honour of the house of commons it must be said, that they went briskly to work, and accomplished many of their good intentions, uninfluenced by hope, unawed by fear. They impeached the King's chief ministers, *Strafford* and *Laud*, and brought them deservedly to the block; they declared the judgment of the judges to be false and illegal; they abolished those vile courts of the high-commission and star-chamber, in which so many oppressive and cruel sentences had been passed; they gave liberty to those in captivity for their opposition to the prelates; they provided for the frequency of parliaments, the disuse of which had given boldness to the courtiers; they clipped the wings of the ecclesiastics, and brought them nearer to their first institution; and they would have done many other things, equally useful to that age and posterity, had they not been deserted by some, opposed by others, and hindered by royal authority. But they continued their endeavours notwithstanding, and, for the public good, exposed their fortunes, themselves, and their posterity, to the civil war; in which, had they been overcome, they would all have been treated as traitors and rebels. Mr. *Neville* had reason then for characterizing them, at least  
twenty

(z) Rushworth, vol. iv. p. 21—  
24.



# OLIVER CROMWELL.



Mr. Peard, Lord Digby, Mr. St. John, Mr. Selden, Mr. Rous, Mr. Pym, Mr. Bagshaw, and

twenty or thirty of them, 'as men of high and  
' unquestionable reputation, who having stood their  
' ground in seven parliaments before, which, in  
' the two last kings reigns, [this was wrote in the  
' time of Charles II.] had been dissolved abruptly and  
' in wrath, and having resisted the fear of imprison-  
' ment and great fines for their love to *England*, as well  
' as the temptation of money and offices to betray it,  
' both inferred by the wicked counsellours of that age,  
' tending both to the ruin of our just rights, and the  
' detriment of their master's affairs; I say, having con-  
' stantly, and with great magnanimity and honour,  
' made proof of their integrity, they had acquired so  
' great a reputation, that not only the parliament, but  
' even almost the whole people, stuck to them and  
' were swayed by them——without fear of being  
' deserted, or, as we say, left in the lurch (a).'

(a) Plato  
Redivivus,  
p. 289.  
12mo. 2d ed.

Let us hear *Milton* rehearsing their praises in 1642. After having mentioned their birth, their education, and their virtue unfulfilled amidst great discouragements and temptations, he adds, 'Thus, in the midst of all  
' disadvantages and disrespect (some also at last not  
' without imprisonment and open disgraces in the cause  
' of their country) having given proof of themselves  
' to be better made and framed by nature to the love  
' and practice of virtue, than others, under the holiest  
' precepts and best examples, have been headstrong and  
' prone to vice; and having, in all the trials of a firm  
' ingrafted honesty, not oftner buckled in the conflict  
' than given every opposition the foil; this, more-  
' over, was added, by favour from heaven, as an orna-  
' ment and happiness to their virtue, that it should be  
' neither obscure, in the opinion of men, nor eclipsed  
' for want of matter equal to illustrate itself; God and  
' man consenting, in joint approbation, to chuse them  
' out, as worthiest above others, to be both the great  
' re-

and Mr. *Grimston*, to take into consideration

' reformers of the church, and the restorers of the  
 ' commonwealth. Nor did they deceive that expectation  
 ' which, with the eyes and desires of their country,  
 ' was fixt upon them; for no sooner did the force of  
 ' so much united excellence meet in one globe of bright-  
 ' ness and efficacy, but, encountering the dazled resist-  
 ' ance of tyranny, they gave not over, though their  
 ' enemies were strong and suttle, till they had laid her  
 ' groveling upon the fatal block: with one stroke win-  
 ' ning again our lost liberties and charters, which our  
 ' forefathers, after so many battles, could scarce main-  
 ' tain. And meeting next, as I may so resemble, with  
 ' the second life of tyranny (for she was grown an am-  
 ' biguous monster, and to be slain in two shapes) guard-  
 ' ed with superstition, which hath no small power to  
 ' captivate the minds of men otherwise most wise, they  
 ' neither were taken with her mitred hypocrisy, nor  
 ' terrified with the push of her bestial horns, but, break-  
 ' ing them immediately, forced her to unbend the pon-  
 ' tifical brow, and recoil: which repulse, only given to  
 ' the prelates (that we may imagine how happy their re-  
 ' moval would be) was the producement of such glori-  
 ' ous effects and consequences in the church, that, if I  
 ' should compare them with those exploits of highest  
 ' fame in poems and panegyrics of old, I am certain it  
 ' would but diminish and impair their worth, who are  
 ' now my argument; for those antient worthies deli-  
 ' vered men from such tyrants as were content to in-  
 ' force only an outward obedience, letting the mind be  
 ' as free as it could; but these have freed us from a  
 ' doctrine of tyranny that offered violence and corrup-  
 ' tion even to the inward persuasion: they set at liber-  
 ' ty nations and cities of men, good and bad mixed to-  
 ' gether; but these, opening the prisons and dungeons,  
 ' called out of darkness and bonds the elect martyrs and  
 ' witnesses of their Redeemer: they restored the body  
 ' to ease and wealth; but these the oppressed conscience

to

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

the petitions of *Leighton* and *Lilburn*\*, who had

65  
 \* Journal of the house of commons, Nov. 9, 1640.

‘ to that freedom which is the chief prerogative of the  
 ‘ Gospel; taking off those cruel burthens imposed not  
 ‘ by necessity, as other tyrants are wont for the safe-  
 ‘ guard of their lives, but laid upon our necks by the  
 ‘ strange wilfulness and wantonness of a needless and  
 ‘ jolly persecutor called *indifference*. Lastly, Some of  
 ‘ those ancient deliverers have had immortal praises,  
 ‘ for preserving their citizens from a famine of corn;  
 ‘ but these, by this only repulse of an unholy hierar-  
 ‘ chy, almost in a moment replenished with saving  
 ‘ knowledge their country, nigh famished for want of  
 ‘ that which should feed their souls (b).” This is very  
 just, and admirably expressed; however, ’tis but jus-  
 tice to the reader, to let him know that *Milton* altered  
 his opinion of these very men, on account that their  
 after proceedings, in his judgment, were unsuitable to  
 these glorious beginnings. His words are worth record-  
 ing. ‘ A parliament being called, to redress many  
 ‘ things, as ’twas thought, the people, with great cou-  
 ‘ rage, and expectation to be eased of what discontent-  
 ‘ ed them, chose to their behoof in parliament, such  
 ‘ as they thought best affected to the public good, and  
 ‘ some indeed men of wisdom and integrity; the rest,  
 ‘ (to be sure the greater part) whom wealth or ample  
 ‘ possessions, or bold and active ambition (rather than  
 ‘ merit) had commended to the same place. But when  
 ‘ once the superficial zeal and popular fumes, that acted  
 ‘ their new magistracy, were cooled and spent in them,  
 ‘ strait every one betook himself (setting the common-  
 ‘ wealth behind, his private ends before) to do as his  
 ‘ own profit or ambition led him. Then was justice  
 ‘ delayed, and soon after denied: spight and favour de-  
 ‘ termined all: hence faction, thence treachery, both  
 ‘ at home and in the field: every where wrong and  
 ‘ oppression: foul and horrid deeds committed daily, or  
 ‘ maintained in secret, or in open. Some who had  
 ‘ been called from shops and warehouses, without other

(b) Milton's  
 Prose  
 Works, vol.  
 i. p. 230.

had been so inhumanly used for their opposi-

' merit, to sit in supreme councils and committees (as  
 ' their breeding was) fell to huckster the common-  
 ' wealth. Others did thereafter as men could sooth  
 ' and humour them best; so he who would give most,  
 ' or under covert of hypocritical zeal, insinuate basest,  
 ' enjoyed unworthily the rewards of learning and fide-  
 ' lity; or escaped the punishment of his crimes and  
 ' misdeeds. Their votes and ordinances, which men  
 ' looked should have contained the repealing of bad  
 ' laws, and the immediate constitution of better, re-  
 ' founded with nothing else, but new impositions, tax-  
 ' es, excises; yearly, monthly, weekly. Not to reck-  
 ' on the offices, gifts and preferments, bestowed and  
 ' shared among themselves.—And, if the state were  
 ' in this plight, religion was not in much better; to  
 ' reform which, a certain number of divines were cal-  
 ' led, neither chosen by any rule or custom ecclesiastical,  
 ' nor eminent for either piety or knowledge above  
 ' others left out, only as each member of parliament,  
 ' in his private fancy, thought fit, so elected one by  
 ' one. The most part of them were such as had preach-  
 ' ed and cried down, with great shew of zeal, the ava-  
 ' rice and pluralities of bishops and prelates; that one  
 ' cure of souls was a full employment for one spiritual  
 ' pastor, how able soever, if not a charge rather above  
 ' human strength. Yet these conscientious men (ere  
 ' any part of the work done for which they came to-  
 ' gether, and that on the public salary) wanted not  
 ' boldness, to the ignominy and scandal of their pas-  
 ' tor-like profession, and especially of their boasted  
 ' reformation, to seize into their hands, or not unwill-  
 ' ingly to accept (besides one, sometimes two or more  
 ' of the best livings) collegiate masterships in the uni-  
 ' versities, rich lectures in the city, setting sail to all  
 ' winds that might blow gain into their covetous bo-  
 ' soms; by which means these great rebukers of non-  
 ' residence, among so many distant cures, were not  
 ' ashamed

tion to the prelates; and we need not but with

ashamed to be seen so quickly pluralists and non-residents themselves, to a fearful condemnation, doubtless, by their own mouths. And yet the main doctrine, for which they took such pay, and insisted upon with more vehemence than gospel, was but to tell us, in effect, that their doctrine was worth nothing, and the spiritual power of their ministry less available than bodily compulsion; persuading the magistrate to use it, as a stronger means to subdue and bring in conscience than evangelical persuasion; distrusting the virtue of their own spiritual weapons, which were given them, if they be rightly called, with full warrant of sufficiency to pull down all thoughts and imaginations that exalt themselves against God. But while they taught compulsion without convincement, which, not long before, they complained of, as executed unchristianly against themselves, these intents are clear to have been no better than antichristian; setting up a spiritual tyranny, by a secular power, to the advancing of their own authority above the magistrate, whom they would have made their executioner, to punish church-delinquencies, whereof civil laws had no cognizance. And well did their disciples manifest themselves to be no better principled than their teachers; trusted with committee-ships, and other gainful offices, upon their commendations for zealous, and (as they stuck not to term them) godly men, but executing their places like children of the devil, unfaithfully, unjustly, unmercifully, and, where not corruptly, stupidly. So that between them the teachers, and these the disciples, there hath not been a more ignominious and mortal wound to faith, to piety, to the work of reformation, nor more cause of blaspheming given to the enemies of God and truth, since the first preaching of reformation (c).—A stronger contrast, per-

(c) Milton's  
Prose  
Works, vol.  
ii. p. 44.

with zeal he joined in it. The tyranny of the bishops had been long odious in his eyes, and

haps, never was than what is formed by these two passages of the same writer. However, in this latter, we may observe it is allowed they began well, tho' their after-deeds are represented as black, odious and detestable. Be they what they may, I am not concerned in their vindication. Those of them that fall in my way I will represent fairly, censure candidly, and leave them to the determination of the reader. That there was a glorious band of patriots in the house of commons, in the beginning of the long parliament, is too evident to be denied. *Milton*, by mentioning their actions, known facts, has established their character beyond all contradiction. Elated by prosperity, influenced by the priesthood, ensnared by wealth and power, or heated by opposition, 'tis very possible many things were done by them which can never be justified, though allowances be made for times of disorder and confusion: more especially the permitting their clergy to tyrannize over the consciences of men, like the prelates that went before them. This latter, indeed, seems to have given *Milton* the greatest disgust, who was a mortal foe to the dominion of priests, and a zealous assertor of the rights of conscience. He could not bear that the same kind of men should complain of and exercise oppression; that those, in whose cause he had drawn his pen, should defeat all his hopes, and manifest, that 'twas not liberty, but power, they had been contending for.

Because you have thrown off your prelate lord,  
 And with stiff vows renounc'd his liturgy,  
 To seize the widow'd whore plurality,  
 From them, whose sin ye envied, not abhorr'd;  
 Dare ye for this adjure the civil sword  
 To force our consciences that Christ set free,  
 And ride us with a classic hierarchy. —

## OLIVER CROMWELL.



and therefore he adhered to their enemies in all their attacks on them: though he was far enough from having formed a plan of a different government. 'I can tell you, Sirs,' said he to Sir *Thomas Chickely* and Sir *Philip*

*Montesquieu* seems to account well for a behaviour which appears at first sight so unnatural. 'It is a principle, says he, that every religion which is persecuted becomes itself persecuting; for as soon as by some accidental turn it arises from persecution, it attacks the religion which persecuted it; not as a religion, but as a tyranny [\*].'

[\*] Spirit of Laws, vol. ii. p. 130.

The parliament however rectified their conduct, even on this head, to the fore displeasure of the lordly Presbyters, and kept them from misusing and oppressing their brethren. So that upon the whole, though they were not free from faults, yet were they, in the eyes of the knowing and unprejudiced, 'the ablest noblest set of people this nation ever produced.' But let us appeal to facts.—'When *Van Tromp* set upon *Blake* in *Foleston-bay*, the parliament had not above thirteen ships against threescore, and not a man that had ever seen any other fight at sea, than a merchant ship and a pyrate, to oppose the best captain in the world, attended with many others in valour and experience not much inferior to him. Many other difficulties were observed in the unsettled state: few ships, want of money, several factions, and some who to advance particular interests betrayed the publick. But such was the power of wisdom and integrity of those that sat at the helm, and their diligence in chusing men only for their merit, was blessed with such success, that in two years our fleets grew to be as famous as our land armies; the reputation and power of our nation rose to a greater height, than when we possessed the better half of *France*, and the Kings of *France* and *Scotland* were our prisoners. All the States, Kings and

• War-  
wick's Mc-  
moirs, p.  
177.

lip *Warwick*, ' what I would not have;  
' though I cannot what I would not have the  
case of many others I suppose at that time.  
He appeared very zealous for the remon-  
strance (P) of the state of the kingdom,  
which,

' potentates of *Europe*, most respectfully, not to say sub-  
' missively, sought our friendship; and *Rome* was more  
' afraid of *Blake*, than they had been of the great King  
' of *Sweden*, when he was ready to invade *Italy* with a  
' hundred thousand men. This was the work of those,  
' who, if our author [*Filmer*] say true, thought basely  
' of the publick concernments; and believing things  
' might be well enough managed by others, minded  
' only their private affairs. These were the effects of  
' the negligence and ignorance of those, who being sud-  
' denly advanced to offices, were removed before they  
' understood the duties of them (d). — Mr. *Trenbore*  
celebrates their actions in the following manner. ' The  
' parliament governed for five years, who made their  
' name famous through the whole earth, conquered  
' their enemies in *England*, *Scotland* and *Ireland*; re-  
' duced the kingdom of *Portugal* to their own terms;  
' recovered our reputation at sea; overcame the *Dutch*  
' in several famous battles; secured our trade, and ma-  
' naged the publick expences with so much frugality,  
' that no estates were gained by private men upon the  
' publick miseries; and at last were passing an act for  
' their own dissolution, and settling the nation in a free  
' and impartial commonwealth; of which the army  
' being afraid, thought it necessary to dissolve them (e).'

The bare recital of these facts is an elogium sufficient:  
and every man who knows them to be facts, will be  
disposed to think favourably of those who performed  
them; and to contemn a writer who has the insolence  
and ill breeding (though a frequenter of courts and a lo-  
ver of the polite arts) to call them ' a pack of knaves (f).'

(P) *The remonstrance of the state of the kingdom.*] This  
remonstrance deserves very particular notice, as it oc-  
ca-

(d) *Sidney*  
of Govern-  
ment, p.  
222. Folio.  
Lond. 1693.

(e) *Short*  
*History of*  
*standing Ar-*  
*mies*, p. 19.  
8vo. 1739.  
And notes  
(xx), (ll),  
(mm).

(f) *Lanf-*  
*downe's*  
*Works*, vol.  
ii. p. 204.  
12mo. 1736.



## OLIVER CROMWELL.



which, after long and sharp debates, was carried in the house of commons, and ordered to be printed *December 15th, 1641.* On the sixth of this month he was appointed of a committee with *Mr. Pymme, Mr. Lisle,*

caused high debates in the house of commons; divisions among the members, and perhaps hastened the resolution of the impeachment and intended seizure of the Lord *Kimbolton* and the five members, which soon issued into a war between his Majesty and the two houses. 'The house of commons, says *Whitlock*, prepared a remonstrance of the state of the kingdom; wherein they mentioned all the mistakes, misfortunes, illegalities, and defaults in government, since the King's coming to the crown, the evil counsels and counsellors, and a malignant party, that they have no hopes of settling the distractions of this kingdom, for want of a concurrence with the lords. This remonstrance was somewhat roughly penned, both for the matter and the expressions in it, and met with great oppositions in the house; infomuch as the debate of it lasted from three o'clock in the afternoon, till ten o'clock the next morning; and the sitting up all night caused many through weakness or weariness to leave the house, and Sir *B. R.* [*Sir Benjamin Rudyard* I suppose] to compare it to the verdict of a starved jury (g).'

(g) Memorials, p. 51.

The truth is, this remonstrance contains a concise history of the enormities of *Charles's* government, the evil counsellors who had, and did guide him, and the mischiefs which they had been meditating against the house itself for their opposition to, and correction of abuses. 'The oppositions, obstructions and other difficulties, says the remonstrance, wherewith we have been encountered, and which still lye in our way with some strength and much obstinacy, are these: The malignant party whom we have formerly described, to be the actors and promoters of all our misery, they have taken heart

*Lisle*, Sir *Guy Palmes*, Lord *Falkland*, *Mt. Strode*, Sir *John Strangeways*, Sir \*\*\* *Ar-myn*, \*\*\* *Hide*; to present some such course to the house, as may be fit to prevent all abuses in the election of members to serve

(b) The Remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom, p. 18. 4to. Lond. 1641.

‘ again; they have been able to prefer some of their  
 ‘ own factors and agents to degrees of honor, to places  
 ‘ of trust and employment even during the parliament.  
 ‘ They have endeavoured to work in his Majesty ill im-  
 ‘ pressions and opinions of our proceedings, as if we had  
 ‘ altogether done our own work, and not his, and had  
 ‘ obtained from him many things very prejudicial to the  
 ‘ crown, both in respect of prerogative and profit (b).’  
 Again—‘ They have sought, by many subtle practices,  
 ‘ to cause jealousies and divisions betwixt us and our  
 ‘ brethren of *Scotland*, by slandering their proceedings  
 ‘ and intentions towards us; and by secret endeavours  
 ‘ to instigate and incense them and us one against an-  
 ‘ other. They have had such a party of bishops and  
 ‘ popish lords in the house of peers as hath caused much  
 ‘ opposition and delay in the prosecution of delinquents,  
 ‘ hindered the proceedings of divers good bills passed in  
 ‘ the commons house, concerning the reformation of  
 ‘ sundry great abuses and corruptions both in church and  
 ‘ state. They have laboured to seduce and corrupt some  
 ‘ of the commons house, to draw them into conspira-  
 ‘ cies and combinations against the liberty of the par-  
 ‘ liament: and by their instruments and agents, they  
 ‘ have attempted to disaffect and discontent his Majes-  
 ‘ ties army, and to engage it for the maintenance of  
 ‘ their wicked and trayterous designs, the keeping up of  
 ‘ bishops in their votes and functions, and by force to  
 ‘ compel the parliament to order, limit and dispose their  
 ‘ proceedings in such manner as might best concur with  
 ‘ the intentions of this dangerous and potent faction.  
 ‘ And when one mischievous design and attempt of  
 ‘ theirs to bring on the army against the parliament  
 ‘ and

serve in the house: and in particular to take into consideration the information given to the house, concerning the election at *Arun- del in Suffex* \*: as he was appointed of many others.

\* Journals of the house of commons.

‘ and the city of *London* had been discovered and prevented, they presently undertook another of the same damnable nature, with this addition to it, to endeavour to make the *Scottish* army neutral, whilst the *English* army, which they had laboured to corrupt and in-venome against us by their false and slanderous suggestions, should execute their malice to the subversion of our religion and the dissolution of our government. Thus they have been continually practising to disturb the peace, and plotting the destruction even of all the King’s dominions, and have employed their emissaries and agents in them all for the promoting of their devilish designs, which the vigilancy of those who were well affected hath still discovered, and defeated before they were ripe for execution in *England* and *Scotland*; only in *Ireland*, which was farther off, they have had time and opportunity to mould and prepare their work, and had brought it to that perfection, that they had possessed themselves of that whole kingdom— if their main enterprize upon the city and castle of *Dublin* had not been detected and prevented.—And certainly, had not God, in his great mercy unto this land, discovered and confounded their former designs, we had been the prologue to this tragedy in *Ireland*, and had by this time been made the lamentable spectacle of misery and confusion (i).’—Lord *Clarendon* gives a large account of the passing this remonstrance, and among other particulars, the following: ‘ They [the leading men in the house of commons] promised themselves they should easily carry it: so that the day it was to be resumed, they entertain’d the house all the morning with other debates, and towards noon call’d for the remonstrance; and it being urg’d by some,

(i) The Remonstrance, &c. P. 22.

others. So that what has been said of his being little known, or taken notice of in the beginning of this parliament, must be with-  
out

‘ some, that it was too late to enter upon it, with much  
‘ difficulty they consented, that it should be enter’d  
‘ upon next morning at nine of the clock; and every  
‘ clause should be debated; for they would not have the  
‘ house resolv’d into a committee, which they believ’d  
‘ would spend too much time. *Oliver Cromwell* (who  
‘ at that time was little taken notice of) ask’d the Lord  
‘ *Falkland*, why he would have it put off, for that day  
‘ would quickly have determined it? He answered, there  
‘ would not have been time enough, for sure it would  
‘ take some debate. The other replied, A very sorry  
‘ one: they supposing, by the computation they had  
‘ made, that very few would oppose it.’ But he quickly  
‘ found he was mistaken. For the debates, as appears  
‘ from the quotation above from *Whitlock*, being very  
‘ long, and the house consenting to adjourn, ‘ As they  
‘ went out of the house, the Lord *Falkland* asked *Oliver*  
‘ *Cromwell* whether there had been a debate? To which  
‘ he answered, he would take his word another time;  
‘ and whispered him in the ear, with some assevera-  
‘ tion, that if the remonstrance had been rejected, he  
‘ would have sold all he had the next morning, and  
‘ never have seen *England* more; and he knew there  
‘ were many other honest men of the same resolution.  
‘ So near was the poor kingdom at that time to its deli-

(1) Vol. ii.  
P. 312.

(2) Journal  
22 Nov.  
1641.

verance (k).’ This reflection is added by his lordship on account of the small majority by which the remonstrance passed, which he says was by nine voices and no more. It is but a trifle; but those who are very positive, should be exact. The numbers for passing the remonstrance were 159; against it, 148 (l); so it pass’d by eleven voices. *Sir Ralph Hopton* read and presented it to his Majesty at *Hampton-Court*, who received him and those who accompanied him from the house well, but desired it might not be published till the house had

his

out foundation.—When the civil war broke out, he adhered to the parliament, raised a troop

his answer. But on the 15th of *December* following it was order'd to be printed by the commons, notwithstanding. The above anecdote indicates the temper and spirit of *Cromwell*, and clearly shews that he was determined no longer to submit to illegal rule ——— The remonstrance itself was indeed a very bold thing, and little less than bidding *Charles* defiance: nor can it much be wonder'd at. They who put it on foot well knew they were the objects of his Majesty's hatred and aversion. What he had attempted against them was apparent; what he intended, they conjectured, and, perhaps, more than he intended. They had no measures now to keep with him, and he us'd as little ceremony with them: For soon after followed his going to the house to seize those whom he deem'd heads of the opposition; his departure from *Whitehall*; the disputes about the militia; the erecting his standard at *Nottingham*; in a word, the civil war. I cannot omit the following passages from *Warwick*; they shew the temper of the times, and the zeal which on both sides was exerted on this memorable occasion. ' Upon the King's  
' return out of *Scotland*, the city of *London*'s splendid  
' entertainment of him, and the discourses that flew in  
' all parts, of the ample satisfaction the King had given  
' (both which they foresaw, before it was put in execution) made them prepare so foul a remonstrance to  
' give the King his first entertainment amongst them,  
' that a blacker libel could not be framed either against  
' his person or government; and it passed so tumultuously two or three nights before the King came to  
' town, that at three of the clock in the morning,  
' when they voted it, I thought, we had all sat in the  
' valley of the shadow of death; for we, like *Joab*'s  
' and *Abner*'s young men, had catched at each others  
' locks, and sheathed our swords in each others bowels,  
' had not the sagacity and great calmness of Mr. *Hamp-*

troop of horse, whom he chose and (Q) disciplined in such manner as rendered them terrible

(m) *Mc-moires*, p. 201.

(n) *History of Great Britain*, vol. i. p. 306.

‘den, by a short speech prevented it, and led us to  
 ‘defer our angry debate until the next morning (m).’  
 This passage does honor to *Hampden's* abilities. Mr.  
*Hume* says, ‘there are many gross falshoods in this re-  
 ‘monstrance (n):’ he ought to have pointed them out,  
 instead of inventing reasons, and suggesting them to  
 have been offered for and against it.

(Q) *He raised a troop of horse, whom he chose and disciplined in such a manner as rendered them terrible to their enemies, &c.*] *Cromwell* adhered to the parliament out of principle and inclination. When therefore they found themselves in danger, and that a war was unavoidable, they put themselves in the best posture of defence, and gave commissions to such members as well as others, as seemed most hearty in the cause. The Earl of *Essex*, the Earl of *Bedford*, the Earl of *Stamford*, Lord *Willoughby of Parham*, the Earl of *Denbigh*, Lord *St. John*, with others of the nobility accepted commissions, and set themselves with zeal to levy forces to support their cause. *Hampden* and *Holles* refused not to bear arms, but raised regiments, placed themselves at their head, and encountered the enemy in the field. As did Sir *Philip Stapylton* and many others of that brave body. To these joined themselves some young gentlemen of rank and fortune, from a sense of duty and fidelity to their country. Mr. *Ludlow*, who was undoubtedly an honest man, delivers his own sense of it at that time in the following manner.  
 ‘I thought it my duty, upon consideration of my age  
 ‘and vigorous constitution, as an *Englishman*, and an  
 ‘invitation to that purpose from my father, to enter  
 ‘into the service of my country, in the army com-  
 ‘manded by the Earl of *Essex*, under the authority of  
 ‘the parliament. I thought the justice of that cause  
 ‘I had engaged in to be so evident, that I could not  
 ‘imagine it to be attended with much difficulty. For  
 ‘though I supposed that many of the clergy, who had  
 ‘been

terrible to their enemies, and advanced his own reputation. None perhaps were ever more

‘ been the principal authors of our miseries, together  
‘ with some of the courtiers, and such as absolutely de-  
‘ pended on the King for their subsistence, as also some  
‘ foreigners would adhere to him; yet I could not think  
‘ that many of the people, who had been long oppressed  
‘ with heavy burdens, and now with great difficulty had  
‘ obtained a parliament, composed of such persons as  
‘ were willing to run all hazards to procure a lasting  
‘ settlement for the nation, would be either such ene-  
‘ mies to themselves, or so ungrateful to those they had  
‘ trusted, as not to stand by them to the utmost of their  
‘ power: at least (though some might not have so much  
‘ resolution and courage as to venture *all* with them,  
‘ yet) that they would not be so treacherous and unwor-  
‘ thy, to strengthen the hands of the enemy against  
‘ those who had the laws of God, nature and reason,  
‘ as well as those of the land, of their side. Soon after  
‘ my engagement in this cause, I met with Mr. *Richard*  
‘ *Fiennes*, son to the Lord *Say*, and Mr. *Charles Fleet-*  
‘ *wood*, son to Sir *Miles Fleetwood*, then a member of  
‘ the house of commons; with whom consulting, it  
‘ was resolved by us to assemble as many young gentle-  
‘ men of the inns of court, of which we then were,  
‘ and others, as should be found disposed to this service,  
‘ in order to be instructed together in the use of arms,  
‘ to render ourselves fit and capable of acting in case  
‘ there should be occasion to make use of us. To this  
‘ end we procured a person experienced in military af-  
‘ fairs to instruct us in the use of arms; and for some  
‘ time we frequently met to exercise at the *Artillery-*  
‘ *Ground in London*. And being informed that the par-  
‘ liament had resolved to raise a life guard for the Earl  
‘ of *Essex*, to consist of an hundred gentlemen, under  
‘ the command of Sir *Philip Stapleton* a member of par-  
‘ liament, most of our company entered themselves  
‘ therein, and made up the greatest part of the said  
‘ guard;

THE LIFE OF

more remarkable for their courage, sobriety and regularity. Indeed the whole army under

guard; amongst whom were Mr. *Richard Fiennes*, Mr. *Charles Fleetwood*, afterwards lieutenant general, major general *Harrison*, colonel *Nathaniel Rich*, colonel *Thomlinson*, colonel *Twifleton*, colonel *Boswell*, major *Whitby*, and myself, with divers others (e). —

Nor was *Cromwell* behind hand in zeal for this cause, as appears from the following passages in the journals of the house of commons. 'Whereas Mr. *Cromwell* hath sent down arms into the county of *Cambridge*, for the defence of that county; it is this day ordered that Sir *Dudley North* shall forthwith pay to Mr. *Cromwell* one hundred pounds, which he hath received from Mr. *Crane* late high-sheriff of the county of *Cambridge*; which said hundred pounds the said Mr. *Crane* had remaining in his hands for coat and conduct money. Ordered that Mr. *Cromwell* do move the lord lieutenant for the county of *Cambridge*, to grant his deputation to some of the inhabitants of the town of *Cambridge* to train and exercise the inhabitants of that town.' This was July 15, 1642. The exact time of his taking a commission I cannot find, though I have looked into many writers for that purpose: it must however have been in the very beginnings of the civil war. For on the 15th of Aug. 1642, Sir *Philip Stapleton* gave an account in the house, from the committee for the defence of the kingdom, that 'Mr. *Cromwell*, in *Cambridgeshire*, had seized the magazine in the castle at *Cambridge*; and had hindered the carrying of the plate from that university. And on the 18th of August a committee was appointed to prepare an order for the indemnity of Mr. *Cromwell*, and Mr. *Walton*, and those that have or shall assist them in the stopping of the plate that was going from *Cambridge* to *York* (f). —

The first rank he held in the army it is agreed on all hands was that of captain of a troop of horse, which he rose and disciplined after such a manner as rendered them,

(e) Ludlow, vol. i. p. 42, & seq.

(f) Journals.



## OLIVER CROMWELL.

under his command, merited and obtained the highest character.—The first action that  
*Cromwell*

them, as well as their after companions, the objects of wonder, admiration, and applause of writers of all parties, in our divided country. Let us hear their testimonies. ‘ At his first entrance into the wars, being  
‘ but captain of horse, he had a special care to get religious men into his troop: these men were of greater  
‘ understanding than common soldiers, and therefore  
‘ were more apprehensive of the importance and consequence of the war; and making not money, but that  
‘ which they took for the publick felicity to be their  
‘ end, they were the more engaged to be valient; for  
‘ he that maketh money his end, doth esteem his life  
‘ above his pay, and therefore is like enough to save it  
‘ by flight, when danger comes, if possibly he can:  
‘ but he that maketh the felicity of church and state  
‘ his end, esteemeth it above his life, and therefore will  
‘ the sooner lay down his life for it. And men of parts  
‘ and understanding know how to manage their business,  
‘ and know that flying is the surest way to death, and  
‘ that standing to it is the likeliest way to escape; there  
‘ being many usually that fall in flight, for one that falls  
‘ in valient fight. These things, it is probable, *Cromwell*  
‘ understood; and that none would be such engaged valient men as the religious. But yet I conjecture,  
‘ that at his first choosing such men into his troop, it  
‘ was the very esteem and love of religious men that  
‘ principally moved him; and the avoiding of those  
‘ disorders, mutinies, plunderings and grievances of the  
‘ country, which debase men in armies are commonly  
‘ guilty of: by this means indeed he sped better than  
‘ he expected. *Aires, Desborough, Berry, Evanston*, and  
‘ the rest of that troop, did prove so valient, that as  
‘ far as I could learn, they never once ran away before  
‘ an enemy. Hereupon he got a commission to take  
‘ some care of the associated counties, where he brought  
‘ this troop, into a double regiment, of fourteen full  
‘ troops;

*Cromwell* undertook was to secure the town of *Cambridge*, for the parliament. As the

King

(g) Reliquie  
Baxterianæ,  
p. 58.

troops; and all these as full of religious men as he could get: these having more than ordinary wit and resolution, had more than ordinary success (g).—*Cromwell's* own account will confirm this. ‘I was a person, says he, that from my first employment was suddenly preferred, and lifted up from lesser trusts to greater, from my first being a captain of a troop of horse, and I did labour (as well as I could) to discharge my trust, and God blessed me as it pleased him, and I did truly and plainly, and then in a way of foolish simplicity (as it was judged by verie great and wise men, and good men too) desired to make use of my instruments to help me in this work; and I will deal plainly with you, I had a verie worthy friend then, and he was a verie noble person, and I know his memorie was verie grateful to you all. Mr. *John Hampden*, at my first going out into this engagement, (I saw) their men were beaten at every hand; I did indeed, and I desired him that he would make some additions to my Lord *Effex's* armie, of some regiments, and I told him I would be serviceable to him, in bringing such men in, as I thought had a spirit, that would do something in the work: this is very true that I tell you, God knows that I lie not. Your troops, said I, are most of them old decayed serving-men and tapsters, and such kind of fellows; and, said I, their troops are gentlemens sons, younger sons, and persons of quality, do you think that the spirits of such base and mean fellows will be ever able to encounter gentlemen, that have honour and courage and resolution in them? Truly I presented him in this manner conscienciously, and truly I did tell him, you must get men of a spirit, and take it not ill what I say, (I know you will not) of a spirit that is likely to go on as far as gentlemen will go, or else I am sure you will be beaten still; I told him so, I did truly.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

King had requested a supply of money from

the

truly. He was a wise and worthy person, and he did think that I talked a good notion, but an impracticable one; truly I told him I could do somewhat in it, I did so, and truly I must needs say that to you (impart it to what you please) I raised such men as had the fear of God before them, and made some conscience of what they did, and from that day forward, I must say to you, they were never beaten, and wherever they were engaged against the enemy, they beat continually (r).—This religion of *Oliver* and his troops; whatever it was, gave matter for raillery to the cavaliers. As for *Noll Cromwell*, said *Marchmont Needham*, he is gone forth in the might of his spirit, with all his train of disciples; every one of whom is as *David*, a man of war, and a prophet; gifted men all, that resolve to their work better than any of the sons of *Levi*, and run quite through *Wales* with their two-edged swords, to convert the gentiles (s). I know not what others may think, but in my opinion the character given by *Cromwell* to his soldiers of religious men, and such as had the fear of God, will be at least as much to their honour in the eyes of posterity, as that which is contained in the following passage is to the soldiery of — in much more modern times. It was remarkable in the late war, that when all the different nations which composed the confederate army, were performing their daily devotions, the — soldiers only, seemed to have no sense of the being of a God (t). This gentleman does not say these daring men, were never beaten, or that they continually beat! The following passage from *Whitlock* is too remarkable to be neglected. *Cromwell* — had a brave regiment of horse of his countrymen, most of them free-holders, and free-holders sons, and who upon matter of conscience, engaged in this quarrel, and under *Cromwell*. And thus being well armed within, by the satisfaction of their own consciences, and with-

(r) Monarchy asserted to be the best form of government, in a conference at Whitehall between *Oliver* and a committee of parliament, p. 38. Lond. 8vo. 1660.

(s) *Mercurius pragmaticus*, May 30, 1648.

(t) *Hanway's Travels*, vol. i. p. 73. in the note 4to. Lond. 1753.

(u) Memo-  
rials, p. 72.

‘ out, by good iron arms, they would as one man, ftand  
 ‘ firmly, and charge desperately (u).’—*Cromwell* is  
 celebrated for his manner of disciplining his fouldiers even  
 by an enemy. ‘ Hi autem initio nec arma tractandi  
 ‘ nec equos gnari, diligentia folertiaque bellatores acer-  
 ‘ rimi evaserunt; equis etenim curandis, nutriendis ac  
 ‘ detergendis indies affuefacti funt, & fi opus foret fi-  
 ‘ mul humicubando; arma infuper polire, nitida &  
 ‘ ufui expedita fervare, loricis optimas induere, feque  
 ‘ caetero armaturae genere communire condocerunt eos  
 ‘ *Cromwellius*. Atque hoc exercitii militaris genere,

(x) Bates's  
Elenchi, p.  
210. pars  
2da.

‘ prae reliquis commilitonum omnibus emicuere virtute  
 ‘ bellica, pluresque ab hofte palmas reportarunt (x).’  
*i. e.* ‘ His men, who in the beginning were unskilful  
 ‘ both in handling their arms, and managing their hor-  
 ‘ fes, by diligence and induftry became excellent fol-  
 ‘ diers; for *Cromwell* ufed them daily to look after, feed  
 ‘ and drefs their horfes; and, when it was needful, to  
 ‘ lie together with them on the ground; and befides,  
 ‘ taught them to clean and keep their arms bright, and  
 ‘ have them ready for fervice; to chufe the beft armour,  
 ‘ and to arm themfelves to the beft advantage. Trained  
 ‘ up in this kind of military exercife, they excelled all  
 ‘ their fellow fouldiers in feats of war, and obtained more  
 ‘ victories over their enemies.’ The following ftrata-  
 gem to try the courage of his troopers in the begin-  
 ning of the war is related by more than one writer.

‘ Upon the firft mufter of his troop, having privily  
 ‘ placed twelve refolute men in an ambufado (it being  
 ‘ near fome of the King's garrifons) upon a fignal, on  
 ‘ the appointed time, and the faid ambufh with a trum-  
 ‘ pet founding, galloped furiously to the body, out of  
 ‘ which fome twenty infantly fled out of fear and dif-  
 ‘ may, and were glad the forfeiture was fo cheap and  
 ‘ eafy; and afhamed of their childish and difgraceful  
 ‘ deferting of their ftation and colours, had not the con-  
 ‘ fidence to request their continuance in his fervice, or  
 ‘ deny

their plate, for its better security; they  
packed

‘ deny or scruple the rendring their horses to them who  
‘ should fight the Lord’s battle in their stead (y).’ I am  
no judge of military affairs: but I think ’tis a maxim  
‘ that good discipline makes good soldiers.’ *Cromwell*  
was quite exact in this, and the behaviour of his army  
was such as merited the greatest praise, even abstracted  
from its valour. Let us hear an eye witness: a panegyrist  
he is; but on this occasion seems to have adhered  
pretty much to the truth.—‘ *Quicquid effuciant in te*  
‘ *dementes Olivari, nauci non facio, religiosissimum*  
‘ *imperatorem, religionis mediis in exercitibus defensor-*  
‘ *rem, protectorem, propagatorem, nemo nisi laudum*  
‘ *tuarum supra modum invidus hic reperitur, qui te non*  
‘ *suspexerit, admiratus fuerit, observantiam summam non*  
‘ *coluerit. Enim vero ubinam terrarum tam religiosus*  
‘ *visus est imperator, tamquam religiosus exercitus? Mi-*  
‘ *ratus ego sum, varias Angliæ provincias tunc pro ne-*  
‘ *gotiorum meorum, vel principis mei Severissimi Ducis*  
‘ *Guldræ Comitis Hæmundæ necessitate peragrans,*  
‘ *eamque militibus tuis refertas, ita quietas, tranquil-*  
‘ *las, pacatas, quasi ne unus quidem in illis miles esset,*  
‘ *sic addictas pietati, quasi monachorum non militum*  
‘ *legiones in pagis ipsarum dispersæ degerent. Ita certa*  
‘ *singulis diebus tum fundendis Deo precibus, tum au-*  
‘ *diendis dei præconiis, erant assignata tempora, milites*  
‘ *ipso adeo modestos, nihilque nisi Deum, pietatem,*  
‘ *religionem, virtutem respirantes, ut ingenuè fatear*  
‘ *cum stupore non mediocri sæpè suspexi. Atque ne*  
‘ *putet hic aliquis velle me blandiri, oleum Olivario*  
‘ *divendere, vel in illius aures instillare, testem Deum*  
‘ *adhibeo, quod sæpissime prædiciarios Olivarii, modò*  
‘ *suprà dictò milites adiens, ne vel inverecundum ver-*  
‘ *bulum unquam ab ullius ex illis ore perceperim, jus-*  
‘ *jurandumque nullum, sed meram humanitatem, ur-*  
‘ *banitatem, pietatem, verecundiam, modestiam ani-*  
‘ *madyerterim. Unde nequaquam in Olivarii militibus*

(y) Flagellum, or the Life, &c. of Oliver Cromwell, p. 24. 12mo. Lond. 1663. Perfect Politician, or a full View of the Life of Oliver Cromwell, p. 4. 3vo. Lond. 1680.

packed up the same, but were prevented from sending it, by the diligence of *Olivier*, who

‘ locum habere potest quod de omnibus aliis jampridem  
‘ decantatum est,

‘ Nulla fides pietasquè viris qui castra sequuntur,

‘ Sed de illis dicendum potius est,

‘ Multa fides pietasquè viris qui castra sequuntur (z).’

(z) Paralle-  
lum Olivæ  
nec non Oli-  
varii per  
Lud. de  
Gand.  
Dom. de  
Brachey, &c.  
Lond. 1656.  
Folio.

*Warwick*, speaking of his army says, ‘ they had all  
‘ either naturally the phanatick humour, or soon imbibed-  
‘ ed it: a herd of this sort of men being by him drawn  
‘ together, he — made use of the zeal and credulity  
‘ of those persons, teaching them, as they too readily  
‘ taught themselves, that they engaged for God, when  
‘ he led them against his vicegerent the King: and  
‘ where this opinion met with a natural courage,  
‘ it made them the bolder, and too oftner the cruel-  
‘ ler: for it was such a sort of men, as killed brave  
‘ young *Cavendish* and many others, after quarter given  
‘ in cold blood. And these men, habited more to spi-  
‘ ritual pride, than carnal riot or intemperance, so con-  
‘ sequently having been industrious and active in their  
‘ former callings and professions, where natural cour-  
‘ age wanted, zeal supplied its place; and at first they  
‘ chose rather to dye than fly; and custom removed fear  
‘ of danger: and afterwards finding the sweet of good  
‘ pay, and of opulent plunder, and of preferment, sui-  
‘ table to activity and merit; the lucrative part made  
‘ gain seem to them a natural member of godliness (a).’  
Though many shades are thrown into *Warwick*’s pic-  
‘ ture, it is still beautiful in comparison of ‘ a dissolute,  
‘ undisciplined, wicked beaten army,’ which *Clarendon*  
tells us the King’s was, when Lord *Hopton* took its  
‘ command: ‘ an army, whose horse, he says, their  
‘ friends feared, and their enemies laughed at; being  
‘ terrible only in plunder, and resolute in running  
‘ away.’

(a) Mé-  
moires, p.  
252.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

85  
 0471055=10  
 047101000

who on this, as well as other (R) occasions, shewed himself an active partizan. In the course

‘ away (b).’ Such would not have been entertained by (b) Vol. iv. Cromwell. I shall close this note with the last writer’s p. 729. character of Cromwell’s army, given before both houses of parliament Sept. 13, 1660: I say Cromwell’s army, for ’tis well known they were the same men, for the most part, who had been formed by him, and fought under his banners. ‘ No other Prince, says the chancellor, in Europe, would be willing to disband such an army; an army to which victory is entailed, and which, humanly speaking, could hardly fail of conquest whithersoever he should lead it.—An army whose order and discipline, whose sobriety and manners, whose courage and success hath made it famous and terrible over the world.—His Majesty knows they are too good Englishmen to wish that a standing army should be kept up in the bowels of their own country; that they who did but in *Bello pacis gerere negotium*, and who whilst an army lived like good husbandmen in the country, and good citizens in the city, will now become really such, and take delight in the benefit of that peace, they have so honestly and so wonderfully brought to pass (c).’ What an eulogium, before those who were best of all able to judge of its truth and propriety! Nothing after this can be added.

(c) Lives of the Lord Chancellors, vol. ii. p. 126. 8vo. Lond. 1712. As high a character is given of these men in the continuation of the Life of Clarendon, vol. ii. p. 40.

(R) They were prevented by the diligence of Oliver, who shewed himself an active partizan.] I intend not to particularize the military exploits of Cromwell, they are sufficiently known. Europe sounded with them; and they will be long talked of. However, as this was his first exploit, it may merit some attention, as well as rectify some mistakes. Great complaint is made of him in the *Querela Cantabrigiensis*, in the following words: ‘ Master Cromwell, burgess for the town of Cambridge, and then newly turned a man of war, was sent down by his masters, above, at the invitation of his masters

course of the war he gave full proof of his bravery and good conduct: at *Marston-Moor* he turned the fortune of the day, and thereby

below (as himself confessed) to gather what strength he could to stop all passages that no plate might be sent: but his designs being frustrated, and his opinion as of an active subtle man, thereby somewhat shaken and endangered, he hath ever since bent himself to work what revenge and mischief he could against us. In pursuit whereof, before that month was expired, down he comes again in a terrible manner with what forces he could draw together, and surrounds divers colleges, while we were at our devotion in our several chappels, taking away prisoners, several doctors of divinity, heads of colleges, —

(d) *Querela Cantabrigiense*, 8vo. p. 181. Lond. 1685.

and these he carries with him to *London* in triumph (d). This story is repeated by the editor of *Dr. Barwick's* life, but by the extract from the journals, in the foregoing note, it appears that his design of stopping the plate intended for the King was not frustrated, and therefore the former part of the story must be without foundation. *Moy* writes, that 'the first action *Cromwell* undertook was to secure the town of *Cambridge* for the parliament, about the middle of *January*. Universities of all places were most apt to adhere to the King's party, esteeming parliaments, and especially this, the greatest depressors of that ecclesiastical dignity, in hope of which they are there nurtured: Upon which reason they were packing up a large quantity of the plate that belonged to all the colleges, to send it away to the King, which would have made a considerable sum. This was foreseen by *Cromwell*; who by a commission from the parliament, and lord general *Essex*, had raised a troop of horse, and came down into that country, with authority to raise more forces as occasion served; he came to *Cambridge* soon enough to seize upon that plate (e).—What the quantity of plate in the whole was, which was packed up for

(e) *History of the Parliament*, b. iii. p. 79. Folio. Lond. 1647.



by obtained great honour to himself, and advantage to his masters. His courage notwithstanding has been called in question (s):

I

for the King, appears not: but the particular pieces sent from *St. John's* college for the purpose, amounted to two thousand sixty five ounces and three fourths (f). So that probably the whole was a good booty. But *Cromwell* seldom did things by halves. 'Whilst I was about *Huntington*, visiting old Sir *Oliver Cromwell*, his uncle and godfather, at his house at *Ramsay*, he told me this story of his successful nephew and godson; that he visited him with a good strong party of horse, and that he had asked him his blessing, and that the few hours he was there, he would not keep on his hat in his presence; but at the same time, he not only disarmed, but plundered him: for he took away all his plate (g).' This was in character: the uncle was treated with proper respect; the cavalier prevented from doing mischief! *Cromwell* well understood his duty.

(f) Barwick's Life, p. 24. 8vo. Lond. 1724.

(g) Warwick, p. 251.

(s) *His courage however has been called in question.*] It has been observed that there is no opinion so absurd as not to have been embraced by some men. The imputation of cowardice to *Cromwell* would not easily have been thought on, by those who had seen or heard of his exploits. But prejudice works wonders, and in a trice levels or exalts characters in the eyes of even wise and understanding men. *Lord Holles* was undoubtedly of this number; but being opposed and oppressed by *Cromwell* and his party, he could see nothing to admire, but every thing to blame in him. 'He engaged in a particular opposition to *Cromwell*, says *Burnet*, in the time of the war: they hated one another equally. *Holles* seemed to carry this too far, for he would not allow *Cromwell* to have been either wise or brave; but often applied *Solomon's* observation to him, that the battle was not to the strong, nor favour to the man of understanding, but that time and chance happened

I have no need to say, without reason.—  
His success procured him friends and reputation;

(b) Burnet,  
vol. i. p.  
251.

‘ to all men (b).’ A fine way of levelling the acts of heroes!—But let us hear *Holles* himself. ‘ However lieutenant general *Cromwell* had the impudence and boldness to assume much of the honor of it [the victory at *Marston-Moor*, in *July*, 1644] to himself, or rather, *Hered* like, to suffer others to magnify and adore him for it (for I can scarce believe he should be so impudent to give it out himself, so conscious as he must be of his own base cowardliness) those who did the principal service that day, were major general *Lefly*, who commanded the *Scots* horse, major general *Crawford*, who was major general to the Earl of *Manchester*’s brigade, and Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, who, under his father, commanded the northern brigade. But my friend *Cromwell* had neither part nor lott in the business: for I have several times heard it from *Crawford*’s own mouth (and I think I shall not be mistaken if I say *Cromwell* himself has heard it from him; for he once said it aloud in *Westminster Hall*, when *Cromwell* passed by him, with a design he might hear him) that when the whole army at *Marston-Moor* was in a fair possibility to be utterly routed, and a great part of it running, he saw the body of horse of that brigade standing still, and to his seeming doubtful which way to charge backward or forward, when he came up to them in a great passion, reviling them with the names of poltroons and cowards, and asked them if they would stand still and see the day lost? Whereupon *Cromwell* shewed himself, and in a pitiful voice said, Major general, what shall I do? He (begging pardon for what he said, not knowing he was there, towards whom he knew his distance as to his superior officer) told him, Sir, if you charge not, all is lost; *Cromwell* answered he was wounded, and was not able to charge (his great wound being a little burn in the neck by the accidental going off behind him of one

tation; but at the same time it was attended

of his soldier's pistols) then *Crawford* desired him to go off the field, and sending one away with him (who very readily followed wholesome advice) led them on himself, which was not the duty of his place, and as little for *Cromwell's* honor, as it proved to be much for the advancement of his and parties pernicious designs. This I have but by relation, yet I easily believe it upon the credit of the reporter, who was a man of honor, that was not ashamed or afraid to publish it in all places. Besides I have heard a parallel story of his valour from another person [colonel *Dalbier*] not inferiour, neither in quality nor reputation, to major general *Crawford*, who told me, that when *Basing House* was stormed, *Cromwell*, instead of leading on his men, stood a good distance off, out of gunshot, behind a hedge. And something I can deliver of him upon my own knowledge, which makes passage for the easier belief of both these relations, and assures me that that man is as errand a coward, as he is notoriously perfidious, ambitious, and hypocritical. This was his base keeping out of the field at *Keinton* battle; where he with his troop of horse came not in, impudently and ridiculously affirming, the day after, that he had been all that day seeking the army and place of fight, though his quarters were but at a village near hand, whence he could not find his way, nor be directed by his ear, when the ordnance was heard, as I have been credibly informed, 20 or 30 miles off; so that certainly he is far from the man he is taken for (i). Mr. *Walpole*, referring to this passage, says 'from the extream good sense of his lordship's speeches and letters, one should not have expected that weak attempt to blast *Cromwell* for a coward. How a judicatory in the temple of fame would laugh at such witnesses as major general *Crawford* and a colonel *Dalbier*! *Cæsar* and *Cromwell* are not amenable to a commission of oyer and terminer (k).

(i) Holles's  
Memoirs, p.  
15, & seq.  
8vo. Lond.  
1699.

(k) Cata-  
logue of roy-  
al and noble  
Authors,  
vol. ii. p. 32.

with

THE LIFE OF  
with the envy and hatred (T) of very  
power

(T) *His success was attended with the envy and hatred of very powerful persons.*] The following passages will enable the reader to understand this. ‘ Colonel Cromwell being made lieutenant general of the earl of Manchester’s army, gave great satisfaction to the commons touching the business of Dennington castle, and seemed (but cautiously enough) to lay more blame on the officers of the lord general’s army, than upon any other. And the point of privilege was debated touching the lords transmitting of a charge from them, before it was brought up to them. This reflected upon lieutenant general Cromwell, of whom the lord general now began to have some jealousies, and was advised to put to his strength to rid Cromwell out of the way, and the means to be used to effect this, was supposed to be by the Scots commissioners, who were not well pleased with Cromwell upon some words which he had spoken (as they apprehended) derogatory to the honor of their nation. One evening very late, Moynard and I were sent for by the lord general to Effex-house, and there was no excuse to be admitted, nor did we know beforehand the occasion of our being sent for: when we came to Effex-house, we were brought to the lord general, and with him were the Scots commissioners, Mr. Hollis, Sir Philip Stapylton, Sir John Meyrick, and divers others of his special friends. After compliments, and that all were set down in council, the lord general, in general terms having mentioned his having sent for them on important business, desired the lord chancellor of Scotland to enter into the detail, which he did in the following manner: Master Moynard and master Whitlock, I can assure you of the great opinion both my brethren and myself have of your worth and abilities, else we should not have desired this meeting with you, and since it is his Excellency’s pleasure that I should acquaint you with the matter upon whilke your coun-

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

powerful persons, whom he soon got the better

' sel is desired, I shall obey his commands, and briefly  
 ' recite the business to you. You ken very wele that  
 ' lieutenant general *Cromwell* is no friend of ours, and  
 ' since the advance of our army into *England*, he hath  
 ' used all underhand and cunning means to take off  
 ' from our honor and merit of this kingdom; an evil  
 ' requital of all our hazards and services: but so it is,  
 ' and we are nevertheless fully satisfied of the affections  
 ' and gratitude of the gude people of this nation in the  
 ' general. It is thought requisite for us, and for the carry-  
 ' ing on of the cause of the twa kingdoms, that this ob-  
 ' stacle or remora may be removed out of the way, whom  
 ' we foresee will otherwise be no small impediment to  
 ' us, and the gude design we have undertaken. He  
 ' not only is no friend to us, and the government of  
 ' our church, but he is also no well-willer to his Ex-  
 ' cellency, whom you and we all have cause to love  
 ' and honour; and if he be permitted to go on in his  
 ' ways, it may, I fear, endanger the whole business;  
 ' therefore we are to advise of some course to be taken  
 ' for prevention of that mischief. You ken very wele  
 ' the accord 'twixt the twa kingdoms, and the union  
 ' by the solemn league and covenant, and if any be an  
 ' incendiary between the twa nations, how is he to be  
 ' proceeded against: Now the matter is, wherein we  
 ' desire your opinions, what you tak the meaning of  
 ' this word *incendiary* to be, and whether lieutenant ge-  
 ' neral *Cromwell* be not sicke an *incendiary*, as is meant  
 ' thereby, and whilke way wud be best to tak to pro-  
 ' ceed against him, if he be proved to be sicke an *in-*  
 ' *cendiary*, and that will clepe his wings from soaring  
 ' to the prejudice of our cause. Now you may ken  
 ' that by our law in *Scotland* we clepe him an *incendiary*  
 ' whay kindleth coals of contention, and raiseth dif-  
 ' ferences in the state to the publick damage, and he is  
 ' *tanquam publicus hostis patriæ*; whether your law be  
 ' the same or not, you ken best who are mickle learned  
 ' therein,

better of, by craft, diffimulation, hypocrisy, and  
the

(l) Whitlock's Memorials, p. 116.

‘ therein, and therefore with the favour of his Excellency we desire your judgments in these points (l).’

*Whitlock* in answer hereunto observed, ‘ that the sense of the word *incendiary* was the same in both nations; but whether *Cromwell* was one depended on proofs; if proofs were wanting, he was none; if such were at hand, he might be proceeded against in parliament.’

He moreover observed, that it became not persons of their honor and authority to appear in any business, especially of an accusation, but such as they saw could be clearly made out, and be brought to the effect intended. *Cromwell's* parts were then described; his interest in the house of commons, and even in the house of peers, and his abilities to manage his own defence to the best advantage. He advised therefore that the matter for the present might be dropt; that the proofs against him might be collected, and then they might consult and advise afresh. *Maynard* concurring in the same opinion, the affair was at a stand, and nothing came of it: ‘ though Mr. *Hollis*, and Sir *Philip Stapylton*, and some others, spake smartly to the business, and mentioned some particular passages, and words of *Cromwell's* tending to prove him to be an incendiary; and they did not apprehend his interest in the house of commons to be

(m) Id. p. 117.

‘ so much as was supposed; and they would willingly have been upon the accusation of him (m).’ This was at the latter end of the year 1644. *Mr. Whitlock* closes his account of this remarkable conversation with the following words: ‘ I had some cause to believe, that at this debate, some who were present, were false brethren, and informed *Cromwell* of all that past among us, and after that *Cromwell*, though he took no notice of any particular passages at that time, yet he seemed more kind to me and *Mr. Maynard* than he had been formerly, and carried on his design more actively of making way for his own advancement (n).’

(n) Id. ibid.

This was the fate of *Cromwell*: envy followed his great  
deeds,

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

the usual arts of men bent on defeating the designs

deeds, and deep designs were laid for clipping his wings, ere he seemed to have done any thing to have deserved such treatment. We need not wonder after this, that he opposed the *Scots*, *Effex* and *Hollis*, and that they entertained a deadly hatred of him.—The charge advanced against *Cromwell* here, was that he was no friend to the *Scots*, and the government of their church, and no well wisher to Lord *Effex*. The charge indeed might be true enough; though a poor foundation for a parliamentary prosecution, at least if justice had taken place. Probable 'tis he thought the business in which he was engaged might have been done without the *Scots*; that they might bring about a peace in conjunction with *Effex*, very different from his wishes; and as for their church government, he, with many other sensible men, had a great disrelish of it. 'Tis well enough known, that when the parliament applied for assistance to the *Scots*, it was granted among other things upon condition of their taking a solemn league and covenant together with the *Scottish* nation, whereby they bound themselves among other particulars, ' to endeavour to bring the churches of God, in the three kingdoms, to the nearest conjunction and uniformity in religion, confession of faith, form of church government, directory for worship and catechizing. And in like manner, without respect of persons, to endeavour the extirpation of popery, prelacy, (that is, church government by arch-bishops, bishops, their chancellors and commissaries, deans, deans and chapters, arch-deacons, and all other ecclesiastical officers depending on that hierarchy) superstition, heresy, schism, profaneness, and whatsoever shall be found to be contrary to sound doctrine and the power of godliness.—And they were also by the same covenant to endeavour with their estates and lives mutually to preserve the rights and priviledges of the parliaments, and the liberties of the kingdoms; and to preserve and defend the King's

Ma-

signs of their foes, and advancing their own (v); by deep dissimulation, I say, and his

(e) Parliamentary History, vol. xii, p. 597, 8vo. Lond. 1753.

‘ Majesty’s person and authority, in the preservation and defence of the true religion and liberties of the kingdoms, that the world might bear witness of their loyalty, and that they had no thoughts or intentions to diminish his Majesty’s just power and greatness (e).’ This covenant was taken by both houses of parliament, Sept. 25, 1643, and all the officers of the army were strictly enjoined to do the same, as well as the people throughout the kingdom. *Cromwell* therefore must have taken it; but in the same manner as men take many other things, much against his mind, though he had art enough then to conceal his dislike: for it cannot be thought but it must be very disagreeable to him to be bound to introduce a discipline his large soul abhorred, and to preserve and defend a prince whom he was to fight against, and whose power and greatness were the objects of his dread. In short, *Cromwell* came not into the schemes of the *Scots*, either religious or political, and consequently was hated by them.

(v) *By craft, dissimulation and hypocrisy, he got the better of his foes.*] No man was ever more taxed with hypocrisy and dissimulation than *Cromwell*: his enemies were continually reproaching him with it; his friends could not deny it; and the truth of history requires it should be fully laid open. For every thing is useful: vices and follies instruct as well as virtues: though wise men only profit by them.—Let us hear the accusations against *Oliver* on this head. ‘ If craft be wisdom, says Mr. *Croley*, and dissimulation wit (assisted both and improved with hypocrisies and perjuries) I must not deny him to have been singular in both; but so gross was the manner in which he made use of them, that as wise men ought not to have believed him at first, so no man was fool enough to believe him at last; neither did any man seem to do it, but those who thought they gained as much by that dissembling, as he



# OLIVER CROMWELL.

his interest in the army, and the house of

com

‘ he did by his. His very actings of godliness grew at  
 ‘ last as ridiculous, as if a player by putting on a  
 ‘ gown, should think he represented excellently a wo-  
 ‘ man, though his beard at the same time were seen by  
 ‘ all the spectators. If you ask me why they did not  
 ‘ hiss, and explode him off the stage, I can only an-  
 ‘ swer, that they durst not do so, because the actors and  
 ‘ door-keepers were too strong for the company. I  
 ‘ must confess that by these arts (how grossly soever ma-  
 ‘ naged, as by hypocritical praying, and silly preaching,  
 ‘ by unmanly tears and whinings, by falsehoods and per-  
 ‘ juries, even diabolical) he had at first the good for-  
 ‘ tune, (as men call it, that is the ill fortune) to attain  
 ‘ his ends; but it was because his ends were so unrea-  
 ‘ sonable, that no human wisdom could foresee them;  
 ‘ which made them who had to do with him believe  
 ‘ that he was rather a well meaning and deluded bigot,  
 ‘ than a crafty and malicious impostor (p).’ Another  
 ‘ writer who also lived in *Cromwell’s* time, and wrote  
 ‘ when he was in the height of his power, expresses him-  
 ‘ self in the following manner: ‘ Had not his highness  
 ‘ had a faculty to be fluent in his tears, and eloquent  
 ‘ in his execrations; had he not had spongie eyes, and  
 ‘ a supple conscience; and besides to do with people of  
 ‘ great faith, but little wit: his courage, and the rest  
 ‘ of his moral virtues, with the help of his janissaries,  
 ‘ had never been able so far to advance him out of the  
 ‘ reach of justice, that we should have need to call for  
 ‘ any other hand to remove him, but that of the hang-  
 ‘ man (q).’ And again—‘ He hath found indeed that  
 ‘ in godliness there is great gain; and that preaching  
 ‘ and praying well managed, will obtain other king-

(p) Discourse  
concerning  
Oliver  
Cromwell,  
p. 38.

(q) Killing  
no Murder,  
p. 6. 4<sup>to</sup>.  
Lond.  
1689\*.

\* *Killing no murder* has been almost universally given to Colonel Titus. But in a narrative touching Colonel *Edward Sexby*, [of whom there is an account in *Clarendon*, vol. vi. p. 640] who lately died a prisoner in the Tower, dated Jan. 20, 1657. O. S. it is said, ‘ that he owned the book called *Killing no Murder*; and said he was still of ‘ that Judgment.’ See *Mercurius Politicus*, No. 399. p. 251. and *Thurloe*, vol. vi. p. 560.

commons, he got the better of all his foes ;

‘ doms, as well as that of heaven. His indeed have  
 ‘ been pious arms ; for he hath conquered most by those  
 ‘ of the church, by prayers and tears. But the truth  
 ‘ is, were it not for our honor to be governed by one  
 ‘ that can manage both the spiritual and temporal sword,  
 ‘ and, Roman like, to have our emperor our high priest,  
 ‘ we might have had preaching at a much cheaper rate,  
 ‘ and it would have cost us but our tythes, which now  
 ‘ costs us all (r).’ These are general declamations.  
 Let us see what facts there are to support them. Lord  
*Helles* speaking of the mutiny in the army on account  
 of some regiments being ordered to go to *Ireland*, by  
 the parliament, has the following passages : ‘ When  
 ‘ they [the officers] had wrought the feat, Sir *Thomas*  
 ‘ *Fairfax* himself came to *London* upon pretence of tak-  
 ‘ ing physick ; *Cromwell*, *Ireton*, *Fleetwood*, *Rainsborough*,  
 ‘ who were members of the house of commons as well  
 ‘ as principal officers of the army, keep the house, that  
 ‘ the soldiers might be left to themselves to fire the more,  
 ‘ run up to extreams, and put themselves into a posture  
 ‘ to carry on their work of rebellion with a high and  
 ‘ violent hand, which had been so handsomely done :  
 ‘ for either they must have appeared in it, and joined  
 ‘ with the soldiers, which had been too gross, or have  
 ‘ stopped it in the beginning, crushed the serpent in the  
 ‘ egg, which had been most easy, but was contrary to  
 ‘ their design. So now they give the business time to  
 ‘ foment, and the rebellion to grow to some head, that  
 ‘ afterwards when they should come amongst them (for  
 ‘ they could not but expect the parliament would send  
 ‘ them down) they might seem to be carryed with the  
 ‘ violence, and to give some way for preventing greater  
 ‘ inconveniencies, and to keep them from extremities  
 ‘ till the monster was formed, and got to that strength  
 ‘ as to protect itself and them, when they might with-  
 ‘ out danger declare for it, which they afterwards did.  
 ‘ In the mean time disclaiming it, blaming the soldiers

(r) Killing  
 no Murder,  
 p. 8.

for it was unsafe, as well as unpopular, to  
 attack

' at that distance (as *Cromwell* did openly in the house,  
 ' protesting, for his part, he would stick to the parlia-  
 ' ment) whilst underhand they sent them encourage-  
 ' ments and directions; for nothing was done there,  
 ' but by advice and countenance from *London*, where  
 ' the whole business was so laid, the rebellion resolved  
 ' upon, and the officers that were in town so deeply  
 ' engaged, that when the full time was come for put-  
 ' ting things in execution, my friend *Cromwell*, who  
 ' had been sent down by the parliament to do good of-  
 ' fices, was come up again without doing any, and he  
 ' who had made those solemn protestations with some  
 ' great imprecations on himself if he failed in his per-  
 ' formance, did, notwithstanding, privily convey thence  
 ' his goods (which many of the independants did like-  
 ' wise, leaving city and parliament as marked out for  
 ' destruction) and then without leave of the house (after  
 ' some members missing him and fearing him gone,  
 ' had moved to have him sent for; whereupon he being,  
 ' as it seems, not yet gone, and having notice of it,  
 ' came and shewed himself a little in the house) did  
 ' steal away that evening, I may say run away post  
 ' down to the army, and presently join in the subscrip-  
 ' tion of a rebellious letter (c).<sup>(1)</sup>——*Burnet* relates the  
 following anecdote on the authority of *Sir Harbottle*  
*Grimston*. ' When the house of commons and the army  
 ' were a quarrelling, at a meeting of the officers it was  
 ' proposed to purge the army better, that they might  
 ' know whom to depend on. *Cromwell* upon that said,  
 ' he was sure of the army; but there was another body  
 ' that had more need of purging, naming the house of  
 ' commons, and he thought the army only could do  
 ' that. Two officers that were present brought an ac-  
 ' count of this to *Grimston*, who carried them with  
 ' him to the lobby of the house of commons, they be-  
 ' ing resolved to justify it to the house. There was  
 ' another debate then on foot: *Grimston* observed

(1) *Memoirs*  
 P. 28.



attack a man crowned with victories, and

' it, and said he had a matter of privilege of the high-  
 ' est sort to lay before them: it was about the being and  
 ' freedom of the house. So he charged *Cromwell* with  
 ' the design of putting a force on the house. He had  
 ' his witnesses at the door, and desired they might be  
 ' examined. They were brought to the bar, and jus-  
 ' tified all that they had said to him, and gave a full  
 ' relation of all that had passed at their meetings.  
 ' When they withdrew, *Cromwell* fell down on his  
 ' knees, and made a solemn prayer to God, attesting  
 ' his innocence, and his zeal for the service of the  
 ' house: he submitted himself to the providence of  
 ' God, who it seems thought fit to exercise him with  
 ' calumny and slander, but he submitted his cause to  
 ' him. This he did with great vehemence, and with  
 ' many tears. After this strange and bold preamble, he  
 ' made so long a speech, justifying both himself and the  
 ' rest of the officers, except a few that seemed inclined  
 ' to return back to *Egypt*, that he wearied out the house,  
 ' and wrought so much on his party, that what the  
 ' witnesses had said was so little believed, that had it  
 ' been moved, *Grimston* thought that both he and they  
 ' would have been sent to the *Tower*. But whether  
 ' their guilt made them modest, or that they had no  
 ' mind to have the matter much talked of, they let it  
 ' fall: and there was no strength in the other side to  
 ' carry it further. To complete the scene, as soon as ever  
 ' *Cromwell* got out of the house, he resolved to trust  
 ' himself no more amongst them; but went to the ar-  
 ' my, and in a few days he brought them up, and forced  
 ' a great many from the house (t).<sup>2</sup> In a pamphlet en-  
 ' titled ' A true narrative of the occasions and causes of  
 ' the late lord general *Cromwell's* anger and indignation  
 ' against lieutenant colonel *George Joyce* (sometimes cor-  
 ' net *Joyce*) who secured the King at *Holmby*,' reprinted  
 ' in the eighth vol. of the *Harleian Miscellany*, we have  
 ' several particulars, which shew how dextrously *Crom-*  
 ' well

(t) Burnet,  
vol. i. p. 67.

applauded as a saint and an hero, by the soldiers and the people.

Though

well managed his mask, and practised 'one of the maxims which the Devil, in a late visit upon earth, left to his disciples, which is, when once you are got up, to kick the stool from under you (u).' After the King, says this writer, was seized by *Joyce*, notice was taken that *Cromwell* lifted up his hands in the parliament, and called God, angels, and men to witness that he knew nothing of *Joyce's* going for the King. Thereupon the said *Joyce* asked *Cromwell* what made him to speak such words? And whether he intended to do as the King had done before him, viz. swear and lye? And bid him mark what would be the end of such things; cautioning him to take heed and beware of such actions: but he slighted those warnings, and soon after flattered the said *Joyce* again with tears of repentance.—The said *Joyce* protesting against the purging of the parliament, was threatened by *Cromwell* to be destroyed, and when he gave him reasons against dissolving the parliament he was very angry.—Being about to buy *Finkle Park* in *Hampshire*, and having generously offered to part with all or any part of it again to *Richard Cromwell*; *Oliver* took him in his arms, and told him that himself, and his son, and family, were more beholden to him than to all the world besides, and therefore bad him go on and prosper. Upon this *Joyce* went the next morning about it, and there being a full committee [the *Park* belonged to the crown] he was just upon the point of contracting for the said *Park*, when on a sudden in came *Richard*, his father then overtopping all in power, with three lawyers with him, and required them to proceed no further in it, in regard it was his own inheritance, and no park, as was supposed. Whereupon *Joyce* informed the committee of the whole discourse that had passed between the general, his son, and himself the night before; upon

(u) Tom Jones.

Though the parliament had in many places  
been

which he fell upon him in foul words; saying Sirrah, firrah, hold your tongue, or I shall make you repent the time you were born; which the committee perceiving, desired them to withdraw; and since that time never durst meddle with the park any further. Whereupon, and his bearing testimony against *Cromwell's* being made Protector, endeavours were used to ruin him. And to that purpose his lieutenant (who before had accused him, but could make nothing of it) was sent for by *Cromwell*, and encouraged to prosecute him again, and contrary to the custom and course of the army, privately appointed officers, and such as he could trust in such an affair, to take the lieutenant's then deposition against *Joyce*: and they took his deposition, who swore falsely that he should hear him say, that he was sorry that *Lockyer* had not pistolled *Cromwell*; and thereupon sent him to prison without bail, and order was given that he should be kept close prisoner, which accordingly was done; and afterwards cashiered. The lieutenant who had prosecuted, applying to *Cromwell* for preferment as he had been promised, was told that he had not dealt like a christian with *Joyce*: he thereupon replying, he had done nothing but what he had been commanded by him, was thrust out of his chamber by *Cromwell*, and bad go as a knave as he was (x).

(x) Harleian Miscellany, vol. vii.

I will add a relation or two from *Ludlow*, who knew the man, and has drawn his character, in some things, with great exactness. Speaking concerning *Fairfax's* declining to command the army against the *Scots*, who were about to invade *England* in behalf of the title of *Charles II.* he goes on in the following manner: † Upon this lieutenant general *Cromwell* pressed, that notwithstanding the unwillingness of the Lord *Fairfax* to command upon this occasion, they would yet continue him to be general of the army; professing for himself, that he would rather chuse to serve under him

been successful, the war was like to continue  
this

' in his post, than to command the greatest army in  
 ' *Europe*. But the council of state not approving that  
 ' advice, appointed a committee of some of themselves  
 ' to confer farther with the general in order to his satisfac-  
 ' tion. This committee was appointed upon the  
 ' motion of the lieutenant general, who acted his part  
 ' so to the life, that I really thought him in earnest;  
 ' which obliged me to step to him as he was withdraw-  
 ' ing with the rest of the committee out of the council  
 ' chamber, and to desire him, that he would not in  
 ' compliment and humility obstruct the service of the  
 ' nation by his refusal; but the consequence made it  
 ' sufficiently evident that he had no such intention.  
 ' The committee having spent some time in debate with  
 ' the Lord *Fairfax* without any success, returned to the  
 ' council of state, whereupon they ordered the report  
 ' of this affair to be made to the parliament. Which  
 ' being done, and some of the general's friends inform-  
 ' ing them, that though he had shewed some unwill-  
 ' ingness to be employed in this expedition himself,  
 ' yet being more unwilling to hinder the undertaking of  
 ' it by another, he had sent his secretary, who attended  
 ' at the door, to surrender his commission, if they  
 ' thought fit to receive it; the secretary was called in,  
 ' and delivered the commission, which the parliament  
 ' having received, they proceeded to settle an annual  
 ' revenue of five thousand pounds upon the Lord *Fair-*  
 ' *fax*, in consideration of his former services, and then  
 ' voted lieutenant general *Cromwell* to be captain gen-  
 ' eral of all their land forces, ordering a commission  
 ' forthwith to be drawn up to that effect, and referred  
 ' to the council of state to hasten the preparations for  
 ' the northern expedition. A little after as I sat in the  
 ' house, near general *Cromwell*, he told me, that hav-  
 ' ing observed an alteration in my looks and carriage  
 ' towards him, he apprehended that I entertained some  
 ' suspicions of him; and that being perswaded of the


this was occasioned partly by the strength of  
the

tendency of the designs of us both to the advance-  
 ment of the publick service, he desired that a meet-  
 ing might be appointed, wherein with freedom we  
 might discover the grounds of our mistakes and mis-  
 apprehensions, and create a good understanding be-  
 tween us for the future. I answered, that he discover-  
 ed in me what I had never perceived in myself; and  
 that if I troubled him not so frequently as formerly,  
 it was either because I was conscious of that weight  
 of business that lay upon him, or that I had nothing  
 to importune him withal upon my own or any other  
 account; yet since he was pleased to do me the honor  
 to desire a free conversation with me, I assured him  
 of my readiness therein. Whereupon we resolved to  
 meet that afternoon in the council of state, and from  
 thence to withdraw to a private room, which we did  
 accordingly in the Queen's guard-chamber, where he  
 endeavoured to perswade me of the necessity incum-  
 bent upon him to do several things that appeared ex-  
 traordinary in the judgment of some men, who in  
 opposition to him took such courses as would bring  
 ruin upon themselves, as well as him and the publick  
 cause, affirming his intentions to be directed entirely  
 to the good of the people, and professing his readi-  
 ness to sacrifice his life in their service. I freely ac-  
 knowledged my former dissatisfaction with him and  
 the rest of the army, when they were in treaty with the  
 King, whom I looked upon as the only obstruction to  
 the settlement of the nation; and with their actions  
 at the rendezvous at *Ware*, where they shot a soldier  
 to death, and imprisoned divers others upon the ac-  
 count of that treaty, which I conceived to have been  
 done without authority, and for sinister ends. Yet  
 since they had manifested themselves convinced of  
 those errors, and declared their adherence to the com-  
 monwealth, tho' too partial a hand was carried both  
 by the parliament and themselves, in the distribution  
 of



the King; partly by the divisions in parliament,

of preferments and gratuities, and too much severity  
 exercised against some who had formerly been their  
 friends, and as I hoped would be so still, with other  
 things that I could not entirely approve, I was con-  
 tented patiently to wait for the accomplishment of  
 those good things which I expected, till they had  
 overcome the difficulties they now laboured under,  
 and suppressed their enemies that appeared both abroad  
 and at home against them; hoping that then their  
 principles and interest should lead them to do what was  
 most agreeable to the constitution of a commonwealth,  
 and the good of mankind. He owned my dissatis-  
 faction with the army whilst they were in treaty with  
 the King, to be founded upon good reasons, and ex-  
 cused the execution done upon the soldier at the ren-  
 devouz, as absolutely necessary to keep things from  
 falling into confusion; which must have ensued upon  
 that division, if it had not been timely prevented.  
 He professed to desire nothing more than that the go-  
 vernment of the nation might be settled in a free and  
 equal commonwealth, acknowledging that there was  
 no other probable means to keep out the old family  
 and government from returning upon us; declaring  
 that he looked upon the design of the Lord in this  
 day to be the freeing of his people from every bur-  
 den, and that he was now accomplishing what was  
 prophesied in the 110th Psalm; from the considera-  
 tion of which he was often encouraged to attend the  
 effecting those ends, spending at least an hour in the  
 exposition of that Psalm (y).—Cromwell must have  
 had a peculiar knack at dissimulation, when he was ca-  
 pable of thus imposing on Ludlow, who had many times  
 before found himself deceived by him! And he must  
 have been a master in this art, who could still deceive,  
 and still find means to be trusted by the same persons:  
 as trusted he was by the republican party, and many  
 other honest men, till he broke through all forms, and



THE LIFE OF

ment, and among the commanders of their  
armies;

boldly seized the sovereignty. The arts made use of to bring this about, will tend to heighten our idea of his capacity in this respect, and shew him in his true colours. Though ——— he eagerly coveted his own advancement, he thought it not convenient yet to unmask himself; but rather to make higher pretences to honesty, than ever he had done before, thereby to engage major general *Harrison*, colonel *Rich*, and their party to himself. To this end he took all occasions in their presence to asperse the parliament, as not designing to do those good things they pretended to; but rather intending to support the corrupt interests of the clergy and lawyers. And though he was convinced they were hastning with all expedition to put a period to their sitting, having passed a vote that they would do it within the space of a year, and that they were making all possible preparations in order to it; yet did he industriously publish, that they were so in love with their seats, that they would use all means to perpetuate themselves. These and other calumnies, he had with so much art insinuated into the belief of many honest and well-meaning people, that they began to wish him prosperity in his undertaking. Divers of the clergy from their pulpits began to prophecy the destruction of the parliament, and to propose it openly as a thing desirable. Infomuch that the general, who had all along concurred with this spirit in them, hypocritically complained to quarter-master *Vernon*, that he was pushed on by two parties to do that, the consideration of the issue whereof, made his hair to stand an end. One of these, said he, is headed by major general *Lambert*, who in revenge of that injury the parliament did him, in not permitting him to go into *Ireland* with a character and conditions suitable to his merit, will be contented with nothing less than their dissolution: of the other major general *Harrison* is the chief, who is an honest man, and aims at good things,

armies; and probably also by a desire of

‘ things, yet from the impatience of his spirit will not  
 ‘ wait the Lord’s leisure, but hurries me on to do that  
 ‘ which he and all honest men will have cause to re-  
 ‘ pent. Thus, adds *Ludlow*, did he craftily feel the  
 ‘ pulse of men towards this work, endeavouring to cast  
 ‘ the infamy of it on others, reserving to himself the  
 ‘ appearance of tenderness to civil and religious liberty,  
 ‘ and of skreening the nation from the fury of the par-  
 ‘ ties before mentioned (x).’ I have given these passa-  
 ‘ ges at length, to shew fully *Cromwell’s* deep dissimula-  
 ‘ tion. The reader may possibly be apt to ask, how these  
 ‘ things were reconcileable with any real sense of religion,  
 ‘ or common honesty and fair dealing? The answer is,  
 ‘ that enthusiasm, to which *Cromwell* was subject, as I  
 ‘ have made appear, is a very variable thing; it admits  
 ‘ of much devotion and many crimes. Men who think  
 ‘ themselves under the special and extraordinary influence  
 ‘ of the Deity, attribute to him their feelings, sentiments  
 ‘ and desires, and whatever proceeds from him, must be  
 ‘ wise, just and good. And we are assured also, that  
 ‘ *Cromwell* and his adherents believed that there were  
 ‘ great occasions, in which some men were called to  
 ‘ great services, in the doing of which they were ex-  
 ‘ cused from the common rules of morality: such were  
 ‘ the practices of *Ehud* and *Jae*, *Samson* and *David*:  
 ‘ and by this they fancied they had a privilege from  
 ‘ observing the standing rules (a).’—Besides, we are  
 ‘ to consider *Oliver*, as a politician, as a great man ‘ who  
 ‘ must be master of much artifice and knavery, his si-  
 ‘ tuation requiring him to employ, and to be employed  
 ‘ by so many knaves; yet he must have some honesty,  
 ‘ or those very knaves will be unwilling to trust him (b).’  
 ‘ And ’tis not improbable *Cromwell* had learnt from *Ma-  
 ‘ chiavel*, whom he is by some said to have been well read  
 ‘ in, ‘ that men do seldom or never advance themselves  
 ‘ from a small beginning to any great height, but by  
 ‘ fraud or by force (unless they come to it by donation,

(x) *Ludlow*,  
 vol. ii. p.  
 445.

(a) *Burnet*,  
 vol. i. p. 63.

(b) *Nature  
 and Origin of  
 Evil*, p. 150.  
 12mo. Lond.  
 1753.

terminating the war rather by treaty than the sword.—But things soon took a very dif-

(c) Discour-  
ses on Livy,  
b. 2 c. 23.

‘ or right of inheritance.) I do not think, adds he, any  
‘ instance is to be found where force alone brought any  
‘ man to that grandeur, but fraud and artifice have done  
‘ it many times, as is clear in the lives of *Philip of Ma-*  
‘ *cedon, Agathucles the Sicilian,* and several others, who  
‘ from mean and inconsiderable extraction, came at  
‘ length to be Kings (c).’ Accordingly the writers on  
‘ politics observe, ‘ that in the transacting of great affairs,  
‘ the rules of morality admit of some relaxation; this  
‘ is to be lamented, but not to be helped. Such fre-  
‘ quently are the exigencies of a state, and such always  
‘ the crookedness and depravity of the heart of man,  
‘ that were you to deal openly, to tell all that you mean,  
‘ all that you know, and all that you aim at, you would  
‘ expose your country to ruin, and yourself to scorn,  
‘ perhaps to the block. The most that can be done is  
‘ to save appearances, and be wary of what expressions  
‘ are used; for, upon these occasions, and many others,  
‘ men are not to be upbraided for their silence (d).’—

(d) Gordon's  
Discourses  
on Tacitus,  
vol. iv. p.  
329. 12mo.  
Lond. 1753.

*De Solis*, speaking of the charge of horrible inhumanity  
brought against the *Spaniards*, says by way of reply,  
‘ We are not ignorant, that in some parts of the *Indies*,  
‘ actions have been seen worthy of reprehension, in-  
‘ deed contrary both to piety and reason; but in what  
‘ just and holy undertaking, has it not been necessary  
‘ to pass by some inconveniences (e).’ Thus, according  
to these writers, truth cannot be adhered to, at all  
times; piety and reason must be counteracted; and  
the necessity or importance of the end, render the means,  
be they what they may, justifiable! For my own part, I  
will not defend this reasoning. ‘ Truth is a sweet  
‘ thing,’ said some of the antients: and every good  
man is of the same sentiment; — ‘ *Explica atque ex-*  
‘ *cute intelligentiam tuam, ut videas, quæ sit in ea*  
‘ *species, forma, & notio viri boni. Cadit ergo in*  
‘ *virum bonum mentiri emolumentum sui causâ, crimi-*

(e) History of  
the Conquest  
of Mexico.  
vol. i. p. 349.  
8vo. Lond.  
1738.

different turn. The self-denying ordinance (w) which passed the house of lords, April

5,

‘ nari præripere, fallere? Nihil profecto minùs. Est  
 ‘ ergo ulla res tanti, aut commodum ullum tam expe-  
 ‘ tendum, ut viri boni & splendorem, & nomen amit-  
 ‘ tas? Quid est, quod asserre tantum utilitas ista, quæ  
 ‘ dicitur, possit, quantum auferre, si boni viri nomen  
 ‘ eripuerit, fidem justitiámque detraxerit? Quid enim  
 ‘ interest, utrum ex homine se quis conferat in belluam, (f) Cicero  
 ‘ an in hominis figura immanitatem gerat belluæ (f).’ de Officiis,  
 i. c. Revolve and carefully examine your understanding, Lib. iii.  
 in order to see what notion, idea, or representation of sect. 20.  
 a good man you find there. Is it consistent with the cha-  
 racter of such a person to lie for his own advantage; to  
 calumniate, supplant and cheat? Certainly, by no  
 means. Is there any thing then so valuable, or any pro-  
 fit so desirable, as to make amends for the loss of ho-  
 nour and reputation in a man of probity? Can that,  
 which we call profit, if it robs us of honour, justice,  
 and the character of a good man, give us any thing so  
 valuable in their stead? For where, pray, is the diffe-  
 rence whether one be actually transformed from a man  
 into a brute; or, under the external figure of a man,  
 carry with him all the ferocity of the brute? —  
 I will add no more on this subject, after I have observed,  
 that some persons will be apt to make allowances for  
 the craft, dissimulation and hypocrisy of *Cromwell*, from  
 the times in which he lived, and the persons he had to  
 deal with: times of trouble, confusion and difficulty,  
 and persons who, for the most part, were as little slaves  
 to their words as himself. *James I. Charles I. Charles*  
*II. and Monck*, to say nothing of a variety of others,  
 acted the same part (but with less art, and worse grace)  
 as he, though their praises have been high sounded by  
 such as have loaded *Cromwell* with obloquy.

(w) *The self-denying ordinance, &c.*] This ordinance  
 was a thing so specious and popular, and, at the same  
 time, so mischievous and hurtful to the affairs of the

par-

5, 1645, enacting, That no member of either

parliament, that it deserves a very particular remembrance. It did more for *Cromwell* than he could almost have formed a wish for; namely, the depriving his enemies of all command, whilst he himself, by a very particular fortune, obtained the highest power. In a word, it ruined them, and advanced him. After the army under Lord *Effex* had been in a manner ruined by the King, the general began to lose much of the esteem and reputation he had till then possessed. He was by many looked on with a jealous eye, and they were fearful he and his adherents were disposed to make terms with the King, which might be prejudicial to many who had engaged with them. In short, *Effex* and his party were accused by their enemies of neglecting, by vigorous operations, to put an end to the war, and of being inclined too much to his Majesty.—‘There were some, says *Whitlock*, who had designs against *Effex*, and were desirous to remove him from his command, because they were jealous, that he was too much inclined to peace, and favouring of the King and his party. I think, I knew as much of his mind as others did, and always observed him to wish for peace, yet not upon any dishonourable or unjust terms. He was a lover of monarchy and nobility, which he suspected some designed to destroy, together with gentry, ministry and magistracy, which humour then began to boil up; but he resolved to support them, and wanted not advice to that end (g).’—*Ludlow*, who was engaged in the opposition to *Effex*, will explain something more of this matter.—‘The enemy, contrary to all expectation, appeared again in a body near *Newbury*, where our army lay, who drew out to oppose them. Some small skirmishes happened between them, but a general engagement was opposed in a council of war by some of the greatest among us: whereupon the King, in the face of our army, twice as numerous as his, had time  
to

(g) Mem-  
orial, p.  
108.

either house, during the war, should ex-

102  
 5810353=10  
 5819=10101033

' to send his artillery from *Dennington-castle* towards  
 ' *Oxford*, without any opposition, to the astonishment  
 ' of all those who wished well to the public. But, by  
 ' this time, it was clearly manifest, that the nobility  
 ' had no further quarrel with the King, than 'till they  
 ' could make their terms with him, having, for the  
 ' most part, grounded their dissatisfactions upon some  
 ' particular affront, or the prevalency of a faction a-  
 ' bout him. But though it should be granted, that  
 ' their intentions in taking arms were to oblige the King  
 ' to consent to redress the grievances of the nation,  
 ' yet, if a war of this nature must be determined by  
 ' treaty, and the King left in the exercise of the royal  
 ' authority, after the utmost violation of the laws, and  
 ' the greatest calamities brought upon the people, it  
 ' doth not appear to me what security can be given to  
 ' them for the future enjoyment of their rights and pri-  
 ' vileges; nor with what prudence wise men can engage  
 ' with the parliament, who being, by practice at least,  
 ' liable to be dissolved at pleasure, are thereby rendered  
 ' unable to protect themselves, or such as take up arms  
 ' under their authority, if, after infinite hardships and  
 ' hazards of their lives and estates, they must fall under  
 ' the power of a provoked enemy, who, being once re-  
 ' established in his former authority, will never want  
 ' means to revenge himself upon all those, who, in  
 ' defence of the rights and liberties of the nation, ad-  
 ' venture to resist him in his illegal and arbitrary pro-  
 ' ceedings (b).—Such were the principles which dis-  
 ' posed many at that time to wish for an alteration of  
 ' men and measures; or, to speak more plainly, to put  
 ' it effectually out of the power of those, who wanted  
 ' not inclination, to conclude a peace with the King,  
 ' on terms which might leave him in possession of the  
 ' regal power.—But to go on.—' On the ninth of *De-*  
 ' *cember*, one thousand six hundred and forty-four, the  
 ' house of commons having resolved themselves into a  
 ' grand

(b) Vol. 1.  
 p. 731.

cut or enjoy any military or civil office;

' grand committee, to consider of the sad condition of  
 ' the kingdom, by the continuance of the war, there  
 ' was a general silence for a good space of time; many  
 ' looking upon one another, to see who would break  
 ' the ice, and speak first in so tender and sharp a point:  
 ' amongst whom *Oliver Cromwell* stood up, and spake,  
 ' briefly, to this effect: That it was now a time to  
 ' speak, or for ever to hold the tongue, the important  
 ' occasion being no less than to save a nation out of a  
 ' bleeding, nay, almost dying, condition, which the  
 ' long continuance of the war had already brought it  
 ' into; so that without a more speedy, vigorous, and  
 ' effectual prosecution of the war, casting off all linger-  
 ' ing proceedings, like soldiers of fortune beyond sea,  
 ' to spin out a war, we shall make the kingdom weary  
 ' of us, and hate the name of a parliament: for what  
 ' do the enemy say? nay, what do many say, that were  
 ' friends at the beginning of the parliament? even this,  
 ' That the members of both houses have got great  
 ' places and commands, and the sword into their hands;  
 ' and what by interest in parliament, and what by power  
 ' in the army, will perpetually continue themselves in  
 ' grandeur, and not permit the war speedily to end, lest  
 ' their own power should determine with it. This I  
 ' speak here to our own faces; it is but what others  
 ' do utter abroad behind our backs. I am far from re-  
 ' flecting on any; I know the worth of those com-  
 ' manders, members of both houses, who are yet in  
 ' power; but if I may speak my conscience, without  
 ' reflection upon any, I do conceive, if the army be  
 ' not put into another method, and the war more vigo-  
 ' rously prosecuted, the people can bear the war no  
 ' longer, and will enforce you to a dishonourable peace:  
 ' but this I would recommend to your prudence, not  
 ' to insist upon any complaint or oversight of any  
 ' commander in chief, upon any occasion whatsoever;  
 ' for, as I must acknowledge myself guilty of over-  
 ' fights,



# OLIVER CROMWELL.

as it obliged *Essex, Manchester, Denbigh,*  
*War*

111

‘ fights, so I know they can be rarely avoided in military affairs: therefore, waving a strict inquiry into the causes of these things, let us apply ourselves to the remedy which is most necessary; and, I hope, we have such true *English* hearts, and zealous affections towards the general weal of our mother country, as no members of either house will scruple to deny themselves, and their own private interests, for the public good; nor account it to be a dishonour done to them, whatever the parliament shall resolve upon in this weighty matter (i).’—What the consequence of this was will appear by the following vote in the journal of the day above-mentioned. ‘ Resolved, &c.

(i) Parliamentary History, vol. xiii. p. 375.

‘ That, during the time of this war, no member of either house shall have, or execute, any office or command, military or civil, granted or conferred by both or either of the houses of parliament, or any authority derived from both or either of the houses: and that an ordinance be brought in accordingly.’ Mr. Solicitor [*St. John*] Mr. Recorder [*Glyn*] Mr. *Crewes*, Mr. *Pierpoint*, Mr. *Maynard*, Mr. *Reynolds*, Mr. *Ellis*, Mr. *Lisle*, were appointed a committee to bring in an ordinance to the purport of this vote; and likewise for the continuing of such officers in their places as are no members of either house, until the houses take further order; and to bring in such clauses, as they shall think fit, for the perfecting of this vote.—In the journal of the 11th of *December*, we find it ‘ resolved, &c. That a fast shall be appointed for this house to observe on *Wednesday* next, to humble themselves for their particular and parliamentary sins and failings, whereby they may hope to obtain God’s blessing in a better measure upon their endeavours for the future.’ On the next day the lords agreed to the fast, to the day, and to the persons. These were Mr. *Marshall*, Mr. *Hill*, and Mr. *Obadiah Sedgwick*. On this day also it was ordered by the commons, that the ordinance, for disabling the members

to

to execute any office, should be taken into consideration, and read the second time on the next *Saturday* peremptorily. Accordingly it was then taken into consideration, committed to a committee of the whole house, and adjourned to the *Thursday* following. The fast accordingly was held before both houses, and the preachers, if we believe Lord *Clarendon*, played their parts to admiration (*k*). On the nineteenth the ordinance passed the house of commons (after having rejected the national covenant as a test for those who held or executed any office, as they had a clause before in favour of Lord *Essex*) and it was ordered to be sent to the lords, for their concurrence; and that all the members of the house do go up with this ordinance to the lords (*l*). From this short account of the progress of the bill through the house of commons, which I have compiled from the journals of that house, appears how absurdly Lord *Clarendon* has put into a speech, pretended by him to be made by *Cromwell*, the day after the fast, a desire, 'that an ordinance might be prepared, by which it might be unlawful, for any member of either house of parliament, to hold any office or command in the army, or any place or employment in the state (*m*):' for it plainly appears, that the ordinance was ordered in the ninth of *December*; that it had been committed to a committee of the whole house the *Saturday* following, and actually passed there on the nineteenth of that month, the day after the fast; and, therefore, could not be desired at that time to be brought in by *Cromwell*. Chronological tables, duly consulted, would have prevented his lordship from falling into many a blunder. But the truth is, his account of the management of this matter in the pulpit and the senate, seems, for the most part, invention, at which his Lordship had a very happy talent.—I have given *Cromwell's* speech above in behalf of this ordinance. I will add to it a speech of Mr. *Whitlock's*, as containing, for the most part,

(*k*) Vol. iv.  
p. 565.

(*l*) Journals  
of the house  
of commons.

(*m*) Vol. iv.  
p. 567.

down their commands in the army (which  
was

part, the chief arguments alledged by the opposite parties in the house, on this memorable occasion. ' Mr. Speaker, I am one of that number of your servants, who have no office or employment, but such as you are now about to except out of this ordinance, nor have ambition for any, and therefore may the more freely and indifferently, yet with all submission, humbly offer my reasons against it; as that which, I apprehend, may prove prejudicial to your service. It hath been objected, that your house, and the house of lords, is thin and empty, and you the less esteemed, having so few members here, many of them being employed in offices, that they cannot attend the houses; but that, by this ordinance, they will be at leisure and liberty to attend the service of the parliament here, and the houses be much fuller than now they are. I confess, Sir, this is fit to be remedied; but, I apprehend, you have a fitter way, than by this ordinance to do it; that is, by issuing out new writs for electing new members in the places of those who are dead, or expelled, and this will satisfy the objection, and engage divers of interest and quality the more immediately in your service; whereas this ordinance will discontent many, and the houses will be but little the fuller by the passing of it. Another objection is, that, if this ordinance do not pass, the treaty for peace will not so well proceed, and the particular interests of members of parliament may retard the same; but will be all taken away by this ordinance. I am to seek how this can be materially objected, when I suppose, whether this ordinance pass or not, yet you intend members of parliament only to be your commissioners for that treaty; and, in case some of them be officers, they will the better understand your businesses, on which the treaty will be grounded. Another objection is, that, unless this ordinance pass, the great work intended of new mo-

was put under the direction of Sir Thomas

*Fairfax*  
 041030000  
 318-1071000

' delling your armies, will not so well be carried on ;  
 ' for that, by putting all out, there will remain no  
 ' exception. I should rather have argued, that, by  
 ' putting out all members out of their employment,  
 ' the exception and discontent would be the more ge-  
 ' neral ; and, by leaving them still in their employ-  
 ' ments, there would be the less competition and solli-  
 ' citation for new officers in their rooms. Another ob-  
 ' jection or argument is, that the members of parlia-  
 ' ment, who are officers, being of equal power in par-  
 ' liament, will not be so obedient to your commands  
 ' as others who have smaller interests, and would not so  
 ' much dispute one with another. Surely, Sir, those  
 ' whose interest is the same with yours, have the more  
 ' reason to obey your commands than others, and have  
 ' more to hazard by disobedience than others can have ;  
 ' and, in your commands, all your members are in-  
 ' volved, and it were strange if they should be back-  
 ' ward to obey their own orders. Nor will the con-  
 ' tests be so frequent and high, between them and other  
 ' officers, as it will be between those who will be of a  
 ' more equal condition. But, Mr. Speaker, as you  
 ' consider the inconveniencies if this ordinance do not  
 ' pass, so you will be pleased to consider the inconve-  
 ' niencies if it do pass. You will lay aside as brave  
 ' men, and who have served you with as much cou-  
 ' rage, wisdom, faithfulness and success, as ever men  
 ' served their country. Our noble general, the Earls of  
 ' *Denbigh, Warwick, Manchester* ; the Lords *Roberts,*  
 ' *Willoughby,* and other Lords in your armies, besides  
 ' those in civil offices not excepted ; and of your own  
 ' members the Lord *Grey,* Lord *Fairfax,* Sir *William*  
 ' *Waller,* lieutenant-general *Cromwell,* Mr. *Hollis,* Sir  
 ' *Philip Stapylton,* Sir *William Brereton,* Sir *John Mey-*  
 ' *rick,* and many others must be laid aside, if you pass  
 ' this ordinance. And I am to seek, and, I doubt, so  
 ' wil they be, to whom you shall refer the new mo-  
 ' delling

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



*Fairfax*) Cromwell seemed necessitated to resign

' delling of your armies, where to find officers that shall  
 ' excel, if equal to these. If your judgments are, that,  
 ' for the public service, it will be expedient to remove  
 ' any of them from their commands, let the same (if  
 ' you please) be plainly made known to them from  
 ' you. Let them have what they deserve, your thanks  
 ' for their former good services, and they will not be  
 ' offended, that you, having no more work for them,  
 ' do lay them aside with honour. But to do a business  
 ' of this nature (as hath been well said) by a side wind,  
 ' is, in my humble opinion, not so becoming your ho-  
 ' nour and wisdom, as plainness and gravity, which  
 ' are ornaments to your actions. I shall conclude with  
 ' the example of the *Grecians* and *Romans*, amongst  
 ' whom, Sir, you know, that the greatest offices, both  
 ' of war and peace, were conferred upon their senators;  
 ' and their reasons were, because they having greater  
 ' interests than others, were the more capable to do  
 ' them the greatest service. And, having the same in-  
 ' terest with the senate, and present at their debates,  
 ' they understood their business the better, and were  
 ' less apt to break that trust, which so nearly concerned  
 ' their private interests, which was involved with the  
 ' publick; and the better they understood their business,  
 ' the better service might be expected from them. Sir,  
 ' I humbly submit the application to your judgment;  
 ' your ancestors did the same; they thought the mem-  
 ' bers of parliament fittest to be employed in the greatest  
 ' offices: I hope you will be of the same judgment, and  
 ' not at this time pass this ordinance, and thereby to dis-  
 ' courage your faithful servants (n).——This speech  
 ' had no effect in the house of commons.—In the  
 ' house of lords, however, the ordinance went on very  
 ' heavily, which occasioned the commons to send se-  
 ' veral messages up to desire the lords to expedite this  
 ' ordinance; which being read by them twice, a con-  
 ' ference was desired with the commons about it. And,

(n) Memo-  
 rials, p.  
 119.

sign his commission also: but, by a for-

tune

\* in this conference, *January 7th*, the Speaker of the  
 \* lords was ordered to deliver their reasons against pas-  
 \* sing it. Among others, it was alledged, that "the  
 \* putting every member of either house of parliament  
 \* into an incapacity of holding military or civil offices,  
 \* during this war, may be of very dangerous conse-  
 \* quence; because, how emergent soever the occasion  
 \* may be, it cannot be altered without deserting of a  
 \* positive rule imposed upon themselves; yet, that the  
 \* world, with their own consciences, may bear witness,  
 \* that they are as willing as any others to sacrifice, not  
 \* only their places and offices, but all that is dearest to  
 \* them, for the good of religion and the kingdom;  
 \* they are willing that all places, civil and military, shall  
 \* be disposed of as both houses of parliament shall judge  
 \* may contribute most for the good of the public, any  
 \* crime or just exception being given against such as are  
 \* now intrusted with offices or commands: but that they  
 \* can in no wise put an incapacity on themselves, and  
 \* be made in a worse condition than any free subject."  
 \* After this they observed, "this ordinance deprived  
 \* the peers of that honour, which, in all ages, hath  
 \* been given unto them, whose part it was to be em-  
 \* ployed in military commands; that the case was not  
 \* alike between the two houses, in point of excluding  
 \* the members of both houses from military employ-  
 \* ment; that, by this ordinance, they are wholly dis-  
 \* abled from performing any military service, which is  
 \* contrary to their protestation and covenant; and that  
 \* the passing this ordinance, as to the military part,  
 \* will produce such an alteration in all the armies, as,  
 \* in apparent probability, must be of very dangerous  
 \* consequence to the cause in hand at this juncture of  
 \* time; and therefore, till a new model be propounded  
 \* to succeed, they cannot but think the present frame  
 \* better than such a confusion which is like to fol-  
 \* low.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



‘low (o).’—These reasons operated so strongly with the lords, that, notwithstanding a reply from the commons, the ordinance was rejected, *January 13. O. S.* though afterwards it was agreed to by them on the 3d of *April* following: so that Mr. *Hume* must be mistaken much about this matter, when he says, ‘the peers, tho’ the scheme was, in part, levelled against their order; tho’ all of them were, at the bottom, extremely averse to it; possessed so little authority, that they durst not oppose the resolution of the commons; and they esteemed it better policy, by an unlimited compliance, to ward off that ruin which they saw approaching (p).’ But ‘tis no wonder this writer should commit many mistakes in his relation of this affair, when he professes only to give a detail of the methods by which it was conducted, as they are delivered by Lord *Clarendon* (q)!

117  
 3473330  
 3473330  
 Elementary History, vol. xiii. p. 387.

(p) History of Great Britain, vol. i. p. 386.

(q) Id. p. 384.

—While these disputes lasted, another ordinance was prepared, and, after sundry debates and amendments, agreed to by both houses, for new modelling the army, whereby Sir *Thomas Fairfax* was appointed general in chief of all the forces, with a power of nominating the officers under him, and execution of martial law. No mention is made of the King’s authority, nor is any clause for the preservation of his person here inserted\*; but power is given the general to ‘lead his armies against all and singular enemies, rebels, traitors, and

\* The reasons urged by the commons against the clause of preserving his Majesty’s Person, which had been insisted on in the house of lords, were these:

1. Inserting it here must either suppose the King’s coming in the head of an army, to fight against us, for the preservation and defence of the true protestant religion, &c. and so we must preserve him; or, if we suppose he cometh not to preserve, but to fight to oppose those (as we know he doth) it seemeth rather a mockery than a reality.
2. That the King should not think us obliged, by our covenant, to preserve his person, if he appear in the head of an army against the parliament; nor the soldier to forbear his duty by reason of his presence (r).

(r) Journal, March 29, 1645.

(1) Parli-  
amentary  
History,  
vol. xiii.  
P. 437.

‘ other like offenders, and every of their adherents, and  
 ‘ with them to fight; and them to invade, resist, re-  
 ‘ press, subdue, pursue, slay, kill, and put in exe-  
 ‘ cution of death by all ways and means (1).’—This  
 passed the house of lords *April 1.* after the Earl of *Es-*  
*sex* had declared he would yield up his commission, as  
 he did the day following, as well as the Lords *Manches-*  
*ter, Denbigh* and *Warwick* very soon after—Thus  
 almost all those men, by whose interest, power and au-  
 thority the war with the King had been undertaken, and  
 without whom no opposition, of any weight, could  
 possibly have been raised, were, in a short time, de-  
 prived of their power and influence over their own ar-  
 my, and obliged, as we shall soon see, to truckle be-  
 fore them! So little can men see into futurity! so diffe-  
 rent are the turns things take from what men are apt  
 to expect and depend on.—The self-denying ordi-  
 nance was very specious, as are all bills for excluding  
 the members of parliament, whether lords or com-  
 mons, from places of trust and profit; and they are ge-  
 nerally received favourably, without doors, by all ranks  
 of people. Whether the enacting of them would be  
 right; whether consistent with the liberty of the subject;  
 whether they could be carried into execution; or, whe-  
 ther they would be productive of most good or ill, are  
 distinct questions, which politicians will long debate on,  
 and find difficult, perhaps, after all, to come to a con-  
 clusion among themselves. But, with respect to the sub-  
 ject now before us, it appears to have been a very dan-  
 gerous experiment the parliament made. Here was an  
 army put solely under the command of one man; a  
 power granted him to give out commissions, and to  
 order his armies in a good measure according to his  
 own discretion. What was this but to put it in his  
 power to give the law to the parliament whenever he  
 thought fit? To depend on men’s characters, in mat-  
 ters where the well-being of the community, and even  
 the being of the parliament itself might be at stake, was  
 surely a great piece of weakness, if such it can be cal-  
 led, and liable to very severe censure. Soldiers soon  
 for-





forget to be citizens: they overlook, they contemn laws. The general is their sovereign, the officers their magistrates, and at all times they are at their beck and command. And generals, being used to absolute and uncontrouled command over large armies, are apt to forget also that they have any superiors. Hence the slavery of communities; the subversion of laws; the erection of tyranny, and every thing mischievous and hurtful to the human race.—The following passage from *Montesquieu* will properly close this note. ‘It is a question, says he, whether civil and military employments ought to be conferred on the same person? In a republic, I should think, they ought to be joined, but in monarchies separated. In republics it would be extremely dangerous to make the profession of arms a particular state, distinct from that of civil functions; and in monarchies no less dangerous would it be to confer these two employments on the same person. In republics a person takes up arms only with a view to defend his country and its laws; it is because he is a citizen he makes himself for a while a soldier. Were these two distinct states, the person, who, under arms, thinks himself a citizen, would soon be made sensible he is only a soldier. In monarchies military men have nothing but glory, or at least honour or fortune, in view. To men, therefore, like these, the prince should never give any civil employments; on the contrary, they ought to be checked by the civil magistrates, and care should be taken that the same men may not have, at the same time, the confidence of the people, and the power to abuse it. We need only turn our eyes to a nation [*England*] that may be justly called a republic disguised under the form of monarchy, and there we shall see how jealous they are of a separate state of the gentlemen of the army, and how the military state is constantly allied with that of the citizen, and even sometimes of the magistrate, to the end that these qualities may be a pledge for their country, which should never be forgotten (t).’

(t) Spirit of  
Laws, vol.  
i. p. 98.  
8vo. Lond.

tune or art (x) peculiar to himself, he was  
 dis-

(x) *By a fortune or art peculiar to himself, he was dispensed with paying obedience to the self-denying ordinance.*]  
 No man pushed more, we see, the passing of this than *Cromwell*. He declared it necessary to satisfy the people and to put an end to the war. Probably many honest men were induced to join with him in it, from these considerations. It could, therefore, never have entered into the heads of these, that the very same person should either desire or accept an exemption from a law, which he himself had moved for with so great zeal and earnestness. Nor did those who knew him to be a man of art, and were fearful of his devices, seem to entertain the least suspicion of him upon this head. So that his conduct was a masterpiece on this occasion, and shewed him more than a match for his chief opponents in the houses, who had too much openness, and were too little upon the reserve to contest with him. Lord *Holles*, after speaking of this ordinance, which turned out himself and his friends from their commands, and of the obedience\* the army paid to the parliament, notwithstanding their love to their officers, whom they looked on as ill used for their services; proceeds thus: ‘the next work was how again to get in my friend *Cromwell*; for he was to have the power, Sir *Thomas Fairfax* only the name of general; he to be the figure, the other the cypher. This was so gross and di-metrically against the letter of the self-denying ordinance, that it put them to some trouble how to bring it about. For this *Cromwell*’s soldiers, forsooth, must mutiny, and say, they will have their *Cromwell*,

\* It appears, however, from the Journals of the house of commons, that many of the inferior officers and soldiers mutinied before the ordinance had passed the house of lords. In the Journal of March 4, 1644. O. S. is a declaration of both houses, promising pardon to such as returned to their duty before the 25th of that instant, and threatening, in case of disobedience, to proceed against them as traitors and enemies to the commonwealth.

dispensed with paying obedience to it. He, there-

‘ or they will not stir. Hereupon he must be sent down  
 ‘ —they must have their wills. Yet for these very  
 ‘ men had *Cromwell* undertaken before, when, upon de-  
 ‘ bate, the inconveniency was objected which might  
 ‘ follow by discontenting the common soldiers, who  
 ‘ would hardly be drawn to leave their old officers and  
 ‘ go under new; he could say, that his soldiers had  
 ‘ learned to obey the parliament, to go or stay, fight  
 ‘ or lay by the sword, upon their command; which, I  
 ‘ know, prevailed with a great many to give their vote  
 ‘ with that ordinance. By this trick a little beginning  
 ‘ was made towards the breach of it, which was soon  
 ‘ made greater. For they caused a report to be spread,  
 ‘ that the King was bending with his forces towards  
 ‘ the Isle of *Ely*, but none could save but *Cromwell*, who  
 ‘ must be sent in all haste for that service; and an order  
 ‘ of dispensation is made for a very few months, two or  
 ‘ three (I remember not well whether) but with such  
 ‘ protestations of that party, that this was only for that  
 ‘ exigency, and that for the world they would not have  
 ‘ the ordinance impeached, as Mr. Solicitor said; and  
 ‘ that if no body would move for the calling him home  
 ‘ at the expiration of that time, he would. But all  
 ‘ this was to gull the house. Mr. Solicitor had forgot  
 ‘ his protestation, and, before that was out, there is  
 ‘ another order for more months, and so renewed from  
 ‘ time to time, that at last this great commander is ri-  
 ‘ vetted in the army, and so fast rivetted, as, after all  
 ‘ his orders of continuance were at an end, he would  
 ‘ keep his command still, which he has done for sever-  
 ‘ al months, and does yet, notwithstanding that ordi-  
 ‘ nance, without any order at all of the house for it (a).’  
 ‘ —Lord *Clarendon*’s account of *Cromwell*’s keeping his  
 ‘ command is too remarkable to be omitted; not by rea-  
 ‘ son of its containing any so extraordinary a matter, as  
 ‘ to shew how much his lordship wrote at random con-  
 ‘ cerning the transactions of the parliament. ‘ By this  
 ‘ self-

(a) Memoirs, p. 34.

therefore, applied himself in good earnest  
to

' self-denying ordinance, together with the Earl of *Es-*  
 ' *sex*, the Earl of *Manchester*, Sir *William Waller*, the  
 ' Earl of *Denbigh*, major-general *Maffy*, lost their  
 ' commands, as *Cromwell* should likewise have done.  
 ' But as soon as the ordinance was passed, and before  
 ' the resignation of the Earl of *Essex*, the party that  
 ' steered had caused him to be sent with a body of  
 ' horse into the west, to relieve *Taunton*, that he might  
 ' be absent at the time when the other officers delivered  
 ' their commissions; which was quickly observed; and  
 ' thereupon orders were given, to require his present  
 ' attendance in parliament, and that their new general  
 ' should send some other officer to attend that service;  
 ' which was pretended to be done; and the very day  
 ' named, by which it was averred that he would be in  
 ' the house. A rendezvous was then appointed, for  
 ' their new general to take a view of their troops, that  
 ' he might appoint officers to succeed those who had left  
 ' their commands by virtue of their ordinance; and  
 ' likewise in their places, who gave up their commands,  
 ' and refused to serve in the new model, who were a  
 ' great number of their best commanders. From this  
 ' rendezvous the general sent to desire the parliament,  
 ' that they would give lieutenant-general *Cromwell* leave  
 ' to stay with him for some few days, for his better infor-  
 ' mation, without which he should not be able to per-  
 ' form what they expected from him. The request  
 ' seeming so reasonable, and being for so short a time,  
 ' little opposition was made to it: and shortly after, by  
 ' another letter, he desired, with much earnestness,  
 ' that they would allow *Cromwell* to serve for that  
 ' campaign. Thus they compassed their whole design,  
 ' in being rid of all those whose affections they knew  
 ' were not agreeable to theirs, and keeping *Cromwell* in  
 ' command, who, in the name of *Fairfax*, modelled  
 ' the army, and placed such officers as were well known  
 ' to him, and to no body else; and absolutely governed

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

to the war, and increased the reputation he had already acquired.

His

‘ the whole martial affairs, as was quickly known to all (x) Vol. iv.  
 ‘ men (x).’—How many mistakes there are in the P. 629.  
 above citation I need not point out. The attentive  
 reader will soon discover them.—In the Journal of the  
 house of commons, *February 27, 1644*, O. S. we read  
 the following resolutions. ‘ Resolved, &c. That lieu-  
 ‘ tenant-general *Cromwell* be desired forthwith to go  
 ‘ down to Sir *William Waller*, to go with him upon  
 ‘ this expedition into the west, for relief of *Mel-*  
 ‘ *combe*, and the garrisons and places adjacent, and for  
 ‘ preventing and breaking the enemy’s levies and re-  
 ‘ cruits; and that it be referred to the committee of  
 ‘ both kingdoms, to consider, this afternoon, of the  
 ‘ disposing of the commands in such manner as may be  
 ‘ most advantageous for the service, and for accommo-  
 ‘ dating all differences, if any occasion should be; and  
 ‘ to accommodate him with what shall be further ne-  
 ‘ cessary for this expedition this afternoon. Resolved,  
 ‘ &c. That lieutenant-general *Cromwell* shall have li-  
 ‘ berty to take with him into the west his three troops  
 ‘ that are at *Henley*, and that it be referred to the com-  
 ‘ mittee of both kingdoms to appoint three troops in  
 ‘ the place of those three troops; and that lieutenant-  
 ‘ general *Cromwell* shall have liberty to take with him  
 ‘ quarter-master-general *Ireton*. Ordered, That Mr.  
 ‘ *Gessal* and Mr. *Lenman*, treasurers for the Earl of  
 ‘ *Manchester*’s association, do forthwith pay unto lieu-  
 ‘ tenant-general *Cromwell* one thousand pounds; where-  
 ‘ of five hundred upon his own account, and the other  
 ‘ five hundred pounds to be disposed of as he shall  
 ‘ think fit, to the pay of his own troops.” So that  
 Lord *Clarendon* probably mistook *Taunton* for *Melcombe*  
 in the passage above recited. However, neither he nor  
 his troops performed any service there; for, tho’ *Mel-*  
*combe* and other places were taken by Sir *William Waller*,  
 yet, in the Journal of the house, *March 20, 1644*,

His actions, after the new modelling  
of

O. S. we read 'the humble petition of the soldiers of  
' lieutenant-general *Cromwell*, acknowledging the hein-  
' ousness of their offence in refusing to march with Sir  
' *William Waller* into the west, was this day read: and  
' it is resolved, &c. That this house doth accept of  
' the acknowledgment and submission of the said sol-  
' diers, and do admit them into their former good opi-  
' nion and favour.' This, I suppose, was the mutiny  
referred to in the above passage from Lord *Holles*. For,  
though *Cromwell* was commanded to join *Waller*, I can-  
not find that he did:—he seems, about this time, to  
have been very active in the house, and zealous in the  
affair of new modelling the army. However, he soon  
after joined his troops; and the self-denying ordinance  
having passed the house of lords, the army being new  
modelled, and *Fairfax* in supreme command, *Cromwell*,  
pretending that he was, with the other officers, to resign  
his commission, came to *Windsor* from his command in  
the west, to kiss the general's hand, and take his leave  
of him, 'when,' says an historian of that time, great-  
ly in the interest of *Oliver*, 'in the morning, ere he  
' was come forth of his chamber, those commands [to  
' march beyond *Oxford* with a body of horse, and lie  
' on the further side towards *Worcester*, to intercept a  
' convoy going to *Oxford*, and to keep the King and  
' his train from going thence] than which he thought  
' of nothing less in all the world, came to him from  
' the committee of both kingdoms (y):' whereupon, tak-  
ing a body of horse and dragoons, he marched into *Ox-*  
*fordshire*, beat a party of the enemy at *Islip-bridge*, re-  
duced *Blechingdon-house*, and performed many other  
things advantageous to his cause. He continued, there-  
fore, in the army, and was authorized so to do, as ap-  
pears by what follows in the Journal of the house of  
commons, *May 11, 1645*: 'Two letters from lieute-  
' nant general *Cromwell* and major general *Browne*; the  
' one of *May 8th*, the other of *May 9th*, informing,  
' that

(y) Sprigg's  
*Anglia Re-*  
*diviva*, p.  
10. Fol.  
Lond. 1647.

of the army, were worthy of a great

' that general *Goringe* is advanced westward, and the  
 ' King northward towards *Worcester*; were this day  
 ' read; and immediately delivered to Mr. Recorder, that  
 ' brought them in. Ordered, &c. That the committee  
 ' of the army do take care for the providing of monies  
 ' and ammunition for those horse and foot, that are  
 ' within the new model, and now under the command  
 ' of lieutenant-general *Cromwell*, and major-general  
 ' *Browne*. Ordered, &c. That it be referred to the  
 ' committee of the army, to consider, what sums of  
 ' money is fit to be provided for that party of horse and  
 ' foot under the command of lieutenant-general *Crom-*  
 ' *well* and major-general *Browne*, which is not within  
 ' the new model. Whereas lieutenant-general *Crom-*  
 ' *well* is now in the actual service of the parliament,  
 ' and in prosecution of the enemy; it is this day en-  
 ' joined by the lords and commons, that he shall con-  
 ' tinue in the employment he is now in, for forty days  
 ' longer; notwithstanding the late ordinance, or any  
 ' clause therein, that discharges the members of either  
 ' house from having any office or command, military  
 ' or civil.' In the journal of *June* the 10th following,  
 ' it is said, ' A letter from Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, and  
 ' divers of the chief officers of his army, from *Sher-*  
 ' *rington*, of *June* the 8th; desiring that lieutenant-ge-  
 ' neral *Cromwell* might command the horse in chief,  
 ' in Sir *Thomas Fairfax* his army, was this day read.  
 ' Resolved upon the question, that Sir *Thomas Fairfax*  
 ' be desired (if he thinks fit) to appoint lieutenant-ge-  
 ' neral *Cromwell* to command the horse under Sir *Thomas*  
 ' *Fairfax*, as lieutenant-general, during such time as  
 ' this house shall please to dispense with his attendance:  
 ' and that Sir *Thomas Widdrington* prepare a letter to be  
 ' signed by Mr. Speaker, and forthwith sent to Sir *Tho-*  
 ' *mas Fairfax* to acquaint him with this vote.' The  
 ' letter here referred to was signed among others, by *Fleet-*  
 ' *wood*, *Whalley*, *Skippon*, and *Ireton*, men near to *Crom-*  
 ' *well*,

well, and probably, not wholly ignorant of his designs. But to go on.—On the 16th of *June*, when news had been brought the house of the battle of *Naseby*, we find it in the journal of that day, ‘Resolved, &c. That lieutenant-general *Cromwell* shall be lieutenant-general of the horse, in the army under the command of Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, during the pleasure of both houses. The lords concurrence to be desired herein. Resolved, That lieutenant general *Cromwell* shall have pay of lieutenant general of the horse, since the time of the first establishment of the army, under Sir *Thomas Fairfax*’s command. The lords concurrence to be desired herein.’ However, in conformity to an alteration made by the house of lords, we find the resolution stand in the following manner two days afterwards. ‘Resolved upon the question, that lieutenant-general *Cromwell* shall continue as lieutenant-general of the horse according to the established pay of the army, for three months from the end of the forty days formerly granted to him.’ And on the 8th of *August* 1645, it was ordered by the commons, ‘That he should be continued in the same employment, as formerly, for the space of four months longer, from the end of the said three months, for which he was formerly continued, as aforesaid; on the 17th of *Oct.* it was continued for four months longer; and on the 23d of *Jan.* following for six months more.’—After this there were no more resolutions about *Cromwell*: he took it for granted he had leave; no one offered to move for recalling him; and he soon came to so great a power, that no one with safety could almost have dared to have done it. In fine, the self-denying ordinance having answered its intention of turning out the grandees of both houses from their commands in the army, and *Cromwell* having the luck to be exempted from it, he accomplished what he then had in his view, and soon after, by means of his friends, had many chief officers of the army chosen members of



# OLIVER CROMWELL.

by (y) he gave fresh proofs of his valour and

127  
br2-11000-10  
302-101000

of the house of commons, who took their seats and retained their commands. And thereby encouraged the old members of their party to provide for themselves likewise. Sir *William Brereton*, Sir *Oliver* and Sir *Samuel Luke*, *Ireton*, *Rainsborough*, *Algernon Sydney*, *Ingoldsby*, *Ludlow*, *Skippon*, *Fleetwood* (z), and other principal commanders, were members of parliament; most of whom were friends to *Cromwell* till he openly declared himself, and some of them after that: whereby it plainly appeared that, in his and their judgment, the ordinance was calculated more for party purposes, though carried on under specious pretences, than for the public good.

(z) See Walker's History of Independency, part i. p. 166—172. 4to. Lond. 1648.

(y) *In the battle of Naseby he gave fresh proofs of his valour.*] Though I proposed not to enter into a detail of *Oliver's* military exploits, yet I shall give the reader a short account of the important battle of *Naseby*, which is thus related by Mr. *Whitlock*. 'The King commanded the main body of his army, Prince *Rupert* and Prince *Maurice* the right wing, Sir *Marmaduke Langdale* the left, the Earl of *Lindsey* and the Lord *Ashley* the right-hand reserve, the Lord *Bard*, and Sir *George L'Isle* the left reserve. Of the parliament's army, *Fairfax* and *Skippon* commanded the main body, *Cromwell* the right wing, with whom was *Roffiter*, and they both came in but a little before the fight. *Ireton* commanded the left wing, the reserves were brought up by *Rainsborough*, *Hammond* and *Pride*. Prince *Rupert* began and charged the parliament's left wing with great resolution; *Ireton* made gallant resistance, but at last was forced to give ground, he himself being run through the thigh with a pike, and into the face with a halbert, and his horse shot under him, and himself taken prisoner. Prince *Rupert* followed the chase almost to *Naseby* town, and in his return, summoned the train, who made no other answer but by their *relocks*; he also visited the carriages where was good plunder, but his long stay from the main body

bravery. From this time the King's power

very  
308-11101533

body was no small prejudice to the King's army. In the mean time *Cromwell* charged furiously on the King's left wing, and got the better, forcing them from the body, and prosecuting the advantage, quite broke them and their reserve. During which, the main bodies had charged one another with incredible fierceness, often retreating and rallying, falling in together with the butt-ends of their muskets, and coming to hand blows with their swords. *Langdale's* men having been in some discontent before, did not in this fight behave themselves as they used to do in others, as their own party gave it out of them; yet they did their parts, and the rest of the King's army both horse and foot performed their duties with great courage and resolution, both commanders and soldiers. Some of the parliament's horse having lingered awhile about pillage, and being in some disadvantage, *Skippton* perceiving it, brought up his foot seasonably to their assistance, and in this charge (as himself related it to me) was shot in the side. *Cromwell* coming in with his victorious right wing, they all charged together upon the King, who, unable to endure any longer, got out of the field towards *Leicester*. Prince *Rupert*, who now too late returned from his improvident eager pursuit, seeing the day lost, accompanied them in their flight, leaving a compleat victory to the parliamentarians.—After more particulars he closes his account thus: Both the general and lieutenant-general performed their work with admirable resolution, and by their particular examples infused valour into their followers, so likewise did the other officers, of whom divers were wounded. On the other side, the King shewed himself this day, a courageous general, keeping close with his horse, and himself in person rallying them to hot encounters [\*].—Hear now an adversary to *Cromwell*.—Very early in the morning [June 14, 1645] the scouts brought word that the King was making all haste

[\*] Memo-  
rials, p. 150.

very sensibly decayed, and all things flowed

' haste to the engagement, being falsely informed that  
 ' *Fairfax* in fear was retreating to *Northampton*, where-  
 ' as he had now disposed of *Nasby* field, and awaited  
 ' him, having *Cromwell* with *Whalley* on his right wing,  
 ' and *Iretou* on his left, the one opposed to my Lord  
 ' *Langdale*, and the northern horse, and the other to  
 ' Prince *Rupert*, general of the cavalry, the King him-  
 ' self being generalissimo. To come to the event.  
 ' Prince *Rupert* totally routed *Iretou*, who being engag-  
 ' ed and driven upon the King's rightmost foot, was  
 ' there wounded in the thigh with a halbert, and taken  
 ' prisoner, and the field on that hand cleared; which  
 ' *Fairfax* and *Cromwell* observing, having not yet stir-  
 ' red from their ground, *Fairfax* with a short speech  
 ' encouraged his troops to the charge; which was se-  
 ' conded by some devout ejaculations from *Cromwell*,  
 ' who clapping spurs to his horse, fell in with *Langdale's*  
 ' brigade, and quite charged through three bodies and  
 ' utterly broke them; nor did he stop till with fine force  
 ' he had likewise beat that wing from their ground,  
 ' without possibility of rallying or recovering it again. In  
 ' this action a commander of the King's knowing *Crom-*  
 ' *well*, advanced smartly from the head of his troops to  
 ' exchange a bullet singly with him, and was with the  
 ' like gallantry encountered by him, both sides forbear-  
 ' ing to come in, till their pistols being discharged, the  
 ' cavalier with a slanting back-blow of a broad sword,  
 ' luckily cut the ribbond that tied his murrion, and with  
 ' a draw threw it off his head, and now ready to repeat  
 ' his stroke, his party came in and rescued him, and  
 ' one of them alighting, threw up his head-piece into  
 ' his saddle, which *Oliver* hastily catching, as being  
 ' affrighted with the chance, clapt it the wrong way  
 ' on his head, and so fought with it the rest of the day,  
 ' which proved most highly fortunate on his side (though  
 ' the King most magnanimously and expertly managed  
 ' the fight, exposing himself to the eminentest perils of

in very prosperously on the parliament, who  
 failed

the field) and raised himself beyond the arts and reach of envy, or his enemies of the Presbyterian party, who had so long been heaving at him, to out him of all military employments, which concluding so pertinently and peremptorily for him in this grand event, did charm the hatred, malice and prejudice against him, into fear and dread what this arrogance of his fortune would finally aspire to. This battle wholly overthrew the King, who was never after able to make head against the parliament forces, but piecemeal lost his armies, castles and towns (a). I have related this action as I found it, but must at the same time desire my reader to class it with the encounters of *Quixot* and *Amadis*; for like theirs it owes its existence to imagination, and is not to be met with in any writer of credit.

(a) *Flagellum*, p. 37.

The three following authentic copies of original letters relating to this battle, will be deemed curiosities by most readers. They will do well to compare them with the narratives of modern commanders. In the year 1754, they were found in a wall nine feet thick, on pulling down a house in palace-yard *Westminster*, in order to build an office for the clerks of the house of lords. The public is indebted for the communication to an honourable gentleman, of distinguished rank in the republic of letters \*.

\* *Horace Walpole, Esq.*

LETTER I. Indorsed, To the honourable WILLIAM LENTHALL, Esq; Speaker to the house of commons. Haste.

*Honourable Sir,*

THIS morning by day brake wee marcht out *Guilfburro*, after the enemy. After an hours march we discovered their horie drawne up at *Sybbertoff* three miles this side *Harbarrough*, an hour after their foot appeared.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

131

peared. This was about 8 in the morning, by 10 we were disposed into a battalia on both sides, both sides with mighty shouts exprest a hearty desire of fighting; having for our parts recommended our cause to God's protection, and rec<sup>d</sup>. the word, which was *God our strength*, theirs *Queen Mary*. Our forlorne hopes begun the pla - - - whiles both sides labour'd for the hill and wynd, which in conclusyon w - - as it were equally divided. Our forlorne hope gave back, and their righ- wing of horse fell upon our left with such gallantry, that ours were immediately routed. About 1000 ran along with them, but such was the courage and diligence of the right wing backt with the foot, that they not only brat back the enemy from the traine, but fell in with their ffoot, and after 2 hours dispute won all their ffield peeces, (of which some are cannon) most of their baggage, mortar peeces, boats, 3000 arms, much powder, match, &c. and nigh 4000 prisoners, their number was about 12000; some 600 slayne, many commanders of note. Of ours not above 200. Our horse are still in pursuit, and have taken many officers; their standard is ours, the Kings waggon and many ladyes. God Almighty give us thankful hearts for this great victory, the most absolute as yet obteyned. The General, Leift. Gen. *Cromwell*, and Major Gen. *Skipson* (who is shot in the side, but not dangerous) did beyond expression gallantly; so did all the other commanders and soldiers. We have lost but 2 Capt. Tho' this come late, be pleased to accept it from

Your Honors most humble servants,

*Naezby*, wher the fight was this      HAR. LEIGHTON.  
Saturday, 14 Jun: 1645.              THO. HERBERT.

Capt. *Potter* is dangerously wounded,  
but hopes of his recovery, so is  
Capt. *Cook*.

LETTER II. Indorsed, For the hon<sup>ble</sup> WILLIAM  
LENTHALL, Speaker of commons house of parlia-  
ment. Theife.

S I R,

BEING commanded by you to this service, I think myself bound to acquaint you with the good hand of God towards you and us. We marched yesterday after the Kinge who went before us from *Daventree* to *Haverbrowe* and quartered about six miles from him, this day we marched towards him. Hee drew out to meete us, both armies ingaged, we after three howers fight very doubtful, att last routed his armie, killed and tooke about 5000, very many officers, but of what qualitie wee yet know not, wee tooke also about 200 carrag - - all hee had, and all his gunns, being 12 in number, whereof 2 were demie cannon, 2 demie culveringes, and (I think) the rest facers. We pursued - - - enemy from 3 miles short of *Ha* - - - to nine beyond, even to fight of *Leices* - - - whether the King fled. Sir this is non other but the hand of God, and to him alone belongs the glorie, wherein non are to share with him. The general served you with all faythfulnesse and honor, and the best commendations I can give him is, that I d - - say hee attributes all to God, and woud rath perish then assume to himselfe, which is an honest and a thriving way, and yet as much for bravery may be given to him in this action as to a man. Honest men served you faithfully in this action. Sir they are trustye. I beseech you in the name of God not to discourage them. I wish this action may begett thankfulnessse and humilitye in all that are concerned in it. He that ventures his life for the libertie of his cuntrye, I wish hee trust God for the libertie of his conscience, and you for the libertye he fights for, in this hee rests whoe is

Your most humble servant,

June 14th, 1645.  
*Haverbrowe.*

OLIVER CROMWELL.

LET-

OLIVER CROMWELL.

LETTER III. Indorsed, For the hon<sup>ble</sup> WILLIAM LENTHALL, Esq<sup>r</sup>. Speaker of the ho<sup>ble</sup> house of commons.

*Mr. Speaker,*

BESIDES the general account, I have already given, by one of my servants, whom I sent up to London yesterday, I thought fit to send the bearer *Mr. Boles*, whoe may more particularlye informe you concerneinge the abundant goodness of God to this army, and the whole kingdome in the late victorie obteyned at *Naseby* fiede. The whole body of their foote—taken and slaine, such a list of the prisoners as could be made up in this short time I have sent, the horse all quitted the fiede, and were pursued within three miles of *Leicester*: their ammunition, ordnance and carriages all taken: among which there were, two demy cannons, a whole culverin and a mortar peece, besides lesser peeces. We intend to move to *Leicester* as soon as we have taken order with our prisoners and wounded men. All that I desire is, that the honor of this greate and never to be forgotten mercie may be given to God, in an extraordinary day of thanksgivings; and that it may be improved to the good of his church and his kingdome: which shall be faithfully endeavoured by, Sir,

Y<sup>r</sup> most humble Ser<sup>t</sup>,

*Harborough, June 15, 1645.*

THO. FAIRFAX,

Some *Irish* are among the prisoners, as I am informed: I have not time to make enquiry into it. I desire they may be proceeded against according to ordnance of parliament. Major general *Skippen* was shot throughe his side; but notwithstandinge he continued in the fiede with great resolucon; and when I desired him to goe off the fiede, he answered he would not goe so long as a man would stand, still doing his office as a valient and wise commander. Also Colonel *Butler* and Colonel *Iretton*,

failed not to reward *Oliver* (z) for his good services.

upon their first charge were both dangerouslie wounded, behaving themselves very gallantlie. If I could enter into particulars, much might be spoken of the resolucon and courage of many commanders, both horse and ffoote in this days service\*.

These letters give us a clear idea of this important and decisive battle, a battle which in a manner extinguished the King's hopes, and soon after brought on a total reduction of his power! Lord *Clarendon* says, the King and the Kingdom were lost in it (b):—an expression which denotes his lordship's idea of the immenseness of the loss, though perhaps not much more exact than his account of the battle itself, which to say the least of it, is very defective and erroneous, as will appear by comparing it with the authentic accounts here given.

(b) Vol. iv.  
p. 658.

(z) *The parliament failed not to reward Oliver for his good services.*] *Milton* complains of the offices, gifts and preferments bestowed and shared among the members of parliament (c). And if we may believe a writer of those times, who had opportunity of being informed, (though allowances must be made for his prejudices) this was commonly and openly done, to the vexation of such as either could not, or would not partake with them. The passage is remarkable, and relates properly to the subject in hand. 'The leading men or bel-weathers having seemingly divided themselves, and having really divided the houses, and captivated their respective parties judgment, teaching them by an implicate faith, *Jurare in verba magistræ*, to pin their opi-

(c) See the second quotation from *Milton*, in note (o).

\* Since the insertion of these letters, I find they were printed by order of parliament, June 16, 1645, and republished in *Rushworth's* collections. But as they are curious, little known, and probably now first transcribed from the originals, I have thought proper to give them a place in this work notwithstanding. A copy of *Cromwell's* letter is in the *British Museum*.



services. But gratitude did not bind him;  
for

' nions upon their sleeves; they begin to advance their  
 ' projects of monopolizing the profits, preferments, and  
 ' power of the kingdom in themselves. To which pur-  
 ' pose, though the leaders of each party seem to main-  
 ' tain a hot opposition, yet when any profit or prefer-  
 ' ment is to be reached at, it is observed that a power-  
 ' ful independent especially moves for a Presbyterian,  
 ' or a leading Presbyterian for an independent; and sel-  
 ' dom doth one oppose or speak against another, in  
 ' such cases, unless something of particular spleen or  
 ' competition come between, which causeth them to  
 ' break the common rule. By this means the grandees  
 ' of each faction seldom miss their mark, since an In-  
 ' dependent moving for a Presbyterian, his reputation  
 ' carries the business clear with the Independent party;  
 ' and the Presbyterians will not oppose a leading man  
 ' of their own side. By this artifice the grandees of  
 ' each side share the commonwealth between them;  
 ' and are now become proud, domineering *Rehoboams*,  
 ' even over the rest of their fellow members, (contrary  
 ' to the liberty of parliament, which consists in an  
 ' equality) that were formerly fawning ambitious *Ab-*  
 ' *salamms*. There hath been lately given away to mem-  
 ' bers openly (besides innumerable and ineffimable pri-  
 ' vate cheats mutually connived at) at least 300000*l.*  
 ' in money, besides rich offices, employments in money  
 ' committees, sequestrations and other advantages.  
 ' And those members who have so well served them-  
 ' selves under colour of serving the publick, are, for  
 ' the most part, old canvassers of factions, who have  
 ' sat idly and safely in the house, watching their advan-  
 ' tages to confound businesses, and shuffle the cards to  
 ' make their own game; when others that have ven-  
 ' tured their persons abroad, laboured in the publick  
 ' work, like *Israelites* under these *Egyptian* task-masters,  
 ' and lost their estates, are left to starve until they can  
 ' find relief in that empty bag called by fools, *sides pub-*

for his success and influence on the army,  
 inspired

(d) Walker's  
 Mystery of  
 the two  
 Juntoes,  
 P. 2.

*lica*, by wise men *fides punica*, and are now looked upon in the house superciliously, like unwelcome guests (d).

Lord *Holles* in very sharp terms speaks of his antagonists, the Independent party, promoting and rewarding their friends and adherents: 'Which, says he, was easy for them, having both sword and purse, and with all an impudence and boldness to reward all those who would sell their consciences. For all such members of the house, and others, were sure to be preferred, have large gifts given them out of the commonwealths money, arrears paid, offices conferred upon them, countenanced and protected against all complaints and prosecutions, had they done never so unworthy, unjust, horrid actions, to the oppression of the subject, and dishonour of the parliament. All others discountenanced, opposed, inquisitions set upon them, questioned, imprisoned upon the least occasion, colours of crimes many times for doing real good service, and no favour nor justice for them: only that the world might see which was the way to rise, and which to be sure to meet with contrary winds and storms, and so make all men at least to hold candles to these visible saints (e).'

(e) Memoirs, p. 36.

(\*) Id. p.  
 332—338.

—In another place his lordship vindicates himself and friends from the charge of enriching themselves by disposing of the publick money, and retorts it on his adversaries, setting forth in a very particular manner what sums of money they had received under various pretences, and what salaries they enjoyed (\*). But after all these warm declamations, for both these writers were very warm, when they exercised their pens on these subjects, what was there done in these times that has not, that will not be done at all times? Friends and favourites are countenanced and preferred, enemies are overlooked, neglected, or disappointed. Was it ever otherwise? If men perform great and eminent services, 'tis grateful, 'tis politic to reward them. To complain of the givers or

receivers, seems not very consistent with good sense and impartiality. *Cromwell* we have seen make a figure in the war: he had ventured his life many times in the public service, and had brought reputation and victory back with him. Was he unworthy of notice, or did he not highly merit it? When the house of commons was far enough from being wholly at his devotion, we find it ordered, 'that five hundred pounds be forthwith provided and advanced,—— to be bestowed on Lieutenant General *Cromwell*, as a respect from the house. Ordered, that all the lands of the Earl of *Worcester*, Lord *Herbert*, and Sir *John Somersett*, his sons, in the county of *Southampton*, be settled upon Lieutenant General *Cromwell*, and his heirs, to be accounted as part of the two thousand five hundred pounds *per annum*, formerly appointed him by this house; and that Mr. *Samuel Browne*, Mr. *Solicitor*, Mr. *Lisle*, and Mr. *Wallop*, do bring in an ordinance accordingly. Ordered, that it be referred to the committee of the army, to consider how the residue of the two thousand five hundred pounds, land of inheritance formerly assigned Lieutenant General *Cromwell* by this house, may be speedily settled upon him, and his heirs, for ever, and he put in the present possession of it; and likewise to consider of an entertainment for his present subsistence; (f) *Journal*, Jan. 23, 1645. and to bring in an ordinance to this purpose (f).' And it was moreover ordered a few days afterwards, 'that Mr. *Lisle* do bring in an ordinance for the full granting unto, and settling upon Lieutenant General *Cromwell*, and his heirs, the manors of *Abberston* and *Ickell*, with the rights, members and appurtenances thereof, in the county of *Southampton*; being the lands of *John Lord Marquis of Winchester*, a delinquent, that hath been in arms against the parliament, and a Papist (g).' What the event of this last order was I cannot find; but by the following letter of *Oliver St. John* to *Cromwell*, it appears that the house of commons had liberally rewarded him for his services. (g) *Journal*, Jan. 31, 1645.

Dear


  
 1691  
 1691

Deare Sir,

I Have herewithall sente you the order of the house of commons for settling 2500 l. *per annum* upon you and your heires, and the ordinance of parliament in pursuance thereof in part, whereby the lands therein mentioned, being all the lands of the Earle of Worcester in that county, are settled upon you. I have likewise sent you a rent-roll of the quit-rents. The manors consist most of old rents. There are three advowsons. I am told by Col. Norton and Mr. Wheeler, whoe know the lands, that they are accounted 100 l. *p. ann.*

I endeavoured to passe this for the present, rather than to have stayed longer to make up the whole. Your patent was speedily prepared, and is this day passed the great seal. I have not sente it downe, but will keepe it for you, until I receive your direction to whom to deliver it. The charges of passing the ordinances to the clerkes, and of the seale, my clerke of the patents hath satisfied; you shall hereafter know what they come to. I delivered a copy of the ordinance to Mr. Lisle to send it to the committee of sequestrations, whoe hath, together with a letter to them, desired, that the sequestrators take care that no wrong be done to the lands. That which principally moved me to it was, because I heard, there weare goodly woods, and that much had been formerly cut, that for the future a stop might be made. By the ordinance sent you, you will be auctorized to send some bayliffe of your owne to husband the lands to your best advantage, which would be done speedilie. There is another order of the house for preparinge an ordinance for a goodly house and other lands in *Hampshire*, of the Marquisse of *Winchesters*. Wee had thought to have had them in the ordinance, already passed, but by absence of some, when I brought in the other, that fayled. Perhaps it is better as it is, and that the addition might have stayed this. You know to  
 & whome

inspired him with confidence (AA) and ambition,

‘ whome the Marquise hath relation \*, and in regard  
 ‘ that our commission for the seale ends with this  
 ‘ month, I desyred rather for the presente to passe this,  
 ‘ than to hazard the delay. Mr. *Lisle* was ordered to  
 ‘ bring in the other ordinance; it is not yet done. Sir,  
 ‘ Mr. *Wallop*, Mr. *Lisle*, Sir *Thomas Germaine*, have  
 ‘ been real friends to you in this business, and heartily  
 ‘ desire to have you seated, if possible, in their country.  
 ‘ Remember by the next to take notice hereof by letter  
 ‘ unto them (b).’—I know not what the patent men-  
 ‘ tioned in this letter means, unless the following reso-  
 ‘ lution of the house of commons, Dec. 1, 1645, will  
 ‘ explain it. ‘ Resolved, that the title and dignity of a  
 ‘ baron of the kingdom of *England*, with all rights,  
 ‘ privileges, pre-eminences, and precedencies, to the  
 ‘ said title and dignity belonging or appertaining, be  
 ‘ conferred and settled on Lieutenant General *Oliver*  
 ‘ *Cromwell*, and the heirs males of his body: and that  
 ‘ his Majesty be desired, in these propositions, [for a  
 ‘ peace] to grant and confer the said title and dignity  
 ‘ upon him, and the heirs males of his body accord-  
 ‘ ingly: and that it be referred to the former committee,  
 ‘ to consider of a fit way and manner for the perfecting  
 ‘ hereof (i).’—Here are proofs sufficient of the bounty  
 ‘ of *Oliver*’s masters.

(b) Thur-  
 loc, vol. i,  
 p. 75.

(i) Journals.

(AA) *His success and his interest in the army, inspired him with ambition, &c.*] Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, we have seen, was constituted general and commander in chief of the new modelled army; and he behaved, as it is well known, with great bravery and conduct. But his talents were chiefly of the military kind. He had no inclination for intrigues; no ambitious views; and therefore stood not in need of those arts which are requisite to obtain confidence and power. He contented

\* The Marquis of Winchester married the half-sister of the Earl of Essex. Ludlow, vol. i. p. 158.

bition, and excited in him views prejudicial

himself with discharging the duties of a good general, and troubled not himself with any thing beyond it. *Cromwell* had other things in his head. He fought not merely for his masters, or out of zeal for the cause; though zeal he undoubtedly had; but that he might one time or other take the lead, and gratify his own boundless ambition. He therefore made his court to all the officers and soldiers, and became at length so popular, as to be looked on by friends and foes as the chief actor in the interesting scenes exhibited by the army. *Fairfax* was viewed as a gentleman of an irrational and brutish valour, fitter to follow another man's counsel than his own, and obnoxious to *Cromwell* and the independent faction (upon whose bottom he stands) for his preferment, it being no dishonour to him to become the property of a powerful faction (k). But *Cromwell* was described 'as a head schoolmaster, in the parliament, (represented as a free-school when subjected to the will of the army) *Ireton* usher, and (that cypher) *Fairfax* prepositor (l).' And *Hollis* says, from the beginning of the new modelling the army, it was intended, by his party, that *Cromwell* should have the power, *Sir Thomas Fairfax* only the name of general.' And he further characterizes him, 'as one fit for their turns, to do whatever they will have him, without considering or being able to judge whether honourable or honest (m).' These characters of *Fairfax* seem very severe, and one would be apt to think, ought to be read with some allowances, as coming from men heated with resentment, and foes to the general, and his army. But the following passages from his own Memoirs, will shew us that there is much truth in what is above written, though couched in a sharp and adversary-like style. His little influence and authority in the army over which he had the name of general, he thus describes. 'From the time they [the army] declared their usurped authority at *Triplow-Heath*, I never gave

(k) Walker's History of Independence, part i. p. 30.

(l) Id. part ii. p. 30.

(m) Memoirs, p. 34.

to the authority from whence he derived his  
power

‘ my free consent to any thing they did: but being yet  
‘ undischarged of my place, they set my name in way  
‘ of course to all their papers, whether I consented or  
‘ not: and to such failings are all authorities subject.  
‘ Under parliamentary authority many injuries have been  
‘ done; so here hath a general’s power been broken and  
‘ crumbled into a levelling faction. Yet even this, I  
‘ hope, all impartial judges will interpret as force and  
‘ ravishment of a good name, rather than a voluntary  
‘ consent, which might make me equally criminal with  
‘ that faction. And if in a multitude of words, much  
‘ more in a multitude of actions, there must be some  
‘ transgressions; yet I can truly say, they were never  
‘ designedly, or wilfully committed by me (n).’

(n) Short  
Memorials,  
p. 125. 2vo.  
1692.

This shews perfectly the man.—Let us now proceed  
to view the ambition of *Cromwell* which had full scope  
for action under such a leader. *Ludlow*, speaking of the  
situation of affairs after the King was delivered into the  
hands of the parliament’s commissioners by the *Scots*,  
says, ‘ Walking one day with lieutenant-general *Crom-*  
‘ *well* in Sir *Robert Cotton*’s garden, he inveighed bit-  
‘ terly against them, [the parliament] saying in a fa-  
‘ miliar way to me, if thy father were alive, he would  
‘ let some of them hear what they deserved: adding  
‘ farther, that it was a miserable thing to serve a parlia-  
‘ ment, to whom let a man be never so faithful, if one  
‘ pragmatical fellow rise up and asperse him, he shall  
‘ never wipe it off. Whereas, said he, when one serves  
‘ under a general, he may do as much service, and yet  
‘ be free from all blame and envy. This text, together  
‘ with the comment his after actions put upon it, hath  
‘ since persuaded me, that he had already conceived the  
‘ design of destroying the civil authority, and setting  
‘ up of himself; and that he took that opportunity to  
‘ feel my pulse, whether I were a fit instrument to be  
‘ employed by him to those ends. But having replied  
‘ to his discourse, that we ought to perform the duty

‘ of

power. For the war being ended, in July 1646,

‘ of our stations, and trust God with our honour,  
 ‘ power and all that is dear to us, not permitting any  
 ‘ such considerations to discourage us from the profes-  
 ‘ tion of our duty, I never heard any thing more from  
 ‘ him upon that point (e).’ The same writer, after tel-  
 ‘ ling us that some menacing expressions fell from some  
 ‘ members of parliament, on occasion of the officers of the  
 ‘ army refusing to disband on their command, adds,  
 ‘ Lieutenant-general *Cromwell* took the occasion to  
 ‘ whisper me in the ear, saying, These men will never  
 ‘ leave till the army pull them out by the ears: which  
 ‘ expression I should have resented, if the state of our  
 ‘ affairs would have permitted (f).’—But nothing so  
 ‘ fully sets forth the arts and ambition of *Cromwell* as a  
 ‘ paper printed in *Thurloe’s* correspondence, entitled ‘Sun-  
 ‘ dry Reasons inducing Major *Robert Huntington* to lay  
 ‘ down his commission, humbly presented to the ho-  
 ‘ nourable houses of parliament.’ It is long, but it  
 ‘ would be a wrong to the reader as well as the subject to  
 ‘ abridge it.—‘ Having taken up arms, says he, in  
 ‘ defence of the authority and power of King and par-  
 ‘ liament, under the command of the Lord *Grey* of  
 ‘ *Warke*, and the Earl of *Manchester*, during their fe-  
 ‘ veral employments with the forces of the eastern asso-  
 ‘ ciation, and at the modelling of this army under  
 ‘ the present lieutenant-general, having been appointed  
 ‘ by the honourable houses of parliament, a major to  
 ‘ the now regiment of lieutenant-general *Cromwell*; in  
 ‘ each of which employments having served constantly  
 ‘ and faithfully, answerable to the trust reposed in me;  
 ‘ and having lately quit the said employment, and laid  
 ‘ down my commission, I hold myself tyed both in  
 ‘ duty and conscience to render the true reasons thereof,  
 ‘ which in the general is briefly this: because the prin-  
 ‘ ciples, designs, and actions of those officers, which  
 ‘ have a great influence upon the army, are (as I con-  
 ‘ ceive) very repugnant, and destructive to the honour  
 ‘ and

(e) Vol. i.  
p. 187.

(f) Id. p.  
189.



# OLIVER CROMWELL.

1646, the soldiery, instigated by *Cromwell*, refused

143  
 11355-10  
 1110133

and safety of the parliament and kingdom, from whom they derive their authority. The particulars whereof (being a breviat of my sad observations) will appear in the following narrative.

First, that upon the orders of parliament for disbanding this army, lieutenant-general *Cromwell* and commissary-general *Iretton*, were sent commissioners to *Walden*, to reduce the army to their obedience, but more especially, in order to the present supply of forces for the service of *Ireland*. But they, contrary to the trust reposed in them, very much hindered that service, not only by discountenancing those that were obedient and willing, but also by giving encouragement to the unwilling and disobedient, declaring that there had lately been much cruelty and injustice in the parliament's proceedings against them, meaning the army. And commissary-general *Iretton*, in further pursuance thereof, framed those papers and writings then sent from the army to the parliament and kingdom, saying also to the agitators, that it was then lawful and fit for us to deny disbanding, 'till we had received equal and full satisfaction for our past service: lieutenant-general *Cromwell* further adding, that we were in a double capacity, as soldiers, and as commoners. And when upon the rendezvous at *Triplow-beach*, the commissioners of parliament, according to their orders, acquainted every regiment with what the parliament had already done, and would further do, in order to the desires of the army, the soldiers being before prepared, and notwithstanding any thing could be said or offered to them by the commissioners, they still cried out for Justice, Justice. And for the effecting of their further purposes, advice was given by lieutenant-general *Cromwell* and commissary-general *Iretton*, to remove the King's person from *Holdenby*, or to secure him there by other guards than those appointed by the commissioners of parliament; which was

refused to disband, or be sent into *Ireland*,  
 though

' was thought most fit to be carried on by the private  
 ' soldiery of the army, and promoted by the agitators  
 ' of each regiment, whose first business was to secure  
 ' the garrison of *Oxford*, with the guns and ammuni-  
 ' tion there; from thence to march to *Holdenby*, in pro-  
 ' secution of the former advice; which was accordingly  
 ' acted by cornet *Joyce*, who when he had done the  
 ' business, sent a letter to the general then at *Keinton*,  
 ' acquainting his excellency, that the King was on his  
 ' march towards *Newmarket*. The general being trou-  
 ' bled thereat, told commissary-general *Ireton*, that he  
 ' did not like it, demanding withall who gave those  
 ' orders. He replied, that he gave orders only for se-  
 ' curing the King there, and not for taking him away  
 ' from thence. Lieutenant-general *Cromwell* coming  
 ' then from *London*, said, if this had not been done,  
 ' the King would have been fetched away by order of  
 ' parliament; or else colonel *Graves* by the advice of  
 ' the commissioners would have carried him to *Lon-*  
 ' *don*, throwing themselves upon the favour of parlia-  
 ' ment for that service. The same day cornet *Joyce*  
 ' being told the general was displeas'd with him for  
 ' bringing the King from *Holdenby*, he answered that  
 ' lieutenant-general *Cromwell* gave him orders at *London*,  
 ' to do what he had done both there and at *Oxford*.  
 ' The person of the King being now in the power of the  
 ' army, the business of lieutenant-general *Cromwell* was  
 ' to court his Majesty (both by members of the army,  
 ' and several gentlemen formerly in the King's service)  
 ' into a good opinion and belief of the proceedings of  
 ' the army, as also into a disaffection and dislike of the  
 ' proceedings of parliament; pretending to shew that  
 ' his Majesties interests would far better suit with the  
 ' principles of Independency, than of Presbytery. And  
 ' when the King did alledge, (as many times he did)  
 ' that the power of parliament was the power, by  
 ' which we fought, lieutenant-general *Cromwell* would  
 ' reply,

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

145  
 67100000  
 70710000

though commanded by the parliament erected

‘ reply, that we were not only soldiers, but commoners ;  
 ‘ promising that the army would be for the King in the  
 ‘ settlement of his whole business, if the King and his  
 ‘ party would sit still, and not declare nor act against  
 ‘ the army, but give them leave only to manage the  
 ‘ present business in hand.

‘ That when the King was at *Newmarket*, the par-  
 ‘ liament thought fit to send to his Majesty, humbly  
 ‘ desiring, that, in order to his safety and their adref-  
 ‘ ses for a speedy settlement, he would be pleased to come  
 ‘ to *Richmond*. Contrary hereunto, resolution was ta-  
 ‘ ken by the aforesaid officers of the army, that if the  
 ‘ King would not be diverted by pe swasion (to which  
 ‘ his Majesty was very opposite) that then they would  
 ‘ stop him by force at *Roxton*, where his Majesty was  
 ‘ to lodge the first night, keeping accordingly continual  
 ‘ guard upon him, against any power that should be sent  
 ‘ by order of parliament to take him from us: and to  
 ‘ this purpose out-guards were also kept to prevent his  
 ‘ escape from us with the commissioners, of whom we  
 ‘ had special orders given to be careful, for that they  
 ‘ did daily shew a dislike to the present proceedings of  
 ‘ the army against the parliament, and that the King  
 ‘ was most conversant and private in discourse with  
 ‘ them, his Majesty saying, that if any man should  
 ‘ hinder his going (now his houses had desired him upon  
 ‘ his late message of 12 *May*, 1647) it should be done  
 ‘ by force, and laying hold on his bridle; which if any  
 ‘ were so bold to do, he would endeavour to make it  
 ‘ his last. But contrary to his Majesties expectation, the  
 ‘ next morning when the King and the officers of the  
 ‘ army were putting this to an issue, came the votes of  
 ‘ both houses to the King of their compliance with that  
 ‘ which the army formerly desired. After which his  
 ‘ Majesty did incline to hearken to the desires of the  
 ‘ army, and not before.

L

‘ Where-

erected a council of officers and agitators,



' Whereupon at *Caversham*, the King was continually  
 ' solicited by messengers from lieutenant-general *Crom-*  
 ' *well* and commissary-general *Ireton*, proffering any  
 ' thing his Majesty should desire, as revenues, chap-  
 ' lains, wife, children, servants of his own, visitation  
 ' of friends, access of letters, and (by commissary-ge-  
 ' neral *Ireton*) that his negative voice should not be  
 ' meddled withal, and that he had convinced those that  
 ' reasoned against it at a general council of the army;  
 ' and all this they would do, that his Majesty might the  
 ' better see into all our actions, and know our princi-  
 ' ples, which lead us to give him all these things out of  
 ' conscience; for that we were not a people hating his  
 ' Majesties person or monarchical government, but  
 ' that we liked it as the best, and that by this King;  
 ' saying also, that they did hold it a very unreasonable  
 ' thing for the parliament to abridge him of them; of-  
 ' ten promising, that if his Majesty would sit still, and  
 ' not act against them, they would in the first place re-  
 ' store him to all these, and upon the settlement of our  
 ' own just rights and liberties, make him the most glo-  
 ' rious prince in Christendom. That to this purpose,  
 ' for a settlement they were making several proposals,  
 ' to be offered to the commissioners of parliament then  
 ' sent down to the army, which should be as bounds  
 ' for our party as to the King's business; and that his  
 ' Majesty should have liberty to get as much of these  
 ' abated as he could, for that many things therein were  
 ' proposed only to give satisfaction to others, who were  
 ' our friends; promising the King, that at the same  
 ' time the commissioners of parliament should see these  
 ' proposals, his Majesty should have a copy of them  
 ' also, pretending to carry a very equal hand between  
 ' King and parliament, in order to the settlement of  
 ' the kingdom by him; which besides their own judg-  
 ' ments and conscience, they did see a necessity of it as

' to

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

to consult of and manage their affairs;  
talked

to the people; commissary-general *Ireton* further saying, that what was offered in these proposals should be so just and reasonable, that if there were but six men in the kingdom that would fight to make them good, he would make the seventh against any power, that should oppose them.

The head quarters being removed from *Reading* to *Bedford*, his Majesty to *Woburne*, the proposals were given to me by commissary general *Ireton*, to present to the King; which his Majesty having read, told me, that he would never treat with army or parliament upon these proposals, as he was then minded. But the next day his Majesty understanding, that a force was put on his houses of parliament, by a tumult, sent for me again, and said unto me: Go along with Sir *Jo. Berkely* to your general and lieutenant-general, and tell them, that to avoid a new war, I will now treat with them upon their proposals, or any thing else, in order to a peace: only let me be saved in honor and conscience. Sir *Jo. Berkely* falling sick by the way, I delivered this message to the lieutenant-general and to commissary general *Ireton*, who advised me not to acquaint the general with it, till ten or twelve officers of the army were met together at the general's quarters, and then they would bethink themselves of some persons to be sent to the King about it. And accordingly commissary-general *Ireton*, colonel *Rainsbrow*, colonel *Hammond*, and colonel *Rich*, attended the King at *Woburne* for three hours together, debating the whole business with the King, upon the proposals; upon which debate, many of the most material things the King disliked, were afterwards struck out, and many other things much abated by promises; whereupon his Majesty was pretty well satisfied. Within a day or two after this, his Majesty removed to *Stoke*, and there calling for me, told me, he feared an engagement between the city and the

talked insolently of, and petitioned rudely  
the

\* army, saying, he had not time to write any thing un-  
 \* der his hand, but would send it to the general after  
 \* me; commanding me to tell commissary-general *Ire-*  
 \* *ton*, with whom he had formerly treated upon the  
 \* propofals, that he would wholly throw himself upon  
 \* us, and trust us for a settlement of the kingdom, as  
 \* we had promised; saying, if we proved honest men,  
 \* we should without question make the kingdom happy,  
 \* and save much shedding of blood. This message from  
 \* his Majesty I delivered to commissary-general *Ire-*  
 \* *ton*, at *Colebrooke*, who seemed to receive it with joy, say-  
 \* ing, that we should be the veriest knaves that ever  
 \* lived, if in every thing we made not good whatever  
 \* we had promised, because the King, by his not de-  
 \* claring against us, had given us great advantage against  
 \* our adversaries. After our marching through *London*  
 \* with the army, his Majesty being at *Hampton-Court*,  
 \* lieutenant-general *Cromwell* and commissary-general  
 \* *Ireton* sent the King word several times, that the rea-  
 \* son why they made no more haste in his business was,  
 \* because the party, which did then sit in the house,  
 \* (while *Pelham* was speaker) did much obstruct the bu-  
 \* siness, so that they could not carry it on at present;  
 \* the lieutenant-general often saying, really they should  
 \* be pulled out by the ears; and to that purpose caused  
 \* a regiment of horse to rendezvous at *Hyde-Park*, to  
 \* put that in execution (as he himself expressed) had it  
 \* not been carried by vote in the house that day as he  
 \* desired. The day before, the parliament voted once  
 \* more the sending of the propositions of both kingdoms  
 \* to the King, by the commissioners of each kingdom  
 \* at *Hampton-Court*; commissary-general *Ireton* bade me  
 \* tell the King, that such a thing was to be done to-  
 \* morrow in the house, but his Majesty need not be  
 \* troubled at it, for that they intended it to no other  
 \* end but to make good some promises of the parlia-  
 \* ment, which the nation of *Scotland* expected perform-  
 \* \* ance

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



the two houses; prescribed to them the terms  
on

ance of. And that it was not expected or desired, his Majesty should either sign them, or treat upon them, for which there should be no advantage taken against the King. Upon the delivery of which message, his Majesty replied, he knew not what answer to give to please all without a treaty. Next day after this vote passed, the lieutenant-general asking me thereupon, if the King did not wonder at these votes, I told him no; for that commissary-general *Ireton* had sent such a message by me the day before the vote passed, to signify the reason of it. The lieutenant-general replied, that really it was the truth, and that we (speaking of the parliament) intended nothing else by it, but to satisfy the *Scott*, which otherwise might be troublesome. And the lieutenant-general, and commissary-general enquiring after his Majesties answer to the propositions, and what it would be, it was shewed them both privately in a garden-house at *Putney*, and in some parts amended to their own minds. But before this, the King doubting what answer to give, sent me to lieutenant-general *Cromwell*, as unsatisfied with the proceedings of the army, fearing they intended not to make good what they had promised, and the rather because his Majesty understood that lieutenant-general *Cromwell* and commissary-general *Ireton* agreed with the rest of the house in some late votes that opposed the proposals of the army. They severally replied, that they would not have his Majesty mistrust them, for that since the house would go so high, they only concurred with them, that their unreasonableness might the better appear to the kingdom. And the lieutenant-general bade me further assure the King, that if the army remained an army, his Majesty should trust the proposals with what was promised to be the worst of his conditions, which should be made for him; and then striking his hand on his breast in his chamber at *Putney*, bade me tell

on which alone, as they said, they would  
return

the King, he might rest confident and assured of it. And many times the same message hath been sent to the King from them both, with this addition from commissary-general *Ireton*, that they would purge, and purge, and never leave purging the houses, till they had made them of such a temper, as should do his Majesties business; and rather than they would fall short of what was promised, he would join with *French*, *Spaniard*, cavalier, or any that would join with him to force them to it. Upon the delivery of which message, the King made answer, that if they do, they would do more than he durst do. After this the delay of the settlement of the kingdom was excused upon the commotions of colonel *Martin* and colonel *Rainsborough*, with their adherents; the lieutenant-general saying, that speedy course must be taken for outing of them the house and army, because they were now putting the army into a mutiny, by having hand in publishing several printed papers, calling themselves the agents of five regiments, and the agreement of the people, although some men had encouragement from lieutenant-general *Cromwell* for the prosecution of those papers.

And he being further prest to shew himself in it, he desired to be excused at the present, for that he might shew himself hereafter for their better advantage; though in the company of those men, which were of different judgments, he would often say, that these people were a giddy-headed party, and that there was no trust or truth in them; and to that purpose wrote a letter to col. *Whaley* that day the King went from *Hampton-Court*, intimating doubtfully that his Majesties person was in danger from them, and that he should keep out guard to prevent them; which letter was presently shewed to the King by col. *Whaley*. That about six days after, when it was fully known by the parliament and army, that the King was in the  
isle



# OLIVER CROMWELL.



return into private life, and live as citizens  
and

' isle of *Wight*, commissary-general *Ireton* standing by  
 ' the fire-side in his quarters at *Kingston*, and some speak-  
 ' ing of an agreement likely to be made between the  
 ' King and parliament, now the person of the King  
 ' was out of the power of the army; commissary-ge-  
 ' neral *Ireton* replied with a discontented countenance,  
 ' that he hoped it would be such a peace as we might  
 ' with a good conscience fight against them both. Thus  
 ' they, who at the first taking the King from *Holdenby*  
 ' into the power of the army, cried down presbyterian  
 ' government, the proceedings of this present parlia-  
 ' ment, and their perpetuity, and instead thereof held  
 ' forth an earnest inclination to a moderated episcopacy,  
 ' with a new election of members to sit in parlia-  
 ' ment for the speedy settlement of the kingdom; and  
 ' afterwards when the eleven members had left the house,  
 ' and the marching through *London* with the army, the  
 ' seven lords impeached, the four aldermen of *London*  
 ' committed to the *Tower*, and other citizens committed  
 ' also, then again they cried up presbyterian govern-  
 ' ment, the perpetuity of this present parliament, lieuten-  
 ' ant general *Cromwell* farther pleasing himself with  
 ' the great sums of money, which were in arrears from  
 ' each county to the army, and the taxes of 60,000 *l.*  
 ' per month for our maintenance. Now, saith he, we  
 ' may be, for ought I know, an army as long as we live.  
 ' And since the sending for the orders of parliament for  
 ' the calling of their members together, lieutenant-ge-  
 ' neral *Cromwell* perceiving the houses would not an-  
 ' swer his expectation, he is now again uttering words  
 ' perswading the hearers to a prejudice against pro-  
 ' ceedings of parliament, again crying down the pres-  
 ' byterian government, setting up a single interest, which  
 ' he calls an honest interest, and that we have done ill  
 ' in forsaking it. To this purpose it was lately thought  
 ' fit, to put the army upon chusing new agitators, and  
 ' to draw forth of the houses of parliament 60 or 70

and subjects; and even compelled the parliament, by whose authority they had been raised,

of the members thereof, much agreeing with his words he spake formerly in his chamber at *Kingston*, saying, What a sway *Stapleton* and *Holles* had heretofore in the kingdom, and he knew nothing to the contrary, but that he was as well able to govern the kingdom as either of them; so that, in all his discourse, nothing more appeareth, than his seeking after the government of King, parliament, city and kingdom. For effecting whereof he thought it necessary, and delivered it as his judgment, that a considerable part of the chief citizens of *London*, and some in every county, be clapt up in castles and garrisons, for the more quiet and submissive carriage of every place to which they belong: further saying, That, from the rising of the late tumult in *London*, there should be an occasion taken to hang the recorder and aldermen of *London*, then in the *Tower*, that the city might see the more they did stir in opposition, the more they should suffer; adding, that the city must first be made an example. And, since that lieutenant-general *Cromwell* was sent down from the parliament, for the reducing the army to their obedience, he hath most frequently, in publick and private, delivered these ensuing heads, as his principles, from whence all the foregoing particulars have ensued, being fully confirmed (as I humbly conceive) by his practice in the transaction of his last year's business.

1. First, that every single man is judge of just and right, as to the good and ill of a kingdom.

2. That the interest of honest men is the interest of the kingdom; and that those only are deemed honest men by him, that are conformable to his judgment and practice, may appear in many particulars; to instance but one, in the choice of colonel *Rainbrough* to be vice-admiral, lieutenant-general *Cromwell*

raised, in whose name they had fought,

‘ *will* being asked how he could trust a man, whose interest was so directly opposite to what he had professed, and one whom he had lately aimed to remove from all places of trust? he answered, that he had now received particular assurance from colonel *Rainsborough*, as great as could be given by man, that he would be conformable to the judgment and direction of himself and commissary-general *Iretton*, for the managing of the whole business at sea.

‘ 3. That it is lawful to pass through any forms of government for the accomplishing his ends; and therefore either to purge the houses, and support the remaining party, by force everlastingly, or to put a period to them by force, is very lawful and suitable to the interest of honest men.

‘ 4. That it is lawful to play the knave with a knave.

‘ These gentlemen aforesaid in the army, thus principled, and (as by many other circumstances might appear) acting accordingly, give too much cause to believe, that the success which may be obtained by the army (except timely prevented by the wisdom of the parliament) will be made use of to the destroying of all that power, for which we first engaged; and having, for above these twelve months past (sadly and with much reluctance) observed these several passages aforesaid, yet with some hopes, that at length there might be a returning to the obedience of parliament; and, contrary hereunto, knowing that resolutions were taken up, that, in case the power of parliament cannot be gained to countenance their designs, then to proceed without it: I, therefore, choose to quit myself of my command, wherein I have served the parliament these five years last past, and put myself upon the greatest hazard by discovering these truths, rather than, by hopes of gain, with a troubled mind, continue

and by whom they had been paid, to grafe

3113-10110110110

(g) *Thuroloc*,  
vol. i. p.  
94.

‘ tinue an abettor or assistant of such as give affronts  
‘ to the parliament and kingdom, by abusing their power  
‘ and authority, to carry on their particular designs,  
‘ against whom, in the midst of danger, I shall ever  
‘ aver the truth of this narrative, and myself to be a  
‘ constant, faithful and obedient servant to the parlia-  
‘ ment of *England* (g).

‘ ROB. HUNTINGTON.’

*Aug. 2, 1648.*

(r) *Memo-*  
*rials*, p.  
327.

This paper fully manifests the principles and the am-  
bition of *Cromwell*; and is written with such a spirit and  
air of truth, as strongly inclines one to believe it. Mr.  
*Whitlock* tells us, it was confirmed by *Huntington*, on  
oath, in the house of lords (r), though no mention is at  
all made of it in the Journals of the house of commons.  
This may probably be accounted for by the following  
passages in one of the weekly writers of that time. ‘ He  
‘ [*Huntington*] endeavoured likewise to present it to the  
‘ commons, but (such is the terror of that huge trifle,  
‘ or idol of the faction) that none would be seen to  
‘ move in the house; which being perceived by the  
‘ major, he made bold to present it to Mr. Speaker’s  
‘ own self, who, being a new creature of *Oliver*’s, of  
‘ about a twelvemonth’s standing, durst not countenance  
‘ such a piece of blasphemy against his creator; so that,  
‘ at length, the major went and tendered it to Mr. *Ber-*  
‘ *ket*, the serjeant at arms: but he, being of the same  
‘ temper with his good masters, told him, he had no-  
‘ thing to say to it (s).’ This is remarkable. Mr.  
*Ludlow*, perhaps, will give us the reason of it. ‘ These  
‘ affairs (the insurrection in *Wales*, and the motions in  
‘ *Scotland* in behalf of the King) necessitated the par-  
‘ liament to raise the militia, in order to oppose this ma-  
‘ levolent spirit which threatened them from the north,  
‘ and also prevailed with them to discountenance a charge  
‘ of

(s) *Merca-*  
*rius Prag-*  
*matics*,  
Aug. 2—8,  
1648.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



155

out of their Journals what was displeasing

3471353=10  
516=10710336

of high treason framed by major *Huntington*, an officer of the army, with the advice of some members of both houses, against lieutenant-general *Cromwell*, for endeavouring, by betraying the King, parliament and army, to advance himself; it being manifest, that the preferring this accusation at that time, was principally designed to take him off from his command, and thereby to weaken the army, that their enemies might be the better enabled to prevail against them (t). (t) Vol. i. p. 253.

It possibly, also, was not deemed safe to countenance an accusation of this kind against the master of legions. However, in justice to the character of *Cromwell*, 'tis fit the reader should be informed, that *Milton* declares the whole accusation was owing to the hatred and malice of the presbyterian faction. Hear his words. 'Dum

is communem hostem cum vitæ discrimine propulsat hi [Presbyteriani] militantem pro sese & in acie fortiter dimicantem conficiis criminibus accusant domi; & *Huntingtonum* centurionem quendam in ejus caput subornant.—*Huntingtonus* autem ille accusator, impunis & sui juris relictus, tandem pœnitentia ductus, ipse sua sponte a *Cromwello* veniam petiit, & a quibus esset subornatus ultro fassus est (u). (u) Prose Works, vol. ii. p. 393.

i. e. 'Whilst he staves off the enemy at the peril of his life, these [the Presbyterians] accuse him, fighting bravely for them, and amidst the very encounter itself, of feigned crimes, and suborn one major *Huntington* against his head.—And that accuser *Huntington*, unpunished and left to his own liberty, at length, struck with remorse, came of himself, and besought *Cromwell's* pardon, and freely confessed by whom he had been suborned.'—I shall conclude this note with observing, that Mr. *Wood* informs us, that 'major *Huntington* hated *Oliver* for his diabolical proceedings, and was hated by him again so much, that he imprisoned him several times (x). (x) Wood's Athenæ Oxonienses, vol. ii. c. 1174.' This looks not as if he had asked pardon, and confessed his fault.

to

to them (BB), or contrary to their humours,

This

(BB) *The soldiery, instigated by Cromwell, refused to disband, &c.*] A good part of the proofs of this may be found in the foregoing note. But, as the testimony of an adversary may not be so satisfactory, we will give such farther evidence as is unquestionable.—'Tis well known, that, after the decline of the King's affairs, through the valour and conduct of the new modelled army, he departed from *Oxford* in disguise, and threw himself into the hands of the *Scots*, then laying siege to *Newark*. 'Tis not unlikely his Majesty thought that they would have afforded him both protection and assistance, as he well knew great debates had arisen between them and the *English* parliament, and that there was no love towards each other subsisting. In truth neither seem to have had any great cause to be satisfied. However, the King soon found himself mistaken. Though the *Scots* treated him with great outward respect, and spake him fair, yet they intended not to join his party, or attempt to restore him to his former greatness, in opposition to the *English*, in whose pay, as well as alliance they were.—They, therefore, persuaded his Majesty to relinquish the few remaining garrisons he had left, which, accordingly, he did, and to enter into a negotiation for peace with his kingdoms. In a petition of the Earl of *Leven*, lord-general, the general officers, colonels, captains, &c. of the *Scots* army, presented to his Majesty at *Newcastle*, dated *June 26, 1646*, we have the following passages: 'We do  
' make it our humble address, and tender this earnest  
' petition to your Majesty in our name, and in the  
' name of all the inferior commanders and soldiers un-  
' der our charge; that your Majesty, in your wisdom  
' and goodness, may be pleased to take a speedy course  
' for settling of religion and church government in this  
' kingdom, according to the word of God, and exam-  
' ples of the best reformed churches, and bringing the  
' churches of the three kingdoms to the nearest con-  
' junction

This was but the beginning, however, of  
 that

' junction and uniformity, and for establishing the pri-  
 ' vileges and liberties of your kingdoms according to  
 ' the desires of your good people. We may not con-  
 ' ceal our unfeigned grief, for that your Majesty hath  
 ' not yet been pleased to authorise and sign the cove-  
 ' nant, which, we are confident, would bring honour  
 ' to God, happiness to yourself and posterity, and en-  
 ' dear your Majesty, above measure, to all your faith-  
 ' ful and loyal subjects; in the just defence whereof, as  
 ' many of them have already lost their lives, so are we  
 ' ready to sacrifice ours. We must also pray your Ma-  
 ' jesty to compassionate the distressed condition of your  
 ' kingdoms, groaning under the heavy pressures of ma-  
 ' nifold calamities, occasioned by the continuance of  
 ' this unnatural war; and to comply with the councils  
 ' of your parliaments; that all differences being hap-  
 ' pily composed, and the armies in both kingdoms dis-  
 ' banded, we may return home in peace, or be dis-  
 ' posed of otherwise by your Majesty, with the advice  
 ' of your parliaments, which may be most for your  
 ' Majesty's honour and service, and the prosperity of  
 ' these kingdoms (y).<sup>(y) Parliamentary History, vol. xv. p. 13.</sup> This address, which seems to  
 have been very conformable to the sentiments of the  
 then ruling party in *Scotland*, one would think must have  
 undeceived *Charles* with regard to his hopes from this  
 army. For the covenant, and compliance with the  
 councils of parliaments, were grating sounds in his ears,  
 and announced the utterers far from friends.—What  
 followed is well known. Propositions were sent to the  
 King from both houses of parliament to *Newcastle*; long  
 debates were carried on between him and Mr. *Henderson*  
 concerning church government, and things still remain-  
 ed as they were. At length the controversies between  
*England* and *Scotland* were concluded by articles of agree-  
 ment; whereby, on the payment of two hundred thou-  
 sand pounds in hand, and a promise of the same sum  
 hereafter, the *Scots* consented to quit all the places of  
 strength

that authority which they soon after ac-

quired

(z) Burnet's  
Memoirs of  
Hamilton,  
p. 312.  
Folio 1677.

strength held by them in *England*, and return to their own country. No mention is made in these articles concerning the King's person; but the commissioners of both nations understood the intentions of their principals, and therefore, 'on the delivery of the arrears for the payment of the army, the *Scottish* army withdrew, and left the King in the hands of the *English*, who presently send him to *Holmby* (z).'

All things now seemed favourable to the parliament of *England*. Every foe was subdued at home, and the King himself a captive. Now, therefore, was the time for easing the kingdom from the heavy oppressions, which, for more than four years, it had groaned under, as well as to establish peace on lasting foundations. As the army had been raised and maintained at a vast expence, nothing was more natural or reasonable than to think, as soon as might be, of reducing it. Accordingly, *February* 19, 1646, O. S. the question being put in the house of commons, 'whether there should be a number of foot kept up at the pay of the kingdom, more than what will be sufficient for the keeping of such garrisons as shall be continued;' it passed in the negative by a majority of ten (a). On the 23d of the same month, the house proceeded to the consideration of the business concerning the garrisons, and on that, and many days afterwards, ordered that no garrison should be kept in some places; that the works of others should be slighted, and some of the most important continued, viz. *Plymouth*, *Exeter-castle*, *Poole*, *Weymouth*, *Portland*, *Hull*, *Scarborough-castle*, *Liverpole*, *Newcastle*, and some others, deemed, as I suppose, at that time, of importance.

(a) Journal.

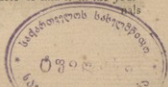
On the 25th of *March* following, some officers of the army petitioned the house of lords, and, besides requesting the payment of their arrears, and an act of indemnity, which they undoubtedly had a right to, they desired an 'opportune and timely answer' to their re-



quired and brought to an height unknown

quests, 'that the public worship of God may be speedily settled according to the word of God and the examples of the best reformed churches. That the subject may have the benefit of *Magna Charta*, and the petition of right, so far forth as may comport with the necessities of the kingdom. That all committees in the several counties may be removed; and that the treasurers and sequestrators of the said counties may be called to a speedy and strict account, for the better satisfaction and ease of the kingdom.' Together with many other things relative to themselves as officers, declaring, at the same time, that some of them had already engaged themselves for *Ireland*, and that the rest were ready to contribute their best assistance thereunto. Whereupon the officers, who subscribed the petition, were called in, and had for answer, 'That the house gave them thanks for their good affections to them, and their services to the kingdom and parliament; and that they take it well concerning their offer for *Ireland*: and, as to their arrears, their lordships will do their parts, and will take their petition into consideration.' The same day a copy of this petition was presented to the house of commons by the same officers, to whom the house sent out four of their members with the following answer: 'That, as to their arrears, the house had and would take them into consideration, with others, in such manner as they should think fit, as well as their desires of employment. That, as to the rest of the petition, about the management of public affairs, it did not concern any persons to give instructions to the houses therein; yet, in consideration the petitioners were men that had done service to the parliament, and, in regard of their professions, and that they might have done this merely out of inadvertency, they were willing to pass it by (b).' I have given this answer on the authority of the Parliamentary History, not being able to find it in the Jour-

(b) Parliamentary History, vol. xv. p. 340.



nals of the house of commons. However, certain it is, that house was greatly alarmed at some petitions which were then set on foot among the officers of the army: for, on the 27th of *March* 1647, it was resolved, that a letter be written to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*, general, to acquaint him, that this house hath been informed, that a petition is carrying on in the army: that he would take some course, by the best means he can, to make a stop of it; and that a copy of the petition, delivered into this house this day, be sent to the general (c). And, on the 29th of the same month, a letter, directed to colonel *Roffiter*, of 28<sup>o</sup> *Martii*, at noon, signed *H.* with a paper inclosed, filed, 'the heads of a petition,' endeavoured to be obtruded, as the sense of the army, delivered in to colonel *Roffiter*, was this day read. Resolved, &c. That thanks be given to colonel *Roffiter* and colonel *Harley*, for these timely informations. It was, moreover, resolved, That the general should be desired to give order, that several officers [supposed to be concerned in the framing and signing the petition] do attend the house, and that the committee appointed for this affair should have power to examine commissary-general *Irton*. And a declaration appointed, prepared and brought in, with regard to the army, was now reported by Mr. *Helles*, who had always appeared with great zeal against the army party in the house. This declaration does not appear in the Journals, it being expunged *June* 3, 1647, at the desire or demand of the army.—The petition, referred to in these votes, contained a request for indemnity before disbanding; that satisfaction also be given them for their arrears; that they might not be compelled, by press or otherwise, to serve out of the kingdom; that they might have satisfaction for the losses they had sustained by adhering to the parliament, and a present supply of money. These were bold demands, and sufficient to rouse the attention and resentment of parliament, who ordered the

the concessions made them by both houses,  
they

the following declaration (the same which was inserted, but is now expunged in the Journals) to be printed and published, and a number of copies thereof sent down in a letter to Sir *Thomas Fairfax*. 'The two houses of parliament having received information of a dangerous petition, with a representation annexed, tending to put the army into a distemper and mutiny, to put conditions upon the parliament, and obstruct the relief of *Ireland*, which hath been contrived and promoted by some persons in the army; they do declare their high dislike of that petition, their approbation and esteem of their good service who first discovered it, and of such officers and soldiers as have refused to join in it; and that, for such as have been abused, and, by the persuasions of others, drawn to subscribe it, if they shall, for the future, manifest their dislike of what they have done, by forbearing to proceed any further therein, it shall not be looked on as any cause to take away the remembrance and sense the houses have of the good services they have formerly done, but they shall be still retained in their good opinion, and shall be cared for with the rest of the army, in all things necessary and fitting for the satisfaction of persons that have done so good and faithful service, and as may be expected from a parliament so careful to perform all things appertaining to honour and justice: and, on the other side, it is declared, That all those who shall continue in their distempered condition, and go on in advancing and promoting that petition, shall be looked upon, and proceeded against, as enemies to the state, and disturbers of the public peace (d).'

Sir *Thomas Fairfax* returned an answer to the letter and declaration, full of duty and respect: but the soldiers undertook to vindicate their conduct, notwithstanding the lords had voted for the disbanding of such as would not engage themselves in the service of *Ire-*

they had the insolence to take the King out  
of

land. This was done in a very bold piece, intituled, 'A vindication of the officers of the army under Sir Thomas Fairfax;' in which, after insisting, that they had not said or done any thing unreasonable, they tell the commons, 'that the sense of such expressions [as were contained in the foregoing declaration] was so irksome to them, who had ventured whatever they esteemed dear to them in this world, for the preservation of the freedom and privilege of that house; that they could not but earnestly implore their justice in the vindication of them.' This petition was signed by a very great number of officers. After the reading this in the house, April 30, 1647, major-general Skippon produced a letter, presented to him the day before by some troopers of several regiments in the army, in behalf of eight regiments of horse; in which, after many high and insolent expressions, they declared, 'that they would neither be employed for the service of *Ireland*, nor suffer themselves to be disbanded, till their desires were granted, and the rights and liberties of the subject should be vindicated and maintained (c) \*.' In short, the disputes were carried on with great warmth between the parliament and the army. But the disputants were but ill matched. Votes were overpowered by arms; eloquence was dumb under the power of the sword. Though the parliament ordered part of the army to disband, and others to go for *Ireland*; though they promised, flattered and threatened such as were indisposed to obey; it was all in vain. The army was as one body, and no impression was to be made on it. Therefore, finding contesting with it was to no purpose, especially after the seizing the King, by *Joyce*, at *Holdenby*, the house of commons, on the 15th of *June*,

(c) Parliamentary History, vol. xv. p. 359.

\* A letter of almost the very same words, directed to lieutenant-general Cromwell, was by him delivered to Mr. Speaker. It was informed, the like was delivered to the General. Journal, April 30, 1647.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

of the hands of the parliament's commissioners

resolved, That the officers of this army, not in commission, shall have their full pay, upon their disbanding or engaging for *Ireland*, deducting for free quarters according to the course and rule of the army: that 10000*l.* be allowed to the reduced officers: that the common soldiers should have their full pay, on the footing of the officers: that commission-officers should have a month's additional pay on their disbanding: that the declaration of both houses, on the 30th of *March* last, be expunged. This last vote was a bitter pill\*, and met (as might be expected, where there was a sense of honour, or any tolerable share of spirit remaining) with considerable opposition, both in the house of lords and commons. In both it was debated, but carried in the affirmative by a majority. 'Here, says *Whitlock*, the parliament began to surrender themselves and their power into the hands of their own army (f).' Such (f) P. 250. were the beginnings of the quarrel between the civil and military powers. *Cromwell's* name does not appear in any of these proceedings hitherto. But the writers, who lived in those times, agree, that he was looked on to be at the bottom of them. 'Others were not wanting, says *Ludlow*, who resolved the securing lieutenant-general *Cromwell*, suspecting that he had, under-

\* This will appear from the ordinance for the repeal of the declaration, which runs thus in the Journal:—'Whereas the lords and commons did, by a declaration of the 30th of *March* last, declare their sense upon a petition, with the representation thereunto annexed: and whereas they have been since informed, that the petitioners intended not thereby to give any offence to the parliament, or any way to respect upon, or lessen their authority: and calling to mind the great and eminent service done by the army to the parliament and kingdom: the lords and commons, being tender of the honour of the said army, have thought fit to ordain and declare, and be it declared and ordained, by the said lords and commons, in the parliament of England assembled, and by the authority of the same, that the said former declaration, of the 30th of *March*, be raised and expunged out of the Records and books of the said houses; and wholly taken away, and made void: and that no member of the said army shall receive any damage, prejudice or reproach, for any thing in the said former declaration.'

tioners at *Holdenby*, to whom he had been de-

‘ hand, given countenance to this design; but, he be-  
 ‘ ing advertised of it, went that afternoon towards the  
 ‘ army, so that they missed of him, and were not wil-  
 ‘ ling to shew their teeth since they could do no  
 ‘ more (g).’ *Holles* charges him with the same fault,  
 and speaks likewise of his going down to the army, on  
 his being suspected by the house, and joining in the sub-  
 scription of a rebellious letter (b). *Lord Clarendon*,  
 speaking of these matters, says, ‘ *Cromwell* hitherto car-  
 ‘ ried himself with that rare diffimulation (in which,  
 ‘ sure, he was a very great master) that he seemed ex-  
 ‘ ceedingly incensed against this insolence of the sol-  
 ‘ diers; was still in the house of commons when any  
 ‘ such address was made; and inveighed bitterly a-  
 ‘ gainst the presumption, and had been the cause of the  
 ‘ commitment, of some of the officers. He proposed  
 ‘ that the general might be sent down to the army,  
 ‘ who, he said, would conjure down this mutinous  
 ‘ spirit quickly; and he was so easily believed, that he  
 ‘ himself was sent once \* or twice to compose the ar-  
 ‘ my; when, after he had staid two or three days, he  
 ‘ would again return to the house, and complain hea-  
 ‘ vily of the great licence that was got into the army:  
 ‘ that, for his own part, by the artifice of his ene-  
 ‘ mies, and of those who desired that the nation should  
 ‘ be again imbrewed in blood, he was rendered so odi-  
 ‘ ous unto them, that they had a purpose to kill him,  
 ‘ if, upon some discovery made to him, he had not  
 ‘ escaped out of their hands. And in these and the  
 ‘ like discourses, when he spake of the nation’s being

(g) Vol. i.  
p. 190.

(b) See the  
quotation  
from *Holles*  
in note (v).

\* In the Journal of the 30th of April 1647, we find it resolved, &c. That field-marshal Skippon, lieutenant-general Cromwell, commissary Ireton, and colonel Fleetwood, be enjoined forthwith to go down to their charges in the army, and employ their endeavours to quiet all distempers in the army.—The house, probably, were led into favourable opinions of these officers from Skippon’s and Cromwell’s delivering that day the letters they had received from the troopers.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



delivered by the *Scots*, in opposition to the

' to be involved in new troubles, he would weep bit-  
 ' terly, and appear the most afflicted man in the world  
 ' with the sense of the calamities which were like to  
 ' ensue. But, as many of the wiser sort had long dis-  
 ' covered his wicked intentions, so his hypocrisy could  
 ' no longer be concealed. The most active officers  
 ' and agitators were known to be his own creatures,  
 ' and such who neither did, nor would, do any thing  
 ' but by his direction. So that it was privately resolved,  
 ' by the principal persons of the house of commons,  
 ' that, when he came the next day into the house,  
 ' which he seldom omitted to do, they would send him  
 ' to the *Tower*; presuming, that, if they had once se-  
 ' vered his person from the army, they should easily re-  
 ' duce it to its former temper and obedience: for they  
 ' had not the least jealousy of the general *Fairfax*,  
 ' whom they knew to be a perfect Presbyterian in judg-  
 ' ment, and that *Cromwell* had the ascendant over  
 ' him, purely by his dissimulation and pretence of con-  
 ' science and sincerity. There is no doubt, *Fairfax* did  
 ' not then, nor long after, believe that the other had  
 ' those wicked designs in his heart against the King,  
 ' or the least imagination of disobeying the parliament.  
 ' This purpose, of seizing upon the person of *Cromwell*,  
 ' could not be carried so secretly, but that he had no-  
 ' tice of it; and the very next morning, after he had  
 ' so much lamented his desperate misfortune, in having  
 ' lost all reputation, and credit, and authority, in the  
 ' army, and that his life would be in danger if he were  
 ' with it; when the house expected every minute his  
 ' presence, they were informed, that he was met out  
 ' of town, by break of day, with one servant only,  
 ' on the way to the army; where he had appointed a  
 ' rendezvous of some regiments of the horse, and from  
 ' whence he writ a letter to the house of commons,  
 ' That having the night before received a letter from  
 ' some officers of his own regiment, that the jealousy

' the troops had conceived of him, and of his want  
 ' of kindness towards them, was much abated, so  
 ' that they believed, if he would be quickly pre-  
 ' sent with them, they would all in a short time,  
 ' by his advice, be reclaimed: upon this he had made  
 ' all the haste he could, and did find that the soldiers  
 ' had been abused by misinformation; and that he hoped  
 ' to discover the fountain from whence it sprung; and,  
 ' in the mean time, desired that the general, and the  
 ' other officers in the house, and such as remained  
 ' about the town, might be presently sent to their  
 ' quarters; and that he believed it would be very ne-  
 ' cessary, in order to the suppression of the late distem-  
 ' pers, and for the prevention of the like for the time  
 ' to come, that there might be a general rendezvous of  
 ' the army; of which the general would best consider  
 ' when he came down, which he wished might be hast-  
 ' ened. It was now to no purpose to discover what  
 ' they had formerly intended, or that they had any  
 ' jealousy of a person who was out of their reach;  
 ' and so they expected a better conjuncture; and, in  
 ' a few days after, the general, and the other officers, left  
 ' the town, and went to their quarters (i).—These  
 concurrent testimonies will, I presume, clearly evince  
 that *Cromwell* was deemed the chief raiser and manager  
 of the storm which carried all things before it, and  
 levelled whatever came in its way. *Fairfax*, the ge-  
 neral, declares strongly his disinclination to, and his  
 abhorrence of, these proceedings. He attributes them  
 to the agitators; but, I believe, he deemed *Cromwell* the  
 chief of them, and had him and *Ireton* in his eye in  
 the following passage: ' This mercy [the success of the  
 ' army in the years 1645 and 1646] was soon clouded  
 ' with abominable hypocrisy and deceit, even in those  
 ' men who had been instrumental in bringing this war  
 ' to a conclusion. Here was the vertical point on  
 ' which the army's honour and reputation turned into  
 ' a reproach and scandal. Here the power of the army  
 ' I once had was usurped by the agitators, the fore-  
 ' runners of confusion and anarchy (k). None but  
 these

(i) Vol. v.  
p. 46.

(k) Short  
Memorials,  
p. 103.



authority of parliament (cc), and the sentiments of *Fairfax*. This opened a new scene

these men were able to usurp *Fairfax's* power of the army.

(cc) *They took the King out of the hands of the commissioners of the parliament, &c.*] Cromwell seems to have been determined at all events to secure and enlarge his power and authority. The tumults and commotions raised by his means were intended as trials of his capacity and influence over the army. The success he had in these emboldened him, and caused him to aspire to something beyond what he yet was. Fully sensible that the parliament, though through fear it had truckled to him, yet hated him heartily, and longed only to crush him, as they would have done on the conclusion of a peace with the King: fully sensible, I say, of this, he determined to prevent them, and to give the law both to *Charles* and the parliament. For this end he secretly urged on the agitators to seize his Majesty's person, and thereby put it out of the power of the houses to conclude any thing with him, without the army's consent and approbation.—The following authorities will explain and enlarge what is here said.

‘ One thing was yet wanting (as they [the managers  
 ‘ of the army] thought) for the carrying on their de-  
 ‘ sign, and amusing the poor people of *England* with  
 ‘ an expectation of their settling a peace, so to make  
 ‘ them sit still and look on, whilst they trampled upon  
 ‘ parliament, city and kingdom; which was to be  
 ‘ possess’d of the King’s person, and make the world  
 ‘ believe they would bring him up to his parliament,  
 ‘ and set him on his throne. For this, it seems, a  
 ‘ meeting was appointed at lieutenant-general *Crom-*  
 ‘ *well's*, upon the thirtieth of *May*, where it is resolv’d,  
 ‘ That cornet *Joyce* should, with a party of horse, go  
 ‘ to *Holmby* and seize upon his Majesty; which is pre-  
 ‘ sently executed, and given out that others had the  
 ‘ like design, which they had prevented (1). At first  
 ‘ it

(1) See Huntington's account of this in note (AA).

scene—His Majesty was treated with very great respect by the army; every thing was

' it must seem only the act of Mr. *Joyce*; *Cromwell*  
 ' protested he knew nothing of it (though he was the  
 ' man that appointed it to be done, as appears by  
 ' what has been recited, taken out of some of their  
 ' own authors); Sir *Thomas Fairfax* writes a letter to  
 ' the house, professes the same for himself as in the pre-  
 ' sence of God, with a large undertaking for the rest of  
 ' his officers, and the body of the army: and, perhaps,  
 ' he said true; I would fain be so charitable as to be-  
 ' lieve it; nor, indeed, do I think the good man is  
 ' privy to all their plots; he must have no more than  
 ' what they are pleased to carve and chew for him, but  
 ' must swallow all, and own them when they come  
 ' abroad. Here then they have the King, *Joyce* drives  
 ' away the guards, forced colonel *Greaves* to fly, whom  
 ' else they threatened to kill (murder being no sin in  
 ' the visible saints); carries away his Majesty, and the  
 ' commissioners that attend him, prisoners, and imme-  
 ' diately sends up a letter to certify what he had done,  
 ' with directions it should be delivered to *Cromwell* (m)?  
 ' *Ludlow*, who understood the designs and actions of the  
 ' army, probably, better than *Holles*, speaking of the di-  
 ' visions between it and the parliament, adds, ' The agi-  
 ' tators of the army, sensible of their condition, and  
 ' knowing that they must fall under the mercy of the  
 ' parliament, unless they could secure themselves from  
 ' their power, by prosecuting what they had begun;  
 ' and fearing those who had shewed themselves so for-  
 ' ward to close with the King, out of principle, upon  
 ' any terms, would now, for their own preservation,  
 ' receive him without any, or rather put themselves un-  
 ' der his protection, that they might the better subdue  
 ' the army, and reduce them to obedience by force;  
 ' sent a party of horse under the command of cornet  
 ' *Joyce*, on the 4th of *June*, 1647, with an order in  
 ' writing, to take the King out of the hands of the  
 ' com-

(m) *Holles's*  
*Memoirs*, p.  
 96.

was rendered as agreeable as possible to him, in his captive situation, and Cromwell entered

‘ commissioners of parliament. The cornet, having placed guards about *Holmby* house, sent to acquaint the King with the occasion of his coming, and was admitted into his bedchamber, where, upon promise that the King should be used civilly, and have his servants and other conveniencies continued to him, he obtained his consent to go with him. But whilst cornet *Joyce* was giving orders concerning the King’s removal, the parliament’s commissioners took that occasion to discourse with the King, and persuaded him to alter his resolution; which *Joyce* perceiving at his return, put the King in mind of his promise, acquainting him, that he was obliged to execute his orders; whereupon the King told him, that, since he had passed his word, he would go with him; and, to that end, descended the stairs to take horse, the commissioners of the parliament being with him. Colonel *Brown* and Mr. *Crew*, who were two of them, publicly declared, that the King was forced out of their hands; and so returned, with an account of what had been done, to the parliament (n).’ This was a very bold stroke indeed! performed in the name of soldiers only under the command of *Fairfax*, but no doubt contrived by *Cromwell* and *Irton*, in order to make themselves arbiters between King and parliament, and advance their own ambitious projects. Lord *Clarendon* assures us, that ‘ the King did, in truth, believe that their purpose was to carry him to some place where they might more conveniently murder him (o).’ The author of the *Icon Basiliæ* more sensibly observes, in his Majesty’s person, ‘ This surprize of me tells the world, that a King cannot be so low but he is considerable, adding weight to that party where he appears (p).’ The King had no reason to fear murder: *Joyce* behaved with civility to him; promised him all conveniencies; did what in him lay to please him,

(n) Vol. i.  
p. 191.

(o) Vol. v.  
p. 41.

(p) King  
Charles’s  
Works, p.  
7. S. Fol.  
Lond. 1687.

entered into a negotiation with him, in order to his restoration; but terms being not

him, and rendered him more pleased with his situation than he had before been. Let us hear *Fairfax*. ‘ So soon as I heard of it [the King’s seizure at *Holmby*] I immediately sent away two regiments of horse, commanded by colonel *Whalley*, to remove this force, and to set all things again in their due order. But before he came to *Holmby*, the King was advanced two or three miles on his way to *Cambridge*, attended by *Joyce*, where colonel *Whalley* acquainted the King, he was sent by the general to let him know how much he was troubled at those great insolencies that had been committed so near his person; and, as he had not the least knowledge of them before they were done, so he had omitted no time in seeking to remove that force, which he had orders from me to see done; and therefore he desired his Majesty that he would be pleased to return again to *Holmby*, where all things should be settled again in as much order and quietness as they were before. And also he desired the commissioners to reassume their charge, as the parliament had directed them, which he was also to desire them to do from the general. But the King refused to return, and the commissioners to act; whereupon colonel *Whalley* urged them to it, saying, he had an express command to see all things well settled about his Majesty, which could not be done, but by his returning again to *Holmby*. The King said positively, he would not do it: so the colonel pressed him no more to it, having, indeed, a special direction from me to use all tenderness and respect, as was due to his Majesty. The King came that night, or the next, to Sir *John Cutts*’s house near *Cambridge*; and the next day I waited on his Majesty, it being also my business to persuade his return to *Holmby*, but he was otherwise resolved. I prest the commissioners also to act according to the power given them by the parlia-

not agreed on, or dangers of some kind or other (DD) being apprehended, Cromwell broke

ment, which they also refused to do: so having spent the whole day about this business, I returned to my quarters; and, as I took leave of the King, he said to me, Sir, I have as good interest in the army as you; by which I plainly saw the broken reed he leaned on. The agitators could change into that colour which served next to their ends, and had brought the King into an opinion that the army was for him. That it might appear what a real trouble this act was to me, though the army was almost wholly infected with this humour of agitation, I called for a council of war to proceed against *Joyce* for this high offence and breach of the articles of war; but the officers, whether for fear of the distempered soldiers, or rather (as I suspected) a secret allowance of what was done, made all my endeavours in this ineffectual (g). I have transcribed *Fairfax's* account at length, that the reader may the better be enabled to judge of the justice of *Clarendon's* narrative above-mentioned, and also of the truth of the message, delivered to the house of lords by the Earl of *Dunfermline*, from the King, 'that his Majesty went from *Holdenby* unwillingly (r).' Thus, says *Perinchief*, was that religious Prince made once more the mock of fortune, and the sport of the factious, and was drawn from his peaceful contemplations and prospect of heaven, to behold and converse with men set on fire of hell (s). Whether the reader be disposed to laugh or be serious at this solemn paragraph is very indifferent to me; but the writer, who composed it, stands little chance for credit with such as with attention have studied the character of his hero.

(DD) *Terms being not agreed on, or danger being apprehended, Cromwell brake off all thoughts of friendship with Charles, &c.*] The King no sooner found himself in the hands of the army, than he had reason to be satisfied

(g) Short  
Memorials,  
p. 113—  
117.

(r) Parlia-  
mentary  
History,  
vol. xv.  
p. 399.

(s) Life of  
K. Charles,  
prefixed to  
his works,  
p. 40.

broke off all thoughts of friendship with the King, and openly declared for bringing him to

tified with their civility and respect *Ludlow*, with some indignation, speaks of the attendance and homage that was paid him by some chief officers. *Lord Clarendon* has given us a particular account of the treatment he received, which I will here transcribe for the satisfaction of the reader.—‘The King found himself at *Newmarket*, attended by greater troops and superior officers; so that he was present’y freed from any subjection to *Mr. Joyce*, which was no small satisfaction to him; and they who were about him appeared men of better breeding than the former, and paid his Majesty all the respect imaginable, and seemed to desire to please him in all things. All restraint was taken off from persons resorting to him, and he saw every day the faces of many who were grateful to him; and he no sooner desired that some of his chaplains might have leave to attend upon him for his devotion, but it was yielded to, and they who were named by him (who were *Dr. Sheldon*, *Dr. Morley*, *Dr. Sanderson*, and *Dr. Hammond*) were presently sent, and gave their attendance, and performed their functions at the ordinary hours, in their accustomed formalities; all persons, who had a mind to it, being suffered to be present, to his Majesty’s infinite satisfaction, who began to believe that the army was not so much his enemy as it was reported to be; and the army had sent an address to him full of protestation of duty, and besought him, that he would be content, for some time, to reside among them, until the affairs of the kingdom were put into such a posture as he might find all things to his own content and security, which they infinitely desired to see as soon as might be; and, to that purpose, made daily instances to the parliament.’ In the mean time his Majesty fate still, or removed to such places as were most convenient for the march of the army; being in all places as well

‘pro-

to justice. In order to which, as well as to accomplish his schemes of power and am-

‘ provided for and accommodated, as he had used to  
 ‘ be in any progress: the best gentlemen, of the several  
 ‘ counties through which he passed, daily resorted  
 ‘ to him, without distinction: he was attended by some  
 ‘ of his old trusty servants in the places nearest his person: and that, which gave him most encouragement  
 ‘ to believe that they meant well, was, that in the  
 ‘ army’s address to the parliament, they desired that  
 ‘ care might be taken for settling the King’s rights,  
 ‘ according to the several professions they had made in  
 ‘ their declarations; and that the royal party might be  
 ‘ treated with more candour and less rigour: and many  
 ‘ good officers, who had served his Majesty faithfully,  
 ‘ were civilly received by the officers of the army, and  
 ‘ lived quietly in their quarters, which they could not  
 ‘ do any where else; which raised a great reputation  
 ‘ to the army throughout the kingdom, and as much  
 ‘ reproach upon the parliament (r).’ What the consequence  
 ‘ of all this was, I have elsewhere, at large, shewn (u). Suffice it here to say, that *Charles* might  
 ‘ have had reasonable good terms, his condition considered, from *Cromwell* and *Ireton*; but, on refusing to  
 ‘ close with them frankly, he lost the opportunity he then had, and rendered them his most avowed enemies.  
 ‘ The sincerity of *Cromwell*, in his negotiations with the King at this juncture, is called in question, by  
 ‘ a very late writer, in the following words: ‘ Had these  
 ‘ been sincerely his sentiments [affection and regard  
 ‘ for the King] he would never have altered them,  
 ‘ for the King gave him no occasion; since it is clearly  
 ‘ proved, that his final answer to the proposals which  
 ‘ were made him, not only spoke the sense of him and  
 ‘ *Ireton*, as the King conceived it, but was altered by  
 ‘ their hands till it satisfied themselves. Had he been  
 ‘ really inclined to restore the King, he might have  
 ‘ done it now with a high hand; a great majority of  
 ‘ the

(r) Vol. v.  
p. 50.

(u) Historical and Critical Account of the Life of Charles I.  
p. 383.

ambition, he promoted the votes of, no more

‘ the parliament were for him; the city of *London* was  
 ‘ in their sentiments; the measures taken by the *Scots*,  
 ‘ and the insurrections in several counties in his favour,  
 ‘ shew, that this was also the sense of the nation: if,  
 ‘ therefore, lieutenant-general *Cromwell* had made use  
 ‘ of his wonderful capacity, to dispose the army not to  
 ‘ any new design, but to have performed their own  
 ‘ promises; he might have settled the government upon  
 ‘ its old foundation, and have made himself a very great  
 ‘ man (x).’ *i. e.* he might have been made Earl of *Es-*  
 ‘ *sex*, and knight of the garter, things said to be pro-  
 ‘ mised him by the King, as well as the advancement  
 ‘ of his son, and his son-in-law *Ireton*, to posts of high  
 ‘ honour and dignity (y). I will not warrant what is  
 ‘ here said concerning the honours promised to *Cromwell*  
 ‘ and his family: the writer, from whom I quote it, is  
 ‘ of too little authority to have any great stress laid on  
 ‘ his unsupported narrative; nor will I make any remarks  
 ‘ on the reasonings just recited, any farther than to ob-  
 ‘ serve, that *Cromwell* had probably sufficient cause to  
 ‘ alter his sentiments, with respect to the expediency of  
 ‘ concluding a peace with *Charles*, and reinstating him in  
 ‘ his power. Sufficient cause he had, I say, for this:  
 ‘ for his treaty with the King was very ill resented by the  
 ‘ agitators, after *Charles* had so long dallied with the ar-  
 ‘ my, and neglected to comply with the terms proposed  
 ‘ for his safety and restoration. *Cromwell* had got the  
 ‘ better of these men, indeed, at the rendezvous at *Ware*,  
 ‘ by the death of one, and making prisoners of others.  
 ‘ But their spirit was unconquerable. ‘ Two thirds of  
 ‘ the army had been since with *Ireton* and *Cromwell*, to  
 ‘ tell them, that, though they were certain to perish in  
 ‘ the enterprize, they would leave nothing unattempted  
 ‘ to bring the whole army to their sense; and that, if  
 ‘ all failed, they would make a division in the army,  
 ‘ and join with any who would assist them in the de-  
 ‘ struction of those that should oppose them.’—Upon this  
 ‘ bold

(x) Biogra-  
 phia Britan-  
 nica, p.  
 2552.

(y) Flagel-  
 lum, p. 55.



addresses to his Majesty; defeated the *Welch*  
and

bold declaration 'tis said *Cromwell* and *Ireton* argued thus:  
' If the army divide, the greater part will join with  
' the presbyters, and will, in all likelihood, prevail,  
' to our ruin, by forcing us to make our applications to  
' the King, wherein we shall rather beg than offer any  
' assistance, which, if the King should give, and after-  
' wards have the good fortune to prevail, if he should  
' then pardon us, it will be 'all we can pretend, and  
' more than we can certainly promise ourselves: there-  
' upon concluding, that, if they could not bring the  
' army to their sense, that it was best to comply with  
' them, a schism being utterly destructive to both (z).'

(z) Ludlow,  
vol. i. p.  
228.

Lord *Holles*, speaking of *Cromwell's* treaty with the  
King, owns the danger he was at length in from the  
army on that account: ' The party [of the agitators]  
' would not give way to this [the agreement with his  
' Majesty]; hatred to the King, envy and jealousies  
' against their aspiring leaders, and a violent desire of  
' having their work done at once, lay all persons and  
' things level on the sudden, bring forth their mon-  
' strous conceptions at one birth, made them break out,  
' fly in their faces, discover many of their villainies,  
' and, as appears by that business of *Lilburn* and *Wild-*  
' *man*, even resolve to take *Cromwell* out of the way,  
' and murder him for an apostate (a).'

Surely this does not look as if *Cromwell* might have restored the King  
with an high hand! The truth is, he might have done  
it in the beginning of the King's residing with the ar-  
my; but his stiffness, his obstinacy, if I may so speak,  
in adhering to his own opinions, and the hopes he had  
of availing himself of the disputes between the parlia-  
ment and the army, rendered the latter very suspicious  
of his intentions, and, at length, averse to his interest.  
Besides, if I might offer a conjecture in this affair, it  
looks to me exceeding probable, that *Cromwell*, after a  
thorough trial, might be afraid to trust to what his Ma-  
jesty promised, in order to remount the throne. For,

(a) Me-  
moires, p.  
184.

and the *Scotch*, who took up arms <sup>in</sup> ~~in~~ <sup>the</sup> ~~the~~ <sup>year</sup> ~~year~~ <sup>1650</sup> ~~1650~~ <sup>half</sup> ~~half~~

according to *Clarendon*, *Oliver* declared in the house of commons, 'that the King was a man of great parts, and great understanding, but that he was so great a dissembler, and so false a man, that he was not to be trusted. And thereupon repeated many particulars, whilst he was in the army; that his Majesty wished that such and such things might be done, which, being done to gratify him, he was displeas'd and complain'd of it: that, whilst he profess'd, with all solemnity, that he refer'd himself wholly to the parliament, and depended only upon their wisdom and counsels, for the settlement and composing the distractions of the kingdom, he had, at the same time, secret treaties with the *Scottish* commissioners, how he might embroil the nation in a new war, and destroy the parliament (b).' Such was the light in which *Charles* probably appear'd to *Cromwell*, who pierc'd through every mask, while his own was generally impenetrable to those who were most conversant with him. There is an anecdote related concerning the insincerity of the King to the lieutenant-general, which, if true, will easily account for every thing done to the former by the latter.—In a letter to his Queen, without whose knowledge and consent he seldom cared to do any thing, he is said to have acquainted her, 'That, though he assented to the army's proposals, yet, if by so doing, he could procure peace, it would be easier then to take off *Cromwell*, than now he was the head that govern'd the army.' This is said to have come to his knowledge, and determin'd him never more to trust the King (c). For the truth of this I will not vouch, though it is agreeable to the whole of his Majesty's character.—After this, can we wonder that *Cromwell* might think himself at liberty to practise *Charles's* arts on himself? or rather, are we not to admire at those who reflect on *Cromwell* for endeavouring to induce the King to remove by stealth from *Hampton-court* (where his

(b) Vol. v.  
P. 91.

(c) Life of  
*Oliver*  
*Cromwell*,  
P. 69. 8vo.  
Lond. 1724.

half of the King, and purged the house of

com

his life he was informed was in danger) and go into the Isle of *Wight*, as into a safe prison (if that in fact was his intention) where he might be ready at hand to be disposed of as best suited the inclinations or conveniency of the ruling party of the army?—What man almost would not have done the same? However, as to the letter written by *Cromwell* to colonel *Whalley*, on which so much stress is laid by Lord *Holles* (d), and the writers of the *Biographia Britannica*, if we may believe *Charles* himself, it was not the occasion of his flight from *Hampton-court*. In a letter written by him from thence, dated *November 11, 1647*, and left for colonel *Whalley*, he writes as follows: ‘I have been so civilly used by you and major *Huntington*, that I cannot but by this parting farewell acknowledge it under my hand, as also to desire the continuance of your courtesy, by your protecting of my household stuff and moveables of all sorts, which I leave behind me in this house, that they be neither spoiled nor imbezeled. —So being confident you wish my preservation and restitution, I rest your friend, *Charles*. I assure you it was not the Letter you shew’d me yesterday that made me take this resolution, nor any advertisement of that kind: but, I confess, I am loath to be made a close prisoner, under pretence of securing my life (e).’ So that Lord *Clarendon* has only committed one of his usual mistakes, when he says, ‘That his Majesty did really believe their malice [the levellers] was at the height, and that they did design his murder (f).’—That *Cromwell* wrote to *Whalley* is certain, and *Whalley* declares, ‘That the letter, intimating some murderous design, or, at least, some fear of it, against his Majesty, was the ground of his shewing it to him. When I received this letter,’ adds he, ‘I was much astonished, abhorring that such a thing should be done, or so much as thought of, by any that bear the name of christians. When I had shewn the letter to his Majesty, I to’ld

(d) Memoirs, p. 137.

(e) King Charles's Works, p. 156.

(f) Vol. v. p. 76.

commons, after it had voted his Majesty's



him, I was sent to safeguard, and not to murder him. I wisht him to be confident no such thing should be done. I would first die at his foot in his defence; and I therefore shewed it him, that he might be assured, though menacing speeches came frequently to his care, our general officers abhorred so bloody and villanous a fact (g). — *Milton's* vindication of *Cromwell*, against the charge of persuading the King to withdraw into the Isle of *Wight*, must not be here omitted.

(g) Peck's  
Desiderata  
curiosa, lib.  
ix. p. 42.

— Alterum est crimen persuasisse regi *Cromwellum*, ut in insulam *Vectim* clanculum se subduceret. Constat regem *Carolus* rem suam multis aliis rebus; ter fuga perdidisse; primum cum *Londino Eboracum* fugit, deinde cum ad *Scotos* in *Anglia* conductitios, postremo cum ad insulam *Vectim*. At hujus postremæ suavor erat *Cromwellus*. Optime; sed tamen ego regios illos primum miror, qui *Carolus* toties affirmare non dubitant fuisse prudentissimum, & eundem simul vix unquam suæ spontis; sive apud amicos sive inimicos, in aula vel in castris, in aliena ferè potestate semper fuisse; nunc uxoris, nunc episcoporum, nunc purpuratorum, nunc militum, denique hostium: pejora plerumque consilia, & pejorum fermè sequutum; *Carolo* persuadetur, *Carolo* imponitur, *Carolo* illuditur metus incutitur, spes vana ostenditur, velut præda omnium communis, tam amicorum quam hostium, agitur & fertur *Carolus*. Aut hæc è scriptis suis tollant, aut sagacitatem *Caroli* prædicare desistant. Fateor deinde, quam vis prudentia atque consilio præstare pulchrum sit tamen ubi respublica factionibus laborat, suis incommodis haud carere; & consultissimum quemque eo magis obnoxium calumniis utriusque partis reddere: hoc sæpe *Cromwello* obsuit: hinc *Presbyteriani*, inde hostes quicquid in se durius fieri putant non id communi senatus consilio, sed *Cromwello* soli imputant; immo si quid per imprudentiam ipsi malè gerunt, id dolis & fraudibus *Cromwelli* assignare non

erubescunt; culpa omnis in eum derivatur, omnis in  
 eum faba cuditur. Et tamen certissimum est fugam ad  
 Vēctim regis *Caroli* absenti tum aliquot millibus pat-  
 suum *Cromwelli*, tam novum accidisse & inopinatum,  
 quàm cuilibet ex senatu tum in urbe versanti, quem  
 ut de re inopinatissima sibi recens allata per literas cer-  
 tiorem fecit. Res autem ita se habuit; exercitus  
 universi vocibus rex territus, qui eum nullis officiis  
 suis aut pollicitis factum meliorem, ad supplicium pos-  
 cere jam tunc cæperat, statuit cum duobus tantum-  
 modo consciis nocturna fugâ sibi consulere: verùm  
 fugiendi certior, quàm quo fugeret, per comitum suo-  
 rum vel imperitiam vel timiditatem, inops consilii  
 quo se reciperet, *Hamondo* Vēctis insulæ præfidi se  
 ultro dedit; ea spe, facilem sibi ex ea insula, para-  
 to jam navigio, transitum in *Galliam* aut in *Belgium*  
 fore. Hæc ego de fuga regis in Vēctim ex iis comperi  
 quibus rem totam pernoscendi quàm proxima facultas  
 erat (b). i. e. Another crime is, that *Cromwell* per-  
 suaded the King to withdraw himself privately to the  
 Isle of *Wight*. Now its plain King *Charles* ruined his  
 own affair otherwise in many things, and no less  
 than three times by flight: as, first, when he fled  
 from *London* to *York*; afterwards, when he ran to the  
 hireling *Scots* in *England*; and, last of all to the Isle  
 of *Wight*. But *Cromwell* was the persuader of this  
 last flight! Good indeed! But I first admire those  
 royalists, who never stick to affirm so often, that  
*Charles* was one of the most prudent persons living,  
 and still, that the same man was hardly ever at his  
 own disposal: that, whether with his enemies or his  
 friends, in the court or in the camp, he was almost  
 always in the power of another; now of his wife,  
 then of the bishops; now of the peers, then of the  
 soldiery; and last of his enemies: that, for the most  
 part, he followed the worser counsels; and, almost  
 always, of the worser men. *Charles* is persuaded;  
*Charles* is imposed on; *Charles* is deceived; fear is im-  
 pressed on him; vain hope is set before him; *Charles*  
 is carried and hurried about, as if he was the com-  
 mon prey of all, both friends and enemies. But let

(b) *Prose*  
*Works,*  
*Vol. ii. p.*  
 336.

' them either blot these things out of their writings, or else give over trumpeting up the legacy of *Charles*. Next, I confess, though it be honourable to excel in prudence and counsel, yet that, where a commonwealth labours under factions, this doth not always want its inconveniencies; but renders any, even the most prudent, so much the more obnoxious to the calumnies of each party. This often was the case of *Cromwell*. On the one side, the Presbyterians; on the other, the enemy [Royalists], whatever hardships they are loaded with, impute it all, not to the common advice of parliament, but of *Cromwell* only. Nay, if themselves imprudently act any thing amiss, do not blush to lay it wholly to the deceits and frauds of *Cromwell*! All the fault is thrown upon him; all the black is stuck upon his coat. And yet it is most certain, that the flight of King *Charles* to the Isle of *Wight* fell out as new and unexpectedly to *Cromwell* (who was then some miles off) as it was surprizing to any of the parliament, at that time residing in *London*, whom he made acquainted with it by letter, as of a most unlooked-for accident, the news whereof was just then brought him. Now the matter happened thus: the King (affrighted by the menaces of the whole army, who, finding him nothing amended, either by their good offices or promises for him, had now begun to require he should be brought to punishment) determined, with only two attendants, to provide for his own safety by a nocturnal flight; but surer of flying, than whither he should fly, either by the unskillfulness or timidity of his companions; and, not knowing where to betake himself, he, at last, voluntarily threw himself into the hands of *Hammond*, governor of the Isle of *Wight*; with this hope, that he might find an easy passage out of that island, a small vessel being provided privately for the purpose, either into *France* or *Holland*. And these matters, touching the King's flight into the Isle of *Wight*, I learnt of them, who had as great advantage as may be for knowing the truth.'—This seems very strong in *Cromwell's* behalf.—But, had he wrote the letter

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



concessions a sufficient ground (EE) to proceed

letter to *Whalley*, with the design suggested, of which there is no proof, where would have been the harm of it, as I before said, or who would not have thought himself at liberty to have acted a like part with a man of such a character and such views? The statesman, perhaps, would not easily be found; or, if such an one there were, his understanding would not be greatly admired by men of the same profession.

(EE) *He defeated the Welch and Scots, and purged the house of commons, &c.*] Charles having thrown himself into the hands of *Hammond*, governor of the Isle of *Wight*, was treated by him with great civility and respect. And the parliament, who had been much alarmed at his Majesty's escape, being informed of the place of his abode, determined to send commissioners to the Isle of *Wight*, in order to treat with him concerning peace, so necessary to himself and the kingdom. But, on the King's refusal to agree to the preliminary propositions, they immediately determined to make no more addresses to him, but to proceed to the settlement of the nation without him. Their reasons they submitted to the public, in a declaration which was printed and dispersed in every corner. This declaration, and the votes on which it was founded, very justly alarmed the fears of *Charles* and his friends. They wrote, they petitioned, they were tumultuous at the door of the house of commons, and, at length, had recourse to arms in his favour. But none of these things, for the present, succeeded. The insurrection under the lords *Goring* and *Capel*, on the surrender of *Colchester* to *Fairfax*, came to nothing; that in *Wales*, under colonel *Poyer*, *Cromwell*, with no very great difficulty, subdued; and, immediately, with very speedy marches, he came up with Duke *Hamilton*, who himself was taken prisoner, and the whole body of *Scots* and *English*, under his command, routed. This, properly, put a period to the second civil war, in which the rashness and imprudence

ceed upon for the settlement of the peace

of

dence of the one side was as remarkable, as the valour and good conduct of the other. 'All this great victory,' says *Clarendon*, 'was got by *Cromwell*, with an army amounting to a third part of the *Scots* in number, if they had been all together; and it was not diminished half an hundred in obtaining this victory, after the *English* forces, under *Langdale* had been defeated (i).' This was the battle of *Preston*, fought August 17, 1648. The *Scots* army were 'twelve thousand foot, well armed, and five thousand horse. *Langdale* had two thousand five hundred foot, and one thousand five hundred horse; in all twenty one thousand; and in the parliament's army, in all, about eight thousand six hundred! and, of the enemy, about two thousand were slain, and about nine thousand prisoners taken, besides what were lurking in hedges and private places, which the country people daily brought in or destroyed (j).' For this victory a solemn thanksgiving was ordered throughout the kingdom, on the seventh of *September* following (\*). After this *Cromwell* marched forward for *Scotland*, in order effectually to suppress the *Hamiltonian* party. In his march his discipline was very exact, and his order so good, that no ground of complaint was given to the inhabitants. At length he arrived at *Edinburgh*, 'where he was received with great ceremony, and demanded, that none, who had been in action in the late wicked engagement and invasion, might, henceforward, be employed in any public place of trust; to which the committee of estates there gave a satisfactory answer. He had also visits and conferences with commissioners from the kirk, and from the provost and magistrates of *Edinburgh*, and a strong guard of soldiers at his lodging. At the time of his being at *Edinburgh* several other demands were made by him to the committee of estates, who gave him very fair answer, and he reserved liberty for the parliament of *England*

to

(i) Vol. v.  
p. 165.

(j) Whitlock, p. 332.

(\*) Journal of the house of commons, Aug. 23, 1648.



of the kingdom. This was usually called *Pride's*

‘ to make such farther demands as they should think  
 ‘ requisite. The charges of *Cromwell's* entertainment,  
 ‘ and of all his company, during the time of their being  
 ‘ at *Edinburgh*, were defrayed by the lord provost of  
 ‘ the city, by order of the committee of estates; and  
 ‘ *Cromwell*, *Hasselrigge*, and the rest of their company,  
 ‘ were entertained by general *Leven*, the lord *Argyle*,  
 ‘ and many other lords, at a sumptuous banquet in the  
 ‘ castle. At their going away, the castle saluted them,  
 ‘ with many great guns, and vollies of small shot, and  
 ‘ divers lords convoyed them out of the city (k).’ — (k) *Whit-*  
 Whilst *Oliver* was in *Scotland*, the parliament, fearing *lock*, p. 343.  
 the army, who had so frequently been troublesome to  
 them, and likewise the adherents of the King, who  
 had risen so lately in his favour, and willing, if possible,  
 to procure peace to the kingdom, revoked the votes of  
 no more addresses, opened a treaty with his Majesty in  
 the *Isle of Wight*, and were about to have brought  
 matters to a conclusion. But the soldiery, dreading the  
 consequences of a peace with respect to themselves,  
 seized the king at *Newport*, conducted him under guard  
 to *Hurst-castle*, presented a remonstrance to the house of  
 commons against any further treaty, and insisted on  
 bringing him and his adherents to justice. The house  
 was now alarmed—they voted that the seizure of the  
 King was without their knowledge or consent, and that  
 his concessions to the propositions upon the treaty were  
 a sufficient ground to proceed upon for the settlement  
 of the kingdom. Whereupon the army marched up  
 to *London*, seized and imprisoned a good number of the  
 members, and hindered very many more from going  
 into the house; whereby it came to pass, that every  
 thing was carried according to their own determina-  
 tions. This exclusion and force on the house was on  
 the sixth of *December*, one thousand six hundred and  
 forty-eight.—On the next day, at the request of an  
 eminent man in the army, the following petition was

printed. I give it as a curiosity to the reader, who may consider it as valuable, on account of the matter and the manner; however, as it has escaped the notice of other writers, it will have the merit of novelty here.

‘ To the right honourable THOMAS Lord FAIRFAX,  
 ‘ our faithful general,

‘ The humble petition of all the officers and soldiers  
 ‘ of the regiment commanded by colonel *Thomas*  
 ‘ *Pride,*

‘ Humbly sheweth,

‘ **W**HEREAS it hath pleased the Lord of Hosts  
 ‘ (who was called upon to decide the controversy  
 ‘ of this nation) to write his name upon your sword  
 ‘ in very legible characters, as appears upon record  
 ‘ twice, viz. in the year —45, where we had 114 vic-  
 ‘ tories, and now this last summer above 30, even to  
 ‘ our astonishment, who were used by you in that ser-  
 ‘ vice, that those proud billows in *Wales, England* and  
 ‘ *Scotland,* have been bounded and calmed, in less than  
 ‘ six months; and when through many tiresome marches  
 ‘ and conflictings with many deaths (to say no more,  
 ‘ lest we be counted boasters) we thought when the  
 ‘ north and the south wind had thus blown upon the  
 ‘ garden, that the spices would have flown out: behold  
 ‘ we have our sorrows repeated, and our fears increas-  
 ‘ ed, making our wounds even to bleed afresh. For,  
 ‘ 1. We find many good and just petitions from city,  
 ‘ country and army, not only unanswered, laid by, and  
 ‘ slighted, but also things contrary to their honest de-  
 ‘ sires practized; which appears first, by treating with a  
 ‘ conquered enemy, contrary to the vote of non-address,  
 ‘ against which this army is engaged by life and  
 ‘ death;

seize and secure the members. High com-plaints

death; yea, and to make the treaty the fruits of our victories over the *Scots*, resolving to beg mercy of him, the very hour that army of his was begging mercy of us. Secondly, not only treating, but falling from their resolved propositions, especially in that of delinquents, from 37 not to be spared to 7, and those neither considerable, nor attainable, mocking the people in their covenant, which is to bring these to condign punishment, and as if that were not enough, to abate so much in compositions of the rest, (as if such a compliance was intended) as we should change conditions with the enemy, and fight and conquer ourselves into slavery. Thirdly, to add more load to the grieved petitioners, their best friends, and gratify the worst of enemies, 14 days more is granted, tending a compliance upon any terms; yea, though by agreement, *he hath taken upon him the blood of the three kingdoms*: and to leave us hopeless of any good by him, he abets his son in that piracy, and *Ormond* in that renewed conspiracy against that little protestant blood unexhausted in *Ireland*. Nor can we but be thoughtful why some notice might not have been given to your excellency and army, concerning a treaty, since our trustees have so often acknowledged God to have sent them preservation by this hand, but we only point at that. We take leave to tell your excellency what you hear of daily to your intollerable grief, the army must be made again the burthensome stone to the people (which is no new design) by their non-payment, and even then (if ever) it had sweat blood for their safety, by whom thus unworthily neglected we must profess not an ingenious soldier of the meanest rank, but doth blush to receive his unpaid for entertainment; and the rather, 1. Because unexpectedly returns to it. 2. Because the country pays their taxes. 3. Because bad men are enriched by it. 4. Because shame and contempt will be the soldiers portion. 5. Be-

plaints were made of this action, as insolent,  
unjust,

‘ Because it still sows seed of new broils where people  
‘ are thus abused. Sir, we have much to complain of,  
‘ but of nothing more than that the main ends of these  
‘ wars, crowned with mercy even to miracle, are not  
‘ reaped, the fox stealing that from us by subtilty,  
‘ which the lyon could not tear by cruelty. Where-  
‘ fore in our own names, and the names of the betrayed,  
‘ abused people of *England*, we humbly beseech your  
‘ excellencies assistance of us, and concurrence with us,  
‘ in these ensuing requests and groans of our souls, which  
‘ may not long be denied us, lest we faint or struggle as  
‘ we can, for the life of good men and a good cause.

I. That justice may suddenly and equally be dispensed  
‘ according to the desires of our honoured friends in *Lon-*  
‘ *don, Leicestershire*, and others, manifested by their fe-  
‘ veral petitions, and the parliament’s declaration cou-  
‘ cerning the King’s evils asserted; or bewailed and re-  
‘ pentent.

‘ II. That your army be instantly reckoned withall,  
‘ and paid, and so dealt with for the future (if they must  
‘ be used) that every regiment may know their own  
‘ county, and there receive their pay immediately, with-  
‘ out any other treasurers or ways of trouble, that so  
‘ the people themselves may see what they have for their  
‘ money. In this we are impatient, or so passionately  
‘ affected, that we gaspe for help. This regiment hath  
‘ had but one month’s pay since *May*, having marched  
‘ 1300 miles this summer.

‘ III. That the people may know in print, with all  
‘ speed, which way all public monies are disposed of in  
‘ all counties and places, and that of all kinds; which  
‘ may be done, if every collector and receiver of money  
‘ be forthwith enjoined to print their receipts and dis-  
‘ bursements, for if the soldiers be not paid, the people  
‘ ask what’s become of the revenue, compositions, se-  
‘ questrations, excise, lands, &c.

‘ IV.

unjust, tyrannical, and subversive of the free-  
dom

‘ IV. That we may have a just and righteous govern-  
 ‘ ment settled in this nation, advancing godline(s), we  
 ‘ abhorring anarchy, confusion, and levelling men’s  
 ‘ estates, so often charged upon us: for which ends we  
 ‘ desire these two things, in pursuance of which (by help  
 ‘ from heaven) we resolve to venture our all. First, that  
 ‘ the grand and capital enemies, may, without delay,  
 ‘ be brought to justice, which is the main root of our  
 ‘ misery, we finding all other ways attempted altoget-  
 ‘ her invalid to carry on this work of common safety.  
 ‘ Secondly, for the dispatch of justice upon all delin-  
 ‘ quents, for the rectifying all crooked things among  
 ‘ us, and for the good of us and the generations to come,  
 ‘ we humbly conceive our last and surest way will be  
 ‘ for your excellency and the army, to make a speedy  
 ‘ offer to the commons house in your name and the ar-  
 ‘ mies, and in behalf of all *England*, that such of them  
 ‘ as have been faithful to the kingdoms interest, declare  
 ‘ with you and the nation; and that the contrary mind-  
 ‘ ed, false, royal, and neutral party may know, that  
 ‘ our enemies must not be our rulers, we professing that  
 ‘ good men, rather than good laws, must save us, though  
 ‘ we disjoin them not. And to this last work we hum-  
 ‘ bly incite your excellency, the army, and all true *Eng-  
 ‘ lish* hearts; without which we shall not forbear any  
 ‘ means the Lord shall direct us to, whereby we may  
 ‘ free ourselves, from the guilt of enslaving the kingdom,  
 ‘ to one, or more; and if any shall object, we put  
 ‘ violence upon authority, we hereby proclaim to the  
 ‘ world, that neither your excellency nor ourselves have  
 ‘ received commissions from the parliament as now  
 ‘ constituted, the swaying part thereof, (as lately in  
 ‘ *Scotland*) brought over to the King’s designs: but from  
 ‘ that good party in it, who struggled through many ha-  
 ‘ zards, to model this army for the kingdoms safety:  
 ‘ Nor are we to attend forms and customs in this ex-  
 ‘ tremity; we can as willingly set down as march, suf-  
 ‘ fer

dom of the parliament. Others, from the

con-

\* fer as act, would but the godly party in the kingdom  
 \* call us thereunto, and think themselves preserved by  
 \* it. But the people call to us for these things, and we  
 \* to your excellency, your known worth inviting us  
 \* hereunto: in prosecution of which, as an unparalleled  
 \* instrument, we shall live or dye with your excellency,  
 \* having solemnly promised, in answer to the wonders  
 \* God hath wrought amongst us, to attempt and attend  
 \* these two last expedients through all hazards. We  
 \* cannot so undervalue our God, and the rich experience  
 \* we have had in behalf of this nation, as to see them  
 \* lie (like *Iffachar*) under these sinful burdens, our colds,  
 \* heats, nakedness, want, hunger, hardships, difficulties,  
 \* dangers, cares, fears, out of which our blessed and  
 \* ever to be praised God, hath brought us, suggesting  
 \* these things unto us, for that flock of slaughter in this  
 \* kingdom. Sir, we can dye, but not endure to see  
 \* our mother *England* dye before us (1).—From this  
 address is easily to be collected the spirit of the army,  
 the principles on which it acted, the authority it assum-  
 ed, and the hazard of contesting with it. It appears to  
 have looked on itself as an independant body, capable  
 of advising, directing and giving the law to the senate  
 and people of *England*. This was the effect of the self-  
 denying ordinance, which was foreseen by many, and  
 now felt by all. What was alledged in defence of these  
 proceedings of the army, will be found in the follow-  
 ing note. I cannot but observe here to the reader, the  
 spirit of the *English* royalists at this time. The *Scots*  
 had raised an army in aid of the King, the parliament  
 was garbelled for treating of a peace with him—was  
 not this meritorious in the eye of a cavalier? Far from  
 it—at this very time, both *Scots* and parliament were  
 treated with the utmost virulence and contempt by those  
 very persons, for whose master they had subjected them-  
 selves to the greatest inconveniencies. Speaking of the  
 army under *Hamilton*, and its defeat, a writer of this  
 time

(1) Moderate Intel-  
ligencer,  
Dec. 7,  
1648.

contrary, have attempted to vindicate it, and  
apostrophise it as a

time has the following expressions. 'It was never yet known that the blew bonnet would enter lists upon the gilded promises of a public faith, or the huxters cold hopes of best be trust. And when all this is done; be confident, their hands will be more ready to receive it, than their hearts to earn it. It has ever been observed of the peasantry of that nation, that they could feed better than fight. Plundering was their only master piece: which they could finger with such dexterity, as if they had been nursed and bred up in that trade from their infancy.'—And again—'What else could be expected by *Caidn*, being by chronologists rendered to be the emblem of disloyalty; a stranger to equity; an harbour for injury; the magazine of iniquity; the counterfeit of amity (m).'—With respect to the members of parliament excluded by the army, they were treated in the like scurrilous manner by the same party in the following verses.

(m) The  
Loyal Sacrifice present-  
ed in the  
Lives and  
Deaths of  
Sir Charles  
Lucas and  
Sir George  
Lisle, p. 27.  
38. 12mo.  
1648.

' Farewell ye race of *Judas* that betray'd  
' The King your royal master; and have lay'd  
' Such burthens on our shoulders, God on high  
' Grant you a dire and bloody tragedie.  
' You were the champions of a wicked cause;  
' You have unthron'd your sovereign; and the laws  
' By you are quite subverted: you have rent  
' In pieces a most blessed government.  
' Now let their just and woful cries and tears,  
' Whom you made widowes pierce th' Almighty's ears;  
' And let those orphans, who by your expresse  
' Have lost their fathers, and are fatherlesse;  
' Roare loud for deadly vengeance, and God grant  
' As they, your wives and children may know want.  
' We'll to your graves your herfes laughing bring,  
' Instead of dirges we will carolls sing:  
' In joyful strains we'll pen your elegies,  
' And chronicle your stinking memories.

' Say-

(n) *Mercurius Pragmaticus*, Dec. 19, 1648.

(o) See vol. v. p. 114. and 240.

(p) *Tenure of Kings and Magistrates*, in his Works, vol. i. p. 357.

(q) Vol. i. p. 272.  
(r) See *Flagellum*, p. 66.

‘ Saying here lies, (and no man doth lament)

‘ The rotten members of a parliament (n).’

Lord *Clarendon's* treatment of these gentlemen, as well as the *Scottish* nation, is not much more decent (o).

— *Milton* therefore seems to have had reason for cautioning them ‘ To beware an old and perfect enemy, who though he hope by sowing discord to make them his instruments, yet cannot forbear a minute the open threatening of his desperate revenge upon them, when they have served his purposes (p).’ A caution however reasonable, yet neglected by those concerned, till their old and perfect enemy had opportunity of satiating the desperate revenge he had threatened. But to proceed, in all this affair of the exclusion of the members, *Cromwell's* name appears not. Nay Mr. *Ludlow* tells us, ‘ that lieutenant-general *Cromwell* the night

‘ after the interruption of the house arrived from Scotland and lay at *Whitehall*, where, and at other places, he declared he had not been acquainted with this design; yet since it was done, he was glad of it, and would endeavour to maintain it (q).’ Others say, ‘ it was done by *Cromwell's* command (r).’ However this be, we need not doubt but *Ireton*, and the other chief officers concerned, were fully satisfied they had *Cromwell's* approbation. They would not have taken such a step without it. For though *Fairfax* was easy and manageable, *Cromwell* was very different, nor would he have failed shewing his resentment against those who should have presumed to have acted opposite to his will. His declarations on this head are not, I think, much to be regarded. Politicians have a language of their own. They abound with quirks, subtleties and distinctions; they explain away and interpret as they imagine will best suit their circumstances and conveniences. To all this, if we add *Cromwell's* known dissimulation, we shall see little cause to rely much on them. I will close this note

with



tor of it. Their reasons will be found below (FF). What followed is well known—  
Suffice

with observing that the house of commons having notice of the seizing of their members, with great seeming earnestness applyed to the general for their release, and declared it to be their positive pleasure that they be forthwith discharged; but no answer satisfactory being returned, they were forced to submit, perhaps not unwillingly, to the loss of them. This was on the seventh of *December*, when it was ‘Resolved to give hearty thanks to *Cromwell* for very great and eminently faithful services performed by him to this parliament and kingdom, both in this kingdom and the kingdom of *Scotland*, and Mr. Speaker did accordingly give him the very hearty thanks of this house (s).’

(s) Journal.

(FF) *The reasons for purging the house of commons, and the apology for Cromwell on that head, are here to be given.*] On the 11th of *December* the secluded and secured members published a printed paper, intituled ‘A solemn protestation of the imprisoned and secluded members of the commons house: against the horrid force and violence of the officers and soldiers of the army, on *Wednesday* and *Thursday* last, the 6th and 7th of *December*, 1648.’ In this protestation ‘They solemnly protest and declare to the whole kingdom, that this execrable force and open violence upon their persons, and the whole house of commons, by the officers and army under their command, in marching up against their command and placing strong armed guards of horse and foot upon them, without, and against their order, was the highest and most detestable force and breach of privilege and freedom ever offered to any parliament of *England*; and that all acts, ordinances, votes and proceedings of the said house made since the 6th of *December* aforesaid, or hereafter to be made during their restraint and forcible seclusion from the house, and the continuance of the armies force upon it, were no way obligatory, but void and null to all intents and  
‘ pur-

Suffice it therefore to say that the votes of no

more

‘ purposes. And that all contrivers of, actors in, and  
 ‘ assistants to this unparalleled force and treasonable  
 ‘ armed violence, were open enemies to, and professed  
 ‘ subverters of the priviledges, rights and freedom of  
 ‘ parliament, and disturbers of the peace and settlement  
 ‘ of the kingdom; and ought to be proceeded against  
 ‘ as such: and that all members of parliament and com-  
 ‘ moners of *England*, by their solemn covenant and duty,  
 ‘ under pain of deepest perjury and eternal infamy, were  
 ‘ obliged unanimously to oppose and endeavour to their  
 ‘ utmost power to bring them to exemplary and con-  
 ‘ digne punishment for this transcendent offence, tend-  
 ‘ ing to the dissolution of the present, and subversion  
 ‘ of all future parliaments, and of the fundamental go-  
 ‘ vernment and laws of the land (t).’ This bold pro-  
 ‘ testation being complained of in the house of commons,  
 ‘ and the house of lords, produced a joint declaration  
 ‘ from them, in which ‘ They judged and declared, the  
 ‘ said printed paper to be false, scandalous and seditious,  
 ‘ and tending to destroy the visible fundamental govern-  
 ‘ ment of the kingdom: and therefore ordered and or-  
 ‘ dained the said printed paper to be suppressed; and  
 ‘ all persons whatsoever that had had any hand in, or  
 ‘ given consent unto the contriving, framing, printing  
 ‘ or publishing thereof, were adjudged incapable to bear  
 ‘ any office, or have any place of trust or authority in  
 ‘ the kingdom, or to sit as members of either house of  
 ‘ parliament. And they farther ordered, that every  
 ‘ member of either house that were then absent, upon  
 ‘ his first coming to sit in that house whereof he was a  
 ‘ member, for the manifestation of his innocency, should  
 ‘ disavow and disclaim, his having any hand in, or giv-  
 ‘ ing consent unto the contriving, framing, printing or  
 ‘ publishing of the said paper, or the matter therein  
 ‘ contained (u).’—Here are no reasons we see given  
 ‘ to justify the exclusion.—We must seek them else-  
 ‘ where then, that is, in the writings of the advocates for

(t) Walker's  
History of  
Independen-  
cy, part ii.  
p. 35.

(u) Id. p.  
36.

the

more addresses were re-assumed; the trans-  
actions

the army, and the admirers of the change which soon after happened. Besides those which may be collected from the petition in the foregoing note, the following have been offered to the public.

1. Mr. Ludlow writes that ' Some of our commis-  
' sioners who had been with the King [at *Newport*]  
' pleaded in the house for a concurrence with him, as  
' if they had been employed by him; though others  
' with more ingenuity acknowledged that they would  
' not advise an agreement upon those terms, were it not  
' to prevent a greater evil that was like to ensue upon  
' the refusal of them. But Sir *Henry Vane* so truly  
' stated the matter of fact relating to the treaty, and so  
' evidently discovered the design and deceit of the King's  
' answer, that he made it clear to us, that by it the jus-  
' tice of our cause was not asserted, nor our rights se-  
' cured for the future; concluding that if they should  
' accept of these terms without the concurrence of the  
' army, it would prove but a feather in their caps:  
' notwithstanding which, the corrupt party in the house  
' having bargained for their own and the nation's liberty,  
' resolved to break through all hazards and inconveni-  
' encies to make good their contract, and after twenty  
' four hours debate, resolved by the plurality of votes,  
' that the King's concessions were ground for a future  
' settlement. At which some of us expressing our dis-  
' satisfaction, desired that our protestation might be en-  
' tered; but that being denied, as against the orders of  
' the house, I contented myself to declare publicly,  
' that being convinced that they had deserted the com-  
' mon cause and interest of the nation, I could no lon-  
' ger join with them; the rest of those who dissented  
' also, expressing themselves much to the same purpose.  
' The day following, some of the principal officers of  
' the army came to *London*, with expectation that things  
' would be brought to this issue; and consulting with  
' some members of parliament and others, it was con-  
O \* cluded,

cluded, after a full and free debate, that the measures taken by the parliament were contrary to the trust reposed in them, and tending to contract the guilt of the blood that had been shed upon themselves and the nation: that it was therefore the duty of the army to endeavour to put a stop to such proceedings; having engaged in the war, not simply as mercenaries, but out of judgment and conscience, being convinced that the cause in which they were engaged was just, and that the good of the people was involved in it (x).

(x) Vol. i.  
p. 269.

2. In answer to the illegality of the act, and the incompetency of the actors, who assumed a jurisdiction to which they had no right, even from those for whose good and benefit they pretended to have done this: in answer to these and the like objections it was said, That it was lawful for any man, even by violence, to wrest a sword out of the hand of a mad-man, though it be never so legally his from whom it is wrested;— That there is no client that hath entertained a lawyer, or advocate to plead his cause, but upon discovery, yea or jealousy, of prevarication, or false-heartedness to him in his cause, may lawfully discharge him, his entertainment notwithstanding;—That it was ridiculous to pretend a want of call from the people, against the lawfulness of such an act, which was of that sovereign necessity for their benefit and good, as the actions of the army were; especially at such a time when there was no possibility of obtaining or receiving a formal call from the people, without running an eminent hazard of losing the opportunity for doing that excellent service to them.—Mens consents unto all acts manifestly tending to their relief, are sufficiently expressed in their wants and necessities. But the people do not judge the proceedings of the army against the parliament-men as tending to their relief or welfare in any kind, but as contrary to both, nor do they give so much as their subsequent consents thereunto;

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

the isle of *Wight* condemned; the general  
was



' —I answer that physicians called to the care and cure  
 ' of persons under distempers, need not much stand  
 ' upon the consents of such patients, either subsequent,  
 ' or antecedent, about what they administer unto them.  
 ' If the people be incapable in themselves, of the things  
 ' of their peace, it is an act of so much the more good-  
 ' ness and mercy in those, who being fully capable of  
 ' them, will engage themselves accordingly to make  
 ' provision for them. It is a deed of charity and christi-  
 ' anity, to save the life of a lunatick or distracted per-  
 ' son, even against his will. Besides it is a ruled case  
 ' amongst wise men, that if a people be depraved and  
 ' corrupt, so as to confer places of power and trust upon  
 ' wicked and undeserving men, they forfeit their power  
 ' in this behalf unto those that are good, though but a  
 ' few (y). — *Aquinas* is referred to in the margin for this  
 ' curious doctrine, which perhaps will not be well relish-  
 ' ed by most of my readers. But to go on — ' That the  
 ' judgment or sentence of the army upon these men,  
 ' as meet to be dispossessed of their parliamentary inter-  
 ' est, was not erroneous, but every way just, and ac-  
 ' cording to the truth, stands clear upon this ground :  
 ' viz. That they were become renegadoes from their  
 ' trust, and acted by their counsels, debates, votes, and  
 ' interest, in a diametrical opposition to the peace and  
 ' safety of the kingdom, and to publick good.

(y) John  
 Goodwin's  
 Right and  
 Might well  
 met, p. 12—  
 15. 4to.  
 Lond. 16. 8.

' Yea the tenour of their parliamentary actings before  
 ' their removal from the house, in the known dialect of  
 ' political prophecy, presaged nothing but ruin and de-  
 ' struction, to the liberties of the free-born subjects of  
 ' the kingdom in general, and to the lives and estates of  
 ' many thousands in the kingdom, whom they stood  
 ' bound in conscience in a special manner to protect.  
 ' For what could that grand encouragement, which they  
 ' administered by their votes to a potent party of men  
 ' in the kingdom, who had so lately, and with so high  
 ' an hand, acted hostility against the peace and liberties

was ordered to keep the King in safe custody,

' of the people, and against the lives of those who stood  
 ' up to protect them, not having given the least over-  
 ' ture of any relenting in their old principles, but were  
 ' now through that extremity of pain which they lye  
 ' under, having been so often, and so deeply bitten,  
 ' and stung by the fidelity and valour of the army, more  
 ' enraged in their spirits, than ever; what could, I say,  
 ' such encouragement, given by such hands unto such  
 ' men, but portend, either a re-imbroyling of this al-  
 ' ready miserably wasted nation, in wars and blood, or  
 ' else the necessity of a patient and quiet subjection of  
 ' the nation to the iron yoke of perpetual tyranny and  
 ' bondage, together with the certain ruin of the lives  
 ' and estates of those, who had shewed most faithful-  
 ' ness and courage in the defence of the parliament and  
 ' the kingdom's liberties, in opposing the King and his  
 ' party, if the army had not preventingly interposed as  
 ' they did? The by-past actions of men, especially  
 ' such, which they have for any considerable space of  
 ' time inured themselves unto, are propheticall of what  
 ' their future actions are like to be, if opportunity pa-  
 ' ralleleth. The civil law saith, that he that hath in-  
 ' jured one, hath threatned many: and by the rule of  
 ' proportion, he that hath injured many hath threatned  
 ' all (z).

(z) John  
Goodwin's  
Right, &c.  
p. 18.

3. *Milton* observes on this subject, that ' Emulations  
 ' are incident among military men, and are, if they ex-  
 ' ceed not, pardonable. But, adds he, some of the for-  
 ' mer army, eminent enough for their own martial  
 ' deeds, and prevalent in the house of commons, touch-  
 ' ed with envy to be so far out-done by a new model  
 ' which they contemned, took advantage of Presbyte-  
 ' rian and Independent names, and the virulence of  
 ' some ministers, to raise disturbance. And the war be-  
 ' ing then ended, thought slightly to have discarded  
 ' them, who had faithfully done the work, without  
 ' their due pay, and the reward of their invincible va-  
 ' lour.



dy, and take care that he go not away; and finally,

‘lour. But they who had the sword yet in their hands, disdaining to be made the first objects of ingratitude and oppression, after all that expence of their blood for justice and common liberty, seizing upon the King their prisoner, whom nothing but their matchless deeds had brought so low as to surrender up his person: though he, to stir up new discord, chose rather to give up himself a captive to his own countrymen who had less won him (a).’

(a) *Prose Works*, vol. i. p. 474.

This is taken from the *Iconoclastes*. In his ‘*Pro Populo Anglicano Defensio*,’ after speaking in dispraise of the treaty in the isle of *Wight*, and of the members of the parliament who approved it, in terms of great severity, he proceeds in the manner following: ‘*Quid illi interea qui integri tam pestifera agitari consilia videbant? An ideo deesse patriæ, salutis suorum non prospicere debuerant, eo quod istius mali, contagio in ipsorum ordinem penetraverat? At quis istos exclusit malè sanos? “Exercitus, inquis, Anglicanus,” id est, non externorum, sed fortissimorum & fidissimorum civium; quorum tribuni plerique, Senatores ipsi erant, quos illi boni exclusi patria ipsa excludendos, & in Hiberniam procul ablegandos esse censuerant; dum Scoti interim dubiâ jam fide quatuor Angliæ provincias suis finibus proximas magnis copiis infidebant, firmissima earum regionum oppida præfidiis tenebant, regem ipsum in custodia habebant: dum ipsi etiam factiones suorum atque tumultus, parlamento plusquam minaces, & in urbe & in agris passim fovebant, qui tumultus paulò post in bellum non civile solùm, sed & Scoticum illud erupere. Quòd si privatis etiam consiliis aut armis subvenire rei publicæ laudatissimum semper fuit, non est certè cur exercitus reprehendi, possit, qui parlamenti autoritate ad urbem accersitus imperata fecit, & regionum factionem atque tumultum ipsi curiæ sæpiùs minitantem faciliè compefcuit. In id autem discrimen adducta res erat, ut aut nos ab illis, aut illos à nobis*

finally, it was resolved to proceed capitally against him in a high court of justice to be erected for

opprimi necesse esset. Stabant ab illis Londinensium  
 plerique institores atque opifices, & ministrorum fac-  
 tiosissimi quique; à nobis exercitus magnâ fide, mo-  
 destiâ, virtute cognitus. Per hos cum retinere liber-  
 tatem repub. salutem liceret, an hæc omnia per ig-  
 naviam & stultitiam prodenda fuisse censes? Debellati  
 regiarum partium duces arma quidam inviti, animum  
 hostilem non deposuerant: omnibus belli renovandi oc-  
 casionibus intenti ad urbem se receperant. Cum his,  
 quamvis inimicissimis, quamvis sanguinem eorum avi-  
 de sitientibus, Presbyteriani, postquam non permitti  
 sibi in omnes tam civilem quàm ecclesiasticam domi-  
 nationem viderunt, clandestina consilia, & prioribus  
 tum dièlis tum factis indignissima consociare cœperant:  
 eoque acerbitatis processere, ut mallent se regi denuò  
 mancipare, quàm fratres suos in partem illam liberta-  
 tis, quam & ipsi suo sub sanguine acquisiverant, ad-  
 mittere; mallent tyrannum tot civium crurore persuf-  
 sum, irâ in superstites, & conceptâ jam ultione arden-  
 tem rursus experiri dominum, quàm fratres, & ami-  
 cissimos æquo jure ferre sibi pares. Soli Independentes  
 qui vocantes, & ad ultimum sibi constare, & suâ uti  
 victoriâ sciebant: qui ex rege hostem se fecerat, eum  
 ex hoste regem esse amplius, sapienter, meo quidem  
 judicio, nolebant: neque pacem idcirco non volebant,  
 sed involutum pacis nomine aut bellum novum, aut  
 æternam servitutem prudentes metuebant (b). *i. e.*  
 What did they do in the mean time, who were found  
 themselves, and saw such pernicious councils on foot?  
 Ought they therefore to have been wanting to the na-  
 tion, and not provide for its safety, because the infec-  
 tion had spread itself even in their own house? But,  
 who secluded those ill-affected members? The Eng-  
 lish army, you say: so that it was not an army of fo-  
 reigners, but of most valiant, and faithful, honest na-  
 tives, whose officers for the most part were members  
 of

(b) Prose Works, vol. i. p. 3.4.



## OLIVER CROMWELL.



for the purpose. In pursuance of these resolutions, the King was removed from *Hurst* castle

of parliament; and whom those good secluded members would have secluded their country, and banished into *Ireland*; while in the mean-time the *Scots*, whose alliance began to be doubtful, had very considerable forces in four of our northern counties, and kept garrisons in the best towns of those parts, and had the King himself in custody; whilst they likewise encouraged the tumultuating of those of their own faction, who did more than threaten the parliament, both in city and country, and through whose means not only a civil, but a war with *Scotland* too shortly after broke out. If it has always been counted praise-worthy in private men to assist the state and promote the public good; whether by advice or action; our army sure was in no fault, who being ordered by the parliament to come to town, obeyed and came, and when they were come, quelled with ease the faction and uproar of the King's party, who sometimes threatned the house itself. For things were brought to that pass, that of necessity, either we must be run down by them, or they by us. \* They had on their side most of the shop-keepers and handicrafts-men of *London*, and generally those of the ministers, that were most factious. On our side was the army, whose fidelity, moderation, and courage were sufficiently known. It being in our power by their means to retain our liberty, our state, our common safety; do you think we had not been fools to have lost all by our negligence and folly? They who had had places of command in the King's army, after their party were subdued, had laid down their arms indeed against their wills, but continued enemies to us in their hearts; and they flocked to town, and were here watching all opportunities of renewing the war. With these men, tho' they were the greatest enemies they had in the world, and thirsted after their blood, did the Presbyterians,

castle to *Windsor*, and in spite of the opposition made by the *Scottish* commissioners, brought

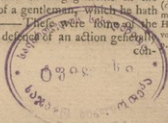
‘ because they were not permitted to exercise a civil, as  
 ‘ well as an ecclesiastical jurisdiction over all others,  
 ‘ hold secret correspondence, and took measures very  
 ‘ unworthy of what they had formerly both said and  
 ‘ done; and they came to that spleen at last, that they  
 ‘ would rather enthrall themselves to the King again,  
 ‘ than admit their own brethren to share in their liberty,  
 ‘ which they likewise had purchased at the price of  
 ‘ their own blood; they chose rather to be lorded over  
 ‘ once more by a tyrant, polluted with the blood of so  
 ‘ many of his own subjects, and who was enraged, and  
 ‘ breathed out nothing but revenge against those of them  
 ‘ that were left, than endure their brethren and friends  
 ‘ to be upon the square with them. The Independants,  
 ‘ as they are called, were the only men that from first  
 ‘ to last kept to their point, and knew what use to  
 ‘ make of their victory. They refused, (and wisely,  
 ‘ in my opinion) to make him King again, being then  
 ‘ an enemy; who when he was their King, had made  
 ‘ himself their enemy: nor were they ever the less averse  
 ‘ to a peace, but they very prudently dreaded a  
 ‘ new war, or a perpetual slavery under the name of a  
 ‘ peace.’

I will add but one passage more, and that taken from  
 ‘ the declaration of the house of commons, setting forth  
 ‘ the reasons for annulling all former votes in favour of  
 ‘ a treaty with the King, which was passed, and ordered  
 ‘ to be printed *Jan. 15, 1648*. In this declaration, after  
 ‘ giving many reasons for their dislike of the treaty, they  
 ‘ go on in the following manner: ‘ Neither can we believe,  
 ‘ that any agreement we could have made with  
 ‘ the King in the isle of *Wight*, in the condition he was  
 ‘ then in, would ever have been observed, either by  
 ‘ himself or any of his party: for, setting aside the bare  
 ‘ name of honor, safety and freedom, which the treaty  
 ‘ did pretend unto, neither the King, nor any of his,  
 ‘ did

brought to an open tryal at *Westminster*, where, after his refusal to acknowledge the autho-

‘ did ever hold him in any other condition than that of  
 ‘ a prisoner. For clearing whereof, besides his message  
 ‘ sent to both houses, *Oct.* 2. in which ‘ he proposeth  
 ‘ to have liberty to come to *Westminster*, and to be re-  
 ‘ stored to a condition of absolute freedom and safety ;  
 ‘ which can import no other than that he judged him-  
 ‘ self at that present, being in the time of treaty, to be  
 ‘ deprived of both ; his letters to a prime magistrate of  
 ‘ the city of *London* declare, ‘ that he held himself at  
 ‘ that time as great a prisoner as ever :’ and, the prince  
 ‘ in his declaration made at *Grove*, says plainly, ‘ that  
 ‘ the King in truth is still a prisoner ; and invites the  
 ‘ Earl of *Warwick* to join with him to rescue his father  
 ‘ from his unworthy imprisonment.’ And since enforced  
 ‘ oaths are, in many mens judgments, not necessa-  
 ‘ ry to be kept, what assurance could we have that he,  
 ‘ who so often had failed of his promises made to us,  
 ‘ when he was free and at his own disposal, would make  
 ‘ that good to us, when he came to be re-established in  
 ‘ his royal power, which he had obliged himself to do,  
 ‘ when he was in durance and a prisoner ? And since  
 ‘ hardly any example can be produced, either foreign  
 ‘ or domestick, of any prince, once engaged in a war  
 ‘ with his subjects, that ever kept any agreement which  
 ‘ he made with them any longer than meer necessity did  
 ‘ compel him thereto. The examples to the contrary  
 ‘ whereof are so many and so mainfest, and the late  
 ‘ bloody violation of the peace betwixt the crown of  
 ‘ *Spain* and those of *Naples* is so fresh in our memories,  
 ‘ as we cannot expect any propositions, agreed upon at  
 ‘ the isle of *Wight*, should bind the King more than  
 ‘ the fundamental laws, and his coronation oath ; be-  
 ‘ sides his often protestations and engagements in the  
 ‘ name of a King, and of a gentleman, which he hath  
 ‘ so often violated (c).’ — These were some of the  
 principal reasons given in defence of an action generally

(c) Parlia-  
 mentary  
 History,  
 vol. xviii.  
 p. 59.



authority of the court, he received sentence of death, which accordingly was put in execution.

condemned as impudent, base, and tyrannical. The reader who understands the history of these times, will be best able to judge of the truth of the pretences on which it is founded—All I shall say is, if ruin was apprehended by these men to themselves or the kingdom; if their civil or religious rights, in their eyes, appeared as intended to be sacrificed, and the King and the priest, whether prelate or presbyter mattered not, were to re-assume their wonted rule; and above all, if the King's character appeared such to them, that no reliance was to be put on his promises, declarations or oaths, (all which they seem strongly to affirm) we are not to wonder at the deed. All men know the force of necessity and self preservation, and know also that they will operate more strongly than law or reason, if indeed they be not almost superiour to all law. To plead this in bar of those, will seldom be thought valid by men versed in great affairs, and, though it be made use of by them sometimes for purposes of their own, yet is it little credited and believed by themselves.—That the army really feared a treaty between the King and the parliament, is certain—How far their fears were just in themselves, or will justify their proceedings in this matter, the public must determine.—Thus much for the fact itself. In defence of *Cromwell*, who is supposed to have been at the bottom of it, it is urged, ' That there  
' was a party in the parliament that bore an early spleen  
' against him, and fain would have nipt him in the  
' bud; but his eminent service at *Naseby* procuring him  
' to be appointed and continued lieutenant general under  
' *Fairfax*; the continual successes that attended him  
' from that time forward, set him above their machi-  
' nations. Nevertheless, they did not erase out of his  
' breast, the remembrance of the kindnesses they would  
' have done him; nor did their flatteries of his prof-  
' perity make him the more neglectful of standing  
' upon

cution. In all these transactions *Cromwell* had

upon his guard. And it was as warrantable for *Cromwell* to secure himself from the contrivances of his enemies in a shattered parliament, of which he had so long before such timely notice, as it was for them to seek his ruin. For they were not his sovereigns but his equals.—When he found that his prosperous achievements raised him enemies on every side; that they who were most beholding to his victorious successes, combined with the greatest animosity to his destruction; 'twas time for him then to look about him, and to oppose their undermining devices with countermines of the same nature. Nor does it appear by any proof that carries authority with it, that he pretended to single greatness till he was forced to it for his own safety. It is agreed by the author of the *Memoirs* himself [*Ludlow*] that *Cromwell* offered more candid and easy conditions to the King than the Presbyterian party did; which if the King had accepted (and it does not appear to be *Cromwell's* fault that he did not) *Cromwell* himself had then put a stop to all his single advancement; whereas he would surely have taken another course, had he at that time meditated single sovereignty; but the King, who was designed by fate to be a victim to evil counsel, refused those offers, trusting to vainer hopes. On the other side, it was manifest that the Presbyterian party aimed at nothing more than their own advancement by their selling the bishops lands, and when they came to treat with the King, by their so stiffly adhering to their proposition for the abolishing of episcopacy, knowing there could be no bishops without maintenance, and that then they must be the paramount clergy. But then (indeed) *Cromwell* perceiving that it was not safe to rely on the King, nor willing to truckle under a party that were treating for their own advancement upon his ruins, 'tis rational to believe, that from that time forward he began to look upon the King as a  
con-

had (GG) a principal hand.—His name

3617530  
for  
3032071033

(d) Modest  
Vindication  
of O. Crom-  
well. p. 45.  
47. 4to.  
Lond. 1698.

‘ conquered Prince, and that none could better supply  
‘ his room than the person who had subdued him (d).’  
This seems no ill-made apology.

(GG) *In all these transactions Cromwell had a princi-  
pal hand.*] After the seclusion of the members who pro-  
moted the treaty with the King, it was natural to ex-  
pect that his Majesty never more would be permitted to  
bear rule. But it did not once, I believe, enter into  
the thoughts of him or his adherents, that he would be  
brought before a court of justice, tried, and executed  
in an open and public manner. Yet all this we know  
happened, to the very great amazement of many. The  
part *Cromwell* had in these transactions comes now to be  
related. ‘ When it was first moved in the house of

(e) Walker’s  
History of  
Independen-  
cy, part ii.  
p. 54.

‘ commons to proceed capitally against the King, *Crom-  
well* stood up and told them, that if any man moved  
‘ this upon design, he should think him the greatest  
‘ traitor in the world; but since providence and neces-  
‘ sity had cast them upon it, he should pray God to  
‘ bless their counsels, though he were not provided on  
‘ the sudden to give them counsel (e).’—The follow-  
ing anecdote from *Burnet* will shew that he had well  
considered the reasons and grounds of the proceeding.  
Lieutenant general *Drummond*, afterwards Lord *Stratbol-  
lan*, was the relator. This gentleman ‘ happened to be  
‘ with *Cromwell* when the commissioners sent from *Scot-  
land* to protest against the putting the King to death  
‘ came to argue the matter with him. *Cromwell* bade  
‘ *Drummond* stay and hear their conference, which he  
‘ did. They began in a heavy languid style to lay in-  
‘ deed great loads upon the King: but they still insisted  
‘ on that clause in the covenant, by which they swore  
‘ they would be faithful in the preservation of his Ma-  
‘ jesties person. With this they shewed upon what  
‘ terms *Scotland*, as well as the two houses, had engag-  
‘ ed in the war, and what solemn declarations of their  
‘ zeal and duty to the King they all along published;  
‘ which

for this has been greatly reproached, though there

' which would now appear to the scandal and reproach  
 ' of the christian name, to have been false pretences,  
 ' if when the King was in their power they should pro-  
 ' ceed to extremities. Upon this *Cromwell* entered into a  
 ' long discourse of the nature of the regal power, according  
 ' to the principles of *Mariana* and *Buchanan*: he thought  
 ' a breach of trust in a King ought to be punished more  
 ' than any other crime whatsoever. He said, as to their  
 ' covenant, they swore to the preservation of the King's  
 ' person in the defence of the true religion: if then it  
 ' appeared that the settlement of the true religion was  
 ' obstructed by the King, so that they could not come  
 ' at it but by putting him out of the way, then their  
 ' oath could not bind them to the preserving him any  
 ' longer. He said also, their covenant did bind them  
 ' to bring all malignants, incendiaries, and enemies to  
 ' the cause, to condign punishment: and was not this  
 ' to be executed impartially? What were all those on  
 ' whom public justice had been done, especially those  
 ' who suffered for joining *Montrose*, but small offenders  
 ' acting by commission from the King, who was there-  
 ' fore the principal, and so the most guilty? *Drum-*  
 ' *mond* said, *Cromwell* had plainly the better of them  
 ' at their own weapon, and upon their own princi-  
 ' ples (f).—On the 21 Jan. 1648, old style, *Hugh* (f) Vol. i.  
*Peters* preaching at *Whitehall*, upon ' Bind your Kings p. 62.  
 with chains, and your nobles in fetters of iron;' and  
 talking, in his bold manner, concerning the King's be-  
 ing liable to the law as well as other men, *Cromwell* was  
 observed to laugh (g). And when on the motion of Mr.  
*Downes*, on the last day of the trial, the court adjourn-  
 ed into the court of wards, and was pressed in the most  
 pathetic terms by him, to give the King liberty to make  
 some proposition to the parliament for the settlement of  
 the kingdom, as his Majesty had in court just before  
 desired: after Mr. *Downes* had urged this, ' *Cromwell*  
 ' did answer with a great deal of scorn. He told the  
 ' pre-

(g) Exact and perfect Narrative of the Trial of the Regicides, p. 168.

there were not wanting men of ability, at

that

‘ president that now he saw what great reason the gentleman had to put such a great trouble upon them; ‘ faith he, sure he doth not know that he hath to do ‘ with the hardest hearted man that lives upon the earth; ‘ however it is not fit that the court should be hindred ‘ from their duty by one peevish man; he said the bottom was known, that I would fain save his old master, and desired the court without any more ado, ‘ would go and do their duty (b).’ Mr. *Wayte*, another of the King’s judges, says ‘ *Cromwell* laughed and jeered, and smiled, in the court of wards on this occasion.’ He afterwards adds, ‘ That being told by ‘ Lord *Gray* that the King would not dye, the next ‘ day he went to the house, they were labouring to get ‘ hands for his execution at the door. I refused, and ‘ went into the house; faith *Cromwell*, those that are ‘ gone in shall set their hands, I will have their hands ‘ now (i).’ Colonel *Ingoldsbj* was a relation of *Cromwell*’s, and named a judge: but disliking the action, he always absented himself. But the day after the sentence was pronounced, having occasion to go to the painted chamber, ‘ he saw *Cromwell*, and the rest of those ‘ who had fate upon the King, and were then, as he ‘ found afterwards, assembled to sign the warrant for ‘ the King’s death. As soon as *Cromwell*’s eyes were ‘ upon him, he run to him, and taking him by the ‘ hand, drew him by force to the table; and said, ‘ Though he had escaped him all the while before, he ‘ should now sign that paper as well as they; which he, ‘ seeing what it was, refused with great passion; saying, he knew nothing of the business; and offered to ‘ go away. But *Cromwell*, and others, held him by ‘ violence; and *Cromwell* with a loud laughter, taking ‘ his hand in his, and putting the pen between his fingers, with his own hand writ *Richard Ingoldsbj*, he ‘ making all the resistance he could (k).’—An exact copy of the warrant for the King’s execution was published

(b) Exact and perfect Narrative, &c. p. 261.

(i) Id. p. 269.

(k) Clarendon, vol. vi. p. 763.



lished by the society of antiquaries of *London*, a few years since: in which it appears that the names of some persons who had signed it were erased, and other names inserted, and that the day, as well as the officers who were to see to the execution of it, were changed. *Cromwell's* name stands third on the warrant.—But to go on:

Colonel *Huncks* declares, ‘ That a little before the King’s execution, he was in *Ireton’s* chamber, where *Ireton* and *Harrisou* were in bed together; there was *Cromwell*, colonel *Hacker*, lieutenant-colonel *Phayer*, *Axtell* and himself standing at the door, the warrant for the execution was there produced, and Mr. *Hacker* was reading of it, but *Cromwell* addressed himself to him [*Huncks*] commanding him by virtue of that warrant, to draw up an order for the executioner. I refused it, adds he, and upon refusing of it, there happened some cross passages. *Cromwell* would have no delay. There was a little table that stood by the door, and pen, ink, and paper being there, *Cromwell* stepped, and writ (I conceive he wrote that which he would have had me to write) as soon as he had done writing, he gives the pen over to *Hacker*, *Hacker* he stoops and did write (I cannot say what he writ) away goes *Cromwell*, and then *Axtell*; we all went out, afterwards they went into another room; immediately the King came out, and was murdered (*l*).’ The (l) P. 221.

following relation (if it had not been contrary to *Huncks’s* account) is of too doubtful an authority to be absolutely relied on, though in a work of this nature it cannot well be omitted. ‘ While these things were acting, [the fitting the scaffold for the King’s execution] the Lord *Fairfax*, who had always forborn any public appearance in the practices of this murder, had taken up (as is credibly reported) some resolutions, (either in abhorrency of the crime, or by the sollicitations of others) with his own regiment, though none else should follow him, to hinder the execution. This being suspected or known, *Cromwell*, *Ireton* and *Harrisou* coming to him, after their usual way of deceiving, endeavoured to persuade him, that the Lord had rejected the King, and with such like language as they knew

that (HH) time, to defend his conduct.—The

The  
King

‘knew had formerly prevailed upon him, concealing  
 ‘that they had that very morning signed the warrant for  
 ‘the assassination; they also desired him with them, to  
 ‘seek the Lord by prayer, that they might know his  
 ‘mind in the thing. Which he assenting to, *Harrison*  
 ‘was appointed for the duty, and by compact to draw  
 ‘out his prophane and blasphemous discourse to God in  
 ‘such a length as might give time for the execution,  
 ‘which they privately sent their instrument to hasten;  
 ‘of which when they had notice that it was passed,  
 ‘they rose up, and perswaded the general that this was  
 ‘a full return of prayer, and God having so manifested  
 ‘his pleasure they were to acquiesce in it (m).’ The  
 ‘writer of this was but little acquainted with *Harrison’s*  
 ‘character, when he describes him as drawing out his  
 ‘prayer by compact, in order to gain time for the execu-  
 ‘tion. *Harrison* was bold, artless, honest and highly en-  
 ‘thusiastical, and therefore the unfittest man in the world  
 ‘to act a part. Whether the other parts of the story are  
 ‘more probable, the considerate reader will determine.  
 ‘These passages are, I think, sufficient to shew the part  
 ‘*Cromwell* had in this affair, though after all, *Burnet* as-  
 ‘serts, ‘That *Ireton* was the person that drove it on:  
 ‘for *Cromwell* was all the while in some suspence about  
 ‘it (n).’

(m) *Perin-  
 chief’s Life  
 of Charles I.*  
 p. 57.

(n) *History  
 of his own  
 Times, vol.  
 I. p. 69.*

(o) *Life of  
 Hammond,*  
 p. 55. 12mo.  
 1651.

(HH) *His name has been reproached, &c.*] No fact  
 recorded in history has been more censured than the exe-  
 ‘cution of *Charles*. *Dr. Fell* calls it a ‘horrid mockery  
 ‘of justice, the rape and violence of all that’s sacred,  
 ‘made more abominable by pretending to right and pie-  
 ‘ty; in order to prevent which, he says *Dr. Hammond*  
 ‘drew up an address to the general and council of of-  
 ‘ficers, and transmitted it to them (o).’—And the  
 ‘ministers of *London*, alarmed at the proceedings against  
 ‘the King, published a vindication of themselves against  
 ‘the unjust aspersions cast upon their former actions for  
 ‘the parliament, as if they had promoted the bringing of  
 ‘the

King being thus executed, that part of the  
house

the King to capital punishment. In this vindication they say, ' They hold themselves bound in duty to God, religion, the King, parliament and kingdom, to profess before God, angels and men, that we verily believe that which is so much feared to be now in agitation, the taking away the life of the King, in the present way of tryal, is not only not agreeable to any word of God, the principles of the protestant religion (never yet stained with the least drop of blood of a king) or the fundamental constitution and government of this kingdom; but contrary to them, as also to the oath of allegiance, the protestation of *May 5, 1641*, and the solemn league and covenant: from all, or any of which engagements, we know not any power on earth, able to absolve us or others.—Therefore, say they, according to our covenant, we do, in the name of the great God (to whom all must give a strict account) warn and exhort all who either more immediately belong to our respective charges, or any way depend on our ministry, or to whom we have administered the said covenant (that we may not by our silence suffer them to run upon that highly provoking sin of perjury) to keep close to the ways of God, and the rules of religion, the laws, and their vows, in their constant maintaining the true reformed religion, the fundamental constitution and government of this kingdom (not suffering themselves to be seduced from it, by being drawn in to subscribe the late models or agreement of the people, which directly tends to the utter subversion of the whole frame of the fundamental government of the land, and makes way for an universal toleration of all heresies and blasphemies, directly contrary to our covenant, if they can but get their abettors to cover them under a false guise of the christian religion) as also in preserving the priviledges of both houses of parliament, and the union between the two nations of *England and Scotland*; to mourn

P.

' bitterly

house of commons which remained by the

per  
308-107033

‘ bitterly for their own sins, and the sins of the city,  
 ‘ army, parliament, and kingdom, and the woful mis-  
 ‘ carriages of the King himself, (which we cannot but  
 ‘ acknowledge to have been very great) in his govern-  
 ‘ ment, that have cost the three kingdoms so dear, and  
 ‘ cast him down from his excellency into an horrid  
 ‘ pit of misery, almost beyond example: and to pray  
 ‘ that God would both give him effectual repentance,  
 ‘ and sanctify the bitter cup of divine displeasure, that  
 ‘ the divine providence hath put into his hand; as also  
 ‘ that God would restrain the violence of men, that  
 ‘ they may not dare to draw upon themselves and the  
 ‘ kingdom, the blood of their sovereign.’ This bold  
 piece, in such a critical conjuncture, raised the indigna-  
 tion and resentment of the house of commons, (for the  
 house of lords had unanimously refused to meddle with  
 the business, and for that reason it had been voted,  
 ‘ That the commons of *England* in parliament assem-  
 ‘ bled, have the supream power in the nation)’ who  
 constituted a committee, among whom were *Cromwell*  
 and *Ireton*, ‘ To examine the authors, publishers, prin-  
 ‘ ters, and subscribers to the said book; and by what  
 ‘ means the subscriptions to the said book were obtained,  
 ‘ and by whom: and the committee were likewise to  
 ‘ have power to take information of such as have al-  
 ‘ ready preached, published, or printed, seditiously, the  
 ‘ proceedings in bringing the King to justice: and also  
 ‘ to bring in an ordinance to restrain public preaching  
 ‘ and printing any thing against the proceedings of the  
 ‘ house, and the high court of justice, in relation to  
 ‘ bring . . . the King to justice (p).’ But nothing could  
 hinder men from declaring their dislike to the deed.  
 They reproached, they reviled, they threatned, and did  
 every thing to make *Cromwell* and his fellows odious and  
 abominable in the eyes of the whole world. Take a spe-  
 cimen from a sermon entitled ‘ *The Martyrdome of*  
*King Charles, or his conformity with Christ in his suffer-*

(p) Journal,  
Feb. 3,  
1648.

permission, and with the support of the ar-

my,

ings, preached at *Bredagh*, before his Majesty of *Great Britain*, and the Princess of *Orange*, June 3-13,

1649. (q). By *Henry*, Lord Bishop of *Down* and *Con-*

*noe*, in the kingdom of *Ireland*.—'As the murderers of

' our sovereign, says he, resemble the crucifiers of our

' Saviour; so we find them all acting the same parts.

' And first *Judas*, who sold his master, of all that con-

' spired against Christ, is most odious; for he was his

' disciple, a domestick servant, one whom he trusted

' with his purse; and yet he, his familiar friend, who

' did eat of his bread, lift up the heele against him.

' So our sovereign was sold at a greater price than our

' Saviour, by those who had as nere a relation unto

' him, as *Judas* had unto Christ: for they were his

' countrymen, brought up with him, his servants and

' familiar friends, whom he trusted with his purse, with

' his counsels, and his person, cherished in his bosome,

' and enriched with many princely favours. In many

' respects they were far worse than *Judas*.—From *Ju-*

' *das* come we to the great counsel. The parliament is

' that great counsel, and hath acted all and more against

' their Lord and sovereign, than the other did against

(q) Printed  
at the  
Hague, by  
Samuel  
Brown, and  
reprinted at  
London,  
1649.

my, assumed the supream power of the nation,

‘ling to consent to his death, and sought to wash his  
 ‘hands of his blood by laying it upon others. And his  
 ‘wife Lady *Pilat*, who dissuaded the murder of our  
 ‘sovereign, more than the other did the killing of  
 ‘Christ. The army are the soldiers who apprehended  
 ‘him, watched him, mocked him, reviled him, cry-  
 ‘ing justice and execution against him, and at last  
 ‘crucified him, and parted his garments amongst them.  
 ‘And *London* is the great city spiritually *Sodome*, where  
 ‘our Lord was crucified.’—The preacher in the con-  
 ‘clusion, addressing himself to the King [*Charles II.*] says,  
 ‘God in his own good time, will certainly, Sir, look  
 ‘upon the justice of your cause—For your cause is  
 ‘God’s cause. And as it is God’s cause, so it is the  
 ‘cause of all Kings: they are deeply concerned in it,  
 ‘and ought to pursue those *bloody paracides*.’ This  
 ‘language may sound harsh, but is softer than secretary  
 ‘*Nicholas*’s, who stiled them ‘Devils (r).’

(r) Or-  
mond’s  
State Pa-  
pers, by  
Carte, vol. i.  
p. 255.

And in an act of parliament passed soon after the re-  
 ‘stitution of *Charles II.* the execution of the King is stiled,  
 ‘An horrid and execrable murder, an unparalleled  
 ‘treason,’ which the said parliament did ‘renounce,  
 ‘abominate and protest against:’ and it was declared,  
 ‘That by the undoubted and fundamental laws of the  
 ‘kingdom, neither the peers of the realm, nor the  
 ‘commons, nor both together in parliament, nor the  
 ‘people collectively, nor representatively, nor any other  
 ‘person whatsoever, ever had, have, or ought to have,  
 ‘a coercive power over the persons of the Kings of  
 ‘this realm’.—And in virtue of this doctrine, *Cromwell*  
 ‘and many other of the King’s judges were attainted of  
 ‘high treason, and some suffered as traytors for consent-  
 ‘ing to his death. It would be tedious as well as end-  
 ‘less to reckon up the reproaches which have been cast on  
 ‘*Cromwell* for this action: suffice it to say that the bigots,  
 ‘the time servers, the party men, and many of the hon-  
 ‘nest and sensible men of most denominations, have joined  
 ‘in

nation, in the way of a free state. The kingly power and house of peers, by the autho-

in the cry, and represented him as one of the most wicked of men.—But, though men's prejudices ran very high at the time of *Charles's* death, yet wanted there not advocates to defend the deed. Some of their reasons the truth of history requires me to recite, though I am no way answerable for the conclusiveness of them.

1. It was said, ' That the people, (I mean collectively taken) have no law of nature, or of God upon them, which prohibiteth them from laying aside a King, or kingly governor, from amongst them, when they have a reasonable cause for it. Such a cause as this they have (I mean that which is just, and reasonable, and competent) for so doing, when either they find, by experience, that government by kings hath been a nuisance to the peace or liberties of the people, and apprehend, by reason, that, if continued, it is like still so to be; or find, that the charge of maintaining such a government, hath been, and, if continued, is like to be (for the future) overburthensome to the state, conceiving, upon good grounds, withal, that another form of government will accommodate the interest of the state upon equal or better terms, with less charge and expence; especially when they find, that the government we speak of is gotten into a race or blood, that is unfit for government. as that which, for several descents together, as in father, in son, in son's son, &c. is either boiled up into, and breaks out in oppression and tyranny, or else turns to a water of natural simplicity and weakness, or froths into voluptuousness and luxury, or the like; in all these cases (I say) and many others like unto these, a people or state, formerly governed by kings, may very lawfully turn these servants of theirs out of their doors, as the *Romans* of old, and the

authority of this commonwealth, were abolished,

(1) Goodwin's Defence of the Sentence passed upon the late King, p. 12. Lond. 4to. 1649.

*Hollanders* of late (besides many nations more) have done, and are blameless (1).

2. 'Though it should be supposed, that the King simply and absolutely is superiour to his people, yet, having entered into a civil, yea, and sacred covenant and bond with them, the breach hereof on his part giveth unto them a lawfulness of right or power, to compel him to the terms of his agreement, or to make satisfaction for his violation of them.—And though it should be granted, that a king is either equal or superiour in power to his people in parliament, yet, being degenerated into a tyrant, he is neither. Whether the king be such, it is the right of the people, by their representatives, to declare. For, where there is no opportunity for the interposure of other judges, the law of nature and of nation, alloweth every man to judge in his own case. Even as the late King took upon him to be judge in his own case; when he sentenced all those who served in the wars on the parliament's side against him, for rebels and traitors, and commanded execution accordingly. —That supposing the parliament (on account of the force put on it by the army, and the abolishing the house of lords) by whose authority the high court of justice was founded and created, was no formal, legal or compleat parliament, yet will not this neither disable the justice or righteousness of the sentence; unless it could be further supposed (which apparent truth prohibiteth any man to suppose) that there were some other magistrate, one, or more, superiour in place and authority to this parliament, who, probably, would either have erected a like court of justice for the same end (the capital tryall of the King) or else have called him to the bar of some court of justice already established, and prosecuted the same tryal here. For, doubtlesse, the execution of justice and judgment is so absolutely and essentially necessary



# OLIVER CROMWELL.

215

lished, the lands of the crown sold, with  
the

‘ to the preservation and well-being of a state, or body  
‘ politique, that both the law of God and nature doth  
‘ not only allow it in any member, one, or more, of  
‘ such a body, in their order, turn, and course, (when  
‘ those, who are peculiarly deputed for such execution,  
‘ shall neglect or refuse it, as, viz. magistrates and  
‘ judges) (t) but even calleth them unto it, and re-  
‘ quireth it at their hands, in such cases.’

(t) Good-  
win's De-  
fence, &c.  
p. 40.

3. As to the clause in the covenant, which bound  
them to preserve the King's person, it was said, ‘ That,  
‘ in the then circumstances, neither the preservation of  
‘ the liberties of the kingdom, nor the bringing de-  
‘ linquents to punishment (to which, by the same cove-  
‘ nant, they were bound) were consistent therewith,  
‘ and consequently was unfit to be observed by them.  
‘ Late and lamentable experience,’ says the writer, just  
‘ quoted, ‘ shewed how near the liberties of the kingdom  
‘ were to ruin, by occasion of the preservation of the  
‘ King's person only (and that only for a season) though  
‘ his authority was kept under hatches. It was the  
‘ preservation of his person that gave life, and breath,  
‘ and being, to those dangerous insurrections in *Kent*,  
‘ *Essex*, *London*, *Surry*, *Wales*, &c. by means whereof  
‘ there was but a step between the liberties of the king-  
‘ dom and perpetual enslavement. It was the prefer-  
‘ vation of his person (with hope of restitution of his  
‘ authority) that administered strength unto *Scotland* to  
‘ conceive the conquest of *England*, and to make the  
‘ attempt, by invading it with an army of about (if  
‘ not above) 30000 men: unto whose teeth (doubtlesse)  
‘ this nation had been a prey, had they not fought from  
‘ heaven; had not the stars in their courses fought  
‘ against them. And had his person still been preserved  
‘ (especially with his authority) according to all experi-  
‘ ments which the world hath made, and had, in such  
‘ cases, yea, according to all principles, as well of re-  
‘ ligion, as of reason and policy, it would have been a

the jewels and paintings belonging to *Charles*

3118-1010110

(y) Goodwin's Defence, &c. p. 55.

' spring or fountain of bitter waters unto the land, and  
' a darkening of the light in the heavens thereof. And,  
' instead of bringing delinquents to condign punishment,  
' it cannot, in any rational construction, but be  
' supposed, that it would have been the lifting up the  
' heads of such persons unto undeserved places of honour (u).

4. ' Never,' says Mr. *Goodwin*, ' was any person,  
' under heaven, sentenced with death upon more equitable or just grounds, in respect of guilt or demerit,  
' — He that is the architect and master-workman in  
' raising an unnecessary or unjust war, makes himself the first born of murderers, and is responsible  
' both to God and men, for all the blood that is shed in  
' this war. If kings might make war upon their subjects, when, and upon what pretences, they please,  
' and then be justified and acquitted from all outrages  
' of blood, and other villanies, perpetrated in this war,  
' one sin might make an atonement for another; yea  
' one great sin a cloak and covering for many. The  
' late wars, wherein the King, by the sword of those  
' men of blood, who cast in their lot with him, shed  
' so much innocent blood in the land, being causelessly,  
' and contrary to the frequent obtestations, humble petitions, earnest solicitations, grave advicements of his  
' great council (the parliament) commenced by himself, are so far from mediating for the blood shed, on  
' his behalf, that they open the mouth of it the wider,  
' and cause it to cry so much the louder for vengeance  
' upon him, and his, both unto God and men (x).

(x) Goodwin's Defence, &c. p. 93.

And the parliament, after giving a short detail of *Charles's* behaviour in his government, adds, ' Upon all  
' these, and many other unparalleled offences, upon his  
' breach of faith, of oaths and protestations, upon the  
' cry of the blood of *Ireland* and of *England*, upon the  
' tears of widows and orphans, and childless parents,  
' and millions of persons undone by him, let all the  
' world

I. and every mark of ignominy and contempt

‘ world of indifferent men judge, whether the parliament had not sufficient cause to bring the King to justice (y).’

5. ‘ I ask,’ says *Milton*, ‘ by what conscience, or divinity, or law, or reason, a state is bound to leave all these sacred concerns under a perpetual hazard and extremity of danger, rather than cut off a wicked prince, who sits plotting day and night to subvert them. They tell us, that the law of nature justifies any man to defend himself, even against the King in person: let them shew us then, why the same law may not justify much more a state or whole people, to do justice upon him, against whom each private man may lawfully defend himself; seeing all kind of justice done is a defence to good men, as well as a punishment to bad; and justice done upon a tyrant is no more but the necessary self-defence of a whole commonwealth. To war upon a king, that his instruments may be brought to condign punishment, and thereafter to punish them the instruments, and not to spare only, but defend and honour him the author, is the strangest piece of justice to be called christian, and the strangest piece of reason to be called human, that, by men of reverence and learning, ever yet was vented (z).’

(z) *Prose Works*, vol. i. p. 362.

6. As to the objection, that many members of parliament were, by force, excluded, the privilege of it highly broken, and they who were permitted to sit in parliament acted still under a force, and were upon their good behaviour: as to this, it was by the parliament replied,—‘ That every parliament ought to act upon their good behaviour; and few have acted, but some kind of force hath at one time or other been

(y) Declaration of the parliament of England, expressing the grounds of their late proceedings, and of settling the present government in the way of a free state, p. 13. 4to. London, March 22, 1648.

‘ upon

tempt cast on his name, family, and government.

upon them; and most of them under the force of tyrannical will, and fear of ruine by displeasure thereof; some under the force of several factions or titles to the crown: yet the laws made, even by such parliaments, have continued, and been received, and beneficial to succeeding ages. All which, and whatsoever hath been done by this parliament, since some of their members deserted them, and the late King raised forces against them, and several disorders and affronts formerly offered to them (if this objection take place) are wholly vacated. For any breach of privilege of parliament, it will not be charged upon the remaining part, or to have been within their power of prevention or reparation; or that they have not enjoyed the freedom of their own persons and votes, and are, undoubtedly, by the law of parliaments, far exceeding that number which makes a house, authorized for the dispatch of any business whatsoever: and that, which at present is called a force upon them, is some of their best friends, called and appointed by the parliament for their safety, and for the guard of them against their enemies; who, by this means, being disappointed of their hopes to destroy the parliament, would, nevertheless, scandalize their actions, as done under a force, who, in truth, are no other than their own guards of their own army, by themselves appointed: and, when it fell into consideration, whether the privilege of parliament, or the safety of the kingdom, should be preferred, it is not hard to judge which ought to sway the ballance; and that the parliament ought to pass by the breach of privilege (as had been formerly often done upon much smaller grounds) rather than, by a sullen declining their duty and trust, to resign up all to the apparent hazard of ruin and confusion of the nation (a).—These were the principal reasons at that time given for this most extraordinary action. The reader will judge of their force,

(a) Declaration, &c.  
p. 22.

vernment. To conciliate men to their proceedings,

force, and determine whether they answer the objections founded on the illegality and violence of the proceeding. It should be observed, however, that the abettors of it gloried that it was performed in the eye of the world, and that an example was set to posterity how to act in similar circumstances.—

‘ There want not precedents of some of his predecessors, said they, who have been deposed by parliaments, but were afterwards in darkness, and in corners, basely murdered. This parliament held it more agreeable to honour and justice, to give the King a fair and open trial, by above an hundred gentlemen, in the most publick place of justice, free (if he had so pleased) to make his defence (b).’—‘ If the parliament and military council do what they do without precedent,’ says *Milton*, ‘ if it appear their duty, it argues the more wisdom, virtue and magnanimity, that they know themselves able to be a precedent to others, who, perhaps, in future ages, if they prove not too degenerate, will look up with honour, and aspire towards these exemplary and matchless deeds of their ancestors, as to the highest top of their civil glory and emulation; which, heretofore, in the pursuit of fame and foreign dominion, spent itself vain-gloriously abroad; but, henceforth, may learn a better fortitude, to dare execute highest justice on them that shall, by force of arms, endeavour the oppressing and bereaving of religion and their liberty at home; that no unbridled potentate or tyrant, but to his sorrow, for the future, may presume such high and irresponsible licence over mankind, to havoc and turn upside whole kingdoms of men, as though they were no more, in respect of his perverse will, than a nation of pismires (c).’—‘ The time was,’ said another commonwealth advocate, ‘ when this nation was wedded to the vanity of admiring kings, placing them in a lofty seat of impunity, like gods, that were not bound

(b) Declaration, &c.  
P. 14.

(c) *Prose Works*, vol. i. p. 356.

ceedings, and make them submit to their rule, they began (11) with fair promises, and

‘ bound to give men an account of their actions, but  
 ‘ had a liberty to thunder at pleasure, and put the world  
 ‘ into combustion, so that there was no love but lust,  
 ‘ no rule but the prince’s will, which so vassalized the  
 ‘ spirits of this great and mighty people, that they were  
 ‘ content to establish the highest piece of injustice by  
 ‘ such maxims of law, as said, ‘ the King can do no  
 ‘ wrong;’ as if whatsoever he did could not make him  
 ‘ a delinquent or a traitor; nor was it law only, but  
 ‘ those antiquated cheats of the clergy made it pass for  
 ‘ divinity also; so that the commonwealth of *England*,  
 ‘ for almost six hundred years, hath been pinioned like  
 ‘ a captive with the twofold cord of the law and the  
 ‘ gospe, which the corrupt professors have made use of  
 ‘ after their own inventions. Yet, notwithstanding  
 ‘ that this glorious idol of royalty was elevated to such  
 ‘ a height over the liberties of the parliament, and set  
 ‘ upon the very pinnacle of the temple, we have lived  
 ‘ to see a noble generation of *English* hearts, that have  
 ‘ fetched it down with a vengeance, and cured the land  
 ‘ of that idolatry, by one of the most heroic and ex-  
 ‘ emplary acts of justice, that ever was done under the  
 ‘ sun (d).’

(d) Mercurius Politicus, No. 56. p. 386.

I shall only add, that, in the year 1651, O. S. the 30th of *January* was observed, by the *English* merchants at *Dantzick*, in memorial of their deliverance from slavery, and a feast was made for the whole company, the expence of which was ordered to be repaid by the commonwealth of *England* (e).

(e) Thurloe, vol. i. p. 554, 555.

(11) They began with fair promises, and expressed, at the same time, much resolution. After it had been determined to bring the King to a trial, the house of commons acted with great spirit and rigour. They declared, that the commons of *England*, in parliament assembled, being chosen by, and representing the people, have the supreme power in the nation (f). They resolved, that

(f) Journal, 4th Jan. 1643.

and expressed, at the same time, much resolution. Nor were they worse than their words:

a great seal be graven, with the addition of a map of the kingdom of *Ireland*, and of *Jersey* and *Guernsey*, together with the map of *England*; and, in some convenient place on that side, the arms by which the kingdoms of *England* and *Ireland* are differenced from other kingdoms. That, on the map side of the great seal, the inscription shall be, 'The Great Seal of *England*, 1648.' That the inscription, on the other side of the seal, on which the sculpture of the house of commons is engraven, shall be this, viz. 'In the first year of freedom by God's blessing restored (g).' Sixty pounds were charged on the revenue towards the charges of this seal.—On the 17th of *March*, after the King's execution, an act was passed 'for abolishing the kingly office,' and it was declared, 'high treason in any one to endeavour to set up any of the late King's children, or any other person to be King of *England* and *Ireland*; and that whoever should be convicted of the said offence, should be deemed and adjudged a traitor against the parliament and people of *England* (h).' And, that no hopes might be given of the restoration of monarchy, care was taken to demolish its great support the house of peers, which was declared 'to be useless and dangerous to the people of *England*;' and it was enacted, 'That the lords should not from thenceforth meet or sit in the house called the *lords house*, or in any other house or place whatsoever, as a house of lords; nor should sit, vote, advise, adjudge or determine of any matter or thing whatsoever, as a house of lords, in parliament (i).' They, moreover, pulled down the statues of *Charles* at *St. Paul's* and in the *Royal Exchange*, and put in the nich of the latter, *Exit Tyrannus regum ultimus*: imitating the *Syracusians*, who, at the invitation of *Timoleon*, 'overturned the palaces and monuments, and whatever else might preserve the memory of former tyrants (k).'—These were very bold

(g) Journal,  
9th of Jan.  
1648.

(h) Scobel's  
collection,  
March,  
1648.

(i) Id. ib.

(k) Plutarch  
in Timoleon.

words: for, 'tis very certain, great things  
were

bold and high acts, and such as needed an apology to the nation and the world. Accordingly a declaration was prepared and printed, in which the grounds of their proceedings were laid open in the best manner they were able. And the better to reconcile the people to their actions, and conciliate their esteem to their authority; they spoke them fair, and promised them largely. After having in the declaration vindicated their several actions, they proceed in the following manner: 'The  
' sum of all the parliament's design and endeavour in the  
' present change of government from tyranny to a free  
' state; and which they intend not only to declare in  
' words, but really and speedily endeavour to bring to  
' effect, is this; to prevent a new war, and further ex-  
' pence and effusion of the treasure and blood of *Eng-*  
' *land*; and to establish a firm and safe peace, and an  
' oblivion of all rancour and ill will occasioned by the  
' late troubles: to provide for the due worship of God,  
' according to his word, the advancement of the true  
' protestant religion, and for the liberal and certain  
' maintenance of godly ministers: to procure a just li-  
' berty for the consciences, persons and estates of all  
' men, conformable to God's glory and their own peace:  
' to endeavour vigorously the punishment of the cruel  
' murderers in *Ireland*, and the restoring of the honest  
' protestants, and this commonwealth, to their rights  
' there, and the full satisfaction of all engagements for  
' this work: to provide for the settling and just observ-  
' ing of treaties and alliances with foreign princes and  
' states, for the encouragement of manufactures, for  
' the increase and flourishing of trades at home, and  
' the maintenance of the poor in all places of the land:  
' to take care for the due reformation and administration  
' of the law and publique justice, that the evil may be  
' punished and the good rewarded: to order the reve-  
' nue in such a way, that the publique charges may be  
' defrayed, the soldiers pay justly and duly settled, that  
' free



were done by them, and such as were very much to their honour. Witness the profession

cution

' free quarter may be wholly taken away, the people  
 ' be eased in their burthens and taxes, and the debts of  
 ' the commonwealth be justly satisfied: to remove all  
 ' grievances and oppressions of the people, and to estab-  
 ' lish peace and righteousness in the land. These being  
 ' their only ends, they cannot doubt of, and humbly  
 ' pray to the Almighty Power for his assistance and  
 ' blessing upon their mean endeavours, wherein, as  
 ' they have not envied nor intermeddled, nor do intend at  
 ' all to intermeddle, with the affairs of government of any  
 ' other kingdom or state; or to give any offence or just  
 ' provocation to their neighbours, with whom they desire  
 ' entirely to preserve all fair correspondence and amity, if  
 ' they please; and confine themselves to the proper work,  
 ' the managing of the affairs, and ordering the govern-  
 ' ment of this commonwealth, and matters in order  
 ' thereunto, with which they are intrusted and autho-  
 ' rised by the consent of all the people thereof, whose  
 ' representatives by election they are. So they do pre-  
 ' sume upon the like fair and equal dealing from abroad;  
 ' and that they, who are not concerned, will not inter-  
 ' pose in the affairs of *England*, who doth not interpose  
 ' in theirs: and, in case of any injury, they doubt not,  
 ' but by the courage and power of the *English* nation,  
 ' and the good blessing of God (who hath hitherto mi-  
 ' raculously owned the justness of their cause, and, they  
 ' hope, will continue to do the same) they shall be  
 ' sufficiently enabled to make their full defence, and to  
 ' maintain their own rights. And they do expect from  
 ' all true hearted *Englishmen*, not only a forbearance of  
 ' any publique or secret plots or endeavours, in oppo-  
 ' sition to the present settlement, and thereby to kindle  
 ' new flames of war and misery amongst us, whereof  
 ' themselves must have a share; but a chearful concur-  
 ' rence and acting for the establishment of the great  
 ' work now in hand, in such a way, that the name of  
 ' God

cution of the war in *Ireland*, under the command (κκ) of *Cromwell*, their lieutenant-

(l) Declaration, March 22, 1643. p. 25—27.

(m) Londini, apud Franciscum Tytonium Mensis Martii 22. Anno 1643.

(n) Preface to the 10th vol. of the Parliamentary History.

(o) Wood, vol. ii. c. 613.

(p) Plato Redivivus, P. 173. 12mo. Lond. 1631. 2d edit.

‘ God may be honoured, the true protestant religion advanced, and the people of this land enjoy the blessings of peace, freedom and justice, to them and their posterities (l).’—This declaration, at the same time, was printed, by order of parliament, in *Latin*, under the title of ‘Parliamenti Angliæ Declaratio: in quâ Res Nuperum Gestæ, et Decretum de Statu Angliæ Regio in liberam Rempublicam vertendo, asseruntur (m).’ The great and remarkable transactions of the commonwealth were published by their order, and translated into *Latin*, for the information of other countries, as appears from a great many papers yet remaining in the hands of the curious and inquisitive; and a very accurate journal in *French* was published by authority of the council of state, for the like use of foreigners, intituled, ‘Nouvelles Ordinaires de Londres,’ beginning July 1650, and ending January 1660-1 (n). Nor must it be forgotten, that, for the use of their own subjects, a journal of a like nature, intituled, ‘Mercurius Politicus, comprising the sum of foreign intelligence, with the affairs now on foot in the three nations of England, Scotland and Ireland,’ was, by the same authority, printed likewise. It commences June 9, 1649, and ends in April, 1660 (o). These publications shewed great sense of propriety, honour and fair intentions in the parliament, and render it very surprising, that no compleat history of those times should be given us by any contemporary writer. Mr. Neville speaks of ‘one of those who were in employment from the year 40 to 60, who had written a history of those 20 years, with great truth and impartiality (p).’—What is become of it is not known—Probably it is lost for ever!

(κκ) *The deeds in Ireland under the command of Cromwell.*] *Ireland* had given the parliament great cause of resentment. Besides the barbarous massacre in 1641, which

nant-general, and the subsequent settlement there

which loudly called for vengeance, and which the best part of the *English* nation were desirous of seeing inflicted, it had shewed a particular spite and malice against the parliament. *Charles* cherished this disposition, and, by a variety of methods, endeavoured to make it declare in his favour, and support his cause. Some success, 'tis well known, he had,—more, probably, he would have had, but for the extream bigotry of the priests, and the Nuntio, who were hardly to be satisfied by any concessions. At length, however, a peace was made between the Marquis of *Ormonde*, lord-lieutenant-general, and general governor of the kingdom of *Ireland*, on behalf of King *Charles* of the one part, and the general assembly of the *Roman* Catholics of the said kingdom, for, and on behalf of his Majesty's *Roman* catholic subjects, on the other part. This peace was proclaimed *January* 17, 1648, and does very little honour to the Marquis or his master. For, among other things, it was agreed, 'That all acts, ordinances and orders made by both or either houses of parliament, to the blemish, dishonour and prejudice of the *Roman* Catholics of that kingdom, since the 7th of *August*, 1641, should be vacated; that all inditeiments, attainders, outlawries in that kingdom, and all the processes and other proceedings, since the said time, in prejudice of the Catholics, should be made void; that Catholics might sit and vote in parliament; have places of honour, command, profit and trust in the army, and that an act of oblivion should be passed to extend to all his Majesty's subjects of that kingdom, of all treasons and offences of what nature, kind or quality soever, since the 23d of *October*, 1641.' In a word, every thing the Catholics could almost wish for was granted them, to the no small astonishment of the protestants. This pass not without observation in *England*. However, by means of this peace, the chief parts of *Ireland* declared for *Charles*, and afterwards for his son;

there in pursuance of the act of parliament

for

and lord *Ormonde*, emboldened thereby, took the liberty to use a language towards the *English* government, which he little imagined they would so soon avenge. 'The dregs and scum of the house of commons, pick'd and awed by the army,' 'a wicked remnant, left for no other end, than yet further, if it be possible, to delude the people with the name of a parliament,' were some of the expressions his lordship made use of in his letter to colonel *Jones*, governor of *Dublin*, in order to induce him to surrender that city into his hands. *Cromwell* was also likened in the same letter to *John of Leyden* (q).

(q) See the articles of peace, letter, &c. in *Milton's* profane works, vol. i. p. 364—385.

*Milton*, in his observations on this peace, gives his lordship very keen answers to these reproaches, though in a stile far more decent. 'Seeing, says he, he contains not himself, but, contrary to what a gentleman should know of civility, proceeds to the contemptuous naming of a person, whose valour and high merit many enemies, more noble than himself, have both honoured and feared; to assert his good name and reputation, of whose service the commonwealth receives so ample satisfaction, it is answered in his behalf, that *Cromwell*, whom he couples with a name of scorn, hath done, in a few years, more eminent and remarkable deeds, whereon to found nobility in his house, though it were wanting, than *Ormonde*, and all his ancestors put together, can shew from any record of their *Irish* exploits, the widest scene of their glory (r).' This the Marquis got by using abusive language.—But to proceed with the narration.—Peace being made with the catholics, and Lord *Inchiquin* having joined also with *Ormonde*, the Marquis advised his young master *Charles II.* to come thither as to a place of security and advantage. In a memorial delivered by the lords of his Majesty's council to the lords deputies for the States General, *March* 29, 1649, N. S. we find them, after touching on the state of *England* and


(r) *Id.* p. 393.

for that purpose, whereby the *Irish* being  
sub-

and *Scotland*, declaring his Majesty's resolutions in the following manner: 'This being the true condition of his Majesty's two kingdoms of *England* and *Scotland*, and it being necessary for his Majesty to give life to the afflicted state of his affairs by his own activity and vigour, your lordships clearly discern, that his other kingdom of *Ireland* is, for the present, fittest to receive his Majesty's person; and thither he intends, with all convenient speed, to transport himself, being thereunto earnestly advised, and with great importunity invited, by the kingdom of *Ireland*, and by the Marquis of *Ormonde*, his Majesty's lieutenant-general there; by whose great wisdom a peace is there concluded, and thereby the King, at this time, possessed entirely of three parts of four of that his large and fruitful kingdom, and of the command of good armies and a good fleet to be joined to his navy; and he hath reason to believe that *Dublin*, and the few other places (that have submitted to the rebellious power in *England*) either are, upon the knowledge of that odious parricide, returned to their allegiance, or will be suddenly reduced; so that the affairs of that kingdom being settled (which we hope will be in a short time) the King will be ready to go from thence into *Scotland*, when his presence there shall be requisite (1). How full the King was of going to *Ireland*, appears from the following letter, written in cypher by Sir *Edward Nicholas*, from the *Hague* (the day after the above memorial was given in) to Lord *Ormonde*. It is very true, that the King intends to make *France* his way to *Ireland*, and to meet the Queen; and, I believe, he will go to *Paris* to her. The truth is, I cannot guess at the time of our remove, tho' the King be resolved for *Ireland*, and desires to be there as soon as may be: and no man is now so mad, as openly to avow a dislike of it. But the want of money is so incredible, and the debts so great, that

(1) *Ormonde's State papers, by Carte, vol. i. p. 262. Lond. 1759. 8vo.*

THE LIFE OF



subdued, the best part of that kingdom

was

' I know not how we shall get over these difficulties.  
 ' And you must know, that, though no man opposes  
 ' the going into *Ireland*, yet many are in their hearts  
 ' against it, and are glad to cherish any rubs. The  
 ' *Scotch* faction is strong and bold, and have friends in  
 ' this state. The Queen, I believe, will govern very  
 ' much, and is full of designs. They persuade her to  
 ' go with the King into *Ireland* (t).—But all these  
 ' designs proved abortive: for the parliament, understand-  
 ' ing what had passed in *Ireland*, appointed lieutenant-  
 ' general *Cromwell* commander in chief of that kingdom.  
 ' He had *Ireton* placed next in command under him, and  
 ' great preparations were made for the war. In the mean  
 ' time the spirit, conjured up by *Cromwell* in the Levellers,  
 ' began to be very troublesome to the state, and incom-  
 ' modious to its affairs. They reproached those in pow-  
 ' er; they refused obedience to the general; and would  
 ' not go into *Ireland*. *Fai-fax* and *Cromwell* set themselves  
 ' to reduce those men, and they did it so effectually, that  
 ' the service of *Ireland* was no farther hindered. Whilst  
 ' *Cromwell* was making preparations for his voyage, lord  
 ' *Ormonde* besieged *Dublin*; but *Jones* found soon an op-  
 ' portunity to give him a specimen of the valour of the  
 ' *English*. For, with a very few forces, comparatively,  
 ' he fell on the besiegers, killed 4000, took 2517 prison-  
 ' ers, together with a great quantity of arms and stores.  
 ' *Ormonde* soon after writ to *Jones* for a list of the pri-  
 ' soners taken, to whom *Jones* laconically replied, ' My  
 ' lord, since I routed your army, I cannot have the  
 ' happiness to know where you are, that I may wait  
 ' up'n you (u).—*Cromwell* arrived at *Dublin* on the  
 ' 15th of *August*, 1649, and on the 30th of the same  
 ' month took the field, besieged *Drogheda*, took it by  
 ' storm, and put the garrison to the sword. All this was  
 ' done in the space of nine days, ' and a body of near  
 ' 3000 men, says *Borlase*, were totally destroyed and  
 ' massacred, with which, in respect of experience and

(t) *Ormonde's*  
*State papers*,  
 dec. p. 250.

(u) *Borlase's*  
*History of*  
 the execra-  
 ble Irish re-  
 bellion, p.  
 222. Fol.  
 Lond. 1680.

was portioned out among the foldiers and  
 ad- 71353-10  
 608-10701033

‘ courage of the officers, and goodness and fidelity of  
 ‘ the common men, the marquis would have been glad  
 ‘ to have found himself engaged in the field with the  
 ‘ enemy, though upon some disadvantages (x).’ The  
 slaughter used at *Drogheda* has been looked on by the  
 generality as very cruel and barbarous, and *Cromwell*  
 has been reproached greatly on that account. And it  
 must be confessed, that orders issued for putting to the  
 sword, and giving no quarter, sound very shocking in  
 the ears of the humane and benevolent. And it were  
 to have been wished that such orders had never been  
 given or executed by any general of rank and character.  
 Though, if ever such treatment is justifiable, it is in  
 such a case as this, where the known disposition and be-  
 haviour of the sufferers are remarkably barbarous, in-  
 human and cruel. *Cromwell*, in his letter to the speak-  
 er, dated *Dublin, September 17, 1649*, owns that he  
 forbade to spare any that were in arms in the town, and  
 ‘ he thinks,’ he says, ‘ that they put to the sword a-  
 ‘ bout 2000 men the first night they entered; that the  
 ‘ next day one of the towers which had held out hav-  
 ‘ ing submitted, their officers were knocked on the  
 ‘ head, and every tenth man of the soldiers killed, and  
 ‘ the rest shipped for the *Barbadoes*.—I am perswaded,’  
 adds he, ‘ that this is a righteous judgment of God  
 ‘ upon these barbarous wretches, who have imbrued  
 ‘ their hands in so much innocent blood, and that it  
 ‘ will tend to prevent the effusion of blood for the fu-  
 ‘ ture; which are the satisfactory grounds to such ac-  
 ‘ tions, which, otherwise, cannot but work remorse  
 ‘ and regret (y).’ This is saying the most for the justi-  
 fication of the fact. The name of *Cromwell*, and the  
 execution at *Drogheda*, had such an effect indeed, that  
 success almost constantly attended him; insomuch that  
 the far greater part of *Ireland* was reduced to the obe-  
 dience of the commonwealth, before he returned to  
*England*, which was in *May, 1650*.—After this  
 the

(x) Borlase's  
 History, &c.  
 p. 224.

(y) Parlia-  
 mentary  
 History, vol.  
 xix. p. 204.

adventurers of the *English* nation: witness

the  
 347135781  
 6113-2171033

the war was carried on by *Ireton*, whom *Cromwell* had constituted his deputy, with like valour and success, till, in a little time, the great armies of the Catholics were dispersed, their towns taken, their leaders forced to fly, and the whole kingdom, in a manner, subdued. Application was made for assistance from abroad, particularly to the Duke of *Lorrain*, who promised great things upon conditions very high; but little was done by him, or any one else: for the *English* arms were every where terrible, and he thought himself most out of danger who kept himself most out of their reach. In a word, after some time the *Irish* being wholly reduced, their lands were divided among the soldiers and adventurers, the murderers of the *English* were exemplarily punished, and peace and tranquillity were given to a land ruined by the villany and barbarity of its inhabitants. How fully *Ireland* was reduced by the commonwealth and *Cromwell*, will appear from the following extracts from *Clarendon*.—‘When the success of  
 ‘ the parliament had totally subdued the King’s arms,  
 ‘ and himself was so inhumanly murdered, neither the  
 ‘ forces in *Ireland*, under the King’s authority, nor the  
 ‘ *Irish*, who had too late promised to submit to it, could  
 ‘ make any long resistance; so that *Cromwell* quickly  
 ‘ dispersed them by his own expedition thither: and,  
 ‘ by licensing as many as desired it to transport as many  
 ‘ from thence, for the service of the two crowns  
 ‘ of *France* and *Spain*, as they would contract for,  
 ‘ quickly made a disappearance of any army in that  
 ‘ kingdom to oppose his conquests. And after the defeat  
 ‘ of the King at *Worcester*, he seemed to all men  
 ‘ to be in as quiet a possession of *Ireland* as of *England*,  
 ‘ and to be as much without enemies in the one as the  
 ‘ other kingdom.—Not only all the *Irish* nation  
 ‘ (very few excepted) were found guilty of the rebellion,  
 ‘ and so to have forfeited all their estates; but  
 ‘ the Marquis of *Ormonde*, the Lord *Inchiquin*, and all  
 ‘ the



the *English* Catholics, and whosoever had served the King, were declared to be under the same guilt, and the lands seized upon for the benefit of the state. The whole kingdom was admeasured; the accounts of the money paid by the adventurers within the time limited, and what was due to the army for their pay, were stated; and such proportions of acres in the several provinces were assigned to the adventurers and officers and soldiers, as were agreeable to the act of parliament, by admeasurement.—And that every body might with the more security enjoy that which was assigned to him, they had found a way to have the consent of many to their own undoing. They found the utter extirpation of the nation (which they had intended) to be in itself very difficult, and to carry in it somewhat of horror, that made some impression upon the stone-hardness of their own hearts.—They therefore found this expedient, which they called an act of grace. There was a large tract of land, even to the half of the province of *Conaught*, that was separated from the rest by a long and large river, and which, by the plague and many massacres, remained almost desolate. Into this space and circuit of land they required all the *Irish* to retire by such a day under the penalty of death; and all who should after that time be found in any other part of the kingdom, man, woman, or child, should be killed by any body that met them. The land within this circuit, the most barren in the kingdom, was, out of the grace and mercy of the conquerors, assigned to those of the nation, who were enclosed in such proportions as might, with great industry, preserve their lives. And to those persons, from whom they had taken great quantities of land in other provinces, they assigned the greater proportions within this precinct; so that it fell to some men's lot, especially when they were accommodated with houses, to have a competent livelihood, though never to the fifth part of what had been taken from them in a much better province. And, that they might not be exalted with this merciful donative, it was a condition that accompanied

' this their accommodation, that they should all give re-  
 ' leases of their former rights and titles to the Lord  
 ' that was taken from them, in consideration of what  
 ' was now assigned to them; and so they should for  
 ' ever bar themselves and their heirs from ever laying  
 ' claim to their old inheritance.—And, by this means,  
 ' the plantation (as they called it) of *Conaught* was fi-  
 ' nished, and all the *Irish* nation inclosed within that  
 ' circuit, the rest of *Ireland* being left to the *English*;  
 ' some to the old lords and just proprietors, who, being  
 ' all protestants (for no *Roman Catholic* was admitted)  
 ' had either never offended them, or had served them,  
 ' or had made composition for their delinquencies, by  
 ' the benefit of some articles; and some to the adven-  
 ' turers and soldiers. And a good and great part (as  
 ' I remember, the whole province of *Tipperary*) *Crom-*  
 ' *well* had reserved to himself, as a demesne (as he cal-  
 ' led it) for the state, and in which no adventurer or  
 ' soldier should demand his lot to be assigned, and, no  
 ' doubt, intended both the state and it for the making  
 ' great his own family. It cannot be imagined in how  
 ' easy a method, and with what peaceable formality,  
 ' this whole great kingdom was taken from the just  
 ' lords and proprietors, and divided and given among  
 ' those, who had no other right to it, but that they  
 ' had power to keep it, no men having so great shares  
 ' as they who had been instruments to murder the King,  
 ' and were not like, willingly, to part with it to his  
 ' successor.—*Ireland* was the great capital, out of  
 ' which all debts were paid, all services rewarded, and  
 ' all acts of bounty performed. And, which is more  
 ' wonderful, all this was done and settled, within little  
 ' more than two years, to that degree of perfection,  
 ' that there were many buildings raised for beauty as  
 ' well as use, orderly and regular plantations of trees,  
 ' and fences and enclosures raised throughout the king-  
 ' dom, purchases made by one from the other at very  
 ' valuable rates, and jointures made upon marriages,  
 ' and all other conveyances and settlements executed,  
 ' as in a kingdom of peace within itself, and where no  
 ' doubt

‘doubt could be made of the validity of titles (2).’ The reader need not be told how much honour this relation does to the parliament of the commonwealth of *England*, by whose wisdom these great things were thus settled and accomplished. His lordship strongly indeed insinuates cruelty in these proceedings: but his word is not to be depended on. That they intended the utter extirpation of the *Irish* nation is meer calumny, as appears from the preamble to the act for settling *Ireland*, in which, among other reasons for passing it, one is, ‘That the people of that nation might know that it is not the intention of the parliament to extirpate that whole nation, but that mercy and pardon, both as to life and estate, may be extended to all husbandmen, plowmen, labourers, artificers, and others of the inferior sort (a).’ The curious reader will do well to consult the act. I will not dilate on his lordship’s stiling *Tipperary* a province; such a mistake is pardonable in a man who confesses himself to have been ignorant of there being any such place in *England* as *Sheerness* (b).—However, I cannot find that *Cromwell* reserved it as a demesne for the state or his own family.—I will only add, that Lord *Molesworth* gives it as his opinion, that to *Cromwell*’s distributing of the enemies lands to the soldiers in *Ireland*, ‘we owe that kingdom’s being a protestant kingdom at this day, and its continuing subject to the crown of *England* (c).’

(2). Continuation of Clarendon’s Life, vol. ii. p. 114—118.

(a) Scobel’s collections, Anno 1652, c. 23.

(b) Continuation, vol. iii. p. 752.

(c) Preface to Holloman’s Franco Gallia, 2d edit. p. 30.

Lieutenant-general *Ludlow* had a great share in all these transactions.—The spirit with which he acted will appear from the following answer given to a letter of the Marquis of *Clanrickarde*, desiring a conference with him for the settling the repose of the nation, and a safe conduct for commissioners to treat with him for that purpose,

THE LIFE OF  
the actions of *Cromwell* (LL) in *Scotland*,  
which

My Lord,

I N answer to yours of the 24th of *March*, by which you propose a treaty for the settlement of this country, and desire a safe conduct for the commissioners you shall judge fit to employ in the management of that affair, I think fit, in pursuance of the advice of the commissioners of the parliament of *England*, and of many officers of the *English* army, to advertise you, as hath been already answered to those who have sent propositions of the like nature, that the settlement of this nation doth of right belong to the parliament of the commonwealth of *England*, to whom we are obliged in duty to leave it, being assured that they will not capitulate with those who ought to submit to them, and yet oppose themselves to their authority, and upon vain and frivolous hopes have refused such offers of favour as they would gladly accept at present: so that I fear they will be constrained to proceed against them with the highest severity, which that you may prevent by your timely submission, is the desire of,

My Lord,

Your humble servant,

EDMUND LUDLOW (*d*).

(*d*) Ludlow,  
vol. i. p.  
398.

This reduction of *Ireland*, in so short a time, when the affairs of the commonwealth were in so low a state there, does, undoubtedly, great honour to *Cromwell*, as well as the other commanders in chief after him. His actions here have always justly made one part of his panegyric. We shall soon see that he did not disgrace them by any after military ill behaviour.

(LL) *Cromwell's actions in Scotland, and the victory of Worcester.*] 'Tis well known, that the *Scots* were extremely ill used by *Charles* the first; that they opposed his measures; marched an army into *England*; joined with the parliament, and helped to reduce him to a  
state

which, with the victory at *Worcester*, so to-

tally  
 308-70710333

state of captivity.—They stopped short, however, here, and very violently opposed his trial and condemnation, looking on him as their King, and the judges as murderers.—Thus matters stood when the commonwealth was erected in *England*. Soon after application was made to *Charles II.* by commissioners from the *Scottish* nation, in order to his entrance into that kingdom, and mounting the throne of his ancestors. Many of the young King's counsellors were against this, looking on the *Scots* as a rebellious nation who had been the original cause of the late King's misfortunes. And very probable it is, that had not Lord *Ormonde*, and the catholic confederates in *Ireland*, been defeated by *Jones* and *Cromwell*, he would not have had a thought of going thither. Lord *Byron*, in a letter to the Marquis of *Ormonde*, dated *Hague*, *April 12, 1649*, N. S. writes as follows: ‘Commissioners are come out  
 ‘ of *Scotland*, consisting of one Earl (the Earl of *Cassels*) two burgeses, and four divines, to treat with  
 ‘ his Majesty concerning the affairs of that kingdom,  
 ‘ or rather to impose unsufferable conditions upon him.  
 ‘ To give the better assurance of their good intentions  
 ‘ to his service, immediately before their coming out  
 ‘ of *Scotland*, the Marquis of *Huntley* was put to death  
 ‘ for no other crime but his loyalty to the King. Their  
 ‘ propositions are as insolent as can be imagined; for  
 ‘ they require that all malignants and evil counsellors  
 ‘ (and particularly the Marquis of *Montrose*) should be  
 ‘ banished the court; that his Majesty should take both  
 ‘ the national covenant and the holy league and covenant (as they term it) and establish a presbyterian  
 ‘ government in all his kingdoms. But the King being now unfortunately in a presbyterian country,  
 ‘ cannot resent these indignities so as otherwise he  
 ‘ would. Howsoever, his intention is, not to enter  
 ‘ into any particular debate of these propositions, but  
 ‘ to remit the commissioners till his coming into *Ireland*,

tally broke the power of *Scotland*, that it

(e) Or-  
monde's  
State pa-  
pers, vol. i.  
p. 268.

land, the matters propounded by them concerning his other kingdoms as well as *Scotland* (e).—Sir *Edward Nicholas*, in a letter to the same nobleman, dated *Jersey*, October 13-23, 1649, says, 'There are *Scots* commissioners coming hither; but their propositions are as unreasonable as the former sent into *Holland*. They have now a strong faction about the King; and the Lord *Fermyn* (who is esteemed the head of the *Scots* presbyterian faction) hath, its said, gained many that are now about his Majesty to his party, and, some say, will come hither to assist with all his interest and power the advancement of the King's designs. The truth is, Sir *Edward Hyde* being so unnecessarily and unskilfully employed in *Spain*, hath given an infinite advantage to the *Scots* presbyterians; for he was expert in all their jigs and artifices (f).'—

(f) Id. p.  
322.

—What the good secretary would have had the young King do is hard to say. There was no place for him in *England* or *Ireland*—where then could he go but into *Scotland*? How expert soever Sir *Edward Hyde* might be in the *Scots* jigs and artifices, it would not have been in his power to have hindered the King's resolving to agree with the commissioners of that kingdom, though, 'tis very certain, his inclination was not much that way. For he had no love for the *Scots* league and covenant; he relished not the manners and behaviour of the ruling part of that nation; nor could he well put on the stiff and formal air which was almost essentially necessary to gain their favour. But necessity has no law: the King leaving *Breda* took ship in *Holland*; landed in *Scotland*; and, having taken the solemn league and covenant, and signed a declaration, wherein he renounced the sins of his father's house, and of his own, and the idolatry of his mother, was solemnly crowned there. This filled the royalists with hopes, as appears from a letter of Lord *Ormonde* to Sir *Edward Nicholas*, dated *Louvre*,


Fe-

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

was no longer in a condition to support its own

February 12, 1650. ' Though it be very true, that his Majesty's condition must be to himself most irksome, and to his servants, that have endeavoured to serve his happy father and himself in their own method, most uncomfortable, yet, by what Mr. *Seymour* relates, and which seems confirmed by the *London* prints, it may be truly said to be in some degree amended by his coronation, and the conjunction of that people, which, as it gives some foreign reputation to his business, so it promises more of resistance against the rebels, than when they were divided; and, consequently, may more probably afford an opportunity to others of better inclinations to show themselves; and the same God, who, contrary to, and beyond the original intention of the *English* rebels, hath permitted them to perpetrate so unexampled villainies against the royal family and freedom of *England*, may, contrary to, and beyond the purpose of the *Scots* (who gave the rise to the perpetration) make them instrumental in the restoration, I hope he purposes, to the King's just power, and his people's free claim (g). But his lordship's hopes were ill founded. The *Scots* were zealous indeed to serve their covenanted King, and they hated heartily the *English* government and army, whom they were taught by their clergy to look on and call *sectaries*, a name, in the ears of the priests and priest-ridden, most odious and abominable. Great preparations were every where made to raise an army, which might destroy these men, and restore his Majesty to the *English* throne. But the thing was not so easily effected as planned. Those who sat at the helm of affairs were upon their guard. On the 12th of *June*, 1650, the parliament voted, that the lord-general *Fairfax*, and lieutenant-general *Cromwell*, should both be commanded to go upon the northern expedition: and that the council of state (which had been constituted at the beginning of the new government, and consisted of some

(g) Ormonde's State papers, vol. i. p. 405.



THE LIFE OF

own independency, much less place the son  
of

of the most able men in it) do acquaint them with it, and take care for their speedy march towards *Scotland*. For they thought it best to be before hand with the *Scots*, and to carry the war into that country.

‘ *Fairfax* being advised with herein, seemed at first to like well of it, but afterwards being hourly perswaded by the presbyterian ministers, and his own lady, who was a great patroness of them, he declared himself unsatisfied that there was a just ground for the parliament of *England* to send their army to invade *Scotland*: but that in case the *Scots* should invade *England*, then he was forward to engage against them in defence of his own country. The council of state somewhat troubled at his excellency’s scruples, appointed *Cromwell*, *Lambert*, *Harrison*, *St. John*, and *Whitlock*, to be a committee to confer hereupon with him; and to endeavour to satisfy him of the justice and lawfulness of this undertaking. Accordingly this committee met Lord *Fairfax*, and being shut up together in a room in *Whitehall*, they went first to prayer, that God would direct them in this business; and *Cromwell* began. Most of the committee also prayed, after which they discoursed in the manner related at large by Mr. *Whitlock*. From his account it appears that *Fairfax* grounded his unwillingness to invade *Scotland*, on the foundation of the two nations being bound in the national league and covenant; ‘ And now for us, said he, contrary thereunto and without sufficient cause given us by them, to enter into their country with an army, and to make war upon them, is that which I cannot see the justice of, nor how we shall be able to justify the lawfulness of it to God or man.’ *Cromwell* to this replied: ‘ I confess, my lord, that if they have given us no cause to invade them, it will not be justifiable in us to do it; and to make war upon them without a sufficient ground for it, will be contrary to that which in conscience we ought to do, and displeas-



OLIVER CROMWELL.

of the late King on the throne of his fathers

ing both to God and good men. But, my lord, if they have invaded us, as your lordship knows they have done, since the national covenant, and contrary to it, in that action of the Duke of *Hamilton*, which was by order and authority from the parliament of that kingdom, and so the act of the whole nation by their representatives: and if they now give us too much cause of suspicion that they intend another invasion upon us, joining with their King, with whom they have made a full agreement, without the assent or privacy of this commonwealth, and are very busy at this present in raising forces and money to carry on their design: if these things are not a sufficient ground and cause for us to endeavour to provide for the safety of our own country, and to prevent the miseries which an invasion of the *Scots* would bring upon us, I humbly submit it to your excellencies judgment. That they have formerly invaded us, and brought a war into the bowels of our country, is known to all, wherein God was pleased to bless us with success against them; and that they now intend a new invasion upon us, I do as really believe, and have as good intelligence of, as we can of any thing not yet acted. Therefore I say, my lord, that, upon these grounds, I think we have a most just cause to begin, or rather to return and requite their hostility first begun upon us; and thereby to free our country (if God shall be pleased to assist us, and I doubt not but he will) from the great misery and calamity of having an army of *Scots* within our country. That there will be a war between us, I fear is unavoidable. Your excellency will soon determine whether it be better to have this war in the bowels of another country or our own; and that it will be in one of them, I think it is without scruple.— This seems all very forcible, but it had no effect on *Fairfax*, who having before taken his resolution, as it should seem, contented himself with saying to this and the

thers, which the *Scots* had fondly hoped for.

(b) Memo-  
rials, p.  
46c—462.

the like kind of argument urged by *Whitlock*, *St. John*, and *Harrison*, 'That human probabilities are not sufficient grounds to make war upon a neighbour nation, especially our brethren of *Scotland*, to whom we are engaged in a solemn league and covenant (b).' One must have had a strange understanding, or been under a very strange influence to have talked after this rate! But so it was, *Fairfax* chose rather to resign his commission than go against the *Scots*, in order to prevent their intended visit into his own country. *Cromwell* urged him to continue it with great vehemence, but in vain, and being sure that he was immoveably fixed in his determination, pressed him, and the parliament to continue him, with all that dexterity and dissimulation I have else-where mentioned.—*Cromwell* now, by an ordinance of parliament, succeeded *Fairfax* in the supreme command, and the parliament published a declaration upon the marching of their army into *Scotland*. In this declaration they take notice of the averiness to amity and friendship to the commonwealth manifested by the *Scots*, and their hostile disposition, notwithstanding the signal hand of God against them upon their late invasion. After this they mention their transactions in 1648, and the kindneses which they had received from the *English* army when in *Scotland*, 'yet now,' continues the parliament, 'laying aside all consideration of former kindneses, and of their expressions and engagements of justice and treaties, the common bonds of human society, they endeavour to exercise their power for the destruction of those by whose means they did receive it; they again insist upon the same pretensions to matters of our government, and take upon them to determine what is fundamental here; and direct and threaten us, if we change not what is now established, and form it to their mind, or accommodate it to their interest.— Their design and resolution again to invade *England*, will be the more evident, if we remember, 1. That  
' upon

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

247

for. Indeed after this last defeat, *Scotland*

was

upon occasion of demanding only a treaty for satisfaction for their former invasion, they do, in express terms, declare themselves enemies to the government of this commonwealth, and all that adhere thereto, and lay foundations of sedition, and new insurrections amongst ourselves. 2. In pursuance of these grounds, they who cannot claim to themselves the least colour of authority or dominion over us, yet have taken upon them, in *Scotland*, to proclaim *Charles Stuart* to be King of *England* and *Ireland*; and in their treaty since with him, have promised him their assistance against this nation. 3. Before the late invasion from *Scotland*, the parliament of *England*, upon foresight of their disposition to what followed, and seeing their preparation, and the party they had seduced in order thereunto, believing what the event was like to be, sent thither commissioners to treat for preventing the effusion of blood; but the treaty was refused, and answered only with the immediate march of their army into *England*. Having therefore again refused the amicable offer of a treaty for peace, we have reason to expect another invasion. 4. They have equally declared against us as sectaries, as they have against those of *Montrose's* party, putting us into the same rank with malignant and papists. — Their design and purpose being thus evident, a necessity is upon us to use our best endeavours, with God's assistance, to prevent them, and not leave them to invade us at their chosen opportunity, and our greatest disadvantage, when they shall have compleated their design with foreign states for their aid, and with their faction and party in this nation for correspondence and concurrence in their attempts upon us; and that we may not be at the insupportable charge of keeping several armies in our own bowels, and subject ourselves to the contributions, plunderings, and barbarous usage of a *Scots* army, if we suffer them again to enter;

THE LIFE OF  
was by the arms of the *English* common-wealth

DARWIN  
183-1833

(?) Parliam-  
entary  
History, vol.  
xix p. 276  
—283.

‘ or of keeping one formed army constantly upon the  
‘ borders, for preventing or resisting those attempts up-  
‘ on us, which they are waiting an opportunity at their  
‘ best advantage to make. A burthen from which we  
‘ ought to apply our best endeavours to free the people,  
‘ who have suffered so deeply already by their means ;  
‘ which hath been part of their design, hereby to bring  
‘ the people to a discontent with the government from  
‘ the sense of charge, without considering the cause of  
‘ the continuance thereof, that so they may be fitted to  
‘ receive their impressions, and carry on their faction  
‘ among us, and keep it ready for them to make use of  
‘ when they shall see cause (i).’—On the 29th of *June*,  
*Cromwell* set forward from *London* towards the north,  
and by the approbation of the parliament, a declaration  
of the army of *England*, upon their march into *Scotland*,  
was printed. The title of it, too remarkable to be  
omitted, runs thus: *To all that are saints, and partakers*  
*of the faith of God's elect, in Scotland* \*. There is a  
cant here and there interspersed, but on the whole it is far  
from a contemptible performance. In it is given their  
reasons for bringing the late King to justice, and ex-  
cluding his family from the throne ; as also for abolishing  
the house of lords, and erecting a commonwealth. Af-  
ter which, the breach of the covenant ; the rejection of

\* It is not improbable this declaration of the army of England, upon their march into Scotland, was intended to obviate the prejudices excited against them in ‘ The declaration of major-general Masley and 30 other English officers and commanders engaged with the kingdom of Scotland, in behalf of their presbyterian brethren, in England, Ireland, and the principallitie of Wales. Declaring the grounds and reasons moving them to take up arms in the kingdom of Scotland ; admonishing all conscientious presbyterians not to apostatize from their first principles, nor ad- here, engage, or take up arms with the rebels at Westminister. Dated at Orkney island, March 19, 1650.’ In quarto, without printer's name, or place. The title of this piece alone might satisfy us of the spirit with which it is written ; which indeed is sharp, irritating, and abusive, and full of the blackest characters of the army and the parliament.

wealth almost wholly subdued, and those  
who

presbyterian government; and the heresies and blasphemies charged on them by some statists, as they style them, are refuted: and the King and his adherents are represented as influenced by popish counsels. They then add, 'Is there not now just cause for all good men with you to fear that one so bred, so engaged and interested, and meerly in such a way coming in to you, doth but watch his opportunity (to speak nothing of the weight of blood of the saints under the altar, crying still for vengeance upon him and that family) till by his influence upon your army, which you know how composed, he may gain his ends upon you; and how likewise the generality of the people of *Scotland* are affected, is not unworthy of your most serious consideration, nor of a friendly intimation from us (k)'—

*Cromwell* also, at his arrival in *Berwick*, published another declaration to the people of *Scotland*, in which referring to the grounds of the army's marching thither as set forth by the parliament in their declaration above-mentioned, he takes notice of the unjust reproaches and false slanders cast on the army under his command; and in order to refute them, appeals to his known conduct, when in their country two years before, towards the people in general, and the best affected in particular. He then goes on to assure the gentry and commonalty of *Scotland*, 'That he will not offer the least violence or injury to their persons, goods or possessions, they being innocent in his opinion, and invites them to stay and abide in their own habitations, where, says he, they may and shall enjoy what they have in peace; and not to suffer themselves to be misled by the craft and subtilty of any, into that which must needs prove their inevitable loss and ruin, and a great hazard to their country (l).'

(k) Parliamentary History, vol. xix. p. 306.

(l) Id. p. 322.

But these were things of little consequence in comparison of the after actions of *Cromwell* and his army. For they made it appear to *Scotland* and the world, that

who had bid defiance to their own princes,  
were

their discipline and valour were unparalleled. The country people were treated with great kindness by the general; their wants supplied; and such as in the least injured them, very severely punished. On the 22d day of July, 1650, *Cromwell* entered *Scotland*, and endeavoured by a variety of ways to bring the *Scots* to a battle. But they, though there were some smart skirmishes, kept themselves from a general engagement, and thought by that means to occasion the *English*, as the winter approached, to return through want of provisions. They probably judged rightly; and had they kept their resolution, *Cromwell* might have had the mortification of finding himself unable to execute his designs.

—But prudence or fortune failed them, *Cromwell* began to find himself in such difficulties that he thought it proper to retreat towards *Dunbar*; the *Scots* followed him close, with an army greatly superiour. They now thought they had *Cromwell* in their power, and they were determined not to let him escape.—What condition the *English* were in, what the hopes of the *Scots*, and at the same time the high enthusiasm of *Cromwell*, will best appear from his own letter to Mr. Speaker *Lenthall*, dated *Dunbar*, Sept. 4, 1650. Speaking of his retreat towards *Dunbar*, he adds, ‘ Their [the *Scots*] whole  
‘ army was in march after us: and indeed our drawing  
‘ back in this manner, with the addition of three new  
‘ regiments added to them, did much heighten their  
‘ confidence, if not presumption and arrogance. The  
‘ enemy that night we perceived gathered towards the  
‘ hills, labouring to make a perfect interposition between  
‘ us and *Berwick*; and having in this posture a great  
‘ advantage, through his better knowledge of the coun-  
‘ try, which he effected by sending a considerable party  
‘ to the strait pass at *Copperspath*, where ten men to  
‘ hinder are better than forty to make their way. And  
‘ truly this was an exigent to us, whereby the enemy  
‘ reproach’d us with that condition the parliament’s ar-  
‘ my

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



were forced to submit to a foreign (but not a griev-

‘ my was in when it made its hard conditions with the  
 ‘ King in *Cornwall*. By some reports that have come  
 ‘ to us, they had disposed of us and of their business, in  
 ‘ sufficient revenge and wrath towards our persons, and  
 ‘ had swallowed up the poor interest of *England*, believ-  
 ‘ ing that their army and their King would have march-  
 ‘ ed to *London* without any interruption; it being told us,  
 ‘ we know not how truly, by a prisoner we took the  
 ‘ night before the fight, that their King was very sud-  
 ‘ denly to come amongst them, with those *English* they  
 ‘ allowed to be about him; but in what they were thus  
 ‘ lifted up, the Lord was above them. The enemy  
 ‘ lying in the posture before mentioned, having those  
 ‘ advantages, we lay very near him, being sensible of  
 ‘ our disadvantages, having some weakness of flesh, but  
 ‘ yet consolation and support from the Lord himself,  
 ‘ to our poor weak faith, wherein I believe not a few  
 ‘ amongst us shared, that because of their numbers, be-  
 ‘ cause of their advantages, because of their confidence,  
 ‘ because of our weakness, because of our strait, we  
 ‘ were in the mount, and in the mount the Lord would  
 ‘ be seen, and that he would find out a way of delive-  
 ‘ rance and salvation for us; and indeed we had our  
 ‘ consolations and our hopes (m).’ Nor were their  
 ‘ hopes vain. On the third of *September*, *Cromwell*, with  
 ‘ an army of about 7500 foot, and 3500 horse, attacked the  
 ‘ *Scotch* army, consisting, as ’twas said, of 6000 horse, and  
 ‘ 16,000 foot at least, and in less than an hour put the  
 ‘ whole army into confusion, totally routed them, and  
 ‘ had the chase and execution of them near eight miles.  
 ‘ In this battle the *Scots* had 3000 killed, 10000 made  
 ‘ prisoners, exclusive of officers, all their baggage and  
 ‘ train taken, with 200 colours.—This victory, so un-  
 ‘ expected in *Scotland* and *England*, filled the friends of the  
 ‘ commonwealth and *Cromwell* with great joy. ‘ Our  
 ‘ prayers are heard,’ said *Mr. Sympsen* in a letter to the  
 ‘ Lord General, dated *Sept. 10, 1650*, ‘ our trust on

(m) Parlia-  
 mentary  
 History, vol.  
 xix. p. 344-  
 See Appen-  
 dix.

grievous) yoke. For 'tis well known that  
the

him answered, his promise accomplished to judge our  
cause in the day of battle, when he might have judged  
our persons according to our sins.—Our enemies  
here (the morning of that day before these tidings  
came) run up and down to their friends with news,  
that you were coming back with shame; they insulted  
in their shops and street, because that was now come  
to pass they always looked for, &c. But whilst their  
hearts were thus merry in them, their faces grew pale,  
their countenances cast down, because the sword of  
the Lord and of his servants had prevailed (π).—

*Oliver St. John* also, writing on the same occasion to the  
general, observes, 'That God had determined the dis-  
pute between *England* and *Scotland*, in such a manner  
as all may see and acknowledge that he hath done it;  
and therefore you could not fight when and as you  
desired; but then when your forces were lessened in  
number, and the remainder weakened by sickness and  
wants, and thereby much dispirited; and when the  
enemy thence and by their recruits, became confi-  
dent, relying upon and boasting in the arm of flesh.  
This season did the Lord chuse to give his judgment  
in, and signal was it, for sithence these wars, never was  
there, as I remember, so great a victory obtained  
with so little loss of ours (σ).'

Such a victory, indeed, in such circumstances, may excuse a little enthusiasm, in minds less disposed to it than *Cromwell* and his friends! No doubt this appearance of providence, and these congratulations received, must have been highly pleasing to the lord general. The parliament, sensible of *Cromwell's* merit in this affair on receiving the account, paid him all the respect the most ambitious man, one would think, could wish for. They ordered 'men, money, provisions, medicaments, physicians, apothecaries, and all other necessaries for the army in *Scotland*; they set apart a day of thanksgiving; appointed that the colours then brought up, together with those taken from the

*Scots*

(π) *Milton's*  
*State Pa-*  
*pers*, by  
*Nickolls*,  
p. 22.

(σ) *Id.* p.  
25.



# OLIVER CROMWELL.

the government there was far enough from  
being

*Seats at Preston, to be set up in Westminster-hall; resolved that a letter should be written to the lord general from the parliament, taking notice of his eminent services, with the special acknowledgment and thanks of the house; and moreover referred it to the committee of the army, to consider what medals may be prepared both for officers and soldiers that were in this service in Scotland, and set the proportions and values of them, and their number, and present an estimate of them to the house (p).'* Nor were these empty complements: the parliament were fully pleased with *Cromwell*, and desirous of gratifying him as much as might be. 'I never knew,' says *Sir H. Vane* in a letter to the lord general, the day on which the above resolutions were taken, 'any thing take a deeper or more kindly impression on the parliament, who in general have good aymes, and are capable of improvement upon such wonderful deliverances as these vouchsafed to them. — Never were your friends to whom you directed your letter more enlarged in heart with thankfulness to God, and in love to you and your army, than from the sense of this late inexpressible deliverance (q).'

Whether the officers and soldiers had the medals given them, proposed in the resolution of the house just mentioned, I know not. Certain 'tis, a very excellent medal was struck on the victory at *Dunbar*, on which is *Cromwell's* head in fine relief, and round it, *The word at Dunbar the Lord of Hosts*, Sept. 3, 1650. On the reverse is a representation of the parliament of the commonwealth of *England*. This was the work of the celebrated *Mr. Symonds*, who had the patronage of *Cromwell*; and was recommended to the committee of the army, by him, for that purpose, in a letter which will be found in the Appendix.—But to return.—After the battle of *Dunbar*, all things gave way to the valour of the *English* general; *Edinburgh*, *Leith*, and many other places surrendered to him; and on the 24th of *Dec.* it was

(p) Journal,  
Sep. 10,  
1650.

(q) Milton's  
State Pa-  
pers, by  
Nickolls,  
p. 19.

being burthensome to the generality, though

(r) *Britannia Triumphalis*, p. 67. 12mo. Lond. 1654.

agreed, that the castle of *Edinburgh*, after a short, but brisk siege, should be delivered up to him, with all the ordinance, arms, magazines, and furniture of war thereunto belonging.—‘It may seem strange and almost incredible, says a writer of that time, that such a strong and impregnable hold as was that, should be so easily won, the like whereof is not in that nation; wherefore it was the common vogue of that time, and by many credibly believed, that it was assaulted with silver engines (r).’ It does not however appear that *Cromwell* was wont to make use of these against his foes.—The *Scots*, in the mean while, were not intimidated by their losses: full of zeal for their King, and hatred of the sectaries, who were now their conquerors, they again raised a very considerable army, and hoped without doubt to be fully avenged on them. For they had friends and well wishers in *England*, especially the presbyterians, who were plotting how to advance the young King to the thrones of his fathers. But all was ineffectual. The plots in *England* were discovered, and some lost their lives on that account; the *Scots* army cared not to face *Cromwell*, but chose what appeared to them, the safer game, viz. to give him the slip, and march before him into *England*, where they counted they should meet with aid and assistance. This they put in execution. *Charles II.* at the head of a good army and gallant officers, attended by many of the chief nobility and gentry of *Scotland*, set forward the nearest way for *England*. In *Lancashire* he was joined by the Earl of *Derby* with others, and after in vain summoning *Sbrewsbury*, he arrived at *Worcester*, where he determined to abide the coming of *Cromwell*, who was in full march after him. A few days brought him within view indeed; and on the third of *Sept.* 1651, he without ceremony, gave orders to his troops to attack the enemy, and gave them a total overthrow. ‘This,’ says *Cromwell*, hath been a very glorious mercy, and

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



it could not be acceptable to those from whom

‘ as stiff a contest for four or five hours, as ever I have  
 ‘ seen (s).’ So that *Clarendon*, out of spight to the  
*Scots*, has grossly misrepresented their behaviour in this  
 battle, by saying, ‘ That except on the part where *Mid-*  
 ‘ *dleton* was, who was quickly overpowered, there was  
 ‘ no resistance made; but such a general consternation  
 ‘ possessed the whole army, that the rest of the horse  
 ‘ fled, and all the foot threw down their arms before  
 ‘ they were charged (t).’ What credit can such a  
 prejudiced writer deserve? Mr. *Hume*, however, has  
 fervilely copied this false and ungenerous account of the  
 behaviour of his countrymen (u). In this battle the  
 King lost 3000 men, besides about 12000 made prisoners,  
 amongst whom were many of the chief quality. Thus an  
 end for the present was put to the hopes of the *Scots*  
 King and his party; who from this time was forced to  
 wander abroad (where he would have wandered, had he  
 had no assistance but from the cavaliers, for ever) till  
 the restoration in 1660 — After this *Scotland* yielded  
 to the *English*, and presumed no more to enter the lists,  
 for power and dominion. Indeed she was wholly sub-  
 dued. How high a sense the parliament had of *Crom-*  
*well's* services, will appear from the instructions given to  
 the commissioners whom they sent to compliment him on  
 this last victory. They are dated Sept. 9, 1651, and are  
 as follows: ‘ You are in the name of the parliament, to  
 congratulate his lordship’s good recovery of health, after  
 his dangerous sickness; and to take notice of his unwea-  
 ried labours and pains in the late expedition into  
*Scotland*, for the service of this commonwealth; of his  
 diligence in prosecution of the enemy, when he fled into  
*England*; of the great hardships and hazards he hath  
 exposed himself to, and particularly at the late fight  
 at *Worcester*; of the prudent and faithful managing and  
 conducting throughout this great and important affair,  
 which the Lord from heaven hath so signally blessed,  
 and crowned with so

‘ com-

(i) See his Letter to the Speaker in the Parliamentary History, vol. xx. p. 44. And Whitlock, p. 507, 508.  
 (t) Vol. vi. p. 409.  
 (u) History of Great Britain, vol. ii. p. 29.

whom it had taken the power of tyrannising  
over

‘ compleat and glorious an issue. Of all which you  
 ‘ are to make known to his lordship, the parliament  
 ‘ hath thought fit, by you, to certify their good ac-  
 ‘ ceptance and great satisfaction therein: and for the  
 ‘ same you are to return, in the name of the parlia-  
 ‘ ment and commonwealth of *England*, their most hear-  
 ‘ ty thanks: as also to the rest of the officers and fol-  
 ‘ diers, for their great and gallant services done to this  
 ‘ commonwealth. You are likewise to let his lordship  
 ‘ know that since, by the great blessing of God upon his  
 ‘ lordship’s and the army’s endeavours, the enemy is so  
 ‘ totally defeated, and the state of affairs, as well in  
 ‘ *England* as in *Scotland*, such, as may very well dis-  
 ‘ pense with his lordship’s continuance in the field;  
 ‘ they do desire his lordship, for the better settlement of  
 ‘ his health, to take such rest and repose as he shall find  
 ‘ most requisite and conducing thereunto: and for that  
 ‘ purpose to make his repair to, and residence at or with-  
 ‘ in some few miles of this place, whereby also the  
 ‘ parliament may have the assistance of his presence, in  
 ‘ the great and important consultations for the further  
 ‘ settlement of this commonwealth, which they are  
 ‘ now upon (x).’ Mr. *Whitlock*, who was one of the  
 ‘ commissioners, tells us, ‘ That they met the general  
 ‘ near *Aylesbury*, delivered their message, and he re-  
 ‘ ceived them with all kindness and respect: that he  
 ‘ gave each of them a horse and two *Scots* prisoners,  
 ‘ as a token of his thankful reception of the parliament’s  
 ‘ regard in sending them to meet and congratulate  
 ‘ him (y).’ *Cromwell* was also met at *Alton*, by the  
 ‘ Speaker, the Lord President *Bradshaw*, many members  
 ‘ of parliament and the council of state, with the Lord  
 ‘ Mayor, aldermen, and sheriffs; and, entering *London*  
 ‘ in a coach of state, was received with all possible de-  
 ‘ monstrations of joy. And to crown all, the parliament  
 ‘ resolved that lands of inheritance to the yearly value of  
 ‘ 4000*l.* belonging to the state, be settled upon the lord  
 ‘ gene-

(x) Parlia-  
 mentary H. f.  
 tory, p. 43.  
 vol. xx. And  
 Journal, 9<sup>th</sup>  
 Sept. 1651.

(y) Memo-  
 rials, p. 509.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

over their neighbours.—Nor was this all—

Dif-



general *Cromwell* and his heirs, as a mark of favour from the parliament for his great and eminent services to the commonwealth (z). The other officers were not forgotten, but were provided for out of *Scotland*, which being looked on in some measure as conquered, it was resolved to bring in an act for asserting the right of the commonwealth to so much of *Scotland*, as was then under the forces of the commonwealth, and to settle it under the government thereof (a).—Such being the actions of *Cromwell* in *Scotland*, and at *Worcester*, we are not to wonder that his panegirists talked of them in lofty terms, and preferred him to antient heroes for valour and fortitude. The learned reader, possibly, may be pleased with a specimen of them: ‘ In victoriis tuis

(z) Parliamentary History, vol. xx. p. 50—51.

(a) Journal, 9th Sept.

‘ tam multis Olivari, quæ sunt eò nobiliores, quò difficiliores, periculosiores, formidabiliores pugnae fuere, celeritatem certè tuam, fortitudinemquè superioribus heroibus omnibus longè clariorem arbitror, quippe quos vel explosi Sclopi globulus cum audaciâ suâ prostravisset illicò. Atque ut ingenuè fatear, longè plus æstimo virtute tuâ superatam Cambriam, atque post fractos tam multos, eosquè Scotorum valentissimos exercitus, à te captum Edenburgum, Sterlinumquè, atque ex consequenti Scotiam universam. In Hiberniâ verò Tredam vi captam, Hiberniamque redactam; in Angliâ, Scotorum exercitu potentissimò defensam, munitissimamquè tum naturâ loci, tum arte Vigorniam, vi tamen occupatam, plus inquam, ex animi mei sinceritate victorias hæcæ tuas facio, quàm Cyri, Alexandri, Julii Cæsaris laureas omnes, habitâ ratione temporis, locorum, hostiumque (b).’—Another speaking of him, said, ‘ Ille est, ille est, auditores admiremini! Cujus unius fortitudo plus biennio profecit, quam centenis seculis majores nostri profuerant, vel forsân nepotes profuturi. Nempe per ultimam Thulen auspiciis obstupefiscendis volitantia vexilla protulit, & ultra Romanas aquilas, exercituum victrices alas expli-

(b) Parallelum Olive nec non Olivarii, p. 125.

Disputes arising with the *Dutch* (MM), a spirit

(c) Oratio Aniverfaria in diem Inaugurationis Olivari, per Fisher. Fol. Lond. 1655.

‘cuit (c).’—A third describes the battle of *Worcester* in the following manner: ‘Ad extremum illud & maximum, in quo de summa rei Scoti dimicarunt; prælium venio. Illud inquam Vigornianum, omnibus totius antea actæ ætatis acerrimis comparandum: Nam neque apud Mantineam Thebani cum Lacedæmoniis, neque apud Zamam Annibal cum Scipione, neque in Pharfaliciis campis Pompejus cum Cæsare, neque apud Mutinam cum Antonio Consules, neque apud Philippis cum Augusto & Antonio Brutus & Cassius acrius & pertinacius dimicarunt (d).’ The victory at *Worcester*, and the respect and applause almost universally attending him, inspired *Cromwell*, probably, first of all with the desire of dispossessing his masters, and seizing the supreme command. The reasons of this assertion will be found in the note (ww).

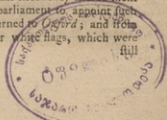
(d) Panegyricus Cromwelli, p. 35. 4to. 1654.

(MM) *Disputes arising with the Dutch, a spirit and conduct appeared in the English commonwealth, &c.* ] From the beginning of the quarrel between *Charles* and the parliament, the *Dutch* had acted somewhat partially in his Majesty’s favour. Arms and ammunition, officers and private soldiers, together with some ships, had been procured from them at different times by the Queen and her agents. On complaint of these things from the parliament, by their agent Mr. *Strickland*, orders were given to put a stop to every thing of this kind, and to observe the most exact neutrality. But among a money-loving people this was but ill observed, and therefore orders were given to the commanders of the *English* ships, to seize all *Dutch* ships on which were provisions, stores, ammunition or any other thing belonging to or intended for the enemy: which orders were well obeyed, and caused great complaints in *Holland* against the parliament, who, however, were not to be moved from their resolution (e). In the beginning of *January*, 1643, the States-General sent ambassadors into *England*, who, though respectfully treated by the parliament,

(e) See *Secrets discovered; or England’s complaint against the States-General*. 4to. Lond. 1643.

spirit and conduct appeared in the behaviour

ment, made no address to it, but repaired to the King at *Oxford*, and, after abiding there six weeks, returned to *London* 14, 1643. They then presented ' A paper ' to each of the Speakers of the houses of parliament, ' with a memorandum to that delivered to the house of ' peers, in these words: Delivered by the ambassadors ' of the lords estates, unto Mounfier the Baron *Grey* ' of *Werk*, Speaker, to be communicated to the lords ' of the parliament, this 14 day of *March*, 1643. The ' other to the Speaker of the house of commons, with ' a memorandum in these words; Delivered by the ' ambassadors of the lords estates, unto Mr. *William* ' *Lentball*, Speaker, to be communicated to the S<sup>r</sup>s ' commons of parliament this 14 day of *March*, 1643.' To the matter of these papers, the lords and commons could give no answer, in respect they were not addressed to them in such words, either for the matter or manner, as that they could legally, and according to the course of parliament, take notice of them as directed to themselves. However, that the ambassadors might not plead ignorance concerning the form of addresses, the parliament were willing that some of their members should repair to them, to acquaint them therewith, who did accordingly, and left the same in writing with them: but this for the present made no alteration in their behaviour. On the 4th of *May*, 1644, the ambassadors came to the Speaker of the house of commons, and by him presented their service to the parliament, protesting their desires to do good; but that they met with no success; and so took their leave for *Oxford* again. But when they perceived the parliament army to come near to *Oxford*, where they then were, with the King, they came out with white flags before them, and moved the Earl of *Effex*, for a treaty: his excellency assured them that it belonged only to the parliament to appoint such a treaty. Upon this they returned to *Oxford*; and from thence they came with their white flags, which were



still carried before them all the way as they passed, even into the city of *London*. Some persons from *Oxford* came up in their train, obnoxious to the parliament. After their return hither, about the 19th of *June*, says the parliament, they sent messages to the houses, that they had something to deliver from your lordships; [the States of *Holland*, to whom the declaration from whence I transcribe this is addressed] whereunto, about two or three days after, this answer was sent them; that the houses did expect that they should make their demand of audience in writing, with which if the houses relled satisfied, that they would come to them as to the parliament of *England*, audience should be given them in each house apart; which they did by their writing dated the 5th of *July*, whereby they presented their desires as to the lords and commons assembled in the parliament of *England*, and thereupon had audience given them in each house the 18th day of the same month, with a most honourable and respective reception. At the same time they delivered their letters of credence from your lordships, and offered their interposition and mediation for the composing the differences between his Majesty and the parliament, which they left in writing, together with a memorial for reparation of damages sustained by some merchants and masters of ships of the United-provinces, in their ships and course of trading, with desire that commissioners might be appointed for settling the things complained of. — This had the semblance of fair dealing. — But the *Dutch* ambassadors were far enough from interposing and mediating impartially. For in their letters to their masters they censured the parliament's proceedings, misrepresented their designs, and made applications for peace on terms unsuitable to the safety and welfare of the parliament (f). With respect to the damages they pretended to have sustained in their ships, it appeared to have been in a good mea-

(f) Declaration of the Parliament of England, written to the high and mighty Lords, the States-General, &c. 4to. Lond. printed for Laurence Blacklock, 1645.



surprised the nations. The war was commenced

measure redressed by the parliament, though they were importunately clamorous and troublesome on this head, and at the same time did the ships of the parliament damage to a very considerable amount, without making any satisfaction (g).—I have the more willingly given the account of these matters, because the declarations in which they are contained are very little known, and the memory of the facts like to be lost; the declarations, though some of the finest in the *English* tongue, in point of composition, being unaccountably omitted in the Parliamentary History, where their importance justly intitled them to a place. But to return—The same inclination to the royal cause was discovered by the *Dutch* on other occasions. They interposed with regard to the execution of *Charles I.* they made compliments of condolence to *Charles II.* on the murder, as they called it, of his royal father; acknowledged him to be rightful and lawful King of *England* (b), and afforded him a refuge in their dominions. ‘The ministers in *Holland* came likewise in a body to the King, and declared their detestation of the said horrid murder, and the *Sunday* following preached in most of the churches thereabouts, against the impiety and wickedness thereof: whereby the people there were very much enraged against all that had favoured or assisted any ways the rebels in *England*; insomuch that *Strickland* (their agent there) dared not to go out of his lodging, for fear the people would tear him in pieces (i).’ This was the temper and disposition of the *Dutch*, as described by *Sir G. Radeliff*, in a letter written from the *Hague*, *Feb.* 13-23, 1648-9. And ’tis well known that *Dr. Dorislaus*, who was sent over thither to act as a joint-agent with *Strickland*, was assassinated on the second day of *May* following, and his murderers permitted to escape; though it must be confessed at the same time, that the States-General offered a reward of a 1000 guilders for apprehending the assassins, and declared it death

(g) A second Declaration of the Lords and Commons of the proceeding with the Ambassadors of the States-General. 4to. Sept. 18, 1645.

(b) Ormonde's State Papers, vol. i. p. 223.

(i) *Id.* *ibid.*

for

menced and carried on in a manner equally

for any to harbour them.—The following extract from *Wicqesfort*, will in a good degree confirm what has been here related — The party of the parliament at *London* was already very considerable, when it sent *Walter Strickland* to the *Hague* in the month of *September*, 1642; but as soon as he had demanded audience, *Bosjuell*, who was there on the part of the King of *England*, opposed it, and represented that the parliament being but a body without a soul, in the absence, and without the King's warrant, had neither the power to determine any thing within the country, nor the authority to set on foot negotiations out of the kingdom, without the permission of its sovereign. *Strickland* seeing that the States-General (to whom he had sent his letters of credence) returned him no message, went one day into one of their ante-rooms, and demanded audience. They sent him word by two deputies, that his letter of credence not being yet translated out of *English*, the States desired him to consider if it might not be proper for him to give in his proposals in writing, that they might be translated at the same time: but he made answer, that he had orders to deliver them by word of mouth, and that if they delayed giving him audience that day, he would take it as a refusal, and would consider what was proper for him to do. This resolution obliged the States to send him a deputy of each Province, to whom he laid open his commission, and left with them his proposals in writing; however he had no public audience, notwithstanding the deputies of the province of *Holland* asked it with as much warmth as himself. The States-General came to some resolutions upon his memorial, and assured him they would always observe an exact neutrality between the King and the parliament. An expression that gives to understand, that the States acknowledged that there were two parties formed in *England*, and that, for particular reasons,

(which

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



honourable to those who directed and those who

(which cannot be unknown) they had more consideration for the one than the other. They gave sufficient testimony thereof the second voyage the same *Strickland* made to the *Hague*, immediately after the death of the late King, which had not removed the difficulties of his admission. *Doriflaus*, his colleague, had been murdered there; so that *Strickland*, not thinking himself safe, made pressing instances to be admitted, and dispatched. The deputies of *Holland* seconded his instances, and continually represented, that audience could not be refused him without breaking the neutrality, which the States had promised to preserve inviolable. But all these good offices were of no use, for the deputies of the six other Provinces declared, they could come to no resolution in an affair of this nature without the express order of their principals, who did not explain themselves upon the matter: insomuch that *Strickland* (who was in continual uneasiness on the account of the accident which had happened to *Doriflaus*) seeing the obstinacy of the six provinces, backed by the authority of the prince of *Orange*, was invincible, went back to *England*. This proceeding of theirs was the more surprizing, because the States had an ambassador with the same parliament, whose minister they treated so unworthily, and which not wanting the means to resent it, soon revenged itself so cruelly, that there was all the reason in the world to repent of the little regard had been shewn to a power, which made a great part of *Europe* tremble (A).

(A) Ambassador and his Functions, p. 7. Fol. Lond. 1716.

The parliament, to whom the temper and conduct of the *Dutch* were not unknown, determined, if possible, to alter their disposition, and bring them into an union with themselves. For this end it was reported by the Lord Viscount *Lisle* from the council of state, as the opinion of that council, 'That as the state of affairs now stands, a public minister be sent from the

who executed it. So that considering the valour  
and

(l) Journal,  
21 Jan.  
1650.

‘ parliament to the present assembly of the United Pro-  
‘ vinces. And it being resolved by the parliament that  
‘ a public minister be sent thither, it was referred to  
‘ the council of state to consider of such persons as they  
‘ should think fit to be sent from the parliament, and  
‘ to prepare instructions, commissions, and letters of  
‘ credence for them (l).’ In pursuance of this order, the  
council of state presented the Lord Chief-Justice *St. John*,  
and *Walter Strickland*, Esq; to be sent as ambassadors  
extraordinary to the United-Provinces, who being ap-  
proved of by the parliament, had their commission, in-  
structions and letters of credence delivered to them by  
Mr. Speaker, in the house, by the command of the  
parliament (m). ‘ And to prevent such another attempt

(m) Journal,  
Feb. 25,  
1650.

‘ as had been made upon our former agent, forty gen-  
‘ tlemen were appointed to attend him [*St. John*] for  
‘ his security and honour, ten thousand pounds being  
‘ delivered to the lord ambassadors steward, for the ex-  
‘ pence of the embassy. Yet this great equipage was  
‘ not sufficient to prevent a public affront which was  
‘ offered him by Prince *Edward*, one of the *Palatine*  
‘ family, as he was passing the streets (n).’ The am-  
bassadors arrived at *Rotterdam*, March 14, 1651. N. S.  
On the 20th, they were admitted to an audience in the  
assembly of the States-General at the *Hague*, where *St.*  
*John*, in a very handsome speech, after having mention-  
ed the antient alliances between the two nations, and  
the mutual benefit resulting from thence, declared ‘ That  
‘ the parliament did desire that this pious and strict  
‘ confederacy and league of amity, derived from their  
‘ ancestors unto them, may from themselves be trans-  
‘ mitted unto posterity, if God so please: and such,  
‘ said he, is the sincere love and good will which the  
‘ commonwealth of *England* beareth unto their neigh-  
‘ bours of the United-Provinces, begotten and con-  
‘ served upon the grounds before expressed, that they  
‘ are willing to enter into a more intimate alliance and  
‘ nearer

(n) Ludlow,  
vol. i. p.  
344.

and wisdom exerted, and the success which at-

ed

‘ nearer union with them than formerly hath been,  
 ‘ whereby a more real and intrinſical intereſt of each in  
 ‘ other, may be contracted for their mutual good.—  
 ‘ My Lords, you ſee the commonwealth of *England*  
 ‘ (notwithſtanding the many diſcouragements they have  
 ‘ found, and juſt cauſe given them of laying aſide the  
 ‘ thought of any further motion of this kind) have be-  
 ‘ gun to you, and in matters of higheſt concernment  
 ‘ unto both; led thereunto, (ſuch is the mercy of God)  
 ‘ not out of neceſſity but choice. This their good-will  
 ‘ deſerves all acceptation on your part, with whom it  
 ‘ now reſts, and will, they doubt not, produce reſolu-  
 ‘ tions answerable and timely; and whatſoever iſſue it  
 ‘ ſhall pleaſe God in his wiſdom to give, they ſhall al-  
 ‘ ways have the ſatiſfaction of having done what befit-  
 ‘ ted them, and what the welfare of the true reformed  
 ‘ religion, and the other great and common intereſts  
 ‘ of both States obliged them to do (e).’—The *Eng-  
 liſh* ambaffadors on the 10th of *May* following propoſed  
 to the States-General that the two commonwealths  
 might be confederated friends, joined and allied together  
 for the defence and preſervation of the liberties and free-  
 dom of the people of each, againſt all whomſoever that  
 ſhall attempt the diſturbance of either ſtate by ſea or  
 land; or be declared enemies to the freedom and liber-  
 ties of the people living under either of the ſaid go-  
 vernments (p). In ſhort, they propoſed an intire union  
 and coalition. One article in their propoſals is too re-  
 markable to be omitted.—‘ We propound, ſay they,  
 ‘ that no rebel or declared enemy of the commonwealth  
 ‘ of *England*, ſhall be received into or be ſuffered to  
 ‘ abide in any of the caſtles, towns, ports, creeks, or  
 ‘ other places priviledged or not priviledged, which  
 ‘ the Prince of *Orange*, Princeſs *Mary*, the relict of  
 ‘ *William* late Prince of *Orange*, or any other perſon of  
 ‘ what degree ſoever, have or hereafter ſhall have or  
 ‘ poſſeſs by any title whatſoever within the dominions

(e) Parlia-  
 mentary  
 Hiſtory,  
 vol. xix. p.  
 469, 470.

(p) Thur-  
 loc, vol. i.  
 p. 182.

tended the commonwealth in this war, as well

' and jurisdictions of the United-Provinces, nor suf-  
 ' fered by the said Prince, Princess, or any other per-  
 ' son, to be received into or abide therein; neither shall  
 ' the Lords States of the United-Provinces, permit or  
 ' suffer in any of the places aforesaid, any assistance,  
 ' counsel or favour, in ships, men, money, victuals, or  
 ' in any other manner to be given, by the said Prince  
 ' or Princess, or any other person, to any such rebel or  
 ' declared enemy, but shall openly and expressly prohi-  
 ' bit and hinder the same. And if the Prince of  
 ' *Orange* and Princess *Mary*, or any other person or  
 ' persons living or remaining in the jurisdiction of the  
 ' United-Provinces, or under their power, do to the  
 ' contrary hereof, then as well the said prince and prin-  
 ' cess, and all and every such other person and persons  
 ' so doing as aforesaid, shall for their respective lives,  
 ' forfeit and lose all such castles, towns, villages, lands,  
 ' and other places, which they or any of them shall at  
 ' such time have or pretend to have by any title what-  
 ' soever; and likewise that no rebels or declared ene-  
 ' my of the States of the United-Provinces shall be re-  
 ' ceived into, or be suffered in any of the castles, towns,  
 ' ports, or other places, priviledged or not priviledged,  
 ' which any person or persons, of what degree or qua-  
 ' lity soever he be, have or shall hold or possess within  
 ' the commonwealth of *England* or dominion thereof,  
 ' by any title whatsoever, nor suffered by any such per-  
 ' son or persons, or any other, to be received thereinto,  
 ' or abide therein, under like penalties (g). The States  
 ' General did not seem at all desirous of this coalition,  
 ' though they refused not to treat thereon: but while the  
 ' negotiation was on foot, *St. John* receiving the affront  
 ' above-mentioned, complained thereof to the States more  
 ' than once, and assured them that the parliament ex-  
 ' pected reparation. The ambassadors also protested in  
 ' the name of the commonwealth of *England*, against the  
 ' States styling the late King, *Charles I.* Which implies,  
 ' said

(g) Thur-  
 loc, vol. i.  
 p. 183.  
 And Jour-  
 nal, 29th  
 Ap. 1651.

OLIVER CROMWELL.

as in the reduction of *Scilly, Jersey, Guernsey,*



' said they, that there is a second *Charles King of England.*'

In this spirited manner, agreeably to their instructions, did these gentlemen behave, and so little were they disposed to have the sovereignty of their masters attacked, even in the most distant manner. But though the ambassadors were extremely diligent, nothing to the purpose was to be done with the *Dutch*, as appears by the following extract of a letter from Mr. *Thurloe* to Mr. *Walter Frost*, secretary to the council of state; dated *Hague, June 6-16, 1651.* ' If we had not by a good providence of God got an opportunity to put this people to a tryal by our being continued here, they might by their last paper, wherein they offered the treaty of 1495, and their large professions, past with the credulous people of *England* for some kind of honest men, and good neighbours; but upon this occasion, I am confident they appear to be perfectly of the *Scots* mould, by converse with whom and the *French*, they have learnt the art of making huge professions, and in such a manner, that men are almost necessitated to believe them; and at the same time, intend to perform no more of them than apparently stands with their own advantage; which yet I am confident they will not arrive at upon this occasion; and I hope God will give wisdom to my lords so to manage their farewell in that manner, that the commonwealth of *England* shall not lose either in honour or interest upon this occasion (r).'  
 The day fixed the second time (for the first had been expired, and a farther day given at the request of the States) being near at hand, the ambassadors gave notice of their intended departure to the States, expressing their sorrow for the unsuccessfulness of their negotiation, and their hopes that hereafter a treaty might be concluded. Whereupon the States-General in a declaration justified their proceedings; entreated the stay of the ambassadors; and

(r) Thurloe,  
 vol. ii. p.  
 136.

professed their readiness to contribute their best endeavours to perfect the treaty. This of course produced a recapitulation, in which, after shewing how unsatisfactory the answers to their propositions had been, the ambassadors concluded in the following manner: 'As  
 ' to their dissatisfaction concerning our coming away,  
 ' we conceived, that we had said enough therein to  
 ' their commissioners, whom they had sent twice to  
 ' us about the same; as that the parliament had now  
 ' thrice sent their agents and ministers unto them; and  
 ' that as they were no way bound to send them unto  
 ' them at all, so was it in their own choice and power  
 ' to limit the time of their abode. Neither were  
 ' they therein surprized, we having always from the  
 ' first day of the treaty told them, that our time was  
 ' limited and but short; and that therefore a slow proceeding on their part would render the treaty fruitless; and that they had cause rather to take it as a great expression of love and friendship in the parliament, that they alone had so often and for so long time intended and prosecuted these matters of joint and equal concernment unto both States; and that when the commonwealth of *England* is out of possession of what they ought to enjoy by the treaty of 1495, and the *Netherlands* in the full possession of what is of greatest advantage unto them by that treaty; that yet the commonwealth of *England* should be content in this friendly and amicable way of a treaty, to seek and expect from them a performance of what is done on their parts (s).'  
 When the States commissioners came to take leave of the ambassadors at their departure, it is said *St. John* spoke to them in these terms: 'My Lords, you have an eye upon the event of the affairs of the kingdom of *Scotland*, and therefore do refuse the friendship we have offered. Now I can assure you, that many in the parliament were of opinion that we should not have come hither, or any  
 ' am-

(s) Thurloe,  
 vol. i. p.  
 195.



dering, I say, the conquests made both at home

‘ambassadors to be sent to you before they had sup-  
 ‘rated these matters between them and that King,  
 ‘and then expected your ambassadors to us. I now  
 ‘perceive our error, and that these gentlemen were in  
 ‘the right: in a short time you shall see that business  
 ‘ended, and then you will come to us and seek what  
 ‘we have freely offered, when it shall perplex you  
 ‘that you have refused our proffer (t).’—On the re-  
 turn of the ambassadors, they, by order, attended the  
 house, and sitting in their places as members, ‘*St. John*,  
 ‘the lord ambassador *Strickland* standing by him, gave  
 ‘an account of their negotiation; and it was resolved  
 ‘that the parliament doth approve of all the proceed-  
 ‘ings of the lords ambassadors, and that they have the  
 ‘thanks of the house, for their great and faithful ser-  
 ‘vice.’ The proceedings in this treaty were also or-  
 dered to be entered in a book by themselves, and all  
 persons prohibited from inspecting the same (except  
 members of parliament) without leave. And the whole  
 matter of the report, and the several papers, were re-  
 ferred to the council of state to consider what was fit  
 to be done therein, for the best advantage of the com-  
 monwea’th, and to report the same to the house (u).—

(t) Heath’s  
 Chronicle of  
 the Civil  
 Wars, p.  
 287. Folio.  
 Lond. 1676.

(u) Journal,  
 2d July,  
 1651.

On the 9th of *October*, the house passed the famous  
 act intituled by them, ‘*Goods from foreign parts by whom  
 to be imported:*’ prohibiting goods to be imported, from  
*Asia, Africa, America*, and even *Europe*, with some  
 few exceptions, into *England, Ireland* or the dominions  
 thereunto belonging, but in *English* vessels. This was  
 the famous navigation act, of which more shall be spoken  
 hereafter. The states being highly provoked hereat,  
 sent over ambassadors to mitigate if possible the rigour  
 of this law, and bring things to an accommodation.  
 Commissioners hereupon were empowered by the par-  
 liament to hear their proposals, and make proper de-  
 mands on the behalf of the commonwealth. For de-  
 mands they had about the *Amboyna* business; the fishery;

home and abroad, and the attention paid to  
the

the right of the flag; and other matters in which the interest and the dignity of the *English* nation were concerned. But while the negotiation was carried on, in *May* 1652, the fleets of the two republics being near each other an engagement ensued, to the advantage of the *English*, who sunk one *Dutch* ship and took another\*. The *Dutch* ambassadors, alarmed at this encounter, which had turned out so unexpectedly to their disgrace, put in several papers to the council of state, 'Protesting that what happened was without the knowledge and against the wills of their masters; that 'twas with grief and astonishment they had heard the fatal news of that rash action; that they were greatly desirous of concluding things in an amicable manner, and therefore requested that by no means the business of the concluding of the treaty be put off, and that such unfortunate mischances may be avoided, and an everlasting peace established between both the nations.' But little heed was given to these requests or apologies. By admiral *Blake's* relation; by the information of two *Dutch* captains, prisoners, taken before general *Cromwell*, and *Demis Bond*, Esq; at *Dever*, *May* 22, 1652; and from several other examinations taken at that time, before the same gentlemen, it appearing that the *Dutch* sought an opportunity to quarrel, and to brave us upon our own

\* The *Dutch* account, as given in *Burchett*, is as follows: 'Van Tromp put to sea with the fleet, to convey home some merchant ships, but had orders to avoid engaging with the *English*, if possible, and to pay the usual respect to their flag, if he chanced to meet them in the narrow seas. He was forced by a tempest on the *English* coast, but quitted it again as soon as possible, and made towards *Calais*; but being informed that the *English* were pursuing some merchant ships, he advanced to their relief, and met *Blake* with the *English* fleet, who had orders (the *Dutch* say) to attack them. Tromp prepared to give the usual honors to the *English* flag, and ordered one of his captains to go on board with a compliment to the *English* admiral; but *Blake* having no regard to these marks of submission, fired twice at Tromp's ship, who made no return till he had received a third shot, and then the fight began.'—*Naval History*, p. 293.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

265

the grandeur and welfare of the nation in  
all

coast, the parliament returned the following answer to the papers of their ambassadors.—‘ The parliament  
‘ of the commonwealth of *England*, calling to mind  
‘ with what continued demonstrations of friendship,  
‘ and sincere affections, from the very beginning of  
‘ their intestine troubles they have proceeded towards  
‘ their neighbours of the United-Provinces, omitting  
‘ nothing on their part that might conduce to a good  
‘ correspondence with them, and to a growing up into  
‘ a more near and strict union than formerly, do find  
‘ themselves much surprized with the unfutable returns  
‘ that have been made thereunto, and especially at the  
‘ acts of hostility lately committed in the very roads of  
‘ *England* upon the fleet of this commonwealth, the  
‘ matter of fact whereof stated in clear proofs, is here-  
‘ unto annexed; [they are *Blake’s* letter, and deposi-  
‘ tions just above mentioned] upon serious and deliberate  
‘ consideration of all, and of the several papers deliver-  
‘ ed in by your excellencies to the council of state, the  
‘ parliament thinks fit to give this answer to those pa-  
‘ pers: The parliament, as they would be willing to  
‘ make a charitable construction of the expressions used  
‘ in the said papers, endeavouring to represent the late  
‘ engagement of the fleets to have happened without the  
‘ knowledge, and against the mind of your superiours;  
‘ so when they consider how disagreeable to that pro-  
‘ fession the resolutions and actions of your state and  
‘ their ministers at sea have been, even in the midst of  
‘ a treaty offered by themselves, and managed here by  
‘ your excellencies, the extraordinary preparations of  
‘ one hundred and fifty sail of men of war, without  
‘ any visible occasion but what doth now appear (a just  
‘ ground of jealousy in your own judgments, when  
‘ your lordships pretended to excuse it) and the instruc-  
‘ tions themselves given by your said superiours to their  
‘ commanders at sea, do find too much cause to believe  
‘ that the lords, the states general of the United-Pro-  
‘ vinces,

all these transactions, we are not to wonder  
that

‘vinces, have an intention, by force to usurp the known  
‘rights of *England* in the seas, to destroy the fleets that  
‘are, under God, their walls and bulwarks, and there-  
‘by expose this commonwealth to invasion at their plea-  
‘sure, as by this late action they have attempted to do :  
‘whereupon the parliament conceive they are obliged  
‘to endeavour, with God’s assistance, as they shall have  
‘opportunity, to seek reparation of the wrongs already  
‘suffered, and security that the like be not attempted  
‘for the future. Nevertheless, with this mind and de-  
‘fire, that all differences betwixt the nations may (if  
‘possibly) be peaceably and friendly composed, as God  
‘by his providence shall open a way thereunto, and  
‘circumstances shall be conducing to render such en-  
‘deavours less dilatory, and more effectual than those  
‘of this kind heretofore used have been.

HEN. SCOBELL, *cleric. Parliamenti* (a).’

This declaration does honor to the parliament, who  
had ordered all *Dutch* ships to be seized on hearing of  
the late action at sea, and from henceforth determined  
to carry on a war with the states in the most vigorous  
manner. Sir *Henry Vane*, who made so great a figure  
during these times, is said to have been the chief direc-  
tor and manager of this war, whose constant judgment  
it was, ‘That the interest of *England* and the United-  
‘Provinces were as irreconcilable as those of rivals,  
‘trade being to both nations, what a mistress is unto  
‘lovers; that there never could intervene any durable  
‘peace, except both nations did unite by coalition, or  
‘the *English* subjugate the others and reduce them into  
‘a province, or by strict conditions and contrivances  
‘ensure themselves against the growth and future puis-  
‘sance of the *Dutch* (y).’ How great the disinterestedness  
of *Vane* was, how solicitous for the honor of the na-  
tion, and how much bent that the public might be serv-  
ed

(x) The Answer of the Parliament to three Papers delivered by the Ambassadors of the United-Provinces, Lond. printed for John Field. 4to 1652.

(y) Stubbs’s farther Justification of the War with the United-Netherlands, p. 219. 4to. Lond. 1673.

that men imputed to them the greatest

ed on the easiest and best terms, appears from the following anecdote: 'The fees of his office were; as treasurer of the navy, four-pence in the pound, which by reason of this war honestly amounted to little less than 30000*l.* per annum; but Sir Henry Vane looked upon it as too much for a private subject, and therefore very generously gave up his patent (which he had for life from King Charles I.) to the parliament, desiring but two thousand pounds per annum, for an agent he had bred up to the business, and the remainder to go to the public. This was done, and the method of a fixed salary has continued ever since in that office (z) \*.' This was indeed a rare example of honor and integrity, and hardly to be believed in this age, in which patriots and courtiers have scrambled for places, preferments, bonusses, &c. in such an open and shameless manner, as to have rendered it doubtful whether all pretensions to public spirit, were not veils to ambition and avarice.——But to proceed.——Fleets were now fitted out, both by *England* and *Holland*, and such noble exploits were done by *Blake* and others, as have

(z) Collins's  
Peerage, vol.  
v. p. 303.  
8vo. Lond.  
1756.

\* In the Journals we find 'That upon a petition of Sir Henry Vane, knight, treasurer of the navy, it was referred to the committee of the navy, to consider of this petition, and how the office of treasurer of the navy may be managed for the future, for the best profit and least charge of the commonwealth; and what salary is fit to be allowed for the execution thereof; and also to consider what compensation is fit to be given unto the petitioner, out of that office, or otherwise, in consideration of his right in the said office.' This was on the 27th of June, 1650. On the 16th of July following, the committee made their report, and the house resolved, 'That as a fit compensation to be given to Sir Henry Vane, treasurer of the navy, for the surrender of his right in the said place, and in consideration of the profit which will thereby accrue to the state, there be settled on the said Sir Henry Vane, his heirs and assigns for ever, to the clear yearly value of twelve hundred pounds per annum over and above all charges and reprises, out of the lands belonging to the late deans and chapters.'——It was also resolved, 'That a fit and able person should be appointed treasurer of the navy, who should personally attend upon that employment, and be allowed for the entertainment and salary, for himself, his deputies and clerks, one thousand pounds per annum, in lieu of all salaries, fees, and other profits formerly belonging to the place of treasurer of the navy.'——We see by this, Mr. Collins has not been sufficiently exact.

rendered their memories dear to all true lovers of their country. The particulars are to be found in most of our common histories, and thither I must refer the reader desirous of information on this subject. Whilst the war was carrying on in a manner glorious to the *English* commonwealth, the parliament omitted nothing which might make it terminate in such a manner as to prevent all future disputes between the two nations. With great diligence and dexterity they got intelligence of the most private designs and resolutions of the enemy, and took as much care as possible to conceal their own; nor would they abate the least in their proposals for peace, though applied to most submissively by ambassadors sent from the states for that purpose. The following extracts will abundantly confirm and explain what is here mentioned. — The *Dutch* ambassadors, in a letter to *N. Ruyseb*, dated *Westminster, July 4, 1653*, N. S. say, 'We are obliged to advise their high and mighty lordships that men here have full knowledge, with all the circumstances of the resolutions taken upon the fifth of *June (a)*.' In a letter of intelligence from the *Hague*, dated the 28th of the same month, we read what follows: 'What I have always feared is now come to pass, that intimation should be given here of the good intelligence you have there of the affairs here. Our deputies there have written hither to these states, that they have assurance from their friends in *England*, that all the secret actions here, and were it possible, the very thoughts of these states are most exactly and weekly presented in writing to the council of state there. This was hotly debated in the assembly, every one asking the other, who betrayed them; and some quarrels were like to arise, but a sort of composition was made, and orders given for strict secrecy in all their proceedings; so that much difficulty will be in furnishing you; however I shall attempt always to serve you as long as I can. But if you have not secrecy, you are not worthy of the profit thereof. Our deputies there begin to give very good intelligence from *London*, however they get it (b).' The 18th of this month, we find the following short letter written by

*Bever-*

(a) *Thursloe*,  
vol. 1. p.  
316.

(b) *Id.* p.  
359.

*Beverning*, one of the ambassadors, to Mr. *Gerard Cinque* at *Goude*. ' Sir, I dare not write much news. All our actions are spied. We have spies set to watch us in our houses. We cannot be certain of any thing that we do, that it shall not be either known or miscarry. If you please to have any thing sent you from hence, that this country affords, pray let me know it (c). — We are not however to suppose but some intelligence was gotten by these ambassadors. Money does wonders, and flattery is all powerful. They who can dextrously apply the one and the other, need not fear of some success. The following passage will shew that they were ordered to be on the look out, and that they had not been idle. It was written from the *Hague*, *October* 31. N. S. and seems to come from the same hand which sent that of the 28th of *July* just mentioned.

' Since my last to you, the post immediately before this, great diligence is used and secret enquiry made, how your council of state comes by the secret resolutions of this state, and the letters of their public ministers abroad; and our deputies who are gone to *England* have in charge to do their utmost there, whatever it costs to find it out. Of which I advertize you very seriously, to the end hereafter these secrets be not read in open council, and that prevention may be, least the deputies might learn, from them, that told to them part, how to discover the whole. But I hope and believe I am not betrayed, so as to be known by name or description to any of the council, since some of them are so kind as to tell all they know to the *Dutch* deputies, to their advantage. I can swear the two deputies standing there did write at full, what I gave you in my last; but this notwithstanding, all the chief of their business shall be had one way or other, if you do not spoil all there, as well was attempted (d).'

— And how much the parliament were concerned for the honor and interest of the nation appeared from their demanding as preliminaries to a treaty, that the *Dutch* should call back their ships; make reparation for damages, and satisfaction for the expences *England* had been put to defend herself and maintain her rights (e).'

— Among

(c) Thurloe,  
vol. i. p.  
339.

(d) Id. p.  
549.

(e) Id. p.

— Among the articles insisted on by the *English* was the following. ‘ That the ships and vessels of the said United-Provinces, as well men of war, as others, be they single ships, or in fleets, meeting at sea with any of the ships of war of this state of *England*, or in their service and wearing the flag, shall strike the flag, and lower their topsail until they be passed by, and shall likewise submit themselves to be visited if thereto required, and perform all other respects due to the said commonwealth of *England*, to whom the dominion and sovereignty of the *British* seas belong.’ To this article, the *Dutch* ambassadors, *November* 22, 1653, did not make any exception, either to the striking of the flag, or the sovereignty of the sea; but they protested against the visiting their ships, as repugnant to the practice of their country, and subject to a thousand disorders and disputes, and injuries to their state; besides the visiting is not to be reciprocal. Whereupon *Cromwell* in the name of the commissioners replied, that the searching of their ships was no new thing; but an undoubted right which naturally followed from the sovereignty of the sea, the which did appertain to *England*: it was likewise an efflux of the same dominion, for the *English* to prescribe to them, with what number of ships of war they should pass the *British* seas: that they ought to be much more zealous now for the asserting of the said antient dominion of the sea in all its branches; because it had been so lately and so notoriously disputed and invaded. And whereas the ambassadors had somewhat boastingly said in their memorial, that their people were of such generosity that they would never endure such terms: to this *Cromwell* said he would reply no more, than that we were *Englishmen*, and had not lost our courage (*f*).’ The parliament insisted likewise that the *Dutch* should pay for licence to fish upon the *British* coasts, and suspended the treaty, on account of their unwillingness to agree thereunto, though ’tis asserted they offered 300000*l.* to procure amity and friendship with *England* (*g*). These demands of the parliament may seem high, but they endeavoured to justify

(*f*) Stubbs’s farther Justification, p. 59, 60.

(*g*) Id. p. 65.



justify themselves to the world, by causing *Selden's* 'Mare Clausum seu de Dominio Maris' to be translated into *English*, by *Marchamont Nedham*. This, by special command, was published in *November 1652*. In a fine and spirited dedication 'to the supream authority of the nation, the parliament of the commonwealth of *England*,' the translator observes, 'it is a gallant fight to see the sword and pen in victorious equipage together; for this subdues the souls of men by reason, that only their bodies by force. The pen it is which manifests the right of things; and, when that is once cleared, it gives spurs to resolution, because men are never raised to so high a pitch of action, as when they are persuaded, that they engage in a righteous cause; according to that old versicle,

'*Frangit & attollit vires in Milite causa.*

'Wherefore, seeing you (right honourable) have had so frequent experience of the truth of this in our late wars, wherein the pen militant hath had as many sharp rencounters as the sword, and borne away as many trophies from home-bred enemies, in prosecution of your most righteous cause by land, certainly you will yield it no less necessary, for the instruction of this generous and ingenious people, in vindicating your just rights by sea against the vain pretences and projects of encroaching neighbours. For, what true *English* heart will not swell, when it shall be made clear and evident (as in this book) that the sovereignty of the seas, flowing about this island, hath, in all times, whereof there remains any written testimony, both before the old *Roman* invasion and since, under every revolution, down to the present age, been held and acknowledged by all the world, as an inseparable appendant of the *British* empire; and that, by virtue thereof, the kings of *England* successively have had the sovereign guard of the seas; that they have imposed taxes and tributes upon all ships passing and fishing therein; that they have obstructed and opened the passage thereof to strangers, at their own pleasure,

' and

designs (NN), and such as would carry them  
to

(i) Of the  
Dominion  
or Owner-  
ship of the  
Sea. Folio.  
London:  
Printed by  
William  
Du-Gard,  
by the ap-  
pointment of  
the Council  
of State.

and done all other things that may testify an absolute  
sea-dominion; what *English* heart (I say) can con-  
sider these things, together with the late actings of the  
*Netherlanders*, set forth in your publick declaration, and  
not be inflamed with an indignation answerable to  
their insolence; that these people, raised out of the  
dust at first into a state of liberty, and at length to a  
high degree of power and felicity, by the arms and  
benevolence of *England*; or that they, who, in times  
past, durst never enter our seas to touch a herring,  
without licence first obtained by petition from the  
governor of *Scarborough-castle*, should now presume to  
invade them with armed fleets, and, by a most unjust  
war, bid defiance to the united powers of these three  
nations (i)?—But, whilst the parliament were thus  
labouring for the public welfare, they were dispossessed  
of their power by *Cromwell*, and deprived of a glory  
they well deserved, that of finishing a successful, well-  
conducted war, by a safe and advantageous peace.

(NN) *Vast designs were imputed to the commonwealth.*]  
Nothing can give us a better idea of the light in which  
*England* was viewed abroad, than the following passages  
from *Sorbiere*. They are taken from a letter written  
by him to the celebrated M. de Courcelles, at *Amster-*  
*dam*, dated *Orange, July 1, 1652*.—‘The *English*  
‘ republicans took things exactly right; and that, in  
‘ order to the accomplishing of a design, that would  
‘ take up all their life-time (for such sort of men ought  
‘ never to conceive mean ones, after the execution  
‘ whereof they must be put to the trouble of projecting  
‘ a new, or live lazily, and be exposed to conspiracies  
‘ against them) they thought it would be their best way  
‘ to begin with the ruin of the United Provinces, which  
‘ lay next their coasts, and flourished in trade above  
‘ any other country in the world; and, when once they  
‘ had effected this, they were in hopes they should ea-  
‘ sily remove any obstacle in their way to attain the

‘ do-

to the pinnacle of glory.—And, if we turn  
out

dominion of the seas: infomuch, that, if the fortune of war should favour their first enterprizes, I do not think they have any design to make a peace with a nation they have a mind utterly to destroy, and to whom they will propose such hard terms, that, upon the refusal of them, you will, at last, find them prepared to make terrible descents in divers parts of *Zeland*, and *North Holland*, to break the banks, and the other dykes, that keep the flat country from being drowned. There needs no more than this sort of blood letting to make *Amsterdam*, and all the other cities, desolate. For, it would signify little to them to seize the *Brill*, or some other place, seeing their design is to destroy the trade of *Holland*, and to transfer it into their own country; and it would be of little importance to them, that the King of *Spain* should, in the mean time, recover the seven provinces; that the merchants of *Amsterdam* should remove to *Antwerp*, and the manufactures of *Leyden* and *Harlem* to *Ghent* and *Bruges*: for it would require many years to settle things there, and the *English* would have opportunity enough to hinder them from having any necessary materials, but such as passed through their own hands, and their manufactures to be transported any where but in *English* bottoms: for it would be very easy for them to stop up the mouths of the ports, and to go up the *Schelde*, even in sight of *Antwerp*, from whence nothing must come out but will be taken by their ships. By this means, and the notion I have of their designs, no nation in the world, in a few years time, would have any seamen, ships, or skill in maritime affairs, besides themselves: for *Holland* being entirely ruined, the *Dutch* must serve on board their fleets, and all the shipwrights, sail-makers and rope-makers, would be obliged to go and earn their living in the sea-port towns of *England*; and this they would be the more

our eyes to their conduct at home, we shall find

' inclined to do, because there is more wages given  
 ' there, and people live better. When this noble and  
 ' rich province, which, within the extent of less than  
 ' five and twenty leagues, contains eighteen large towns,  
 ' and four hundred villages, of which the *Hague* is the  
 ' finest in the world, shall be reduced to this sad plight;  
 ' its then likely the *English* will turn their arms against  
 ' *Denmark*, in order to seize the *Sundt*, either by main  
 ' force, or rather some treaty, by which they will be  
 ' willing to give the King more than the profit it  
 ' brought him, but, at the same time, will oblige *Nor-*  
 ' *way* to sell their wood to no other nation but the  
 ' *English*. The cities of *Emden*, *Bremen*, *Hamburg*,  
 ' *Lubeck*, all the coast of the *Baltic*, and the whole  
 ' kingdom of *Sweden*, durst appear no longer at sea,  
 ' but under *English* colours; and, perhaps, the formi-  
 ' dable republic will be content, in consideration of  
 ' her commissions granted to them, to receive certain  
 ' duties from the goods she allows them in her name  
 ' to transport, only along these northern parts. They  
 ' will in time send a more powerful fleet to block up  
 ' the river of *Lisbon*, while another sails to *Brazil*,  
 ' *Guinea*, and the *East-Indies*, with a design to spare  
 ' the *Portuguese* merchants, and the *East-India* compa-  
 ' nies, the labour of transporting the sugars, silks, spi-  
 ' ces, and other commodities, they come thither for,  
 ' into *Europe*: and if *Spain* pretends to say any thing  
 ' against them, they will, without any more ado, seize  
 ' the *Streights* mouth, and send an hundred and fifty  
 ' ships of war into the *Mediterranean*, out of which  
 ' they can very easily drive the naval force of the other  
 ' potentates of *Europe*, were they all joined together  
 ' against them. The *English* having in this manner  
 ' usurped the dominion of the seas, the trade of all  
 ' the *European* nations, and part of the rest of the  
 ' world: all the earth must submit to them, work  
 ' for no body but them, and they'll, from time to  
 ' time, come into their ports, and sweep away all  
 ' their

## OLIVER CROMWELL.



find it equally admirable. By deeds of peace they

their treasure: every thing that is rare, and all the  
 conveniences of life, produced either by art or nature,  
 will be reserved for *England*, which will be the only  
 country that can purchase them, or possess them of  
 their own. For, as we see, that since the settling of  
 trade in *Holland*, that province is become the store-  
 house for linnen, woollen, and all sorts of manufac-  
 tures; though there is neither flax, wool, nor, in a  
 manner, any other commodities which they work up,  
 grows there, but they must fetch them from other  
 countries; so every thing that *England* wants at this  
 time will abound there, and the best artificers will  
 flock thither; in so much, that, if they would have  
 any fine linnen, or good cloth for wear, in another  
 country, the flax and wool was to be sent to be ma-  
 nufactured in *England*. Pray, consider then, what  
 vast wealth this country must acquire in less than fifty  
 years? and how miserable must the rest of *Europe* be,  
 since they can transport nothing by sea, from one na-  
 tion to another, but in *English* ships? They will al-  
 ways have money to receive in all the ports they come  
 at, and never leave any of their own there: what the  
*English* want they'll make compensation for, by way  
 of exchange, or readily send over into *England* upon  
 the score of the manufactures there they have occasion  
 for; as we have seen the *Dutch East-India* company  
 have pearl and precious stones, in return for some  
 wares sent into those countries, which they got fitted  
 up at *Amsterdam*, and then sold them at a very dear  
 rate in those places whence they were first brought,  
 and where there is not that perfection of workman-  
 ship as there is with us. Hundreds of ships richly  
 laden will daily put into the *Thames*, and other ports  
 of this fortunate island; and the general can scarce  
 ever lose the sight of his forces, which, I may say,  
 return every evening to lie at home; for they stay no  
 longer in foreign parts than to refresh themselves, to  
 vend their goods, and to take in new cargoes. They

they attempted to settle and perpetuate the  
fe-

' will be no way sollicitous of making conquests by land,  
 ' that they may save the charge of maintaining them,  
 ' seeing they are sure of reaping the profits of them;  
 ' neither will they plant any colonies, and ease their  
 ' country, as populous as 'tis grown, of the vast mul-  
 ' titudes that are in it, because the produce of all *Eu-*  
 ' *rope* is consumed there, and their great naval trade  
 ' renders their stores inexhaustible. In the mean time,  
 ' all the neighbouring kingdoms will, in a manner,  
 ' become like the sea coasts of *America*, where our *Eu-*  
 ' *ropeans* trade: there will be only tillage and some  
 ' coarse manufactures for plain wear, and to serve peo-  
 ' ple's necessities only in the heart of the country, and  
 ' the maritime towns will be no other than the grana-  
 ' ries and magazines of *England*. These are my sen-  
 ' timents about this war, which, in the opinion of  
 ' some, may seem romantic, and of kin to *Utopia*, or  
 ' the Republic of *Plato*; especially of those who do not  
 ' consider that the wars that have been waged for twen-  
 ' ty years past, I know not under what pretences or de-  
 ' signs, had nothing so great or sublime in them as that  
 ' which *Cromwell* proposes: for, in reality, there is no-  
 ' thing can come up to the thoughts of subjecting all the  
 ' earth to his country, and rendering it the most haugh-  
 ' ty and flourishing state in the world. It appears to  
 ' me so vast and magnificent a thought, that there is  
 ' nothing in all the conquests of *Alexander*, and the  
 ' pomp of all the *Roman* empire, that comes near this  
 ' maritime dominion, which I have represented to you.  
 ' And it seems to me so very feasible, that, if *Holland*  
 ' be once ruined, I am afraid it will be too late to pre-  
 ' vent it: and, therefore, I would have all the poten-  
 ' tates of *Europe* take it to heart in time; for, if they  
 ' do not quickly put an end to the war they are en-  
 ' gaged in on the continent, we shall run the risk, in  
 ' a few ages, of becoming perfect barbarians. For the  
 ' *English*, by means of their navigation, will transfer  
 ' all

felicity and grandeur of the state. After the

‘ all the politeness of *Europe*, together with its plenty,  
 ‘ power, and conveniences of life, into their own  
 ‘ country (*k*).’—I have chose to give *Sorbiere’s* opi-  
 nion at length, not only as it shews us the sense men  
 then had of the designs, skill, and management of this  
 new republic, but as it likewise instructs us in the vast  
 advantages of navigation and commerce to a state. For  
 nothing is more certain, than that they, who can ac-  
 quire the trade of the world, will soon possess its  
 power, riches commanding every thing requisite there-  
 unto, if in the hands of the wise, brave and industrious.  
 Such being the figure of the *English* commonwealth in  
 the eyes of its neighbours, we are not to wonder that  
 her friendship was courted by some of the most mighty  
 monarchs, and that they treated her with honour and  
 respect. *Spain, France, Portugal* addressed themselves  
 to her by their agents and ambassadors, as did *Denmark,*  
*Sweden,* the free cities of *Germany,* and *Holland,* parti-  
 cularly, in a most suppliant manner. For reputation is  
 power, and power is ever attended with deference and  
 regard. I will close this note with the following ex-  
 tract from another foreign writer: ‘ The new republic,  
 ‘ actuated by *Cromwell’s* extensive and sublime genius,  
 ‘ procured *England* a tranquillity which it no longer  
 ‘ hoped for, and gave it a lustre which it had not had  
 ‘ for several centuries. It had just been agitated by a  
 ‘ most violent tempest, and now all was calm; it had  
 ‘ thought itself on the brink of ruin, and was now in  
 ‘ condition to give law. It is melancholy, for the ho-  
 ‘ nour of virtue, that one of the best and greatest spec-  
 ‘ tacles, which the annals of nations present, should  
 ‘ be the work of rebellion. Every thing appeared won-  
 ‘ derful in this revolution. The royalists conformed to  
 ‘ a kind of government ill adapted to their tempers,  
 ‘ and disapproved by their consciences. The grandees,  
 ‘ accustomed to the part of legislators, remained quietly  
 ‘ in the rank of private subjects. The *Irish* and *Scots,*

(k) *Sor-  
 biere’s* voy-  
 age into  
 England, p.  
 124—129.  
 8vo. Lond.  
 1709.

the *British* dominions were brought wholly to submit to their sovereignty, they passed an act of (oo) oblivion, to quiet the minds of

‘ who had taken up arms, the first from an attachment  
 ‘ to their kings, the other to efface the horror of their  
 ‘ treachery, were unhappily subdued. The *Dutch*, who  
 ‘ had taken advantage of the calamities of *England*, to  
 ‘ usurp the empire of the seas, were humbled. *France*  
 ‘ and *Spain*, who had been always rivals, always ene-  
 ‘ mies, meanly courted the friendship of the usurpers.  
 ‘ The sovereigns, who ought to have united to revenge  
 ‘ an outrage, to which all kings were exposed, either  
 ‘ through fear or interest, applauded the injustice. All  
 ‘ *Europe* debased itself, was silent, or admired (1).’

(oo) *They passed an act of oblivion.*] On the twenty-fourth of *February*, one thousand six hundred and fifty-one, the government passed an act, intitled, ‘ A general pardon and amnestie.’ The preamble deserves notice, and is as follows: ‘ The parliament of *England*, having had good experience of the affection of the people to this present government, by their ready assistance in the defence thereof against *Charles Stuart*, son of the late tyrant, and the forces lately invading under his command; and being much afflicted with the sense of the miserable and sad effects which the late unnatural war hath produced; and resolving, next to the glory of God, and the advancement of the kingdom of *Jesus Christ*, to make no other use of the many victories the Lord, in mercy, hath vouchsafed unto them, than a just settling of the peace and freedom of this commonwealth; and being most desirous that the minds, persons and estates of all the people of this nation might be composed, settled and secured, and that all rancour and evil will, occasioned by the

(1) Abbe Raynal's *History of the Parliament of England*, p. 200. 2vo. Lond. 1753. See also the quotations from Sydney and Trenchard, at the end of note (o).



# OLIVER CROMWELL.

279

of their subjects, as they before had the navigation

late differences, may be buried in perpetual oblivion, that so the government, now established in the way of a free state, might be complied with, and all the members of it enjoy their just and ancient rights and liberties, and the former commotions and troubles end in a quiet, calm and comfortable peace, have resolved to do what in them lies for the obtaining and effecting thereof, leaving the success and their endeavours unto the blessing of God, and his working upon the spirits of those that are concerned herein: Be it therefore enacted, &c. (m) Mr. Ludlow attributes the passing this act at that time to the ambitious views of Cromwell in part, and his desire of ingratiating himself with new friends; the parliament, says he, were prevailed with by the importunities of some of their own members, and in particular of general Cromwell, that so he might fortify himself by the addition of new friends, for the carrying on his designs, to pass an act of general pardon and amnesty: whereby, though it had thirty-eight several exceptions, many persons, who deserved to pay towards the reimbursement of the publick, no less than those that had been already fined, escaped the punishment due to their misdemeanors, and the commonwealth was defrauded of great sums of money, by which means they were rendered unable to discharge many just debts owing to such as had served them with diligence and fidelity (n). (m) Scobel's collections. (n) Vol. i. p. 402.

In another place, speaking of the general's visible change of temper and behaviour after the battle of Worcester, he says, 'He now began to despise divers members of the house, whom he had formerly courted, and grew most familiar with those whom he used to shew most aversion to; endeavouring to oblige the royal party, by procuring for them more favourable conditions than consisted with the justice of the parliament to grant, under colour of quieting the spirits of many people, and keeping them from engaging in new disturbances to

rescue themselves out of those fears which many who  
 had acted for the King, yet lay under; at the  
 same time, he designed nothing, as, by the success,  
 was most manifest, but to advance himself by all man-  
 ner of means, and to betray the great trust which the  
 parliament and the good people of *England* had re-  
 posed in him. To this end he pressed the act of obli-  
 vion (e). That the passing an act of oblivion in  
 itself was right, is manifest from the conduct of all  
 wise princes and states after civil commotions; that it  
 is better, on all these occasions, to incline to mercy than  
 severity, cannot well be called in question I think; and  
 therefore Mr. *Ludlow's* censure on the act is not, per-  
 haps, the most justly founded. That *Cromwell* pressed  
 the act is probable. It became him as a good politician,  
 considered merely as a member of the parliament: as  
 a man of ambition and great designs, it was wise and  
 well judged; nothing so easily procuring friends as ge-  
 nerosity and forgiveness: though 'tis not at all unlikely  
 that natural temper had a good share in all this trans-  
 action. For he was naturally humane and becevolent,  
 as appears from his procuring the liberty of those who  
 were imprisoned on account of *Love's* plot (f); by his  
 endeavouring to free the estate of the Countess of *Arun-  
 dell* and *Surry* from sequestration, and from his using his  
 power for the obliging such as stood in need of pro-  
 tection and assistance, which was so well known, that  
 we find the Marchioness of *Ormonde* addressing herself  
 to him for favour (g), though her lord had publicly  
 treated his character but scurvily. His sentiments,  
 with respect to the manner of dealing with his adver-  
 saries, cannot be so well represented as by a letter writ-  
 ten to his son *Henry* at *Dublin*, Nov. 21, 1655.—  
 I do believe there may be some particular persons,  
 who are not very well pleased with the present condi-  
 tion of things, and may be apt to shew their discon-  
 tent, as they have opportunity; but this should not  
 make too great impressions on you. Tyme and pa-  
 tience may worke them to a better frame of spirit,  
 and bring them to see that, which, for the present,  
 seemes to be hid from them; especially if they shall  
 see

(e) Vol. ii.  
P. 443.

(f) See  
*Thurloc*,  
vol. i. p.  
765.

(g) *Milton's*  
State pa-  
pers, by  
*Nickols*, p.  
20, 86.

navigation (PP) act to increase their wealth and power.

If

see your moderation and love towards them, whilst they are found in other ways towards you; which I earnestly desire you to studye and endeavour all that lyes in you, whereof both you and I too shall have the comfort, whatsoever the issue and event thereof be (r). These seem to be the sentiments of a humane heart, and, probably, induced him, and the parliament in general, to give ease and rest to their enemies by the act here spoken of, so much to their honour.

(r) Thurloe,  
vol. i. p.  
725.

(PP) *The navigation act.*] The parliament, from its first sitting, had been constantly engaged in great affairs. But they shewed themselves equal to them, though of different kinds. We have seen them direct the wars in which they were engaged with wisdom and prudence. The arts of peace they cultivated, and strove to raise the nation to the pinnacle of glory. How industrious they were their journals and public acts yet remaining abundantly testify. We may from them conclude, that levees were neither so frequent, or of so long continuance, as in other periods of time since, when the important business of the nation has been forced to wait till the minister has been at leisure to give his attendance in the house.—But this by the way.—As a maritime people, trade and commerce claim the chief attention of the legislature of Britain. This the parliament were sensible of, and therefore passed the act, intitled, ‘Goods from foreign parts, by whom to be imported,’ *October 9, 1651*. The preamble is short, but expressive. ‘For the increase of the shipping and encouragement of the navigation of this nation, which, under the good providence and protection of God, is so great a means of the welfare and safety of this commonwealth, Be it enacted, &c.’ The chief clauses in this famous act are, that no goods shall be imported from *Asia, Africa, or America*, but in *English ships*,

If to these we add the projection of an union

ships, under the penalty of forfeiture of the said goods and ships:—nor from any part of *Europe*, except in such vessels as belong to the people of that country, of which the goods are the growth or manufacture, under the like penalty:—that no salt-fish, whale-fin, or oil, should be imported, but what were caught or made by the people of *England*; nor no salt fish to be exported, or carried from one port to another in this nation, but in *English* vessels, under the like penalty: but commodities from the *Livant* seas, the *East-Indies*, the ports of *Spain* or *Portugal*, might be imported from the usual ports or places of trading used heretofore, though the said commodities were not the very growth of the said places. This act did not extend to bullion or prize goods, nor to silk or silk wares brought by land from *Italy* to *Ossend*, *Amsterdam*, *Newport*, *Rotterdam*, *Middleburgh*, provided the owners and proprietors, being of the *English* commonwealth, first made oath by themselves, or other credible witnesses, that the goods were bought with the proceed of *English* commodities, sold either for money or in barter (v).

(v) Scobel's collection.

(r) Vol. i. P. 345.

(u) Statutes, 12 Car. II. c. 18, 19. and 13. c. 14.

*Ludlow* tells us, that Mr. *St. John* was the principal instrument to prevail with the council of state to move the parliament to pass this act (r). If so, his memory ought to be dear to *Englishmen*; for its utility was so apparent, that, with some additions and explanations, it had the sanction of the three estates, at a time when men's prejudices were at the height against the framers of it (u). The greatest possible proof of its excellency. Mr. *Coke* indeed censures this act in the severest terms: he says, 'it was the second step to the *French* grandeur by sea;'—and observes, 'that the *ratio finalis*, or end for which laws are made, are usually set down in the preamble of other acts of parliament, whereas there is none in the act of navigation. On the contrary,' continues he, 'the Rump were so hasty in making this act, designed in spite to the *Dutch*, that

the

the title of it is absurd and impossible; for the title is, 'An act for encouraging and increasing of shipping and navigation.' It is impossible to encourage any innu-  
 mated body, as a rump, flock, stone, dead horse, ass, or shipping: its true, men may be encouraged to increase shipping and navigation, but then it must be (I conceive) by one of these ways; either by giving money or rewards to those who build ships; or, by increasing trade, by which these ships may be better employed: and I do not find that ever the Rump gave one groat to encourage this shipping and navigation. — And, after a great deal more against it, he concludes, 'and sure, now its more than time the King and parliament would loose the nation from the fetters which this act (made in haste and spight against the *Dutch*, by a company of usurpers and regicides) hath put upon it; not only to our loss, but as much to the benefit of the *French* as well as the *Dutch*: and I do say, that this law has been more injurious to the *English* nation, than all the injuries it hath received from the *French* and *Dutch*, either in war or peace; nor will it be possible for the nation to repair the losses sustained by it, but by repealing it (x).' All this is very high! 'tis pleasant, however, to observe, that this author has taken the title of the act as new modelled in the beginning of *Charles II*'s time, to shew what an absurd, stupid race of animals these usurpers and regicides were. Had he read it, as given by the parliament, he would not have exposed himself as he has here done. Sir *Josias Child* is an authority more to be regarded in matters of commerce than most. His opinion, therefore, I suppose, will alone be sufficient to set aside Mr. *Coke*'s censure. 'The act of navigation,' says he, 'though it have some things in it wanting amendment, deserves to be called our (*Charta Marina*) (y).' And again, 'for my own part, I am of opinion, that, in relation to trade, shipping, profit and power, it is one of the choicest and most prudent acts that ever was made in *England*, and without which we had not now been owners of one half

(x) Detec-  
tion, vol.  
ii. p. 12—  
29.

(y) Preface  
to his New  
Discourse of  
Trade,  
12mo. Lond.  
1693.

of

union (Q) with *Scotland*, and the settlement  
 which

(x) Child  
 on Trade,  
 p. 91.

of the shipping, nor trade, nor employed one half of  
 the seamen which we do at present—(x).<sup>2</sup>

(Q) *The projection of an union with Scotland.* ]  
 The parliament of *England* being desirous, after all  
 these successes, says *Ludlow*, to convince even their  
 enemies, that their principal design was to procure  
 the happiness and prosperity of all that were under  
 their government, sent commissioners to *Scotland* to  
 treat concerning an union of that nation with *Eng-*  
*land* in one commonwealth; directing them to take  
 care, till that could be effected, that obedience should  
 be given to the authority of the parliament of the  
 commonwealth of *England*. The commissioners ap-  
 pointed to this end on the part of the parliament,  
 were Sir *Henry Vane*, the chief justice *St. Johns*, Mr.  
*Festwicke*, major *Salloway*, major-general *Lambert*,  
 colonel *Titchborn*, major-general *Dean*, and colonel  
*Monk*. This proposition of union was cheerfully  
 accepted by the most judicious among the *Scots*, who  
 well understood how great a condescension it was in  
 the parliament of *England* to permit a people they  
 had conquered to have a part in the legislative  
 power (a).—The same author, in another place,

(a) Vol. i.  
 p. 388.

writes as follows: 'The parliament having resolved  
 upon the incorporation of *Scotland* with the nation  
 of *England* into one free state or commonwealth,  
 and to reimburse themselves some part of that trea-  
 sure they had expended in their own defence against  
 the invasions of the *Scots*, declared the goods and lands,  
 formerly belonging to the crown of *Scotland*, to be  
 confiscated, and also those that were possessed by such  
 persons as had assisted in the invasion of *England* by  
 Duke *Hamilton*, in the year 1648, or had appeared  
 in arms since, under the King of *Scots*, in order to  
 subvert the present government; excepting those who,  
 since the battle of *Dunbar*, had abandoned the said  
 King of *Scots*, and, by their merits and services, had

ren-

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

255

ment of *Ireland* before-mentioned (both of which  
which

rendered themselves worthy of favour. That all such who are not comprehended under the said qualifications, and shall concur with them in their just enterprize, shall receive the benefit of their protection, and enjoy their liberties and goods equally with the free people of *England*. In pursuance of this declaration of the parliament, their commissioners in *Scotland* published another, wherein they discharge from confiscation all merchants and tradesmen, who possess not in land or goods above the value of five hundred pounds, and are not prisoners of war, soldiers of fortune, moss troopers, or such as have killed or committed outrages against the *English* soldiers contrary to the laws and customs of war. They also emitted a proclamation, abolishing, in the name of the parliament, all manner of authority and jurisdiction, derived from any other power but that of the commonwealth of *England*, as well in *Scotland* as in all the isles belonging to it. After this they summoned the counties, cities and buroughs, to agree to the incorporation before-mentioned; of which eighteen of one and thirty counties, and twenty-four of sixty-six cities and buroughs, consented to send their deputies to the parliament of *England*, most of the rest excusing themselves for want of money to defray the expences of their representatives (b). Let us now hear Dr. Gumble, who wrote at a time when it was no way fashionable, or, perhaps, safe to say much in praise of the commonwealth.—— The *English* pretended commonwealth having reduced the whole nation of *Scotland* and *Ireland*, they having a great calm of peace and tranquility, they fell upon a project (though practised by usurpers, and men who had great fears because of their great crimes, and of much care and diligence, because of their future danger to be brought to condign punishment) to unite all the three nations into one government, and to meet in

MS. (x)  
MS. no  
70. 9

MS. (x)  
MS. 9

(b) Vol. I.  
p. 401.

one

which so much contributed to the welfare

' one parliament, a work which they did effect by the  
 ' present advantages of conquest, and by a pretended  
 ' consent of some elected deputies: this union being a  
 ' work which King *James*, of blessed memory, set on  
 ' foot, and renewed by our gracious sovereign King  
 ' *Charles II.* (whom God direct to the conclusion) an  
 ' affair that would as much tend to the peace and pu-  
 ' blique security of all the three nations, as any other  
 ' designe that can be imagined; but these men, like the  
 ' children of this world, who were more wise in their  
 ' generation than the children of light and truth, who  
 ' were able by their force then upon these conquered  
 ' countries; for so they were then in appearance,  
 ' though, upon unjust grounds, they compelled them to  
 ' send members to the parliament of *England*, which  
 ' not a little advantaged the traffick of all, which is  
 ' since prohibited, but, upon a renewed union, would  
 ' be confirmed: to gain this point, they published an  
 ' act of oblivion, to forget all injuries, and forgive all  
 ' hostilities; to imitate the subtil estate of *Athens*, that  
 ' first gave the precedent.—To this end commissioners  
 ' from the pretended parliament were sent down into  
 ' *Scotland*, amongst whom was general *Monk* (without  
 ' whose interposing little good was to be done in *Scot-*  
 ' *land*) and though *St. John, Vane* and *Salloway*, with  
 ' others, could talk more, yet none could persuade  
 ' that nation so much as he, who (though they looked  
 ' upon him in the times of hostility as a severe ene-  
 ' my) yet they trusted him in this business more than  
 ' all the rest, and, upon giving them hopes of better  
 ' days, submitted to the present necessities.—Upon  
 ' the settling all things there, according to the will and  
 ' pleasure of their masters in *England*, they returned,  
 ' and general *Monk* with them (c).—On examina-  
 ' tion of the Journals, and Mr. *Whitlock's* Memorials,  
 ' who had a great hand in bringing the union with *Scot-*  
 ' *land* to a head, it appears that *Ludlow's* account is, in

(c) Life of  
 Monk, p.  
 47. Svo.  
 Lond. 1671.



of the *English* nation) the new modelling

the MS. B. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1. 1.  
308 = 10101010

the main, pretty exact (*d*). However, the parliament had not the honour of finishing this affair. It was reserved for *Cromwell*, who, by an act, passed *April 12, 1654*, intitled, '*Scotland made one commonwealth with England,*' fully accomplished it. In the preamble of this act the proceedings of the commonwealth are briefly recited, and it is declared, that *Scotland* and its dependencies shall be incorporated with *England*, and in every parliament, to be held successively, thirty persons shall be called from, and serve for *Scotland*. By this act kingship was abolished there; the arms of *Scotland* were to be borne with the arms of the *English* commonwealth; servitude and vassalage taken away. Superiorities, lordships, and jurisdictions abolished, and the heritors freed from all military service, and all forfeitures fall to the lord protector for the time being (*e*). These, with many other things, were enacted, tending to destroy the tyranny and power of the great men in that kingdom, and render the people more easy and happy. *Mr. Dalrymple*, speaking of the jurisdictions of the *Scotch*, says, '*Cromwell* had enough of the monarch to see how inconsistent these private jurisdictions were, either with the interest of the supream power, or the safety of the people; but he had too much of the tyrant, to think of making any reparation to the private proprietors, from whom he took their jurisdictions, but to whom he gave nothing in return (*f*).'

What the wisdom of monarchs has been history will best determine; how much of the tyrant appeared in taking away these jurisdictions is not so very certain. That they were inconsistent with the supream power, or the safety of the people, were reasons abundant for their abolition. For no private interest ought ever to be regarded that stands in competition with these. That he gave nothing to the private proprietors might be, because they merited nothing from his hands. They had, almost all of them, Cavaliers and Presbyterians, opposed

the

(*d*) See Journals of October 8. 26. and 29. 1652.

(*e*) Scobel's collections.

(*f*) History of Feudal Property, p. 294. 8vo. Lond. 1757.

the *English* government; they had invaded the *English* territories, and put the government to great charges, and were known, most of them, to be still, in their hearts, addicted to *the race*, from whom, and for whom, they had suffered so much. Could these men then expect any favour, any reward from his hands? That the jurisdictions were in the hands of enemies, and supported their power, had been cause sufficient to wrest these from them. So that, by this learned gentleman's leave, tyranny is not to be imputed to *Cromwell* on this account, but his policy, and, indeed, humanity, ought to be applauded, who disarmed a set of petty tyrants, and gave freedom to those who had groaned long under vassalage and chains.

(RR) *New modelling the representation in parliament.* ]  
 At what time the commons began to have representatives in parliament is none of my business to enquire. Those who desire information must consult our historians and antiquaries, especially *Prynne*, and *Petyt*, men of vast diligence and erudition. Suffice it here to say, that in the time of *Henry* the third they were possessed of it.—The advantages of this representation are well known. The house of commons has frequently asserted the liberties of the nation, framed good laws, brought to punishment bad ministers, and hindered the introduction of despotism, to which some of our princes have been but too much inclined. It has been the aim therefore of these to influence the electors in their choice of members, and to bribe, to flatter, to menace, and terrify them when chosen, from adhering to the interests of their country and constituents. The small boroughs being most easily led by the agents of princes and their ministers, were from time to time privileged with the choice of members, especially if in any good degree dependant on the crown, whereby it came to pass that the majority was generally under court influence, and directed by the will of the sovereign, or his  
 fa-

the people of the kingdom of *England*, for  
much

favourite for the time being. This was an inconvenience which had long been felt, but was almost impossible to be remedied in the common course of things. But when the constitution was broken, when the power of the crown and of the lords was abolished, and there was a necessity for great alteration in the frame of the government, one of the first things that was proposed to the consideration of the parliament of the commonwealth of *England* was a more equal representative. This was contained in a 'Petition from his excellency *Thomas Lord Fairfax*, and the general council of officers of the army, to the honourable the commons in parliament assembled, concerning the draught of an agreement of the people for a secure and present peace, by them framed and prepared,' presented *January 20, 1649, N. S.* The agreement was offered to the consideration of the house first, and then to every man without doors, to subscribe it, to whose judgment it was agreeable. In this they say—'Since our former oppressions, and not yet ended troubles, have been occasioned, either by want of frequent national meetings in council, or by the undue or unequal constitution thereof, or by rending these meetings uneffectual: we are fully resolved, God willing, to provide, that hereafter our representatives be neither left to an uncertainty for time, nor be unequally constituted, nor made useless to the ends for which they are intended. In order whereunto we declare and agree,

1. That to prevent the many inconveniences, apparently arising from the long continuance of the same persons in supreme authority, this present parliament end and dissolve upon, or before the last day of *April, 1649.*

2. That the people of *England* (being at this day very unequally distributed, by counties, cities, and burroughs, for the election of their representatives) be indifferently proportioned, and to this end, that the

much needed and approved, though left

‘ representative of the whole nation shall consist of  
 ‘ four hundred persons, or not above; and in each  
 ‘ county, and the places hereto subjoined, there shall  
 ‘ be chosen, to make up the said representative at all  
 ‘ times, the several members here mentioned.’—Then  
 follows the number of each county, with the bur-  
 oughs, towns and parishes therein, except such as  
 were under particularly named.

It is observable that in the scheme for a new repre-  
 sentative, the little burroughs were wholly deprived of  
 the liberty of sending members, any otherwise than as  
 they had votes in common for the county, though some  
 of the opulent towns and cities had the priviledges of  
 sending one or more according to the number and riches  
 of the inhabitants. Thus for instance, the county of  
*Cornwall*, with the boroughs, towns, and parishes there-  
 in, were to send eight; the county of *Devon* with the  
 boroughs, towns and parishes were to have twelve, be-  
 sides *Exeter*, which were to chuse two, *Plymouth* two,  
 and *Barnstable* one. *Wiltz*, including one for *Salisbury*,  
 eight; the Cinque Ports three, &c. But on the con-  
 trary, the county of *Middlesex* were to chuse four; the  
 city of *London* eight, the city of *Westminster* and the  
 dutchy two, besides *Southwark*, which had two allotted  
 for it likewise. Many rules relating to the choice and  
 regulation of the representative were recommended, as

‘ That of course it should be chosen every two years;  
 ‘ that no member of any council of state, nor any of-  
 ‘ ficer of any salary, forces in the army, or garrison,  
 ‘ nor any treasurer or receiver of publique moneys,  
 ‘ shall, while such, be elected to be of a representa-  
 ‘ tive; that one hundred and fifty members be always  
 ‘ present at each sitting of the representative at the pas-  
 ‘ sing of any law, or passing any act, whereby the peo-  
 ‘ ple are to be bound; that in each interval betwixt  
 ‘ biennial representatives, the council of state (which  
 ‘ was to be chosen by parliament, and to continue till  
 ‘ the

## OLIVER CROMWELL.

unfinished by them; their attempts to reform

the tenth day after the meeting of the next representative for the management of publique affairs) in case of imminent danger or great necessity, may summon a representative to be forthwith chosen and to meet; so as the session thereof continue not above fourscore days, and so as it dissolve at least fifty days before the appointed time for the next biennial representative.—With regard to the power given to the representative, it was declared that though the supreme trust was to be invested with them for the preservation and government of the whole, yet many things ought not to be left in their power: particularly pressing men to serve in war either abroad or at home, unless in the way of training and exercising them in order to repel foreign invasions, or quell intestine commotions; invalidating securities given or to be given on the publique faith; exempting any persons from subjection to the laws, or giving judgment on any man's person or estate, where no law hath before provided.' It was also added, 'That no representative may in any wise render up, or give, or take away any the foundations of common right, liberty and safety contained in the agreement; nor level mens estates, destroy propriety, or make all things common: and that in all matters of such fundamental concernment, there shall be a liberty to particular members of the said representatives to enter their dissent from the major voice.'—With respect to religion, they desired, 'That the christian religion be held forth and recommended as the publick profession in the nation; that publick teachers might be maintained by the representatives out of the publick treasury, not by tythes, provided that popery or prelacy be not held forth as the publick way or profession in this nation. It was moreover added, that to the publick profession so held forth, none be compelled by penalties or otherwise; and that such as profess faith

form the abuses of the law, and their en-  
acting

(g) Petition,  
&c. 4<sup>to</sup>. Lon-  
don printed  
for John  
Partridge,  
&c. 1649.

‘ in God by Jesus Christ, (however differing in judg-  
‘ ment from the doctrine, discipline or worship publick-  
‘ ly held forth) shall not be restrained from, but shall  
‘ be protected in the profession of their faith, and ex-  
‘ ercise of their religion according to their consciences  
‘ in any place (except the places set apart for the pub-  
‘ lick worship, which without leave they were not to  
‘ make use of) so as they abuse not this liberty to the  
‘ civil injury of others, or to the actual disturbance of  
‘ the publick peace (g).’ The officers who presented  
this petition and agreement were thanked by the Speaker  
in the name of the house, and told withall that it should  
be taken into consideration with all convenient speed.  
It was at the same time ordered by them to be printed.  
According to their promise, the house fell very seriously  
to consider this proposal for a new representative. A  
committee was appointed, *May 15* following, for this  
purpose; and on the 9th of *January, 1649*, O. S. Sir  
*Henry Vane* junior reported from the committee their  
proceedings, and their votes, as heads, to be the grounds  
of the debate of the house. These contained the num-  
bers each county were to send to parliament, formed on  
the plan in the agreement of the people, though in  
many instances differing from it, but yet proportioned  
in such a mannner as to be apparently for the public  
good, and preferable to what had before been made  
use of (b). In consequence of this report, it was re-  
solved by the parliament, that the number of persons,  
that shall be elected for the commonwealth, to sit and  
serve in parliament for this nation, as members thereof,  
shall not exceed four hundred. The committee had re-  
solved also, that the pleasure of the house should be  
known whether there should be a particular distribution  
of the said proportions upon several places within each  
respective county. And moreover, that the right of  
electing and sending of members to parliament for ever,  
according to the said proportions respectively be granted  
and

(b) See Jour-  
nal of Jan. 9,  
1649. And  
Parliamen-  
tary History,  
vol. xix. p.  
245.

## OLIVER CROMWELL.

293

and confirmed by act of the then parliament. That in the said act there be presented the manner how the said elections shall be made, together with the qualifications of the electors and elected, with some other heads to strengthen and confirm these new regulations. But only the number to serve in parliament was now determined, and the remainder of the report was referred to a grand committee of the house, to take into consideration the several heads reported, according to the number of four hundred; and upon their debate, to prepare a bill, to be presented to the house. Accordingly we find in the journals that on every *Wednesday* following, till the differences with *Scotland* broke out into a war, the house in a grand committee sat and debated on this important subject, and had not entirely finished it, when a period was put to their sitting in the manner we shall soon see.

—It is not to be doubted, had the parliament finished their plan, it would have been truly excellent. As it is, it appears capable of being rendered greatly useful, when-ever a set of men of wisdom and fortitude shall arise to carry it into execution. That this is not too high an encomium on the parliament's scheme for a new representation, will appear from that part of the instrument of government subscribed by *Cromwell*, on his assuming the protectorate, relating to the summoning and electing of parliaments; which I am persuaded was framed by the grand committee above-mentioned, though the house had not time to pass it into a law. It is too long to be given here, but the curious may find it in *Whitlock* (i), and without doubt will wish for its revival. The rotten part of the constitution, as I think *Burnet* somewhere calls our small boroughs, would then be incapable by their venality and corruption, of doing the mischief they sometimes have done, to themselves, their representatives, and the public.—

‘ Among the alterations requisite to be made on the  
 ‘ *British* government, in order to bring it to the most  
 ‘ perfect model of limited monarchy, says *Mr. Hume*,  
 ‘ the plan of the republican parliament ought to be  
 ‘ restored by making the representation equal, and by  
 ‘ allowing none to vote in the county elections, who

(i) P. 572.  
 It is to be  
 found also in  
 other writ-  
 ters.

acting all law (ss) proceedings to be in the  
English

(k) Political  
Essays, p.  
300. 12mo.  
Edingb.  
1752.

'possess not an hundred a year (k).' This restriction appears not at all to have entered into the thoughts of the parliament. An estate real or personal of two hundred pounds in value, was the qualification for an elector, in the instrument of government above mentioned.

(ss) *Their attempts to reform the law, and enacting all law proceedings to be in the English tongue.*] The tediousness and expensiveness of law proceedings have long been the subject of complaint, as well as *that glorious uncertainty of the law*, which has been often boasted of with high-gee by some of its professors. It is not to be doubted but the slow and prolix process of the law sometimes preserves the unwary or unskilful from being surprized, and affords the fairer opportunity to bring truth to light, or give relief to the oppressed: but whether these advantages are not outweighed by the vexation, trouble and expence necessarily incurred thereby, those who have been so unhappy as to be engaged in it, can best determine.—As early as the year 1646, the parliament was addressed on this subject, in the following words: 'Yee know, the laws of this nation are unworthy a free people, and deserve from first to last, to be considered, and seriously debated, and reduced to an agreement with common equity, and right reason, which ought to be the form and life of every government. *Magna Charta* itself being but a beggarly thing, containing many marks of intollerable bondage, and the laws that have been made since by parliaments, have in very many particulars made our government much more oppressive and intollerable. The *Norman* way for ending of controversies, was much more abusive than the *English* way, yet the Conqueror, contrary to his oath, introduced the *Norman* laws, and his litigious and vexatious way amongst us; the like he did also for punishment of malefactors, controversies of all natures having before a quick  
'and



OLIVER CROMWELL.

*English* tongue; their seeking out, employ-  
ing

‘ and final dispatch in every hundred. He erected a  
 ‘ trade of judges and lawyers, to sell justice and in-  
 ‘ justice at his own unconscionable rate, and in what  
 ‘ time he pleased; the corruption whereof is yet re-  
 ‘ maining upon us, to our continual impoverishing and  
 ‘ molestation; from which we thought you should have  
 ‘ delivered us \*.’—In the copy of a very valuable  
 manuscript paper, formerly belonging to colonel *Saunder*s  
 of *Derbyshire*, colonel of a regiment of horse, writ-  
 ten about the end of the year 1647; among many other  
 excellent proposals for the establishment of a firm and  
 present peace, is the following. ‘ That the huge vo-  
 ‘ lumes of statute laws and ordinances, with the penal-  
 ‘ ties therein imposed, as well corporal as pecuniary,  
 ‘ be well revised; and such only left in force, as shall  
 ‘ be found fit for the commonwealth, especially that  
 ‘ mens lives be more precious than formerly, and that  
 ‘ lesser punishments than death, and more useful to the  
 ‘ publick be found out for smaller offences: That all  
 ‘ laws, writs, commissions, pleadings, and records be  
 ‘ in the *English* tongue; and that proceedings be re-  
 ‘ duced to a more certain charge, and a more expedi-  
 ‘ tious way than formerly: *That no fees at all be exacted*  
 ‘ *of the people in courts of justice; but that the publick*  
 ‘ *ministers of state be wholly maintained out of the pub-  
 ‘ lick treasury.*’—In the petition of the lord general  
 and officers mentioned in the preceding note, we find  
 among other things noticed, as worthy to be provided  
 for by parliament, ‘ The removing or reforming of  
 ‘ evils or inconveniences in the present laws, and ad-  
 ‘ ministrations thereof, the redresse of abuses, and sup-  
 ‘ plying of defects therein, the putting of all the laws  
 ‘ and proceedings thereof into the *English* tongue, the  
 ‘ reducing of the course of law to more brevity and less

\* Remonstrance of many thousand citizens and other freeborn people  
 of England to their own house of commons, occasioned by the imprison-  
 ment of John Lilburn, 4to. with o it name or place.

ing and rewarding the best pens for writing

(l) p. 28.

‘ charge (l).’ These persons seem not to have concurred in judgment with Lord *Coke*, who tells us, ‘ The law is the perfection of reason;’ ‘ That the law is nothing else but reason; and that if all the reason that is dispersed into so many several heads were united into one, yet could he not make such a law as the law of *England* is, because by many succession of ages it hath been fined and refined by an infinite number of grave and learned men, and by long experience grown to such a perfection, for the government of this realm, as the old rule may be truly verified of it, *Neminem oportet esse sapientiores legibus*: No man (out of his own private reason) ought to be wiser than the law, which is the perfection of reason (m).’

(m) On Littleton, fol. 98. 2d. Edit.

However this may be, the parliament being urged by seeming considerations of public utility, on *January 20, 1651*, appointed ‘ A committee to take into consideration what inconveniences were in the law, how the mischief that grows from delays, the chargeableness and irregularities in the proceedings of the law may be prevented, and the speediest way to prevent the same.’ No great matters however followed from this committee, by reason of the hurry of the times, and the opposition of the lawyers, who were full of Lord *Coke’s* opinion concerning the perfection of the laws of *England*, as gentlemen of that profession, for the most part, will always be; for as they then and now stand, they are the means of procuring preferments, titles, and ministerial estates. Can we wonder then they have vindicators, admirers and applauders?—A little before the parliament passed an act, ‘ That all the books of the law should be put into *English*; and that all writs, process, and returns thereof, and all patents, commissions, indictments, judgments, records, and all rules and proceedings in courts of justice should be in the *English* tongue. It was moreover enacted, that they should be written in an ordinary, usual and legible

ing (TT) in behalf of liberty, civil and religious,

‘ ble hand and character, and not in any hand commonly called court hand.’ This act does great honor to the parliament, and is an argument of their good sense, and concern for the welfare of the people. It is amazing so good a law should not have been continued by proper authority after the restoration! But it was generally a sufficient reason then to disuse a thing, though ever so good in itself, that it had been enacted by an usurped power. Of such fatal consequences are prejudices! But thanks be to God! we have seen the time when this most excellent ordinance has been again revived, and received the sanction of the whole legislature.—It has indeed been questioned, ‘ Whether a noble dead language, which has suffered no variation in it for above these thousand years last past, is not better to preserve records in than so flux a one as *English* (n).’—For my own part, I should think not: unless the uncertain good of very distant posterity, is to be preferred to our own present real advantage, which I imagine few will say.—But to go on—‘ How much were it to be wished, that a committee of wise and prudent persons were once more employed to revise, amend and abridge our laws! That we might know ourselves how to act, and not be necessitated to make use of those, who (we are sensible) live on our spoils.—But much is it to be feared, that our adversaries will be too hard for us, and that we shall be obliged, for a time at least, to submit to their yoke. But whenever the spirit of true patriotism shall generally possess the minds of our senators, I doubt not, but they will apply themselves to our deliverance in good earnest, and bring it to perfection, (as it was long ago done in *Denmark*, and more lately in *Prussia*) inasmuch as the happiness of the community absolutely depends thereon (o).’

(TT) *Their seeking out, and rewarding the best pens,* &c.] There have been few governments destitute of

(n) Parliamentary History, vol. xix. p. 439.

(o) Historical and Critical Account of Hugh Peters, note (M), 3vo. Lond. 1751.

ligious; the application of the large church

reve-

writers to defend and applaud their measures. For, to the disgrace of letters, venal pens in all ages have been in plenty. Hence it has come to pass that panegyrics have been made on the worst measures and administrations, even by men who, in their hearts, despised them. It is no way surprizing therefore that the parliament should have had writers on their side: their power and wealth would account for this. But that they should have searched out and found men of real abilities to undertake their cause, and do justice to their actions, must have arose only from their own judgment and liberality. The works of *Milton* are well known. They are an honor to himself, his cause and his employers.—

‘*The Tenure of Kings and Magistrates*,’ was written to prove, ‘That it is lawful, and hath been held so through all ages, for any, who have the power, to call to account a tyrant, or wicked King, and after due conviction to depose, and put him to death; if the ordinary magistrate have neglected, or denied to do it.’—

In a noble strain it is here said, ‘None can love freedom heartily, but good men; the rest love not freedom, but licence; which never hath more scope, or more indulgence than under tyrants.’ His

Iconoclastes was undertaken in the behalf of liberty and the commonwealth, as was his answer to *Salmafus* also, by the appointment, as he says, and not without the approbation of the civil power (p). The parliament rewarded him with a thousand pound for this last performance, and made him their *Latin* secretary, by which they obtained a never-dying fame. For his state letters written in that language, exceed beyond comparison any thing of that kind extant. We are not to wonder therefore that *Milton’s* reputation was high both at

home and abroad; or that he was visited and invited by foreign ambassadors at *London*, not excepting those of crowned heads (q).—He was worthy of the honor.

For, ‘as he looked upon true and absolute freedom to

(p) *Prose Works*, p. 599.

(q) *Richardson’s Life of Milton*, p. 79. 8vo. Lond. 1734.

revenues taken from the bishops, deans and chap-

‘ be the greatest happiness of this life, whether to so-  
 ‘ cieties or single persons, so he thought constraint of  
 ‘ any sort to be the utmost misery; for which reason he  
 ‘ used frequently to tell those about him of the intire  
 ‘ satisfaction of his mind, that he had constantly em-  
 ‘ ployed his strength and faculties in the defence of li-  
 ‘ berty, and in direct opposition to slavery. And his  
 ‘ aversion to monarchy, as he told his friend Sir *Re-*  
 ‘ *bert Howard*, was heightened by this consideration,  
 ‘ that the trappings of it might support an ordinary com-  
 ‘ monwealth (r).’—It is asserted on good authority,  
 ‘ That *Milton* was allowed a weekly table by the par-  
 ‘ liament, for the entertainment of foreign ministers,  
 ‘ especially such as come from protestant states, and for  
 ‘ the learned: which allowance was also continued by  
 ‘ *Cromwell* \*.’—How noble the example.——*Martha-*  
 ‘ *mont Needham*, who had written *Mercurius Pragmaticus*  
 ‘ against the parliament, was not only pardoned by them,  
 ‘ but if we may believe *Mr. Wood*, by promises of re-  
 ‘ wards and places, was induced to become an advocate  
 ‘ for them and liberty. This was a writer indeed worth  
 ‘ gaining. His morals or integrity perhaps were not the  
 ‘ most strict, (though I know nothing alledged against  
 ‘ him on these heads, except changing his party often)  
 ‘ but he had wit, parts, learning, and a style beyond  
 ‘ most of his age. ‘ His *Mercurius Politicus*, which  
 ‘ came out by authority, and flew every week into all  
 ‘ parts of the nation for more than ten years, had very  
 ‘ great influence upon numbers of inconsiderable per-  
 ‘ sons, such as have a strong presumption that all must  
 ‘ needs be true that is in print. He was the *Goliath* of  
 ‘ the *Philistians*, the great champion of the late usur-  
 ‘ per, whose pen in comparison of others, was like a  
 ‘ weavers beam. And certainly he that will, or can

(r) Life,  
 by Dr.  
 Birch, p.  
 74. prefixed  
 to his Prose  
 Works.

\* Teland's life of Milton, p. 110, in the note, 8vo. Lond. 2d. edit.  
 N. B. This edition is enriched with most curious and valuable observations  
 in the notes.

chapters, who by act of parliament had  
been

(1) Athenæ  
Oxonienfes,  
vol. ii. c.  
626.

peruse those his intelligences called *Merc. Politici*, will judge that had the devil himself (the father of all lies) been in this *Goliab's* office, he could not have exceeded him. As having with profound malice calumniated his sovereign, scurrility abused the nobility, impudence blasphemed the church and members thereof, and industry poisoned the people with dangerous principles (1). One may easily gather from this character, that *Needham* with zeal and ability defended the cause of his masters against their adversaries. Besides the quotation given in note (HH), I will add a few more, as the work from whence I take it is not in many hands, and very little known even amongst the curious.

In one of his papers he asserts, 'That the original of all just power and government is in the people.' This he proves after the following manner.—'As for the government of the *Israelites*, first under *Moses*, then *Josua* and the judges, the Scriptures plainly shew, that they were extraordinary governors being of God's immediate institution, who raised them up by his spirit, and imposed them upon that people, whose peculiar happiness it was in cases of this nature, to have so infallible and sure a direction; so that their government was a *Theocrasie* (as some have called it) having God himself for its only original, and therefore no wonder we have in that time and nation so few visible footsteps of the peoples election, or of an institution by compact. But yet we find after the judges, that when this people rejected this more immediate way of government by God (as the Lord tells *Samuel*, they have not rejected thee, but me) and desired a government after the manner of other nations, then God seems to forbear the use of his prerogative, and leave them to an exercise of their own natural rights and liberties, to make choice of a new government and governor by suffrage and compact. The government they aimed at was kingly. God him-  
self

been abolished, and the wise provision  
made

' self was displeas'd at it, and so was *Samuel* too, who  
 ' in hope to continue the old form, and to fright them  
 ' from the new, tells them what monsters in govern-  
 ' ment Kings would prove, by assuming unto them-  
 ' selves an arbitrary power (not that a King might law-  
 ' fully and by right do what *Samuel* describes (as *Salma-*  
 ' *fius* and all the royal interpreters would have us be-  
 ' lieve) but only to shew how far Kings would presume  
 ' to abuse their power, which no doubt *Samuel* foresaw,  
 ' not only by reason, but by the spirit of prophecy.)  
 ' Nevertheless the people would have a King; say  
 ' they, Nay, but there shall be a King over us: where-  
 ' upon saith God to *Samuel*, Hearken to their voice:  
 ' where you plainly see, first God gives the leave to  
 ' exercise their own natural right, in making choice of  
 ' their form of government. But then indeed for the  
 ' choice of their governor, there was one thing extra-  
 ' ordinary, in that God appointed them one, he vouch-  
 ' safing still in an extraordinary and immediate manner  
 ' to be their director and protector; but yet though  
 ' God was pleas'd to nominate the person, he left the  
 ' confirmation and ratification of the kingship unto the  
 ' people, to shew that naturally the right of all was in  
 ' them, however the exercise of it were superseded at  
 ' that time by his divine pleasure, as to the point of no-  
 ' mination. For that the people might understand it  
 ' was their right, *Samuel* calls them all to *Mizpeh*, as  
 ' if the matter were all to be done anew on their part,  
 ' and there by lot they at length made choice of *Saul*,  
 ' and so immediately proclaim him with shouts and ac-  
 ' clamations; and then having had proof of his valour  
 ' against the *Ammonites*, they met at *Gilgal*, and pro-  
 ' claim him King once again, to shew (that naturally)  
 ' the validity of his kingship depended wholly on the  
 ' peoples consent and confirmation, and so you see, the  
 ' first and most eminent evidence of the institution of  
 ' political government in Scripture doth notoriously de-  
 ' mon-

made for their state clergy and the universities

(t) *Mercurius Politicus*, No. 98. p. 153<sup>s</sup>.  
 'monstrate, that its original is in or from the people (t).'—In another place, speaking of errors in policy, he says, 'The regulation of affairs by reason of state, not the strict rule of honesty, has been an epide-  
 'demical one. But for fear I be mistaken, continues  
 'he, you are to understand, that by reason of state here  
 'we do not condemn the equitable result of prudence  
 'and right reason; for upon determinations of this na-  
 'ture depends the safety of all states and princes; but  
 'that reason of state which flows from a corrupt princi-  
 'ple to an indirect end; that reason of state which is  
 'the statesman's reason, or rather his will and lust,  
 'when he admits ambition to be a reason, preferment,  
 'power, profit, revenge and opportunity to be reasons  
 'sufficient to put him upon any design or action that  
 'may tend to present advantage; though contrary to  
 'the law of God, or the law of common honesty, and  
 'of nations.—Reason of state is the most sovereign  
 'command, and the most important counsellor. Reason  
 'of state is the card and compass of the ship. Reason  
 'of state is many times the religion of a state; the  
 'law, the life of a state. That which answers all ob-  
 'jections and quarrels about mal-government. That  
 'which wages war, imposes taxes, cuts off offenders,  
 'pardons offenders, sends and treats ambassadors. It  
 'can say and unsay; do and undo, balk the common  
 'road, make high-ways to become by-ways, and the  
 'farthest about to become the nearest cut. If a dif-  
 'ficult knot come to be untied, which neither the di-  
 'vine by Scripture, nor lawyer by case or precedent can  
 'untie, then reason of state, or an hundred ways more  
 'which ideots know not, dissolve it. This is that great  
 'empres which the *Italians* call *Raggione di Stato*: it  
 'can rant as a soldier, compliment as a monsieur, trick  
 'it as a juggler, strut it as a statesman, and is as change-  
 'able as the moon in the variety of her appearan-  
 'ces (u).' This beautiful piece of satyr will, I pre-  
 'sume,

(u) *Id.* No. 108. p. 169o.

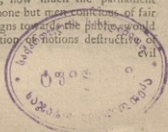


# OLIVER CROMWELL.

308

fume, be acceptable to many of my readers.—I will make but one citation more from this writer, but it contains, I believe, the sentiments of the majority in power at that time on the subject of church government.—‘ If we seriously reflect, says he, upon the design of God, in bringing Christ into the world, we shall find it was to set an end to the pompous administration of the *Jewish* form; that as his church and people were formerly confined within the narrow pale of a particular nation, so now the pale should be broken down, and all nations taken into the church. Not all nations in a lump: not any whole nations, or national bodies to be formed into churches: for his church or people now under the Gospel are not to be a body political, but spiritual and mystical: not a promiscuous confusion of persons taken in at adventure, but an orderly collection, a picking and chusing of such as are called and sanctified, &c. Not a company of men forced in by commands and constitutions of worldly power and prudence, but of such as are brought in by the power and efficacy of Christ’s word and spirit. For he himself hath said, My kingdom is not from hence; my kingdom is not of this world, &c. And therefore that hand which hitherto hath presumed in most nations to erect a power called ecclesiastick in equipage with the civil to bear sway, and bind mens consciences to certain notions ordained for orthodox, upon civil penalties, under colour of prudence, good order, discipline, preventing of heresy, and advancing of Christ’s kingdom; and to this end hath twisted the spiritual power (as they call it) with the worldly and secular interest of state; this I say hath been the right hand of antichrist, opposing Christ in his way, whose kingdom being not of this world, depends not upon the helps and devices of worldly wisdom (x).’ These extracts sufficiently show how well the cause of liberty, civil and religious, was understood in these times; how much the parliament had them at heart. For none but men conscious of fair intentions, and upright designs towards the public, would have favoured the propagation of notions destructive of

(x) Mercurius Politicus, No. 99. P. 1554.



evil magistrates, and wicked priests, their never-failing coadjutors.—But zealous as these men were for liberty, they were careful to keep their people as much as possible from popery, and solicitous to hinder their perversion to that absurd and cruel superstition. A letter to the *Spanish* ambassador will set this in a clear light. It is as follows: ‘The parliament of the commonwealth of *England*, understanding that several of the people of this city daily resort to the house of your excellency, and other ambassadors and public ministers from foreign nations here residing, meerly to hear mass, gave order to the council of state, to let your excellency understand, that whereas such resort is prohibited by the laws of the nation, and of very evil example in this our republic, and extremely scandalous; that they deem it their duty to take care that no such thing be permitted henceforward, and to prohibit all such assemblies for the future. Concerning which, ’tis our desire that your excellency should have a fair advertisement, to the end that henceforth your excellency may be more careful of admitting any of the people of this republic to hear mass in your house. And as the parliament will diligently provide that your excellency’s rights and priviledges shall be preserved inviolable, so they persuade themselves that your excellency, during your abode here, would by no means that the laws of this republic should be violated by yourself or by your attendants (y).’ What would the parliament have thought of one hundred thousand Papists in *London* and *Westminster*, the number reckoned by persons employed in 1745? Since that time they have much encreased, if reports are to be relied on. ‘In such open defiance of our laws, says an ingenious writer, has Popery been long making great progress. And whether the threatening consequences are not formidable, may well deserve the consideration of such who are able to discern the inestimable value of our civil and religious liberties.—It would be far from us, after all, to desire any pains or penalties should be inflicted on men, because they have an extravagant ritual, and are fond of worshipping a troop of deities or demons: or for say-

ing

(y) Milton’s  
Prose  
Works, vol.  
ii. p. 199.

ing prayers by tale or number, either to real or imaginary faints: for venerating a wafer or crucifix. Since he who can feast his soul, either on gold, silver, or precious stones, or who can best relish wood, hay, or stubble; should only have our pity, and we ought to wish him a less depraved appetite. But so long as the Papist holds opinions subversive of morality, destructive of society, dangerous to the civil and religious rights of mankind, *i. e.* so long as the hand of popery is against every man, so long every man's hand should be against popery. The voice of nature, of self preservation, is loud in the breast of every protestant against this superstition (x). The reader will pardon I doubt not this small digression, if indeed it be one.

(x) Three Questions resolved, p. 30. 8vo. Lond. 1757.

I proceed now with the subject. Besides *Milton* and *Needham*, the parliament had another writer of some figure on their side, *viz.* *John Parker*, father to *Sam. Parker*, bishop of *Oxon*, in the time of *James I.* This gentleman, 'In the year 1650, printed a remarkable book called *The government of the people of England precedent and present the same.* It was written to spirit men to subscribe to the engagement to be true and faithful to the commonwealth as then established, without a King or the house of lords: and there he asserts that, *Populus suo magistratu prior est tempore natura & dignitate: quia populus magistratum constituit, & quia populus sine magistratu esse potest, sed magistratus sine populo non potest esse.* Also out of another classical author, *Vindiciæ contra Tyrannos*, he affirms, *Reges sunt a populo & sunt constituti causa populi.* More he undertakes to prove that the Kings of *England* had no negative voice rightly and by law, but that it was contrary to the law and their oath at coronation. And then *a fortiori*, that the lords neither can have any negative upon the people (a). This book I never saw. The writings of *Henry Parker* on the behalf of the parliament are better known. They are indeed worth preserving. Mr. *Wood* has given us a catalogue of them (b).—*Andrew Marvell* is, I know, commonly said to have been employed, under *Milton*, by the com-

(a) *Recherches* Translated, part 2d. p. 132. Lond. 1673. 8vo.  
(b) *Athenæ Oxon.* vol. ii. c. p. 225.

fities (UU); I say if we consider all these things

with

monwealth. But I apprehend this to be a mistake, as will appear from his own account.—‘As to myself, says he, I never had any, not the remotest relation to publick matters, nor correspondence with the persons then predominant, until the year 1657. When indeed I entered into an employment, for which I was not altogether improper, and which I considered to be the most innocent and inoffensive towards his Majesty’s affairs of any in that usurped and irregular government, to which all men were then exposed. And this I accordingly discharged without disoblising any one person (c).’—It must not be forgotten that all these gentlemen found their account in writing for the parliament and *Cromwell*. Both the *Parkers* were enriched by lucrative and honourable employes, and *Marvel*, I suppose, was not unrewarded for the discharge of his office, by the Protector.

(UU) *The wise provision made for their state clergy, and the universities.*] The clergy, in most countries where christianity prevailed, got wealth, honour and power. Unmindful of their Master’s doctrine and example, they loved the world, and the things which were in it, and, by a variety of ways and means, accumulated large possessions. How honestly they got some, how wisely others were bestowed on them by princes, great men, weak women, and persons, indeed, of all ranks and degrees, from a persuasion instilled into them of atoning for their transgressions, and getting better things in reversion in lieu of them; I say, how all this happened is well known to most (d). *Henry VIII.* with consent of parliament, made bold to lay his hand on the lands, tenements, and hereditaments of the abbeyes and monasteries, and gave, or sold them, to such as were able to make a better use of them; and his son and successor *Edward*, as well as his daughter *Elizabeth*, approved of his proceedings, and availed themselves of his example, by plucking now and then a goodly manor

(c) Rehearsal transposed, part ad. p. 127.

(d) See Father Paul on beneficiary matters, Father Simon on ecclesiastical revenues, and Harry Nevil’s Plea to Redivivus, p. 93—108.

## OLIVER CROMWELL.



307

without prejudice, we shall, probably, be forced to acknowledge, that they were born for

nor or two from the bishopricks. This (with the power of translations) made the bishops cautious of offending, and solicitous of obtaining the good will of the sovereign, and his favourites: and they applied themselves with so much zeal thereunto, that they soon became downright courtiers, supple, complaisant, unmeaning, and ready to put their hand to carry any thing into execution, which they judged agreeable to the crown. So that, for the most part, they were friends to the prerogative, and averse to liberty. For these and other causes, the lords and commons thought proper, by an act of parliament, which had the royal assent, to exclude them from the house of peers; and, by an ordinance of both houses, dated *October 9, 1646*, their office was abolished, and their lands and possessions settled upon trustees for the use of the commonwealth. The preamble to this ordinance will explain the motives on which it was made. It runs thus: 'For the abolishing of archbishops and bishops, and providing for the payment of the just and necessary debts of the kingdom, into which the same hath been drawn by a war, mainly promoted by and in favour of the said archbishops and bishops, and other their adherents and dependants; be it ordained, &c. (\*) Thus the whole of the bishops lands became vested in the parliament, who, by an ordinance, bearing date, *October 3, 1648*, ordered, 'the trustees to give warrants to the treasurers for the issuing out and paying of the rents and revenues of parsonages impropriate, tythes, oblations, obventions, pensions, portions of tythes, parsonages

(\*) See a collection of several acts of parliament, ordinances, &c. for providing maintenance for ministers, heads of colleges, &c. 4to. Lond. 1647. 'Tis from this book I have taken the several citations from the ordinances in this note. See also Scobell's collections, and Kennet's Case of impropriations and augmentation of vicarages, p. 244, and 268. 8vo. Lond. 1704.

for legislation, and were worthy of it. But  
whilst

and vicarages, as have been, or shall be received by  
the said treasurers, and have not otherwise been dis-  
posed of, for the maintenance of ministers, to such  
person or persons respectively, to whom the said rents  
and revenues have been or shall be ordered or assigned  
by the committee for plundered ministers, for aug-  
mentation of maintenance for officiating in any church  
or chapel in *England and Wales*.—After the com-  
monwealth took place, the commons of *England*, in  
parliament assembled, on the 30th of *April*, 1649, pro-  
ceeded farther to pass ‘an act for the abolishing of  
deans and chapters, canons, prebends, and other of-  
ficers and titles, of or belonging to any cathedral or col-  
legiate church or chapel within *England* or *Wales*.’ Their  
plea for this was necessity.—‘Having seriously  
weighed, say they, the necessity of raising a present  
supply of money for the present safety of this com-  
monwealth; and finding that their other securities are  
not satisfactory to lenders, nor sufficient to raise so  
considerable a sum as will be necessary for the said  
service, are necessitated to sell the lands of the deans  
and chapters, for the paying of publick debts, and for  
the raising of three hundred thousand pounds for the  
present supply of the pressing necessities of the com-  
monwealth, do enact, &c.’—However, they were  
not for throwing them away, as much as money was  
wanting. For none of these lands were to be sold un-  
der twelve years purchase, though the lands of the  
bishops had been allowed to be sold for ten; a tolerable  
good price, considering the high interest of money,  
which was at about eight *per cent.* at this time, and the  
possibility of their being one time or other reclaimed  
by their former possessors.—Out of these lands thus  
appointed to be sold, there was excepted, by another act  
of *June* the 8th, 1649, ‘all tythes appropriate, obla-  
tions, obventions, portions of tythes appropriate, of  
or belonging to the archbishops, bishops, deans, and  
deans

whilst the parliament was thus nobly employed

deans and chapters, all which, together with twenty thousand pounds yearly rent, formerly belonging to the crown of *England*, the commons thought fit to be settled for a competent maintenance of preaching ministers, where it was wanting, in *England* and *Wales*. This competent maintenance, in their opinion, was one hundred pounds *per annum*, which they allotted to the state preachers, without, however, taking away any thing from the rich rectories, which were preserved whole and entire. I suppose there are but few disinterested persons but will think this a much better regulated maintenance than what before had been allotted. If an established clergy be useful and necessary, and if the public must maintain them, as seems to have been the received opinion, upon whatsoever reasons founded, surely it behoves the legislature to prevent one part of them from rioting in wealth, and the other almost starving through poverty! Complaints, I know, have been made of the scantiness of our ecclesiastical revenues: but how this can be, when such a multiplicity of very lucrative preferments are daily heaped on a single person, is hard to imagine! A tolerably equitable distribution would, at once, silence every objection on this head, of any reasonable man.——Indeed, some very sensible persons have been against loading the public with the maintenance of the clergy, on account of several inconveniences attending it.——Heretofore, says *Milton*, in the first evangelic times (and it were happy for Christendom if it were so again) ministers of the Gospel were by nothing else distinguished from other christians, but by their spiritual knowledge and sanctity of life, for which the church elected them to be her teachers and overseers, though not thereby to separate them from whatever calling she then found them following besides. As the example of *St. Paul* declares, and the first times of christianity. When once they affected to be called a clergy, and became,

' as it were, a peculiar tribe of *Levites*, a party, a dis-  
 ' tinct order in the commonwealth, bred up for divines  
 ' in babling schools, and fed at the public cost, good  
 ' for nothing else, but what was good for nothing, they  
 ' soon grew idle; that idleness, with fulness of bread,  
 ' begat pride and perpetual contention with their feed-  
 ' ers, the despised laity, through all ages ever since, to  
 ' the perverting of religion, and the disturbance of all  
 ' Christendom. And we may confidently conclude, it  
 ' will never be otherwise, whilst they are thus upheld  
 ' undepending on the church, on which alone they an-  
 ' tiently depended, and are, by the magistrate, publicly  
 ' maintained, a numerous faction of indigent persons,  
 ' crept for the most part out of extrem want and bad  
 ' nurture, claiming, by divine right and freehold, the  
 ' tenth of our estates, to monopolize the ministry, as  
 ' their peculiar, which is free and open to all able  
 ' christians, elected by any church. Under this pre-  
 ' tence, exempt from all other employment, and en-  
 ' riching themselves on the public, they last of all prove  
 ' common incendiaries, and exalt their horns against  
 ' the magistrate himself that maintains them, as the  
 ' priest of *Rome* did soon after against his benefactor  
 ' the emperor, and the presbyters of late in *Scotland*.  
 ' Of which hireling crew, together with all the mis-  
 ' chiefs, dissensions, troubles, wars meerly of their  
 ' kindling, Christendom might soon rid herself and be  
 ' happy, if christians would but know their own dignity,  
 ' their liberty, their adoption, and let it not be wondered,  
 ' if I say, their spiritual priesthood, whereby they have all  
 ' equally access to any ministerial function, whenever  
 ' called by their own abilities, and the church, though  
 ' they never came near commencement or univer-  
 ' sity (e). Mr. *Wall*, in his fine letter to *Milton*, dated  
 ' *Causham*, May 26, 1659, has the following passage.  
 ' I have sometimes thought (concurring with your as-  
 ' sertion of that storied voice that should speak from  
 ' heaven)

(e) *Prose Works*, vol. i. p. 636.



war was not terminated, though the *Engl.*

*list*

‘ heaven) when ecclesiastics were endowed with worldly preferments, *Hodie venenum infunditur in ecclesiam*: for, to use the speech of *Genesis iv. ult.* according to the sense which it hath in the *Hebrew*, then began men to corrupt the worship of God. I shall tell you a supposal of mine, which is this: Mr. *Dary* has bestowed about thirty years time in travel, conference and writings, to reconcile *Calvinists* and *Lutherans*, and that with little or no success. But the *shortest way were*,—take away ecclesiastical dignities, honours and preferments, on both sides, and all would soon be hushed; the ecclesiastics would be quiet, and then the people would come forth into truth and liberty (f).’ These were the sentiments of some of the sons of liberty in the age of which I am now speaking: sentiments proceeding from minds full of concern for truth and virtue, though they had little prospect of being hearkened to by the bulk of mankind, who prefer wealth, pomp and ease to every thing rational, virtuous and manly.—The scheme of the parliament pretended not to this high perfection. It only suppress’d the dignity, state and excessive wealth of the lordly ecclesiastics, whilst it left them enough for every virtuous and laudable purpose, and prevented them from feeling the want of the real necessaries their stations were thought to require. Were I to deliver my own sentiments for the real good of ecclesiastics of all sorts and kinds, I would say with a late writer concerning the jesuits in particular; ‘ render them poor, and they will be humble; render them poor, and they will be useful; render them poor, and they will become holy (g).’ But to go on.—Besides the care taken of their parochial clergy, the parliament shewed their benevolence to the universities, by enacting, ‘ That the trustees, in whose hands the dean and chapter lands were vested for the use of the public, shall, from time to time, pay (out of the above-mentioned twenty thousand)

(f) Preface to Milton's Iconoclastes, 2d edit. Lond. 1756. 4to.

(g) Reflections of a Portuguese upon the Memorial presented by the Jesuits to Clement XIII. p. 152. 8vo. Lond. 1760.

lish, for the most part, were successful) the  
lord.

‘ two thousand pounds yearly, for the increase of the  
‘ maintenance of the masterships of colleges in both  
‘ universities, where maintenance is wanting, regard  
‘ being to be had unto the number of houses of learn-  
‘ ing in each university, that are fit to have an increase  
‘ of maintenance, and to make an assignment of main-  
‘ tenance unto them accordingly; provided it do not  
‘ exceed one hundred pounds *per annum* to any one of  
‘ them.’—This bounty was not ill bestowed. For  
never, perhaps, were there men of more real merit in  
the university of *Cambridge* than now. Witness the  
names of *Cudworth*, *Whitchett*, *Wilkins*, and many others  
mentioned by the very ingenious *Dr. Salter* (b), who edu-  
cated a race of men that were an honour to their coun-  
try; I mean *Tilletson*, *Barrow*, *Smith*, *More*, and such  
like, who opposed themselves to popery in the most try-  
ing times, and taught men the principles of true reli-  
gion and virtue. Whether *Oxford* was quite so happy,  
I know not; though, 'tis certain, many eminent men  
were educated there in these times, particularly *Mr.*  
*Locke*, whose writings on toleration and government  
will be for ever read and admired by men of sense and  
honesty.—What the sum total produced by the sale  
of the lands of the bishops, deans and chapters, amount-  
ed to, I cannot say.—But here follows an account  
of the sale of the bishops lands in the province of *York*,  
as given by *Mr. Broun Willis* (i).

(b) Preface  
to Tuck-  
ney's and  
Whitchett's  
Letters, 8vo.  
Lond. 1755.  
See also  
note (ccc).

(i) Survey  
of the Ca-  
thedrals of  
*York*, &c.  
4to. 1727.

lord-general *Cromwell*, attended by some soldiers

	<i>l.</i>	<i>s.</i>	<i>d.</i>
Sale of the lands of the see of <i>York</i> } in the years 1647, 1648, 1649, } 1650, 1651, - - - }	63786	7	1½
<i>Durham</i> , in the same years, - - -	68121	15	9
<i>Carlisle</i> , - - - - -	6449	11	2
<i>Chester</i> , - - - - -	1129	18	4
<i>Man</i> , - - - - -	0000	0	0
Total - - -	139487	12	4½

From this some tolerable guesses may be made of the value of the rest of the bishops lands, which are those of the province of *Canterbury*, consisting of that archbishopric and twenty one bishoprics.—A proposal, some years since, by a nameless writer, was made 'for vesting the whole present property of the church in *England* and *Ireland* in the crown, not to enrich or add to its power, but as a trustee for the people, who should be always uppermost in the consideration of all true lovers of their country (j).—Is it essentially necessary,' says that author, 'that bishops should have three, four, five, six, seven, eight, nine and ten thousand pounds a year? Is it necessary that an archbishop should die worth 90,000 *l.* besides providing very honourably for his family, in consequence of his power and influence? Is it necessary that one churchman shall enjoy a string of benefices, while numbers have none and starve? I am willing to suppose episcopacy to be an essential branch of the christian system; and therefore hold the order in all the veneration due to it. But I cannot bring myself to think that the Holy Ghost delights more to abide with them in coaches and palaces, and in parliament, than if they had abided by the primitive simple way of living, practised and inculcated by the apostles. I am no less willing that our prelates retain their seats in parliament,

(j) The State preferable to the Church, p. 12. 8vo. Lond. 1748.

diers and officers, entered the house, up-  
braided

ment, if it shall be thought that they have been always heretofore inspired with the spirit of truth and righteousness in their legislative capacity. But admitting, as I do very willingly, that our good lords the bishops add a lustre to the upper house, will they shine the less there for being placed more on the level with each other than they are at present? The poorest of them can afford clean lawn sleeves in their present situation; and if the two metropolitans should be levelled to an annual stipend of 1500*l.* each, and their respective suffragans to 1000*l.* I don't see but they might keep a coach in parliament time, notwithstanding the duty on carriage wheels, provided they reside with their flocks the rest of the year. Is it necessary that the bishoprics and other church-livings of *Ireland*, a cheap and plentiful country, should exceed even those in *England*? or, is it necessary, that, in the north of that kingdom, where there are scarce ten protestants of the episcopal church in a whole parish, many of the incumbents should possess livings of four, six, and eight hundred pounds a year? It is no uncommon sight in that country, to see a parson preach, I should say, read prayers, preaching being refused, to his clerk, and such of his own family as had accompanied him from the parsonage house in his coach and four. Though the value of livings in that kingdom be well known to our clergy, who are never wanting to themselves in pushing their way thither, where they bask in plenty and ease, it would seem as if our statesmen had acquired none or very little knowledge of the treasure that might be raised there by sale of the present possessions of the church. To mention but the primacy there, lately conferred on a very young churchman, but, I suppose, of distinguished piety and erudition, it would sell, at twenty years purchase only, for above 200,000*l.* no contemptible aid to a bleeding country, obliged to raise above  
ten



braided the members, turned the speaker

out

' ten millions annually, though already above four-score  
 ' in debt. From this specimen may be seen how great-  
 ' ly the trading and industrious part of the people, that  
 ' is, the laity, might be eased, if the revenues of the  
 ' church, tithes and all, were put to sale, and the  
 ' purchase money applied to the uses of the public.  
 ' And, surely, in a time of such danger and difficulty  
 ' as the present, no good subject can warrant opposing  
 ' the carrying so salutary a scheme into execution. 'Tis  
 ' probable our open foreign, and native secret enemies  
 ' might oppose such a healing scheme; but except the  
 ' *French* and *Spaniards* abroad, and our popish fellow-  
 ' subjects at home, I cannot persuade myself that it  
 ' would meet with the least opposition. Our protestant  
 ' laity would unanimously assent to it; and as for the  
 ' clergy, if their suffrages were taken collectively, I  
 ' will answer for it, the majority would be with <sup>(d) The</sup>  
 ' me (d).<sup>State, &c.</sup> Possibly this writer would have found him-  
 ' self mistaken; for, as there are but few of the inferior <sup>P. 14</sup>  
 ' clergy void of hope, founded on their belief of their own  
 ' merit, of preferment, these would not be 'overfond of  
 ' the scheme: and as for the dignified ones, they would  
 ' naturally, one and all, cry out against it, as a breach  
 ' of the alliance between church and state, which they  
 ' would fain persuade us is productive of many happy  
 ' consequences to society. The ignorant laity, for any  
 ' thing I know to the contrary, might be pleased with  
 ' the carrying such a scheme into execution.—After  
 ' this brief detail of the great actions of the parliament  
 ' at home and abroad, it is not to be admired that they  
 ' met with the applause of the ablest and best judges.  
 ' To what the reader will find in the note (NN) it will be  
 ' proper to add the opinion of the old chancellor *Oxen-*  
 ' *stiern* of *Sweden*, a name of the highest renown for po-  
 ' litical abilities in the age in which he lived, the same,  
 ' whose affairs we are now treating of. It is mentioned  
 ' from *M. Chanut*, both in the appendix to *Keyser's Travels*,

out of the chair (ww), and put an end, for the present, to the supream authority of the

vets, and in *Basnage's* Annals of the United-Provinces. *Oxenstiern* indeed blamed the extream barbarity committed on the person of the late King of *England*, but commended and admired almost every part of the plan of that great design which the parliament had formed.\* *Basnage* adds, 'that he said, it had been conducted with distinguished prudence, and that those who then governed in *England*, acted upon such principles of policy as were founded in truth and experience \*.'——Such readers as are unprejudiced, will not, after this, think, I am persuaded, that Mr. *Hume* has done justice to the parliament in the following character: 'These men, says he, had not that large thought, nor comprehensive views, which might qualify them for acting the part of legislators: selfish aims and bigotry chiefly engrossed their attention. They carried their rigid austerity so far as to enact laws, declaring fornication, after the first act, to be felony, without benefit of clergy (I).' Is this a likeness? Let facts determine.——Undoubtedly their law, with respect to fornication, was much too rigid. But, from a single instance, to take a character, is hardly allowable. To be able to see only one disagreeable object amongst several more fair and equally obvious; argues, indeed, to use this gentleman's own expressions, no large thought or comprehensive views.

——If ever men were qualified for acting the part of legislators, these were they.——And whoever will excel as such, must copy after them in the main of their conduct.

(ww) Cromwell entered the house, and put a period, for a time, to the commonwealth.] 'Many republicks,' says an excellent writer, 'have, with length of time,

(I) History of Great Britain, vol. ii. p. 52. Compare this with Ludlew, vol. ii. p. 453. and the quotation from Warburton in the note (xx).

\* See *Isiah Puffendorf's* Observations on the Resolution of the last Swedish diet, &c. in the Appendix to *Keyser's Travels*, vol. iv. p. 51. and *Basnage's* Annals of the United-Provinces, vol. i. p. 243.

the commonwealth of England. It is not to

fallen back into despotick governments. This seems to be a calamity that inevitably happens to every free government sooner or later. And, indeed, how can it perpetually resist every thing that saps and supplants? How can it always check the ambition of those great men whom it produces, and harbours in its bosom? How can it always watch against the dark and secret practices and machinations of its neighbours, or against the corruption of its own members, while interest prevails in the world over every other motive? How should it expect always to come off with success in the wars it must needs undertake and support for its security? or prevent those dangerous conjunctures, those critical and decisive moments, when its liberty is at stake, or those unforeseen accidents that animate and favour the wicked and audacious? If any armies are commanded by timid and unskilful generals, it falls a prey to any enemies; if they are headed by bold and successful commanders, these will be as dangerous in times of peace, as they were useful and beneficial during the war. There are few, if any republicks, but have risen from the abyss of tyranny to freedom, and from thence have sunk again into the dregs of servitude. The same Athenians, who, in the times of Demosthenes, provoked and insulted Philip of Macedon, crouched to Alexander. The Romans, who abhorred royalty, and expelled their kings, suffered, some ages after, the most horrible oppression and cruelties from their emperors. And the same Englishmen who rebelled against, imprisoned, and beheaded Charles I. submissively bore the galling yoke of a protector (m). I have already observed that the victory at Worcester, so fatal to the affairs of Charles II. probably inspired Cromwell with the ambition of lording it over his masters, and seizing the sovereignty. Flushed with success the brave and ambitious aspire higher and higher, and dare adventure

(m) Anti-Machiavel, p. 97. 8vo. Lond. 1741.

to be wondered that this action was looked  
 upon

on the boldest things. Hence the danger of continuing a general long in supream command, in free states. Immediately after this important event, *Cromwell* seemed determined to give the law. He used, however, great precaution. Though he had all possible honours paid him by the parliament and the city of *London*, yet he carried himself with much affability and seeming humility, and in all his discourses about the business of *Worcester*, would seldom mention any thing of himself, but of the gallantry of the officers and soldiers, and gave (as was due) all the glory of the action unto God (n).<sup>s</sup>—But, if we may believe *Ludlow*, this was meer affectation. He was, in reality, so much elevated with that success, that *Mr. Hugh Peters*, as he since told me, took so much notice of it, as to say in confidence to a friend upon the road, in his return from *Worcester*, that *Cromwell* would make himself king (o).<sup>s</sup> Indeed, very soon after his return to *London*, he desired a meeting with divers members of parliament, and some chief officers of the army, at the speaker's house; and a great many being there, he proposed to them, that now the old King being dead, and his son being defeated, he held it necessary to come to a settlement of the nation. And, in order thereunto, he had requested this meeting, that they together might consider and advise what was fit to be done, and to be presented to the parliament. The questions at this meeting were, in what way this settlement was desired, whether of an absolute republick, or with any mixture of monarchy? and, if the latter, in whom that power should be placed?—In this conference the lawyers were generally for a mix'd monarchical government, and many were for the Duke of *Gloucester* to be made King; but *Cromwell* still put off that debate, and came off to some other point; and, in conclusion, after a long debate, the company parted without coming to any result at all, only *Cromwell* dif-

(s) Whitlock, p. 59.

(o) Vol. ii. p. 447.



upon by the friends of the parliament as

bare

‘ discovered by this meeting the inclinations of the persons that spake, for which he fished, and made use of what he then discerned (p).’ In November, 1652, <sup>(p)</sup> *Whitlock*, p. 516. *Cromwell* met *Whitlock* in *St. James's Park*, and entered into a conference with him concerning the dangerous condition they were then in, and how to make good their station, as he expressed it.—After taking notice of the factions and murmurings of the army, their distaste against the parliament, whose actions he greatly censured, as well as many of their persons, and the impossibility of keeping them within the bounds of justice, law, or reason, as they were the supream power of the nation, and liable to no account or controul; he added, ‘ that, unless there be some authority and power so full and high, as to restrain and keep things in better order, and that may be a check to these exorbitances, it will be impossible in human reason to prevent our ruin.’ *Whitlock* spoke in vindication of the parliament, as much, I suppose, as he thought he might do with safety, and *Oliver* resting unsatisfied, he said, ‘ We ourselves have acknowledged them the supream power, and taken our commissions and authority in the highest concernments from them, and how to restrain and curb them after this, it will be hard to find out a way for it.’ Hereupon *Cromwell* plainly asked, ‘ What if a man should take upon him to be a king?’ One may, I think, fairly conclude from hence, that he had, for some time, thought of such a thing, and was determined to be master. *Whitlock* gave him honestly his advice against carrying such a project into execution, and proposed his treating with the King of *Scots* as the surest means to provide for his own and the nation's safety. *Cromwell* was not well pleased with the expedient, as *Whitlock* judged from his countenance and carriage, and therefore broke off, and went to other company (q). Possibly he was not wrong in rejecting the <sup>(q)</sup> *Id. p.* proposal.—The next month the scene began to open. <sup>518.</sup>

The

bafe and ingrateful, though *Oliver* attempted

3018-1010199

(r) Whitlock, p. 552.

' The parliament were very bufy in debate of feveral  
 ' acts of parliament under confideration, but very little  
 ' being brought to effect by them, the foldiers grum-  
 ' bled at their delays, and there began to be ill blood  
 ' between them; the general and his officers preffed  
 ' the putting a period to their fitting, which they pro-  
 ' mifed to do, but were flow in that bufinefs (r).' ' And  
 ' *Cromwell*, with the other grandees, now began to af-  
 ' fume to themfelves all the honour of the paff actions,  
 ' and of the conquefts by them atchieved; fcarce own-  
 ' ing the parliament and their affiftance and provifion  
 ' for them; but taxing and cenfuring the members of  
 ' parliament for injuftice, and delay of bufinefs, and for  
 ' feeking to prolong their power, and promote their pri-  
 ' vate intereft, and to fatisfy their own ambition. With  
 ' thefe and many others the like cenfures (continues my  
 ' author) they endeavoured to calumniate the parlia-  
 ' ment, and judge them guilty of thofe crimes whereof  
 ' themfelves were faulty, not looking into their own  
 ' actions, nor perceiving their own defaults; yet cen-  
 ' furing the actions and proceedings of the parliament  
 ' very opprobrioufly.—The drift of *Cromwell* and his  
 ' officers was to put an end to this parliament, which  
 ' many wondered at, and fought to diffuade him from it  
 ' upon all opportunities as far as it was thought conve-  
 ' nient, and that they might not appear defirous to con-  
 ' tinue their own power, and fitting in parliament,  
 ' whereof they had caufe to be fufficiently weary. Nei-  
 ' ther could it be clearly forefeen, that their defign was  
 ' to rout the prefent power, and to fet up themfelves;  
 ' againft the which they were advifed, as pulling down  
 ' the foundation of their own intereft and power, and  
 ' the way to weaken themfelves, and hazard both their  
 ' caufe and perfons. Yet ftill they feemed zealous  
 ' upon their common pretences of right and juftice  
 ' and publick liberty, to put a period to this parliament,  
 ' and that, if the parliament would not fhortly do it them-  
 ' selves,

selves, that then the soldiers must do it (s). — Accordingly, on the 20th of April, 1653, the parliament not having put a period to themselves immediately, as Cromwell had desired, he was so enraged thereat, that he commanded some of the officers of the army to fetch a party of soldiers, with whom he marched to the house, and led a file of musqueteers in with him; the rest he placed at the door of the house; and in the lobby before it. In this manner entering the house, he, in a furious manner, bid the speaker leave his chair, told the house, *that they had sat long enough, unless they had done more good; that some of them were whore-masters,* looking then towards Mr. Henry Martyn and Sir Peter Wentworth. That others of them were drunkards, and some corrupt and unjust men, and scandalous to the profession of the Gospel, and that it was not fit they should sit as a parliament any longer, and desired them to go away. The speaker not stirring from his seat, colonel *Harrison*, who sat near the chair, rose up and took him by the arm to remove him from his seat, which, when the speaker saw, he left the chair. Some of the members rose up to answer Cromwell's speech, but he would suffer none to speak but himself, which he did with so much arrogance in himself, and reproach to his fellow-members, that some of his privadoes were ashamed of it; but he and his officers and party would have it so: and, among all the parliament men, of whom many wore swords, and would sometimes brag high, not one man offered to draw his sword against Cromwell, or to make the least resistance against him; but all of them tamely departed the house. He bid one of the soldiers to *take away that fool's bauble,* the mace; and staid himself to see all the members out of the house, himself the last of them, and then caused the doors of the house to be shut up. Thus was this great parliament, which had done so great things, wholly at this time routed by those whom they had set up, and that took their commissions and authority from them; nor could they, in the least, justify any action they had done; or one drop of

Y

blood



blood they had spilt, but by this authority, yet  
 now the servants rose against the masters, and most  
 ingratelously, and disingenuously, as well as rashly and  
 imprudently, they dissolved that power by which them-  
 selves were created officers and soldiers; and now  
 they took what they designed, all power into their own  
 hands. All honest and prudent indifferent men were  
 highly distasted at this unworthy action.—Thus it  
 pleased God, that this assembly, famous through the  
 world for its undertakings, actions and successes, hav-  
 ing subdued all their enemies, were themselves over-  
 thrown and ruined by their servants; and those whom  
 they had raised, now pulled down their masters. An  
 example never to be forgotten, and scarce to be pa-  
 ralleled in any story, by which all persons may be  
 instructed how uncertain and subject to change all  
 worldly affairs are, how apt to fall when we think  
 them highest (t). To the above account from Mr.  
*Whitlock*, who is universally allowed to write impar-  
 tially, we must add that *Cromwell*, having interrupted  
 the parliament in the morning, came in the after-  
 noon to the council of state (who were assembled to  
 do their duty at the usual place) accompanied with  
 major-general *Lambert* and colonel *Harrison*, and told  
 them at his entrance, Gentlemen, if you are met  
 here as private persons, you shall not be disturbed;  
 but if as a council of state, this is no place for you;  
 and since you can't but know what was done at  
 the house in the morning, so take notice, that the  
 parliament is dissolved. To this serjeant *Bradshaw*  
 answered; Sir, we have heard what you did at the  
 house in the morning, and before many hours all  
*England* will hear it: but, Sir, you are mistaken to  
 think that the parliament is dissolved; for no power  
 under heaven can dissolve them but themselves; there-  
 fore take you notice of that. Something more was  
 said to the same purpose by Sir *Arthur Haselrig*, Mr.  
*Love*, and Mr. *Scot*; and then the council of state,  
 perceiving themselves to be under the same violence,  
 departed (u).—There is no account of this re-  
 markable day's transactions in the Journals. There was

(t) *Whit-*  
*lock*, p. 554.  
 and *Ludlow*,  
 vol. ii. p.  
 455.

(u) *Ludlow*,  
 vol. ii. p.  
 461.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

323

an entry of some kind or other made, but it was expunged by order of parliament, *January 7th, 1659.* In *Mercurius Politicus*, which was published by authority at that time, there is an article, dated *Westminster, April 20,* in the following words: 'The lord general delivered in parliament divers reasons wherefore a present period should be put to the sitting of this parliament; and it was accordingly done; the speaker and the members all departing. The grounds of which proceedings will (its probable) be shortly made publick.' Writers of Gazettes in all ages and countries are pretty much the same.—If the reader will turn to Mr. *Hume*, he may see this story of the dissolution of the parliament highly embellished (x). It may well enough be thought a transaction of this nature must have been variously censured. The common people, delighted with change, were far enough from being displeased; the Cavaliers and the other Royalists with pleasure saw those men displaced from that power they judged they had no right to assume; the *Dutch* were in hopes of obtaining peace on better terms than those steady and resolute men ever would willingly have given them; whilst the true Republicans could not help crying out on *Cromwell*, who had interrupted the parliament in their career of glory. Mr. *Whitlock's* censure we have just seen. Another author thus exclaims against him.—'His falseness and ingratitude, says he, appeared superlatively in turning out his masters, who had not only advanced him, but made themselves more odious by their partial affection towards him, and in his doing it with the breach of a positive negative oath, taken once a year, when made a counsellor of state, besides the breach of all other engagements, voluntary imprecations, protestations and oaths, taken frequently upon all occasions in discourse and declarations; and yet further (when he had turned them out, and left them void of protection, and exposed them to the fury of the people) in pursuing them with false reproachful declarations, enough to have stirred up the rude multitude to have destroyed them, wherever they had met them (y).'

(x) *History of Great Britain*, vol. ii. p. 44.

(y) *The World's mistake in Oliver Cromwell*, p. 15. 4to. Lond. 1668.

to justify it, as well as his apologists (xx). The grounds and reasons of this proceeding being

Mr. Ludlow talks much in the same strain. *Cromwell's* defence will be found in the following note.

(xx) Oliver attempted to justify it, as well as his apologists.] On the twenty-second of April, two days after the interruption or dissolution of the parliament, a declaration was published in the name of the lord-general and his council of officers, shewing the grounds and reasons thereof. In this the neglect of the parliament, in settling a due liberty in reference both to civil and spiritual things, is lamented, and a desire of perpetuating themselves in the supreme government asserted. 'For which purpose,' says the general and his officers, 'the corrupt party [the majority] long opposed, and frequently declared themselves against having a new representative: and when they saw themselves necessitated to take that bill into consideration, they resolved to make use of it to recruit the house with persons of the same spirit and temper: and the better to effect this, divers petitions preparing from several counties for the continuance of this parliament were encouraged, if not set on foot by many of them.'— They go on to say, 'That, having a meeting with about twenty members of parliament, they laid before them their judgment, that the supreme authority should be by the parliament devolved upon known persons, men fearing God, and of approved integrity, and the government of the commonwealth committed unto them for a time, as the most hopeful way to encourage and countenance all God's people, reform the law, and administer justice impartially.' This, it seems, found no acceptance: but, instead thereof, 'it was offered, that the way was to continue still this present parliament, as being that from which we might reasonably expect all good things. And this being vehemently insisted upon, did much confirm us in our apprehensions, that not any love to a representative,

ing published, they were approved by the chief

' sentative, but the making use thereof to recruit, and  
 ' so perpetuate themselves, was their aim. They be-  
 ' ing plainly dealt with about this, and told, that nei-  
 ' ther the nation, the honest interest, nor we ourselves,  
 ' would be deluded by such dealings, they did agree to  
 ' meet again the next day in the afternoon for mutual  
 ' satisfaction, it being consented to by the members  
 ' present, that endeavours should be used, that nothing  
 ' in the mean time should be done in parliament that  
 ' might exclude or frustrate the proposals above men-  
 ' tioned. Notwithstanding this, the next morning the  
 ' parliament did make more haste than usual, in carrying  
 ' on their said act, being helped on therein by some of  
 ' the persons engaged to us the night before; none of  
 ' them which were then present endeavouring to op-  
 ' pose the same: and being ready to put the main  
 ' question for consummating the said act, whereby  
 ' our aforesaid proposals would have been rendered  
 ' void; and the way of bringing them into a fair and  
 ' full debate in parliament obstructed; for preventing  
 ' whereof, and all the sad and evil consequences, which  
 ' must, upon the grounds aforesaid, have ensued, and  
 ' whereby, at one blow, the interest of all honest  
 ' men, and of this glorious cause, had been in danger  
 ' to be laid in the dust, and these nations embroiled  
 ' in new troubles, at a time when our enemies abroad  
 ' are watching all advantages against us, and some of  
 ' them actually engaged in a war with us: we have  
 ' been necessitated, though with much reluctance, to  
 ' put an end to this parliament; which yet we have  
 ' done (we hope) out of an honest heart, preferring  
 ' this cause above our names, lives, families, or inte-  
 ' rests, how dear soever; with clear intentions and real  
 ' purposes of heart, to call to the government persons  
 ' of approved fidelity and honest, believing, that as  
 ' none wise will expect to gather grapes of thorns, so  
 ' good men will hope, that, if persons so qualified be  
 ' chosen,

(x) Declaration of the Lord General, &c. London printed by Henry Hills and Thomas Bewster, printers to the army. 4to. 1653.

chosen, the fruits of a just and righteous reformation, so long prayed and wished for, will, by the blessing of God, be in due time obtained, to the refreshing of all those good hearts who have been panting after those things (x).—Mr. *Maidston*, steward of the household to *Cromwell*, a member of his parliaments, and well acquainted with his actions, speaking of his return to *London* from the victory at *Worcester*, adds, ‘He had not long continued here, before it was strongly impressed upon him by those, to whom he had no reason to be utterly incredulous, and strengthened by his own observation, that the persons then called the parliament of the commonwealth of *England*, as from whom he had derived his authority, and by virtue whereof he had fought so many holy men in *Scotland* into their graves, were not such as were spirited to carry the good interest to an end, wherein he and they had jeopardied all that was of concern to them in this world; and I wish cordially, that there had not been too great a ground for those allegations. The result of them, after many debates betwixt the members then sitting, and the general, with some who joined with him, was the dissolution of that parliament by a military force since called by a softer word, interruption (a).’—These were the pleas in the defence of the dissolution by those who had accomplished it. Since this others have taken up the argument, and in behalf of *Cromwell* observe, ‘That the presbyterian party being expelled the house, the small remainder was only a junto, which derived their authority from the power of the sword; their votes and acts were no farther laws than the sword constrained obedience to them; they were only continued in their seats by *Cromwell* for a present convenience; and therefore as they were only countenanced and supported by the power of the sword, which was then in the hands of *Cromwell*, they were to be looked upon as no other

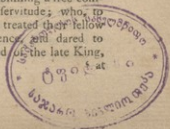
(a) *Therloc*, vol. i. p. 765.



the general thereupon proceeded to nominate  
 date

other than a party set up by him, and owing their au-  
 thority to him. So that when they began to extend  
 that authority beyond its limits, and assumed to them-  
 selves a democratical power in opposition to him from  
 whom they derived their subsistence, they were rather  
 rebels to *Cromwell*, than *Cromwell* to them; and as  
 he set them up in hopes that they might be serviceable  
 to him for the good of the nation, might pull them  
 down again, when he saw them exceeding their com-  
 mission. Now whether the design for the bringing of  
 which to pass, *Cromwell* fixed them in their seats *pro*  
*tempore*, were good or bad, is not the question: but  
 whether they who were no lawful authority, but only  
 acted under the safeguard of another unlawful autho-  
 rity, had power to make any act good or evil, as it  
 suited with their interest, or opposed their designs.  
 For if they had not, which is most probable, *Crom-*  
*well* is never a jot the more impious, the more per-  
 jured, the more villain, because they call him so.  
 For being a junto of his own erecting, upon such and  
 such considerations, he might without any fear of those  
 reproaches, send them a grazing when he found them  
 deviating from those ends for which he had suffered  
 them to keep their places (b).—Mr. *Ropin* is an  
 advocate on the same side of the question. 'The re-  
 publicans, says he, were enraged against *Cromwell*,  
 and deemed him the most perfidious of men. This is  
 not very strange, since he had wrested from that par-  
 liament the sovereign power, seized by these repub-  
 licans without any lawful authority. But what was  
 this parliament? It was an assembly of independents,  
 anabaptists, fanaticks, enthusiasts, and others of no  
 religion, who under colour of establishing a free com-  
 monwealth, held the nation in servitude; who, to  
 confirm their own authority, had treated their fellow  
 members with unheard of violence, and dared to  
 embroe their hands in the blood of the late King,

(b) Modest  
 Vindication  
 of Oliver  
 Cromwell,  
 p. 49.



nate a new council of state, and to call a

par-

‘ at a time when he had almost granted every thing  
 ‘ that was desired; who, in short, were industrious to  
 ‘ break the union of the church, to subvert all religion,  
 ‘ or introduce the most ridiculous and extravagant one.  
 ‘ Was it therefore more eligible for *England* to be go-  
 ‘ verned by these men, than by a *Cromwell* (c)?’ These  
 things are all easily spoken. But whoever will consider,  
 that *Cromwell* in this affair was destitute of the plea of  
 necessity and self-preservation; that he had received very  
 great favours from, and had actually sworn to be true  
 and faithful to the commonwealth, that he had approved  
 of their actions, and zealously concurred with them in  
 the most exceptionable of them; that he charges them  
 not with the ill things done, but only some good things  
 omitted, a charge to which every government on earth  
 is, and always will be liable: I say, whoever considers  
 these things, and withal calls to mind that they were  
 about to pass an act for their own dissolution, and for  
 the calling and settling of future and successive parlia-  
 ments (d), even at the time *Cromwell* used this force,  
 will, I am persuaded, not be over hasty in his justifica-  
 tion. Of this however the considerate and unpreju-  
 diced reader must be the judge.

Mr. *Harrington*, after censuring the form of govern-  
 ment of the commonwealth, ‘ as an oligarchy,’ be-  
 cause it was a ‘ council without a ballance,’ or as he  
 before expresses it, ‘ A parliament consisting of a single  
 ‘ assembly elected by the people, and invested with the  
 ‘ whole power of the government, without any cove-  
 ‘ nants, conditions or orders whatsoever.’ I say, after  
 thus censuring the form of that government, proceeds to  
 take notice of its dissolution by *Cromwell* in the follow-  
 ing terms: ‘ I come now to the army, says he, of  
 ‘ which the most victorious captain and incomparable  
 ‘ patriot *Olphaus Megaleter* was now general: who be-  
 ‘ ing a much greater master of that art, whereof I have  
 ‘ made a rough draught in these preliminaries, had so  
 ‘ sad

(c) *History*  
 of *England*,  
 vol. ii. p.  
 601. Fol.  
 Lond. 1733.

(d) *Journal*,  
 Ap. 13.  
 1653.

parliament. This was furnamed the Little,

† sad reflections upon the ways and proceedings of the  
 † parliament, as cast him upon books, and all other  
 † means of diversion, among which he happened upon  
 † this place of *Machiavel*: Thrice happy is that peo-  
 † ple which chances to have a man able to give them  
 † such a government at once, as without alteration may  
 † secure them of their liberties; seeing it is certain, that  
 † *Lacedemon*, in observing the laws of *Lycurgus*, conti-  
 † nued about eight hundred years without any dange-  
 † rous tumult or corruption. My lord general (as it is  
 † said of *Themistocles*, that he could not sleep for the  
 † glory obtained by *Miltiades* at the battle of *Maratbo*)  
 † took so new and deep impresson at these words of the  
 † much greater glory of *Lycurgus*, that being on this side  
 † assaulted with the emulation of his illustrious object,  
 † on the other with the misery of the nation, which  
 † seemed (as it were ruined by his victory) to cast her-  
 † self at his feet, he was almost wholly deprived of his  
 † natural rest, until the debate he had within himself  
 † came to a firm resolution, that the greatest advantages  
 † of a commonwealth are, first, that the legislator should  
 † be one man: and secondly, that the government  
 † should be made altogether, or at once. For the first,  
 † it is certain, saith *Machiavel*, that a commonwealth  
 † is seldom or never well turned or constituted, except  
 † it have been the work of one man: for which cause  
 † a wise legislator, and one whose mind is firmly set,  
 † not upon private but the publick interest, not upon his  
 † posterity but upon his country, may justly endeavour  
 † to get the sovereign power into his own hands; nor  
 † shall any man who is master of reason, blame such  
 † extraordinary means as in that case shall be necessary,  
 † the end proving no other, than the constitution of a  
 † well ordered commonwealth. The reason of this is  
 † demonstrable; for the ordinary means not failing, the  
 † commonwealth hath no need of a legislator; but the  
 † ordinary means failing, there is no recourse to be had  
 † but

(e) Commonwealth of Oceana, p. 49. Fol. Lond. 1656.

' but to such as are extraordinary (e). ' This was written, I suppose, to stimulate *Cromwell's* ambition, and excite him by the desire of real glory to establish a perfect commonwealth, and to ' launch immediately forth ' into an empire of laws.' But he had no such intention as this, and therefore cannot be entitled to this vindication. To come to a conclusion—Whatever crime the general was guilty of in this affair, it certainly was a proof of his superior ability. For, as *Dr. Warburton* observes, '*Cromwell* seemeth to be distinguished in the ' most eminent manner, with regard to his abilities, ' from all other great and wicked men, who have over- ' turned the liberties of their country. The times in ' which others succeeded in this attempt, were such as ' saw the spirit of liberty suppressed and stifled by a ' general luxury and venality: but *Cromwell* subdued ' his country, when this spirit was at its height, by a ' successful struggle against court-oppression; and while ' it was conducted and supported by a set of the greatest ' geniuses for government the world ever saw (f). ' What an idea is here given of the capacity of this extraordinary man! What an eulogium on his masters whom he displaced, and ruled over!

(f) Notes on Pope's Essay on Man, in his Works, vol. iii. p. 89. Lond. 8vo. 1751.

(YY) *He constituted a council of state, and summoned Barebone's parliament.*] The parliament being dissolved by *Cromwell*, no visible power was in being, but the soldiery. This must have been an alarming consideration. To prevent the ill effects of it, a declaration was set forth in the general's name in the following words: ' Whereas the parliament being dissolved, persons of ' approved fidelity and honesty, are (according to the ' late declaration of the 22d of April last) to be called ' from the several parts of this commonwealth to the ' supream authority; and although effectual proceedings ' are and have been had for perfecting these resolutions; ' yet some convenient time being required for the assembling of those persons, it hath been found necessary ' sary

the subject of ridicule, reproach and censure,  
from

‘ sary for preventing the said mischiefs and inconveni-  
 ‘ ces which may arise in the mean-while to the pub-  
 ‘ lick affairs, that a council of state be constituted, to  
 ‘ take care of, and intend the peace, safety and present  
 ‘ management of the affairs of this commonwealth:  
 ‘ which being settled accordingly, the same is hereby  
 ‘ declared and published, to the end all persons may  
 ‘ take notice thereof, and in their severall places and  
 ‘ stations demean themselves peaceably, giving obedi-  
 ‘ ence to the laws of the nation as heretofore: in the  
 ‘ exercise and administration whereof, as endeavours  
 ‘ shall be used, that no oppression or wrong be done to  
 ‘ the people, so a strict account will be required of all  
 ‘ such as shall do any thing to endanger the publick  
 ‘ peace and quiet upon any pretence whatsoever (g).’

This bears date *April 30, 1653.* In this high tone  
 spoke *Cromwell*, who now, having all power in his  
 hands, printed an order for the continuance of the as-  
 sessment for the payment of the army and the navy for  
 six months (b), after the rate of one hundred and twen-  
 ty thousand pounds a month, and issued out warrants  
 for several persons to appear at *Whitehall*, and receive  
 from him the supream power. In the Journal of the  
 house of commons, *July 4th, 1653,* we have the fol-  
 lowing account of the calling this assembly.—‘ Se-  
 ‘ veral letters having issued, under the hand and seal of  
 ‘ the lord general, directed unto divers persons, in this  
 ‘ form; Forasmuch as, upon the dissolution of the late  
 ‘ parliament, it became necessary that the peace, safety,  
 ‘ and good government of this commonwealth should  
 ‘ be provided for; in order whereunto, divers persons,  
 ‘ fearing God, and of approved fidelity and honesty,  
 ‘ are by myself, with the advice of my council of of-  
 ‘ ficers, nominated; to whom the great charge and trust  
 ‘ of so weighty affairs is, to be committed; and having  
 ‘ good assurance of the love to, and courage for God,  
 ‘ and interest for his cause, and of the good people of  
 ‘ this

(g) Mercurius Politicus, No. 151. p. 2410.

(b) Id. No. 157. p. 2506.

from men who knew little of its real character,

‘ this commonwealth : I, *Oliver Cromwell*, captain-general and commander in chief of all the armies and forces raised, and to be raised in this commonwealth, do hereby summon and require you  
 ‘ (being one of the said persons nominated) personally to be and appear at the council-chamber in *Whitehall*, within the city of *Westminster*, upon the fourth day of *July* next ensuing the date hereof, then and there to take upon you the said trust, unto which you are hereby called and appointed, to serve as a member for the county of \_\_\_\_\_ : and hereof you are not to fail. Given under my hand and seal the sixth day of *June*, 1653.

O. CROMWELL.

‘ This day there was a great appearance of those persons (to whom the letters were directed) in the council-chamber at *Whitehall*; when the lord-general declared unto them the grounds and end of calling them; and delivered unto them an instrument, in writing under his hand and seal; and afterwards left them.’ In the *Mercurius Politicus* there is an article from *Whitehall* of the same date, in which it is said, ‘ That the gentlemen that were called to the supreme authority, met, to the number of above one hundred and twenty, in the council-chamber, and being set round about the table, the lord-general standing by the window opposite to the middle of the table, and having as many of the army officers as the room could well contain, on his right hand and on his left; his lordship made a very grave, christian and reasonable speech, and exhortation to them; wherein he briefly recounted the many great and wondrous mercies of God towards this nation;—he set forth also the progress of affairs since the famous victory at *Worcester*, wherein that arch-enemy of this nation was wholly subdued. He likewise laid down the actings of the army thereupon,

rafter, or cared not what they said about

‘ upon, together with the grounds and necessity of their  
 ‘ dissolving the parliament, which his excellency de-  
 ‘ clared to be for the preservation of this cause, and the  
 ‘ interest of all honest men who have been engaged  
 ‘ therein. Moreover he very amply held forth the clear-  
 ‘ ness of the call given to the present members, to take  
 ‘ upon them the supream authority; and did from the  
 ‘ Scriptures exhort them to their duties, and encourage  
 ‘ them therein; desiring that a tenderness might be used  
 ‘ towards all godly and conscientious persons, of what  
 ‘ judgment, or under what form soever. Which being  
 ‘ ended, his lordship produced an instrument under his  
 ‘ own hand and seal, whereby he did, with the advice of  
 ‘ his officers, devolve and intrust the supream authority  
 ‘ and government of this commonwealth, into the hands  
 ‘ of the persons then met, who, or any forty of them,  
 ‘ are to be held and acknowledged the supream autho-  
 ‘ rity of the nation; unto whom all persons within the  
 ‘ same, and the territories thereunto belonging, are to  
 ‘ yield obedience and subjection. And they are not to  
 ‘ sit longer than the third of *November*, 1654. Three  
 ‘ months before their dissolution, they are to make  
 ‘ choice of other persons to succeed them, who are not  
 ‘ to sit longer than a twelvemonth, but it is left to  
 ‘ them to take care for a succession in government.  
 ‘ Which instrument being delivered to the persons afore-  
 ‘ said, his lordship commended them to the grace of  
 ‘ God (i).’——Mr. *Rous* was called to the chair in  
 this assembly, and it was ‘ Resolved that some members  
 of the house should be sent to the lord-general to desire  
 him to afford his presence and assistance in the house, as  
 a member thereof; *viz.* Sir *Anthony Ashley Cooper*, Sir  
*Gilbert Pickering*, Mr. *Strickland*, Colonel *Sidenham*,  
 Mr. *Mayer*, Mr. *Carew*, Colonel *Bennet*, Colonel *Jones*.  
 And the question being propounded, that Major-General  
*Lambert*, Major-General *Harrison*, Major-General  
*Desbrow*, and Colonel *Thomlinson*, be, and are hereby,

(i) *Mercuri-  
 us Politicus*,  
 No. 160. p.  
 2563. And  
*Thurloe*,  
 vol. i. p.  
 338.

it.—But they soon resigned the power  
back

(k) Journal.

called to sit as members of this house; it passed in the affirmative (k).—So oddly were the members of this parliament chosen!—Mr. *Maidstone*, speaking concerning them, says, ‘The lord-general by his authority, (which was but military) summons one hundred persons out of all parts of the nation (with competent indifferency and equality) to represent the nation, and invests them with legislative authority. They meet and accept it, assume the title of parliament, and sit in the house of commons, and enact sundry laws; but in a short time, made it appear to all considering and unprejudiced men, that they were *buic negotio impares, non obstante* their godliness; of which the more judicious of them being sensible, contrived the matter so as to dissolve themselves by an act of their own, and resolve their authority, whence they first derived it, upon the general (l).’ *Cromwell’s* own account of the proceedings of these men is severe enough, though it be not expressed in the clearest manner. ‘It was thought then, says he, that men of our judgment, that had fought in the wars, and were all of a piece upon that account, why surely these men will hit it, and them men will do it to the purpose whatever can be desired, truly we did think, and I did think so, the more to blame of, and such a company of men were chose and did proceed in action, and truly this was the naked truth, that the issue was not answerable to the simplicity and honesty of the design. What the issue of that meeting would have been, and was feared, upon which the sober men of that meeting did withdraw, and came and returned my power as far as they could, they did actually the greater part of them into my own hands, professing and believing that the issue of that meeting would have been the subversion of your laws, and of all the liberties of this nation, the destruction of the ministers of this nation. In a word, the confusion of all things,

and

(l) Thurloe,  
vol. i. p.  
765.



back into his hands, and thereby gave him

‘ and instead of order, to set up the judicial law of  
 ‘ *Moses*, in abrogation of all our administrations, to  
 ‘ have been administered the judicial law of *Moses, pro*  
 ‘ *hic & nunc*, according to the wisdom of any man that  
 ‘ would have interpreted the text, this way or that <sup>(m) Speech,</sup>  
 ‘ way (m).’—Lord *Clarendon* assures us, ‘ That there <sup>Ap. 21,</sup>  
 ‘ were amongst them divers of the quality and degree <sup>1657.</sup>  
 ‘ of gentlemen, and who had estates, and such a pro-  
 ‘ portion of credit and reputation, as could consist with  
 ‘ the guilt they had contracted. But much the major  
 ‘ part of them consisted of inferiour persons, of no  
 ‘ quality or name, artificers of the meanest trades,  
 ‘ known only by their gifts in praying and preaching,  
 ‘ which was now practised by all degrees of men, but  
 ‘ scholars, throughout the kingdom. In which num-  
 ‘ ber, that there may a better judgment be made of  
 ‘ the rest, it will not be amiss to name one, from whom  
 ‘ that parliament itself was afterwards denominated,  
 ‘ who was *Praise-God* (that was his christian name)  
 ‘ *Barebone*, a leather-feller in *Fleetstreet*, from whom (he  
 ‘ being an eminent speaker in it) it was afterwards called  
 ‘ *Praise-God Barebone’s* \* parliament. In a word, they  
 ‘ were generally a pack of weak senseless fellows, fit  
 ‘ only to bring the name, and reputation of parliaments, <sup>(n) Vol. vi.</sup>  
 ‘ lower than it was yet (n).’ *Mr. Hume* speaks with <sup>P. 482.</sup>  
 like contempt of this assembly, and is as severe as *Clarendon*  
 himself in his account of their proceedings.—  
 His lordship afterwards adds, ‘ And these men thus

\* Sir Anthony Ashley Cooper was much more eminent and active; as appears from the journals. From his transactions in this and Cromwell’s after parliaments, Dryden took occasion to characterize him in his early years as—

A vern-in, wriggling in th’ usurper’s ear;  
 Bart’ring his venal wit for fums of gold,  
 He cast himself into the saint-like mould;  
 Groan’d, sigh’d and pray’d, while godliness was gain;  
 The loudest baggage of the squeaking train.

MR DAN.

‘ brought

an opportunity of assuming and exercising

' brought together, continued in this capacity near six  
 ' months, to the amazement, and even mirth of the  
 ' people. In which time they never entered into any  
 ' grave and serious debate, that might tend to any set-  
 ' tlement, but generally expressed great sharpness against  
 ' all learning, out of which they thought the clergy  
 ' had grown, and still would grow. There were now  
 ' no bishops for them to be angry with; they had al-  
 ' ready reduced all that order to the lowest distress.  
 ' But their quarrel was against all who had called them-  
 ' selves ministers, and who, by being called so, re-  
 ' ceived tythes, and respect from their neighbours.  
 ' They looked upon the function itself to be antichri-  
 ' stian, and the persons to be burthensome to the peo-  
 ' ple, and the requiring and payment of tythes to be  
 ' absolute *Judaism*, and they thought fit they should be  
 ' abolished together; and that there might not for the  
 ' time to come be any race of people who might re-  
 ' vive those pretences, they proposed that all lands be-  
 ' longing to the universities, and colleges in those uni-  
 ' versities, might be sold, and the monies that should  
 ' arise thereby, be disposed for the publick service, and  
 ' to ease the people from the payment of taxes and con-  
 ' tributions (o). This is very virulent as usual; and as  
 ' usual has a great mixture of falshood. Many of *Crom-  
 well's* after councellers were in this assembly, such as  
 ' Sir *Anthony Ashley Cooper*, Mr. *Strickland*, Sir *Charles  
 Wolfely*: many of the chief officers of the army and  
 ' navy, as *Blake*, *Moncke*, *Montagu*, afterwards Earl of  
 ' *Sandwich*, besides the general and other officers men-  
 ' tioned above. What mirth they afforded I know not.  
 ' They were treated as the supream authority of the na-  
 ' tion, and had the most humble applications made to  
 ' them from the chief cavaliers, such as the Earl of *Wor-  
 cester*, the Earl and Countess of *Derby*, the Lord *Manf-  
 field*, the Earl of *Sbrewsbury*, and many others, whose  
 ' petitions are mentioned in the Journals; not to take

(o) Vol. vi.  
p. 434.

the supream power of the nation, under the

title

notice of their being solemnly addressed to by sovereign princes, and their sending ambassadors abroad: whether they ever entered into any grave or serious debate which might tend to a settlement, the reader will be able to judge, when he is informed, that for the right ordering and settling of the business of the house, they appointed committees for the affairs of *Ireland* and *Scotland*; for the law; the army; for inspecting the treasuries, and regulating of officers and salaries; for the business of trade and corporations; for the poor, and regulating commissions of the peace; for considering of public debts, and to receive accusations of bribery, public frauds, and breach of public trust; and for *the advancement of learning* (p). And whoever will look into their journals will find that they were employed about points of the highest national concernment, such as the abolishing the court of chancery on account of its expensiveness and delays; the forming a new body of the law; the uniting *Scotland* with *England*, regulating marriages, and vesting the solemnization and cognizance of them in the civil magistrate; together with other things of moment. It no way appears that they intended to set up the judicial law of *Moses*, or sell the lands belonging to the universities, and therefore the imputation of such intentions to them, must be deemed unjust and abusive. Tythes \* from the beginning had engaged their attention; but that they had no design to abolish them, is plain from the following report made by Mr. *Sadler*, a few days before their resignation, from the committee for tythes — Resolved, ' That it be

\* In the manuscript, belonging formerly to colonel Saunders, quoted in note (as), it is proposed, ' That tythes be wholly taken away, the parishioners from whom they are due, paying in lieu thereof to the state where they are not appropriate, and to the owners where they are, moderate and certain rent-charge out of their lands: the ministers to be maintained, either by the voluntary contributions of such as desire to hear them, or else by some settled pensions out of the public treasury.'

' presented to the parliament, that all such as are or  
 ' shall be approved for publick preachers of the Gospel  
 ' in the publick meeting places, shall have and enjoy  
 ' the maintenance already settled by law; and such  
 ' other encouragement, as the parliament hath already  
 ' appointed, or hereafter shall appoint: and that where  
 ' any scruple payment of tythes, the three next jus-  
 ' tices of the peace, or two of them, shall, upon com-  
 ' plaint, call the parties concerned before them; and,  
 ' by the oaths of lawful witnessess, shall duly apportion  
 ' the value of the said tythes, to be paid either in mo-  
 ' ney, or land by them to be set out according to the  
 ' said value, to be held and enjoyed by him that was  
 ' to have the said tythes: and in case such apportioned  
 ' value be not duly paid, or enjoyed, according to the  
 ' order of the said justices, the tythes shall be paid in  
 ' kind, and shall be recovered in any court of record.  
 ' Upon hearing and considering what hath been offer-  
 ' ed to this committee touching propriety in tythes of  
 ' incumbents, rectors, possessors of donatives, or pro-  
 ' priate tythes, it is the opinion of this committee, and  
 ' resolved to be so reported to the parliament, that the  
 ' said persons have a legal propriety in tythes (q).<sup>g</sup> So  
 ' that a regulation in tythes we see was the thing intend-  
 ' ed, which yet raised a clamour against, and fixed a cha-  
 ' racter on this parliament, as enemies to the ministry,  
 ' to learning, and every thing valuable in society. Such  
 ' is the hatred of ecclesiastics against all who would reform  
 ' their laws and customs, however unjust and tyrannical.  
 ' 'Tis not forgotten how zealous these men were against  
 ' the Quakers tythe bill in the year 1736. A bill founded  
 ' on strict justice and perfect equity, and opposed through  
 ' interest, prejudice, or worse views, as was then shewn,  
 ' to a demonstration, in one of the best written tracts of  
 ' the age, by Lord *Hervey* (r).—The parliament soon  
 ' after resigned back their power into the hands of *Crom-*  
 ' *well*. The account given of it in the Journals is as  
 ' fol-

(q) Journal,  
 Dec. 2,  
 1653.

(r) Answer  
 to the Coun-  
 try Parson's  
 Plea against  
 the Quakers  
 Tythe Bill,  
 2vo Lond.  
 1736.

wealth of *England, Scotland and Ireland*,  
The

follows: *Munday, 12th of December, 1653.* 'It being moved in the house this day, that the sitting of this parliament any longer, as now constituted, will not be for the good of the commonwealth; and that therefore it was requisite to deliver up unto the lord general *Cromwell* the powers which they received from him; and that motion being seconded by several other members; the house rose: and the Speaker, with many of the members of the house, departed out of the house to *Whitehall*; where they, being the greater number of the members sitting in parliament, did, by a writing under their hands, resign unto his excellency their said powers: and Mr. Speaker, attended with the members, did present the same to his excellency, accordingly.' The following extract from a letter of *Buffy Mansel, Esq;* one of the members of this parliament, to his brother *Edward Pritchard, Esq;* will give us a clearer idea of this affair. 'Since I writ my last to you, and some days before, wee were about a report from the committee of tieths, about sending commissioners to the severall circuits to cast out all that they judged to be unfit to be ministers, and to put in all they judged to be fit upon the last day of the weeke. This power and its appurtenances came to the question, and it was carried in the negative. Hereupon those gentlemen, that were for the report, came sooner than their usual hower upon *Munday* to the house, and there spoke of the unlikelihood of doing good, and instanced in severall things, that they judged evill, that was don; and therefore desired that they would goe, and returne that power they had from whence they received it; and thereupon about forty; and the Speaker went to the generall, and did accordingly. Twenty seven staid in the house a little time speaking to one another, and going to speak to the Lord in prayer, coll. *Goff* and liet. coll. *White* came into the house, and desired them that were there

(s) Thurlot,  
vol. i. P.  
637.

' to come out. Some answered, that they were there  
 ' by a call from the generall, and would not come out  
 ' by their desire, unless they had a command from him.  
 ' They returned noe answer, but went out, and fetched  
 ' two files of musquetiers, and did as good as force them  
 ' out; amongst whom I was an unworthy one (s). —  
*Ludlow*, speaking of this resignation, attributes it to  
 the ambition and artifice of *Cromwell* in the following  
 words: ' The perfidious *Cromwell* having forgot his  
 ' most solemn professions and former vows, as well as  
 ' the blood and treasure that had been spent in this con-  
 ' test, thought it high time to take off the masque, and  
 ' resolved to sacrifice all our victories and deliverances  
 ' to his pride and ambition, under colour of taking  
 ' upon him the office as it were of a high constable,  
 ' in order to keep the peace of the nation, and to re-  
 ' strain men from cutting one another's throats. One  
 ' difficulty yet remained to obstruct his design, and that  
 ' was the convention, which he had assembled and in-  
 ' vested with power, as well as earnestly solicited to re-  
 ' form the law, and reduce the clergy to a more evan-  
 ' gelical constitution. And having sufficiently alarmed  
 ' those interests, and shown them their danger from the  
 ' convention, he informs them farther, that they can-  
 ' not be ignorant of the confusion that all things are  
 ' brought into by the immoderate zeal of those in au-  
 ' thority, and to what extremities matters might be re-  
 ' duced, if permitted to go on; possibly, said he, to  
 ' the utter extirpation of law and gospel from amongst  
 ' us; and therefore advised that they would join their  
 ' interests to his, in order to prevent this inundation.  
 ' His proposition was readily embraced by the corrupt  
 ' part of the lawyers and clergy, and so he became their  
 ' protector, and they the humble supporters of his ty-  
 ' ranny. But that his usurpation might seem less hor-  
 ' rid, he so contrived it by his instruments, that some  
 ' of the convention must openly manifest their disap-  
 ' pro-

ment will deserve (zz) the attention of the curious

‘probation of their own proceedings, and under divers specious pretences put a period to their sitting (t).’—— (t) Vol. ii. p. 471.  
 ‘When the instrument of resignation signed as above mentioned in the journal, was brought to Cromwell, ’tis said he lifted up his eyes with astonishment; and, with no less seeming modesty refused to receive it; but, at length, through the importunity of major-general Lambert and others, representing to him that the welfare of the nation absolutely required his acceptance of the parliament’s resignation, he thought fit to comply with their request.’——Cromwell indeed in a speech made to the ensuing parliament, September 12, 1654, positively affirms in the most solemn manner, ‘That

‘he was so far from having any hand in this project, that he was an absolute stranger to the design, till the Speaker, with the major part of the house, came to him with the instrument of their resignation (u).’—— (u) Parliamentary History, vol. xx. p. 244. In this vol. is the completest account of this Parliament extant.  
 For my own part, I much doubt of the strict truth of this. Can it be supposed that his creatures and favourites would have ventured on such a thing without being satisfied of his approbation? Or that the officers would have dared to bring in a file of musquetiers, and in a manner force the non-resigners out of the house, if they had not been well assured that it would be acceptable to him?——But be this as it may, the lord general having the power of the nation thus formally resigned up into his hands, he embraced the opportunity of exercising it in his own name, in order to preserve the peace and secure the laws and religion of the nation as he professed, though possibly the lust of sway might have some small influence on his determination\*.

(zz) *The grounds and reasons of this new settlement deserve attention.*] Cromwell having accepted the parliament’s

Z 3

ment’s

\* Mr. Hume, in order I suppose to divert the readers, on mentioning Praise-God Barebone, has informed them, that ‘It was usual for the pretended Saints at this time to change their names from Henry, Edward,

ment's instrument of resignation, called a council of officers and others, who after several days consultation, resolved that a council should be named, to consist not of more than 21, nor less than 13 persons, and that the general should be chosen lord protector of the three nations. On the 16th of December, 1653, *Oliver* with great pomp was inaugurated in *Westminster-Hall*, after having first solemnly sworn to an instrument of government prepared by his council, and others. It is well drawn, and shews much judgment. By it the supreme legislative authority of the commonwealth was placed in one person, and the people assembled in parliament; but the executive was to be in the lord protector, assisted with a council, who should dispose of all magistracy and honor, and have the power of pardons and benefit of forfeitures. In him likewise, with consent of parliament when sitting, was vested the power of the militia, and forces by sea and land, as well as the prerogative of making war and peace. So that *Cromwell*, who by this instrument was constituted lord protector, was in a manner vested with the old real rights of the *English Kings*, and had the authority conferred on him. But that provision might be made for the people, and their benefit and advantage consulted, it was declared,

\* ward, Anthony, Willism, which they regarded as Heathenish, into others more sanctified and godly: even the new Testament names James, Andrew, &c. were not held in such regard as those borrowed from the Old Testament, Hezekiah, Habbakuk, Joshua, Zorobabel. Sometimes a whole godly sentence was adopted for a name.\* In proof of this he gives a list of names of a jury in the county of Suffex about this time, on the authority of one Broms, an obscure and inconsiderable writer. This gentleman, however, should have known that this practice, (not of changing their names, as he supposes, but of giving sanctified and godly ones to their children) how ridiculous soever, was in use long before these times; and also that it was not more common then, than it had before been. Camden\* would have informed him of the one, and the great variety of lists of names still remaining in Thurloe, Scobel, and other collectors, of the other.

\* Camden's Remains, p. 42. 4to. Lond. 1629.



ver the protector might have been in the acquisition

‘ That the laws should not be altered, suspended, abrogated, or repealed, or any new law made, nor any tax, charge, or imposition laid upon the people, but by common consent in parliament.’ Triennial parliaments were also ordained; a new representative, in proportion to the contributions of the respective counties towards the public expence, to the number of 400, together with 30 for *Scotland*, and the like number for *Ireland*, enacted; and bills passed in parliament declared to have the force of laws, twenty days after they should be offered to the protector, though his assent was refused. These and many other particulars in favour of the people, are to be found in the instrument of government, by which it plainly appears that despotism was far enough from being the intention of *Cromwell* and his officers. It must not be omitted, that ‘ A constant yearly revenue was ordained to be raised for maintaining 10,000 horse, and 20,000 foot in *England*, *Scotland* and *Ireland*, for the defence and the security thereof, and also for a convenient number of ships for guarding of the seas; besides 200,000 *l. per annum*, for defraying the other necessary charges of administration of justice, and other expences of the government; which revenue was to be raised by the customs, and such other ways and means, as should be agreed upon by the lord protector and the council, and was not to be taken away or diminished, nor the way agreed upon for raising the same altered, but by the consent of the lord protector and the parliament. He was invested also with a power, till the meeting of the first parliament, to raise money for the purposes aforesaid; and also to make laws and ordinances for the peace and welfare of these nations, where it should be necessary; which should be binding and in force, until order should be taken in parliament concerning the same.’

quisition of his high office; or how wick-

edly

On *Cromwell's* death, a protector was to be elected by the council.—This was a bait for the grandees\*. —It may well enough be thought such a change in the government as this could not happen without censure. The army party were, for the most part, addicted to a commonwealth, and many of the most able men in the nation were of the same judgment. These thought they had in vain abolished kingship, if one man must rule over them under what name or title soever, and they could not without indignation, behold a man so greatly elevated above them, whom they had so lately seen their equal or inferiour. Nor did they refrain asking who made him protector? or what right he had to the supream power? It was to these kind of men *Cromwell* endeavoured to justify himself, and thereby to soften their prejudices, and obtain their concurrence in his views for his own and the nation's glory. See with what art he talks to them in the following passages — ‘ I received this resignation [the late parliament's] says he, having formerly used my endeavours and persuasions to keep them together; observing their differences, I thought it my duty to give advice to them, that so I might prevail with them for union: but it had the effect I told you, and I had my disappointment. When this was so, we were exceedingly to seek how to settle things for the future. My power again, by this resignation, was as boundless and unlimited as before; all things being subjected to arbitrariness, and myself a person having power over the three nations, boundlessly and unlimited; and upon the matter, all government dissolved, all civil administrations at an end, as will be presently made appear. The gentlemen that

\* But when Oliver's sovereignty was more firmly established, we find in the humble petition and advice of the parliament in 1656, the power of appointing and declaring a person to succeed in the government, was invested in himself alone.

edly soever he acquired it, (for his admir-

' undertook to frame this government, did consult di-  
 ' vers days together (they being of known integrity and  
 ' ability) how to frame somewhat that might give us  
 ' settlement; and they did so: and that I was not privy  
 ' to their councils, they know it. When they had fi-  
 ' nished their model in some measure, or made a very  
 ' good preparation of it, it became communicative.  
 ' They told me, that except I would undertake the go-  
 ' vernment, they thought things would hardly come to  
 ' a composure and settlement; but blood and confusion  
 ' would break in upon us. I denied it again and again,  
 ' as God and those persons know; not complimenting-  
 ' ly, as they also know, and as God knows. I confess,  
 ' after many arguments, and after the letting of me  
 ' know that I did not receive any thing that put me  
 ' into any higher capacity than I was in before; but  
 ' that it limited me, and bound my hands to act nothing  
 ' to the prejudice of those nations, without consent of  
 ' a council, until the parliament, and then limited by  
 ' the parliament, as the act of government expresseth,  
 ' I did accept it. I might repeat this again to you, if  
 ' it were needful; but I think I need not. I was ar-  
 ' bitrary in power, having the armies in the three na-  
 ' tions under my command; and truly not very ill be-  
 ' loved by them, nor very ill beloved then by the peo-  
 ' ple, by the good people; and I believe I should have  
 ' been more, if they had known the truth, as things  
 ' were before God, and in themselves, and before di-  
 ' vers of those gentlemen whom I but now mentioned  
 ' unto you. I did at the intreaty of divers persons of  
 ' honour and quality, at the intreaty of very many of  
 ' the chief officers of the army then present, and at their  
 ' request, I did accept of the place and title of protec-  
 ' tor; and was in the presence of the commissioners of  
 ' the great seal, the judges, the lord mayor and alder-  
 ' men of the city of *London*; the soldiery, divers gen-  
 ' tlemen, citizens, and divers other people and persons  
 ' of

ers confess he had faults, and pretend not

wholly

of quality, &c. accompanied to *Westminster Hall*, where I took my oath to this government. This was not done in a corner; it was open and publick. This government hath been exercis'd by a council, with a desire to be faithful in all things; and, amongst other trusts, to be faithful in calling this parliament.—

This is a narrative that discovers to you the series of providence, and of transactions leading me into this condition wherein I now stand (x). In another of his speeches, he declares, 'He undertook the protec-

torship, not so much out of hope of doing any good, as out of a desire to prevent mischief and evil; and he compares his station to that of a good constable, to keep the peace of the parish (y).—This renders probable what *Burnet* relates concerning his speeches to the republican enthusiasts, with whom he had been closely connected, and of whom he had availed himself in his rise to greatness.—

It was no easy thing, says he, for *Cromwell* to satisfy those, when he took the power into his own hands; since that looked like a step to kingship, which [*Solm*] *Goodwin* had long represented as the great antichrist, that hindered Christ's being set on the throne. To these he said, and as some have told me, with many tears, that he would rather have taken a shepherd's staff than the protectorship, since nothing was more contrary to his genius than a shew of greatness: but he saw it was necessary at that time to keep the nation from falling into extremum disorder, and from becoming open to the common enemy: and therefore he only slept in between the living and the dead, as he phras'd it, in that interval, till God should direct them on what bottom they ought to settle: and he assured them, that then he would surrender the heavy load lying upon him, with a joy equal to the sorrow with which he was affected while under that shew of dignity.'

This

(x) Parliamentary History, vol. xx. P. 355.

(y) Speech at Whitehall, Ap. 23. 1657.

(z) Burnet, vol. i. p. 204.

## OLIVER CROMWELL.

347  
 141000000  
 0100000000

wholly to exculpate him) yet certain it is,

he

This was all very artful, and probably had its intended effect.

*Cromwell* in the foregoing speech talks of his having, on the dissolution of the parliament, power over the three nations, boundless and unlimited. This must suppose that he thought he had conquered all, or that all were subject to his rule and command. A strange doctrine! His country might well have cried out, 'Are we then so unhappy as to be conquered by the person, whom we hired-at a daily rate, like a labourer, to conquer others for us? Did we furnish him with arms only to draw and try upon our enemies, and keep them for ever sheathed in the bowels of his friends? Did we fight for liberty against our prince, that we might become slaves to our servant?—The right of conquest can only be exercised upon those against whom the war is declared, and the victory obtained. So that no whole nation can be said to be conquered but by a foreign force. In all civil wars, men are so far from stating the quarrel against their country, that they do it only against a person or party which they really believe, or at least pretend to be pernicious to it; neither can there be any just cause for the destruction of a part of the body, but when it is done for the preservation and safety of the whole. 'Tis our country that raises men in the quarrel, our country that arms, our country that pays them, our country that authorizes the undertaking, and that distinguishes it from rapine and murder. Lastly, 'tis our country that directs and commands the army, and is indeed their general. So that to say in civil wars that the prevailing party conquers their country, is to say the country conquers itself. And if the general only of that party be the conqueror, the army by which he is made so, is no less conquered than the army which is beaten, and have as little reason to triumph in that victory, by which they lose both their honour and liberty.

he rivaled the greatest of the *English* monarchs

(a) Cow-  
ley's Dis-  
course con-  
cerning Oli-  
ver Crom-  
well, p. 80.

(b) Id. p. 82.

(c) London,  
printed for  
Thomas  
Newcomb,  
1654.

' berty. So that if *Cromwell* conquered any party, it  
' was only that against which he was sent, and what  
' that was must appear by his commission (a).' As to  
the distracted state of affairs, by reason of the dissolu-  
tion of the government, and the tendency all things had  
to confusion, Mr. *Cowley*, with his usual spirit, says,  
' The government was broke; Who broke it? It was  
' dissolved; Who dissolved it? It was extinguished;  
' Who was it but *Cromwell*, who not only put out the  
' light, but cast away even the very snuff of it? As if  
' a man should murder a whole family, and then pos-  
' sels himself of the whole house, because 'tis better  
' that he, than that only rats should live there (b).'

However, though *Cromwell* probably was blameworthy  
for turning out his masters and dissolving the govern-  
ment, yet as things were, there seems to have been  
hardly any remedy so ready at hand for the establishment  
of peace and order, as his assuming the sovereignty,  
and exerting the power he had got into his hands for the  
good and benefit of the three nations. All other power,  
through his means indeed, was extinguished; but there  
was a necessity for some sovereignty or other to be erect-  
ed, that men might not be forced upon new civil wars.  
And who but *Cromwell* was capable of this? Who so  
fit, in his own eye at least, to exercise it?—But let  
us attend to the reasons which were given by the pro-  
tector's order, or at least approbation, for this new set-  
tlement. They are contained in a small tract, intitled  
' A true state of the case of the commonwealth of  
*England*, &c. in reference to the late established govern-  
ment, by a Lord Protector and parliament (c).'

—After having spoken concerning the various transactions during  
the war; the consequences thereof; the authority and  
government of the long parliament; the carriage and  
resignation of the next chosen; and severely censured  
many of the principles professed by some of its mem-  
bers: it goes on to say, ' Wherefore upon these, and  
' divers

narchs in glory, and made himself courted

and

' divers considerations, it was agreed to come to some such  
 ' solid and certain course of settlement, as might hereafter  
 ' bar up the way against those manifold inconveniences,  
 ' which we have felt under other fleeting forms, and re-  
 ' duce us (as near as may be, with most convenience)  
 ' to our antient way of government by supream magi-  
 ' strates and parliaments. And of this nature is the  
 ' form now established, and already made publick. But  
 ' to the end this may be made clear and manifest, we  
 ' shall in the next place discourse somewhat concerning  
 ' it in general, and then descend to particulars. In ge-  
 ' neral, we say; that as this last change hath been made  
 ' upon the same grounds of reason and equity, that ne-  
 ' cessitated all foregoing changes in the outward forms,  
 ' and was admitted of absolute necessity to save a sink-  
 ' ing nation out of the gulph of misery and confusion,  
 ' caused by the changeable counsels and corrupt interest  
 ' of other men, who violated their principles, and brake  
 ' the trust committed to them: so none of those former  
 ' alterations did so truly make good, or so fully provide  
 ' for the security of those great ends of religion and li-  
 ' berty, which were as the blood and spirits running  
 ' through every vein of the parliament and army's de-  
 ' clarations; so that though the commonwealth may  
 ' now appear with a new face in the outward form,  
 ' yet it remains still the same in substance, and is of a  
 ' better complexion and constitution than heretofore.  
 ' And if we take a survey of the whole together, we  
 ' find the foundation of this government laid in the peo-  
 ' ple. Who hath the power of altering old laws, or  
 ' making new? The people in parliament; without  
 ' them nothing of this nature can be done; they are to  
 ' be governed only by such laws as they have chosen,  
 ' or shall chuse, and not to have any imposed upon  
 ' them. Then who is to administer or govern accord-  
 ' ing to those laws, and see them put in execution?  
 ' Not a person claiming an hereditary right of sove-  
 ' reignty,

'reignty, or power over the lives and liberties of the  
 'nation by birth, allowing the people neither right nor  
 'liberty, but what depends upon royal grant and plea-  
 'sure, according to the tenor of that prerogative chal-  
 'lenged heretofore by the Kings of *England*; under  
 'whom, if the commonalty enjoyed any thing they  
 'might call their own, it was not to be so much esteem-  
 'ed a matter of right, as a boon and effect of grace  
 'and favour. But the government now is to be ma-  
 'naged by a person that is *elective*, and that election  
 'must take its rise originally and virtually from the peo-  
 'ple, as we shall fully evince by and by, in particular,  
 'and shew that all power, both legislative and execu-  
 'tive, doth flow from the community; than which there  
 'cannot be greater evidence of publick freedom (d).  
 '— We see our friends have taken in the good of all  
 'the three sorts of government, and bound them all  
 'in one. If war be, here is the unitive virtue (but no-  
 'thing else) of monarchy to encounter it; and here is  
 'the admirable counsel of aristocrasie to manage it:  
 'if peace be, here is the industry and courage of de-  
 'mocrasie to improve it. And whereas in the present  
 'constitution, the legislative and executive powers are  
 'seperated; the former being vested in a constant suc-  
 'cession of parliaments elective by the people, the lat-  
 'ter in an elective Lord Protector and his successors,  
 'assisted by a council; we conceive the state of this  
 'commonwealth reduced to so just a temper, that the  
 'ills either of successive parliaments, furnished with  
 'power both of executing and making laws, or of a  
 'perpetual parliament, (which are division, faction,  
 'and confusion) being avoided on the one side, and the  
 'inconveniencies of an absolute lordly power on the other;  
 'the frame of government appears so well bounded on  
 'both sides, that we hope it may now (through the  
 'blessing of God) prove a seasonable mean (as for the  
 'better defending these dominions against enemies a-  
 'broad, and promoting our interest in foreign parts, so  
 'also) of peace and settlement to this distracted nation;  
 'and be of durable continuance to succeeding ages (\*).  
 In this manner was the erection of the protectorate de-  
 fended.

(d) Case of  
the Com-  
monwealth,  
p. 27.

(\*) Id. p.  
51.



fended. By the same writer we find it endeavoured to be proved, 'That by this settlement all the grand acts of sovereignty were either immediately, or influentially lodged in the people; and that the objections against it were ill founded.' After which follows a little panegyric on *Cromwell* and his new government, in the following words: 'As touching the person, whom the Lord hath now advanced and set over us to be our supreme magistrate, we shall not say much, because he seeks not the praise of men; only we believe even the enemies will confess that he is every way worthy to rule, whom God hath been pleased to use as his instrument in that glorious work of redeeming the liberties of his people; for we are bold to say (weighing all circumstances together) that this nation was never really free, nor in a way of enjoying its freedom so fully as now; so that there wants nothing but a cordial close with the government, to destroy all hopes of the common enemy, and compleat our happiness (e).'

—This piece is referred to by *Cromwell* for satisfaction concerning his government, in one of his speeches to the parliament (f), and it was also translated into *Latin*, for a justification abroad. What force there is in it, the reader may form some judgment by the above extracts.

—No sooner had the inauguration of *Cromwell* been performed, but 'he and his council had several applications and addresses made to them from divers considerable places, acknowledging his power and government, and promising obedience to it (g).' Indeed there was an almost universal acquiescence for the present, as is owned by a mortal foe to *Cromwell*, in the following passage. 'That which disposed the minds of the people to abstain from a present protestation against this government, besides the agony of the late confusions, and the astonishment upon the new wonderful alteration, was, that it was but temporary, and that limited to a very short time; a free parliament was to be called within so many months, which was entirely to consider and settle the government of the kingdom, and to remove all those obstructions which hinder the peace and happiness of the nation, and to

(e) Case of the Commonwealth, p. 47.

(f) See Parliamentary History, vol. xx. p. 419.

(g) Whitlock, p. 579.

(b) Letter from a true and lawful Member of Parliament, to one of the Lords of his Highnesses Council, p. 53. 4<sup>to</sup>. 1656.

‘ restore it to that tranquillity and quiet it had been so long deprived of: and the protector was sworn to a due observation of all those articles, which he had himself prescribed for his own rules and bounds, and therefore the more hope that he would be contented to be limited by them (b).’—The truth is, by the power and artifice of *Oliver* the government of *England* had been dissolved, and a new one was now erected, which promised fair enough for the preservation and happiness of the community. Nothing therefore remained for the people to do, but to submit unto it, and make the best of it. ‘ The obligation of subjects to the sovereign, says Mr. *Hobbs*, is understood to last as long, and no longer, than the power lasteth, by which he is able to protect them. For the right men have by nature to protect themselves, when none else can protect them, can by no covenant be relinquished. The sovereignty is the soul of the commonwealth; which once departed from the body, the members do no more receive their motion from it. The end of obedience is protection; which, wheresoever a man seeth it, either in his own, or in another’s sword, nature applyeth his obedience to it, and his endeavour to maintain it. And though sovereignty, in the intention of them that make it, be immortal; yet it is in its own nature, not only subject to violent death, but foreign war; but also through the ignorance and passions of men, it hath in it, from the very institution, many seeds of natural mortality, by intestine discord (i).’

(i) *Leviathan*, p. 114. Fol. Lond. 1651.

(AAA) *He rivalled the greatest of our monarchs in glory, and made himself courted and dreaded by the nations around him.* ‘ If there ever appeared in any state, says *Wicquifort*, a chief who was at the same time both tyrant and usurper, most certainly *Oliver Cromwell* was such: and yet for all that, never was there an usurper so solemnly acknowledged. Immediately after the death

him.—The peace he gave to the Dutch, (though

death of the late King, *Don Alonso de Cardenas*, ambassador from *Spain*, legitimated this bastard republick; and *Oliver* had no sooner made himself sovereign, under the quality of protector, than all the Kings of the earth prostrated themselves before this idol. To gratify him, the lawful King, [*Charles II.*] with his brothers, were driven out of those kingdoms and provinces, that ought to have served him as places of refuge or asylums. *Lockart*, who was ambassador from the usurper, was not only received in *France* with all the honors that could have been done to the minister of the first monarch of Christendom, but cardinal *Mazarine* even refused to see the King of *Great Britain*, who had travelled quite through the kingdom to come to him at the foot of the *Pyrenean* hills, and would not so much as speak to the person that came from him, and waited at the door of the chief minister: who at the same time had daily conferences with the usurpers. All that the dispossessed King could obtain was, that the cardinal gave him leave that the Duke of *Ormond* should speak to him as he passed along, and as it were accidentally, as he came from his own quarters to the isle of the Conference.

The King of *Spain*, who was brother-in-law to the deceased King, behaved himself a little better. He suffered the son to be in safety at *Brussels*, where he also met with some civilities: and his chief minister *Don Lewis de Haro*, at the *Pyrenean* hills, shewed him that respect which the cardinal had refused him. The King of *France* being advanced as far as the frontiers of *Flanders*, the protector sent *Falconbridge* his son-in-law, to pay him those civilities, which sovereigns are used to shew one another on like occasions: and the Duke of *Crequy*, one of the first Lords of *France*, next to the Princes, was sent to *London*, to thank the usurper for his civilities: and that nothing might be wanting to the ceremony, the cardinal would have his

(though it has not wanted censurers) was

nephew *Mancini* accompany the duke. The difference that is to be seen in the behaviour of these two Kings of *France* and *Spain*, who were both nearly related to the King of *England*, proceeded only from the difference of their interest. The *Spanish* ambassador had used his utmost endeavours with the usurper, to engage him in the interest of the King his master; even to the offering him a hundred thousand crowns per month, two hundred thousand by way of advance, and an army of twenty thousand men to reconquer *Calce*. *Cromwell* had rejected these offers; and as he feared more the neighbourhood of *France*, than he hoped for advantage from the languishing and remote strength of *Spain*, he sided with the first, whose friend he became; by that means obliging the other to be so to the King of *Great Britain*, whose three kingdoms he had usurped (b).<sup>1</sup>

(b) Embassador, and his Functions, p. 17.

*Wicquifort* has not exaggerated matters in this account: for by the best authority we are told, 'That upon *Oliver's* assuming the government, both those crowns [*France* and *Spain*] applied to him. *Don Alonso de Cardenas*, the *Spanish* ambassador then residing here, in a private audience, congratulated his access to the government, expressing the great satisfaction his master had received therein; in whose name he did assure him of the true and constant friendship of *Spain*, in the condition that he then stood; or if he would go a step farther and take upon him the crown, that his master would venture the crown of *Spain* to defend him in it; with many other expressions of kindness and good-will (i).'<sup>2</sup> The distinction with which the *English* ambassador in *France* was treated, will be best explained by a letter of *Lockhart's* to *Thurloe*, dated *Paris*, *May* 7, 1656. 'My last from *St. Dennis* told your honour, that I was to lodge at *Paris* that night. As I was going to my coach, Mr. *Swift* returned from the cardinal (from whom he

(i) *Thurloe*, vol. i. p. 759.

re-

honourable to himself, and the nation.

He  
pre-

received extraordinary civilities) and told me his eminence earnestly desired, that I would do him (as he said) honor, to receive a visit from him next day at *St. Dennis*. Upon this I resolved to stay there till *Monday* morning. Upon the Lord's day, I received a very kind welcome from him by the master of the house, and a letter very full of kind expressions. After my arrival at *Paris*, I renewed my desire both to his eminence and count *Bryen* for audience, which is promised me to morrow at night; and after I am assured by a person of quality sent to me this morning by the cardinal, that I shall have the freedom allowed me to wait upon him as often as I will. Count *Bulion* sent also to me this morning, to tell me that he was commanded by the King to wait upon me this day to congratulate my safe arrival into *France*; and was very earnest with me to appoint him an hour, which I left to his own discretion and conveniency (k). Lord *Fauconberg's* reception in *France* is thus related by himself, in a letter to *H. Cromwell*, dated *Whitehall*, *June 8, 1658*.—'I am now returned from the *French* court, where I have had the honourablest reception imaginable. The King did not only keepe bare at my publique audiences, but, when I made him a private visit, he talked with me in the garden an hour or two uncovered. From the cardinal the honours I had were particular and unusual: he waved the state of a publique audience, came out of his own room to meet me, led me presently into his cabinet; after an hour's discourse in private, he conducted me downe to the very door, where my coach stood, a ceremony he dispenses with not only to all others, but even to the King himself. The charge of two very handsome tables were defrayed (for myself and followers) by the King, all the while I stayed. In summe, through all their actions not the least circumstance was omitted, that might witness the truth of these respects they

(k) *Thurston*,  
vol. iv. p.  
771.

prescribed the conditions, and they were forced

- (l) Vol. vii. p. 158. 'beare his highnesse and the *English* nation (l).' With what detestation soever princes may speak of usurpers, we see they submit to pay them the tribute of adulation, when they suppose it for their interest: and though with abhorrence they speak of these men as meer tyrants and rebels, none are more sollicitous to obtain their favour and assistance. A very edifying example, truly! Mazarine was bitterly reproached by some of the *French* for his extream submission to *Cromwell*, as we find in the following passage: 'these are the people [his friends and counsellors] who make you treat with *Cromwell* in a manner so mean and injurious to the *French* nation; who advise you to lower our flags before his ships, and who are willing to allow him the title of protector of the protestants of that kingdom (m).' In short, the courtship of the two crowns to *Oliver*, was so great and visible that it exposed them to laughter. 'The *Dutch* struck a medal with the bust of *Cromwell* and his titles on one side, with *Britannia* on the other, and *Cromwell* thrusting his head in her bosom, with his breeches down and his backside bare, the *Spanish* ambassador stooping to kiss it, while the *French* ambassador holds him by the arm, with these words inscribed, *Retire toi, l'honneur appartient au Roi mon maitre, i. e.* Come back, that honor belongs to the King my master (n).' This medal is yet preserved in several *Dutch* cabinets. It was said also that a picture had been set to sale at *Pont-neuf* [in *Paris*] wherein the lord protector was sitting on a close-stole at his business, and the King of *Spain* on the one side, and the King of *France* on the other, offering him paper to wipe his breech (o).—Indeed the friendship of *Oliver* was earnestly sought after by most of the Kings and Princes of his age. *Frederick William*, elector of *Brandenburg*, whose fame is rendered immortal by the pen of his royal descendant, courted the friendship of *Cromwell* (p). *Whitlock* in a letter to his highness dated *Upsal*,

(m) Advice to Card. Mazarine, at the end of Retz's Memoirs, vol. iv. p. 247. 12mo.

(n) Biographia Britannica, p. 1564.

(o) Thurloe, vol. iii. p. 658.

(p) Memoirs of the House of Brandenburg, p. 92. 12mo Lond. 1758.

forced to accept of them, though at the expense of  
 peace

*sol*, January 13, 1653, gives him a particular account of the joy the Queen of *Sweden* expressed on his assuming the protectorate, and in conclusion adds, 'She told me she would write herself to my lord protector, and desired me in my letters to acquaint your highness, that no person had a greater esteem and respect of your highness than she had, which she would be ready to manifest, and was very joyful for this good news from *England* (g).' The King of *Denmark* sent over a person to congratulate his highness, the lord protector, and was overjoyed that he was included in the *Dutch* treaty. The terms given to the King of *Portugal*, and the manner of demanding satisfaction for his not executing the treaty signed by his ambassador, will much illustrate the high character *Cromwell* bore among his fellow sovereigns, and partly account for it. It is well known that the brother of the *Portugal* ambassador, with his master of horse, were concerned in a murder in *London*; that they took refuge in his house as in a sanctuary; that being delivered up they were tried, and notwithstanding the plea of public character made by the brother, were condemned, and accordingly executed. 'The *Portuguese* ambassador at eight of the clock in the morning signed a treaty with the protector, and departed from *Gravesend* at ten. His brother was beheaded in the afternoon, and his man hanged at *Tyburn* (r).' This was on the 10th of *July*, 1654. It may well enough be thought the treaty was not dishonourable to *England* \*. 'In one of the articles agreed with the ambassador it was expressed, that the

(g) *Thurloe*,  
 vol. ii. p.

23.

(r) 14. p.  
 439.

\* The lord chancellor *Hyde*, in his speech to both houses, May 8, 1661, calls 'this treaty, in very many respects, the most advantageous to this nation that ever was entered into with any prince or people.' And again, in the same speech, he says, 'every article in it but one [a liberty given to *Portugal* to make levies of ten thousand men for their service] was entirely for the benefit of this nation, for the extraordinary advancement of trade, for the good of religion, and for the honour of the crown.'—*Lives of the Lord Chancellors*, vol. ii. p. 172.

pence of the house of Orange, to whom  
 they

' merchants should enjoy liberty of conscience in the  
 ' worship of God in their own houses and aboard their  
 ' ships, enjoying also the use of *English* Bibles, and  
 ' other good books, taking care, that they did not ex-  
 ' ceed this liberty.' This article does honor to the hu-  
 ' manity of *Cromwell*. But the King of *Portugal*, who  
 ' was under the influence of superstition and her priests,  
 ' stuck at confirming a treaty so contrary to their maxims  
 ' and views. ' Upon sending Mr. *Meadows*, says the  
 ' protector, unless we will agree to submit this article  
 ' to the determination of the *Pope*, we cannot have it;  
 ' whereby he would bring us to an owning of the *Pope*,  
 ' which we hope, whatever befall us, we shall not, by  
 ' the grace of God, be brought unto. And upon the  
 ' same issue is that article put, whereby it is provided  
 ' and agreed by his ambassador, that any ships coming  
 ' to that harbour, any of whose company, if they shall  
 ' run from their said ships shall be brought back again  
 ' by the magistrate, and the commanders of the said  
 ' ships not required to pay the said runaways their wa-  
 ' ges, upon pretence that they are turned *Catholiques*,  
 ' which may be colour for any knave to leave his duty,  
 ' or for the *Roman Catholiques* to seduce our men,  
 ' which we thought necessary to be provided against;  
 ' yet to this also, as I said before, they would not con-  
 ' sent without the approbation of the *Pope*, although it  
 ' was agreed also by their ambassador. Upon the whole  
 ' matter, we find them very false to us, who intended  
 ' nothing but what was simply honest.'—To treat  
 ' farther with men of this cast of mind, *O'iver*, I sup-  
 ' pose, thought was bootless. He knew the right way to  
 ' go to work with them; and he took it. This appears  
 ' from the instructions he gave, *May 6, 1656*, to the ge-  
 ' nerals *Blake*, and *Mountague*, in the following words:  
 ' Whereas the King of *Portugal* doth refuse to ratify  
 ' the treaties lately made with this commonwealth by  
 ' his extraordinary ambassador here, or to perform any  
 ' part



they were in a great measure indebted for  
 theirs

part thereof, either in what relates to the state, or to the people and merchants; and by his proceedings gives ground to believe, that nothing is less in his intentions, than to give just satisfaction therein; wherefore we do hereby authorize and require you, as it will consist with the present condition of the fleet under your command, and with your other principal instructions, to use your best endeavours, by the fleet, or such part thereof as you shall judge necessary, to take, arrest, and seize upon the fleet or fleets belonging to the King of *Portugal*, or any of his subjects, with their guns, cash, goods and merchandizes whatever, now expected from the East and West *Indies*, and to keep and deteyne the same without breaking of bulk or embezzilment, towards such satisfaction for the wrongs and damages, which this state hath suffered from *Portugal*, and to give notice forthwith of what you shall do therein. And in case any of the ships of the said King or his people shall make any resistance, you have hereby power to fight with, kill, and destroy, and to seek for, and burn all such as shall so resist. Nevertheless, if Mr. *Philip Meadows*, our envoy with the King of *Portugal*, shall before any seizure or act of hostility as aforesaid, give you assurance, that satisfaction is obtained upon the said treatiés, that this instruction shall be void (s). The admirals on the receipt hereof sailed towards *Lisbon*, and made known their orders to the *English* agent, who informing the court, obtained a speedy signing of the treaty by the King, and a very large sum of money for satisfaction; which was shipped on board the fleet, and sent to *England* (t). *Montague* indeed seems not to have been well pleased with the peace. He thought they had now *Portugal* at mercy, and should have imposed more rigorous terms. 'You have. says he, (in a letter to *Turlse*, dated *June 17, 1656*) at this time the *Portugal* upon his knees, and if we had authority to make farther

(s) *Thurler*,  
 vol. iv. p.  
 769.

(t) *Id.* vol.  
 v. p. 123,  
 124, 125.

their independency, and freedom. The

wol prin-

deniands, we might ask what we would, (almost) and he durst not but perform it, or his country would be all in rebellion. But this is to no purpose, the season being past. Men of such spirit and resolution as these, were capable of executing any commands. We may suppose an action like this must have inspired *Cromwell's* neighbours with a fear of offending!—After what has been related in this note, the following passages from *Eurnet* well easily find credit, especially as several of them may be authenticated by incontestable vouchers. *Cromwell's* maintaining the honor of the nation in all foreign countries, gratified the vanity which is very natural to *Englishmen*; of which he was so careful, that though he was not a crowned head, yet his ambassadors had all the respect paid them which our Kings ambassadors ever had. He said the dignity of the crown was upon the account of the nation, of which the King was only the representative head, so the nation being still the same, he would have the same regards paid to his ministers.—Another instance of this pleased him much. *Blake* with the fleet happened to be at *Malaga*, before he made war upon *Spain*: and some of his seamen went on shore, and met the hostie carried about; and not only paid no respect to it, but laughed at those that did. So one of the priests put the people on resenting this indignity; and they fell upon them and beat them severely. When they returned to their ship they complained of this usage: and upon that *Blake* sent a trumpet to the viceroy, to demand the priest who was the chief instrument in that ill usage. The Viceroy answered he had no authority over the priest, and so could not dispose of him. *Blake* upon that sent him word, that he would not enquire who had the power to send the priest to him, but if he were not sent within three hours he would burn their town: and they, being in no condition to resist him, sent the priest to

principal articles of it, I shall mention be-

low,

to him, who justified himself upon the petulant behaviour of the seamen. *Blake* answered, that if he had sent a complaint to him of it, he would have punished them severely, since he would not suffer his men to affront the established religion of any place at which he touched: but he took it ill, that he set on the *Spaniards* to do it; for he would have all the world to know, that an *Englishman* was only to be punished by an *Englishman*. So he treated the priest civilly, and sent him back, being satisfied that he had him at his mercy. *Cromwell* was much delighted with this, and read the letters in council with great satisfaction; and said, he hoped, he should make the name of an *Englishman* as great as ever that of a *Roman* had been.—The states of *Holland* were in such dread of him, that they took care to give him no sort of umbrage: and when at any time the King or his brothers came to see their sister, the Princess Royal, within a day or two after they used to send a deputation to let them know that *Cromwell* had required of the States that they should give them no harbour. King *Charles*, when he was seeking for colours for the war with the *Dutch* in the year 1672, urged it for one, that they suffered some of his rebels to live in their provinces. *Borel*, then their ambassador, answered, that it was a maxim of long standing among them, not to enquire upon what account strangers came to live in their country, but to receive them all, unless they had been concerned in conspiracies against the persons of Princes. The King told him upon that, how they had used both himself and his brother. *Borel*, in great simplicity, answered: *Ha! Sire, c' étoit une autre chose: Cromwell étoit un grand homme, & il se faisoit craindre & par terre & par mer.* This was very rough. The King's answer was: *Je me ferai craindre aussi à mon tour:* but he was scarce as good as his word.—All *Italy* trembled at the

name

low (BBB), for the information of my readers.

(u) Vol. i.  
p. 126, &  
seq. See also  
Thurloe,  
vol. iii. p. 6.

‘ name of *Cromwell*, and seemed under a pannick fear  
‘ as long as he lived. His fleet scoured the *Mediterra-*  
‘ *nean*: and the *Turks* durst not offend him; but de-  
‘ livered up *Hide*, who kept up the character of an am-  
‘ bassador from the King there, and was brought over  
‘ and executed for it (u).’ Many more proofs might  
be brought of *Cromwell*’s being courted and feared by  
the nations around him. But these possibly may be  
deemed sufficient: if not, many things will be found  
in the following notes more fully to confirm it.

(BBB) *The principal articles of the peace I shall mention  
be’ow.*] In the note (MM) I have given an account of  
the commencement of the *Dutch* war, and the nego-  
ciations for peace until the interruption of the parlia-  
ment by the power of *Cromwell*. From this change in  
the government, the enemy expected many advantages.  
But they soon found themselves mistaken; for the pre-  
parations for war were carried on with equal diligence  
as before, and the *Dutch* found to their cost that they  
had people of like spirit and resolution to deal with.  
For notwithstanding the ridicule with which the little  
parliament is almost constantly treated, they shewed  
bravery in carrying on the war; justice, generosity and  
good policy in rewarding the gallantry of their admi-  
rals, and inferiour commanders; and a regard to the  
honor of the nation in the terms they insisted on to  
make peace. ‘ In the year 1653 \*, a bloody battle was  
‘ fought between *Van Tromp* and the *English* admirals  
‘ *Dean* and *Moncke*, wherein the *Dutch* were worsted,  
‘ which occasioned tumults in *Holland*: and the same  
‘ year in *August*, there was another bloody engagement,  
‘ wherein the *Dutch* were again defeated, and *Van*  
‘ *Tromp* slain in the action. The rest of the fleet be-  
‘ ing by this time cruelly broken and shattered, dis-

† *Gesta Brit-  
tannorum*,  
Lond. 1659.

\* This sea-fight was on the 24 and 3d of June, the next on the 20th  
and 30th of July following †. So that Mr. Burchett was negligent and  
mistaken.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

363

find  
the  
318-11101033

discouraged by this loss, made the best of their way to the *Texel*. The *English* having sunk thirty three of the enemies ships in this battle, and taken about twelve hundred prisoners (which notwithstanding the forbidding to give or receive quarter by *Mancke* in the beginning of the action, they compassionately took up as they were swimming about) did not think fit to pursue far, but retired to *Soleboy*, having purchased the victory with considerable loss; for they had four hundred men and eight captains slain or drowned in the fight, and about seven thousand wounded. The *Dutch* had suffered so extremely, that they presently sued for a peace, and were glad to accept it on *Cromwell's* own terms (x). The principal conditions of this peace, concluded *April* 5, 1654, were, 'That neither of the two republics should give reception, succour, protection, or assistance to the enemies, or rebellious subjects of the other; that the freedom of navigation and commerce should be restored [saving all the laws and statutes of either commonwealth respectively] between the two nations, who obliged themselves, reciprocally, to defend each others ships in case they were attacked by any other power; but the superiority of the flag was entirely yielded to *England*, and the *Dutch* men of war were to strike their colours to the *English*, upon all occasions. The republic of the *United-Provinces*, obliged herself to prosecute and punish the authors of the massacre of *Amboyna*, if they were yet alive; and to send commissioners to *London* to adjust the disputes of the several *India* companies of both nations, and to settle the amount of the losses sustained by the *English* in the *East Indies*, *Brazil*, *Muscovy*, and *Greenland*, &c. that restitution might be made by the *States-General*; and if the commissioners appointed by the two nations should not be able to adjust the points in dispute, then the decision of them was to be left to the

(x) Bur-  
chett's Na-  
val History,  
p. 294. 3<sup>rd</sup> ed.  
Fol. Lond.  
1720.

Swift

' *Swiss Cantons*, who were pitched upon for arbitrators.  
 ' The King of *Denmark* after a great deal of difficulty  
 ' on the part of *Cromwell*, was included in the treaty  
 ' as an ally of *Holland*, the States-General engaging  
 ' to make good the losses that the *English* merchants  
 ' had sustained by the seizure that prince had made of  
 ' their ships in the port of *Copenhagen*. Lastly, in or-  
 ' der to render the alliance firm and lasting, the States-  
 ' General promised not to confer the supreme command  
 ' of their forces, either by sea or land, upon any per-  
 ' son who would not oblige himself by oath to an ex-  
 ' act observation of the treaty (y).—The province  
 ' of *Holland*, by a separate article, engaged never to per-  
 ' mit the Prince of *Orange* to be stadtholder, or any of  
 ' his descendants. The other provinces, against their wills,  
 ' afterwards did the like. Mr. *Hume* has added, ' That  
 ' eighty-five thousand pounds were stipulated to be paid  
 ' by the *Dutch East India* company for losses which the  
 ' *English* company had sustained; and the island of *Po-*  
 ' *lerone* in the *East Indies* was promised to be yielded to  
 ' the latter (z).<sup>2</sup> Nothing of this appears in the treaty  
 ' itself. Mr. *Burrisb*, however, informs us, ' That the  
 ' *Dutch* complied very exactly with the terms of the  
 ' treaty, and sent commissioners into *England* within the  
 ' limited time, who agreed to restore the isle of *Pole-*  
 ' *rone*, to make satisfaction to the heirs and executors of  
 ' those who had been massacred at *Amboyna*, and to fur-  
 ' nish nine hundred thousand livres, at two payments,  
 ' by way of composition, for all the pretensions *England*  
 ' might hitherto have against them (a).<sup>3</sup>  
 ' *Cromwell* carried things with an high hand during  
 ' this whole affair. The *Dutch* deputies were plainly told,  
 ' That if the treaty was not signed before their depar-  
 ' ture from hence, and mutual engagements passed for  
 ' the ratification thereof within a time now to be agreed  
 ' upon, his highness doth declare, that he shall not hold  
 ' himself obliged thereunto to any the parts thereof,  
 ' but

(y) *Bur-*  
*risb's* *Ba-*  
*tavia* *illuf-*  
*trata*, vol. ii.  
 p. 530. 8vo.  
 Lond. 1723.  
 And *Mc-*  
*curios* *Poli-*  
*ticus*, No.  
 203. 204.  
 p. 3457.  
 3462.

(z) *Hist.* of  
*Great* *Brit-*  
*tain*, vol. ii.  
 p. 55.

(a) *Batavia*  
*illuftrata*,  
 vol. ii. p.  
 533.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

satisfaction stipulated for the murders at *Amboyna*.

‘ but shall account the treaty to be at an end (b).’ And by the treaty the States-General were to pay down in *London* 5000*l.* sterling, towards the charges of the merchants in going to *Denmark* about their goods and effects detained there; 20000 rix-dollars to such of them as *Oliver* should appoint on their arrival in *Denmark*, for repairing their ships and fitting them for sea; and caution and security was to be given also by sufficient men, living in *London*, that restitution should be made by the States-General for the damages done by *Denmark* to the merchants. This security was 140,000*l.* sterling; the States gave a bond to some merchants for the above sum, and the ambassadors were forced to give them another for 20,000*l.* more to save them harmless (c).—

The peace was proclaimed at *London* April 17, 1654, with great solemnity: after which the ambassadors were entertained at dinner by the Protector; the music playing all the while. ‘ The Lord Protector, adds the ambassador, (from whose relation I give this) had us into another room, where the Lady Protectrice and others came to us, where we had also music and voices, and a Psalm sung, which his highness gave us, and told us, that it was yet the best paper that had been exchanged between us (d).’ *Cromwell* was careful to act still in character.—I have observed in the text,

that this peace has not wanted censurers. Mr. *Ludlow* seems to blame it, because there was no provision made by this treaty for the coalescence so much insisted upon during the administration of affairs by the parliament (e); Mr. *Stubbe* for its leaving undecided the sovereignty of the seas, and the rights of the fishery (f); and we are told that *Moncke* resented it ‘ as a base treachery in *Cromwell*, to make a sudden peace with the *Dutch*, and betray all the advantages of the war, that he might go up to the throne with more peace and satisfaction (g).’ To all which I may add that Mr. *Burrisb* observes, ‘ That *Cromwell*’s acceptance of the exclusion of the young Prince

(b) Thurloc, vol. i. p. 607.

(c) Id. vol. ii. p. 247.

(d) Id. p. 257.

(e) Vol. ii. p. 487.

(f) Farther Justification, p. 66.

(g) Gumble’s Life of Monck, p. 74.

*boyna*. On this occasion medals were struck by the *Dutch*, and poetical panegyrics (ccc) in

(b) *Batavia illustrata*, vol. ii. p. 529.

(i) *Milton's Prose Works*, vol. ii. p. 207.

\* Prince of *Orange*, in lieu of the coalition, is an undeniable proof, that he demanded the latter, from a motive of self-interest; because, says he, I dare affirm, it could not be the interest of the nation to abolish the office of stadtholder (b).<sup>2</sup> The reader will make his own remarks on these censures. I will close this note with observing, that the parliament had drawn out a summary of the damages sustained by the *English* company in the *East Indies* from the *Dutch East India* company, and had made the sum total 1,681,996*l.* 15*s.* (i) Probably, they had not considered the *Dutch* claims on the *English* at that time.

(ccc) *Medals were struck by the Dutch, and poetical panegyrics made on Oliver.*] The *Dutch* struck three medals on this joyful occasion. These medals represented,

1. *Neptune* on a car, drawn by two sea-horses. The shields of arms of *England* and *Holland*, borne on his knees; on each side of him a *Triton* swimming; and on the top a *Caduceus*, which supports *Mercury's* winged hat between two branches of a palm.—Round the medal is a verse from *Terence*, altered thus, *Amicitia Redintegratio est.*—On the reverse was this inscription in *Dutch*,—‘In memory of the peace, union, and solemn confederacy concluded at *Westminster*, April 15, between his highness the Lord Protector of the commonwealth of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, and their High Mightinesses the States-General of the United-Provinces; of which the ratifications were duly exchanged by both parties, May 2, and published the 27th of the same month, in the year 1654, N. S.’

2. Two women sitting together, jointly supporting a hat, as an emblem of the liberty of the two republics. The *English* dame bears on her knees a harp, and the *Dutch* has a *Belgic* lion couching at her feet.



# OLIVER CROMWELL.

367  
 of 30701033

in praise of *Oliver* were composed by some

‘Mentibus unitis priscus procul absit Amator,  
 ‘Pilea ne subito parta Cruore ruant.’

On the exergue.

‘Conclusa decimo quinto *Aprilis*, anno 1654.’

Reverse.

Two ships, one carrying the colours of *Holland*, and the other that of the States.

‘Luxuriat gemino nexu tranquilla Salo res,  
 ‘Excipit unanimes totius orbis amor.’

3. The figures of Peace and Justice, with their emblems.

‘Hæ mihi erunt artes.’

Reverse.

‘Quod scælix faustumque sit. Post atrox Bellum, quod  
 ‘inter *Anglicæ Belgicæque* reipublicæ rectores, bis frustra  
 ‘tentatis pacis conditionibus, anno 1654 exarsit,  
 ‘in quo maximis utrinque Classibus, sex *Septentrionalis*,  
 ‘duo *Mediterraneo Mari*, pugnata sunt cruenta prælia,  
 ‘Dei Optimi Maximi Beneficio, Auspiciis *Olivarii*,  
 ‘*Magnæ Britannia* Protectoris, Fæderati *Belgii* Ordinum,  
 ‘Pax cum antiquo Fædere restituta; cujus opti-  
 ‘mæ rerum in memoriam sempiternam senatus popu-  
 ‘lusque *Amstelodamensis* hoc monumentum fieri cura-  
 ‘runt (A).’

(A) Parliamentary History, vol. xx. p. 236.

I have mentioned poetical panegyrics above. These now are to be given an account of. It had been, as it yet is, the custom for the universities of this kingdom to compose poems in different languages to celebrate the inaugurations and the illustrious actions of princes. Among these latter, the settlement of peace and friendship upon honourable and beneficial terms, with a nation with whom they contended, has ever justly been deemed most glorious. Inasmuch as the end thereby is accom-

of both universities, whose names stand in  
the

accomplished, and the blood and treasure of the people preserved, as well as their ease and safety secured. On such an occasion, therefore, as the peace with the *Dutch*, it was but natural for the muses to exult. And, in fact, they did it. The most learned men, the best geniuses, and those who afterwards made the greatest figure in the literary world, joined in celebrating this glorious event. The verses composed at *Cambridge* were published there, with the following title; ‘*Oliva Pacis. Ad Illustrissimum Celsissimumque Oliverum, Reipub. Angliæ, Scotiæ, & Hiberniæ Dominum Protectorem; de Pace cum Fæderatis Belgis feliciter sancta, Carmen Cantabrigiense (l).*’ Dr. *Seaman*, vice-chancellor, introduces them to his highness in a poem, of which the following lines make a small part.

(l) Ex celeberrimæ Academiæ Typographeo. 4to. 1654.

Des veniam; nomen, Dux invictissime, vestrum  
 Nostri inscriptum versibus esse finas.  
 Te Protectorem Republica nostra salutat  
 Te Dominum, domino tu mihi major eris.  
 Quàm facile est, Olivère, tuum grandescere nomen;  
 Si meritis titulos accumulare licet.  
 Primus Marte, nec Arte minor, pietate secundus  
 Nulli, Militiæ gloria, Pacis amor.  
 Te Duce, solennes agit Anglia læta triumphos;  
 Juncto cum Batavis fœdere tuta magis.

Among the names subscribed to the poems that follow after, are *Arrowsmith*, *Tuckney* and *Horton*, men of fame in their own days; then come those of *Whichecot*, and *Cudworth*, whose fame still survives, and whose writings render them immortal. *Dillingham*, *Duport*, *Worthington*, *Wray* [*Ray*] *Gliffon*, and *Bright*, eminent for their skill in various branches of learning, bear a part in the collection, besides a variety of others, now little known or regarded.

The

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

363


the first rank among the learned.—*Cromwell*, I know, has been almost universally blamed for breaking with *Spain*, and allying him-

The university of *Oxford* addressed his highness likewise. The book, in which their poems are contained, is entitled, ‘*Musarum Oxoniensium ‘EAAIOΦOPI’A. ‘Sive, ob Fœdera, Auspiciis Serenissimi Oliveri Reipub. Ang. Scot. & Hiber. Domini Protectoris, inter Rempub. Britannicam & Ordines Fœderatos Belgii Fœliciter Stabilita, Gentis Togatæ ad vada Ifidis Celestina Metricum (m).’*—The dedication to this piece is in prose by *Dr. Owen*, vice-chancellor, and is full of expressions of gratitude to *Oliver* for his favours to, and protection of the university. After which we have a copy of verses by the same hand, and a great variety of others in several languages by different pens. *Zuch*, doctor of the civil law, *Harmer*, greek-professor, and *Dr. Ralph Bathurst*, names well known in the republic of letters, contributed to this collection, and joined in celebrating the protector. Besides these, we find here the names of *Bussy* (who so long ruled in *Westminster* school, and complied with every change of government in his time) and *Locke*: the poem of the latter I will here insert, as it may, I am persuaded, be acceptable to the learned reader.

(m) Oxoniæ, 4to. 1654.

Pax regit Augusti, quem vicit Julius orbem :  
 Ille fago factus clarior, ille togâ.  
 Hos sua Roma vocat magnos & numina credit,  
 Hic quod sit mundi victor, & ille quies.  
 Tu bellum et pacem populis des, unus utrisq;  
 Major es ; ipse orbem vincis, & ipse regis.  
 Non hominem è cœlo missum Te credimus ; unus  
 Sic poterat binos qui superare deos !

I will only add some lines out of *Mr.* afterwards *Dr. South*'s poem, in the same collection.



THE LIFE OF

himself to *France*; whether justly (DDD) or

—Tu Dux pariter Terræ Domitorq; profundi,  
Componant laudes cuncta elementa tuas.  
Cui mens alta subest pelagoq; profundior ipso,  
Cujus fama sonat, quam procul unda sonat.

\* \* \* \* \*

Tu poteras solus motos componere fluctus,  
Solutus Ne, tunum sub tua vincla dare.  
Magna simul fortis vicisti & multa: Trophæis  
Ut mare, sic pariter cedit arena tuis.  
Nomine Pacifico gestas insignia pacis,  
Blanda; per titulos serpit Oliva tuos.

(\*) South's  
Sermons,  
vol. i. p.  
160. 8vo.  
Lond. 1692.

(\*) Id. Vol.  
iii. p. 544.

Would any one think this panegyrist should afterwards, in print, stile *Cromwell* 'a lively copy of *Jeroboom* (n)?' or have the face to say of the ruling ecclesiastics of these times, 'that *Latin* was with them 'a mortal crime, and *Greek*, instead of being owned 'for the language of the Holy Ghost (as in the *New Testament* it is) was looked upon as the sin against it; 'so that, in a word, they had all the confusions of 'Babel amongst them without the diversity of 'tongues (c)?' But this was Dr. *South*.——The volume is closed with some verses from the printer to his highness the lord protector. This was *Leonard Lichfield*, esquire, bedle of divinity, as he stiles himself. He lived to perform the same honour to *Charles II.* as did many of the gentlemen above mentioned. For praise, for the time, follows fortune: and he who has the power of conferring benefits will never want flatterers.——We see, however, from hence, that *Cromwell* had equal honours paid him at home as well as abroad, with our kings; which was no unacceptable thing, we may assure ourselves, to so ambitious a mind as his, who sought greedily for fame, and was willing to perpetuate his name by deeds of renown.

(DDD) *Cromwell has been blamed for his breach with Spain and alliance with France; but whether justly, &c.*]

In-

no, may be questioned, notwithstanding the

num-

Instead of amusing the reader with the uncertain conjectures of various writers, on this very important subject, I will give him Mr. *Thurloe's* account of the negotiations between *England, France* and *Spain*, as far as they relate to *Oliver*; then will naturally follow the censures past on his conduct, which will produce some observations tending to the protector's justification.

Upon *Cromwell's* assuming the government, Don *Alonso de Cardenas*, the *Spanish* ambassador then residing in *London*, after making the general compliments in the high strain, mentioned in the note (AAA), came to particular propositions on the part of *Spain*, propounding a conjunction between *England* and *Spain* against *France*, upon two grounds: 1. To bring *France* to a good peace, and thereby to obtain rest and quiet to all Christendome, which was miserably embroiled through the ambition of *France*, who would listen to no reasonable terms of peace, unless they were constrained thereto; and the most likely and visible means to effect that was, by the united counsels and forces of *England* and *Spain*. 2. In this peace the establishment of *Oliver* in the government of these nations should be provided for, and particularly secured, against the clayme and title of his now Majesty [*Charles II.*]; propounding, that one of the articles of the peace should be to defend *Oliver* in the aforesaid government, declaring that *Spain* would never lay downe their arms, nor make peace with *France*, till that crowne also would agree thereto; by which means the standing of *Oliver* would be made firm and stable, having, besides his own interest here, two of the chiefest crownes of *Europe* to support and strengthen him: making mention here, by way of inducement, and to perswade that *Spain* was real, and in good earnest in this particular, of the great disobligations, that the late King had put upon the King of *Spain*, and the ill dealing he had re-

number and quality of the censurers. For  
the

ceived from him in several rencounters, which his Majesty of *Spain* did so much resent, that there could never be any confidence again between *Spain* and that family; nor would it be the interest of *Spain*, that any of that lyne should be restored to this government. Thence concluding, that *Oliver* could not relye in this matter, upon any prince or state in *Europe*, so much as upon *Spain*, labouring, at the same time, to render the alliance with *France* not only useless but dangerous, save in the way before expressed; wherein the treaty might be so ordered, that if *France* did break any of the articles, in prejudice of *Oliver*, or his government in *England*, *Spain* would be obliged to join with *England* for the making good thereof. The particulars which he desired of *England* in this conjunction against *France*, was at first only four thousand soldiers to serve with the *Spanish* army, and twelve ships of war to be joined with their fleet in the designs they had against *France* about *Bordeaux*. This proposition came afterwards to an entire *English* army of horse and foot, that might be able to march in any part of *France*. And as to the charge of transporting and keeping such an army, *Don Alonso* propounded (as I remember) that *Spain* should bear two third parts, and the like of the fleet, which being computed, he was willing to pay part downe, and so much yearly, as long as this war should continue.

At the same time arrived here monsieur *Ligné* from the prince of *Condé*, besides monsieur *Barriere*, that was here also, and some deputies from the town of *Bordeaux*, offering reasons for a war against *France*, and propounding designs relating to *Bordeaux*, and the parts thereabouts, wherein *England* might engage (as they thought) with great advantage; and this part was also managed by *Don Alonso*.

These

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

373  
JAN 10 1853  
FAC 3101033

the inequality between the two crowns was  
far

‘ These propositions were communicated to *Oliver*  
‘ by those who met *Don Alonso* thereupon; but his own  
‘ inclinations being not for any conjunction with *Spain*,  
‘ they were only therefore discourfled of, but the an-  
‘ fwer thereunto was delayed.

‘ *France*, during this time, did alfo make knowne  
‘ by monsieur *Bordeaux* their defires of holding a good  
‘ understanding with *Oliver*, and founded his inclina-  
‘ tions of a nearer conjunction with *France*, and mon-  
‘ fieur *de Baas* was fent immediately from the cardinall,  
‘ and as his confident, to affure *Oliver* of his particular  
‘ fervice. And both the one and the other did exprefs  
‘ the defires that *France* had of entering into a league  
‘ defenfive and offensive with *England*, and of proceed-  
‘ ing by joint counfels towards *Spain*; and that if  
‘ *England* will either joyne their arms to *France*, or  
‘ make war againft *Spain* upon their own bottom,  
‘ they would contribute to the charge; defiring, in the  
‘ mean tyme, that the former treatys between thefe  
‘ two ftates may be renewed. To all this general an-  
‘ fwers were given, expreffing very good intentions  
‘ towards *France*; and I do not remember, that any  
‘ thing more particular was faid at this time, nor dur-  
‘ ing all the time that monsieur *de Baas* ftayed here;  
‘ who was commanded to depart this country, upon  
‘ intelligence, that he had intrigues here with feveral  
‘ perfons, tending to the publick difturbance.

‘ *Don Alonso* receiving no answer to his propofitions,  
‘ and perceiving a coldnefs in that bufinefs, fignified to  
‘ *Oliver*, that the intention of his mafter was not to  
‘ engage *England* in a war againft *France*, in cafe the  
‘ prefent government found it not to be for their own  
‘ intereft; but that his chief hope was to maintaine a  
‘ conftant good intelligence with *England*. And there-  
‘ fore propounded, that the former alliances may be re-  
‘ newed, as the firft ftep towards a nearer union. Ac-  
‘ cordingly commiffioners were affigned to treat with

far enough from being then as visible as it  
 af-

him thereupon, and severall conferences there were upon the concept of a treaty, mostly drawne out of the treaty of 1630. Amongst other difficulties these three following were the chief.

1. Touching the *West-Indies*, the debate whereof was occasioned upon the first article of the aforesaid treaty of 1630, whereby it is agreed, that there should be a peace, amity and friendship between the two Kings, and their respective subjects, in all parts of the world, as well in *Europe* as elsewhere. Upon this it was shewed, that, in contravention of this article, the *English* were treated by the *Spaniards* as enemies, wherever they were met in *America*, though sayling to and from their owne plantations; and insisted that satisfaction was to be given in this, and a good foundation of friendship lay'd in those parts for the future between their respective subjects (the *English* there being very considerable, and whose safety and interest the government here ought to provide for) or else there could be no solid or lasting peace established between these two states in *Europe*.

2. The second difference was touching the inquisition, the danger whereof all our *English* merchants, trading in *Spayne*, were exposed to. And in that it was desired, that out of the article, which related to the *English* merchants exercise of their religion in *Spayne*, those words might be omitted (*modo ne dent scandalum*) and that liberty might be granted to the said merchants to have and use in *Spayne* *English* Bibles, and other religious books. To these two *Don Alonso* was pleased to answer, That to ask a liberty from the inquisition, and free sayling in the *West-Indies*, was to ask his master's two eyes; and that nothing could be done in these points, but according to the practice of former times.

3. The third difference was in relation to some particulars of trade, as the King's decrying and advancing his



afterwards appeared; and *Cromwell* always

had

his coin, to the infinite prejudice of the *English*, &c.

The debates upon these articles gave no great satisfaction to either side, nor increased the confidence, but rather shewed, that the principles of *England* and *Spain*, at that time, were very different, and that it would be hard to make their interests to agree. At the same time there were several conferences also with the *French* ambassador, upon a treaty with *France* upon the ground of the former alliances. Then it came into debate before *Oliver*, and his council, with which of these crowns an alliance was to be chosen. *Oliver* himself was for a war with *Spain*, at least in the *West-Indies*, if satisfaction were not given for the past damages, and things well settled for the future. And most of the council went the same way, and inclined to hold good intelligence with *France*; and some of the reasons for this opinion were:

1. In reference to his Majesty, to wit, that by entertaining a good and confident correspondence with *France*, the King of *England* and his brother might be removed out of *France*, and thereby a perpetuall enmity stated between his said Majesty and the King of *France*; and so all hopes of his restitution by succours from *France* taken away. And *France* was looked upon as the only foreign power that *Oliver* need consider as to the King's restitution. For,

1. Their relation in blood might incline them to it, and the treaties upon the match would give them greater pretences to restore the King than any other state could have.

2. They could employ in this service, and engage in it the protestants of *France*, which might very dangerously divide us at home.

3. There was always a great confidence between the *French* and the *Scots*, which the *French* constantly made use of as a back-door into *England*; and, as af-

had it in his power to break loose, and

throw

‘ fairs flood in *Scotland*, it would not be hard to set all  
 ‘ in a flame there. And, although it was supposed,  
 ‘ that if his Majesty were excluded *France*, he would  
 ‘ betake himself to *Spayne*, yet this was not thought  
 ‘ dangerous; because his being in *Spayne* seemed rather  
 ‘ disadvantageous to his returne than otherwise, the  
 ‘ *English* being always jealous and afraid of the princi-  
 ‘ ples of *Spayne*, and who had no interest here but the  
 ‘ papist; the presbyterian party, whom *Oliver* was  
 ‘ desirous enough to engage in his affairs, having ever  
 ‘ shewed the greatest aversion to the *Spaniard*.

‘ 4. In the next place, an ill understanding with  
 ‘ *France* lay contrary to the amity with *Sweden*, which  
 ‘ *Oliver* desired always to cherish upon several conside-  
 ‘ rations.

‘ 5. A good intelligence there was thought safer for  
 ‘ the protestants there than a war. So it was resolved  
 ‘ to take all opportunities to maintayn a good under-  
 ‘ standing with *France*, and to send a fleet and land  
 ‘ forces into the *West-Indies*, where it was taken for  
 ‘ granted the peace was already broken by the *Spa-  
 nyard*, contrary to the former treatyes; and not to  
 ‘ meddle with any thing in *Europe*, until the *Spaniard*  
 ‘ should begin, unless the *American* fleet should be met  
 ‘ with, which was looked upon as lawful prize. And  
 ‘ now the consideration was of joining with *France* in  
 ‘ this war upon the grounds aforesaid, which *France*  
 ‘ offered to do. And a treaty there was touching a  
 ‘ squadron of ships to join with the *French* as auxili-  
 ‘ aryes only to *France*, that so no breach might be in  
 ‘ *Europe* with *Spayne* on the part of *England*; as also a  
 ‘ sum of money was propounded to be given by *France*,  
 ‘ in case *England* will declare war against *Spayne* in any  
 ‘ part of the world. But many difficulties and delays  
 ‘ falling out in this treaty, the fleet was sent away in-  
 ‘ to the *West-Indies*. And a war followed thereupon  
 ‘ between *England* and *Spayne*, without the least com-  
 ‘ munication

throw himself into the opposite scale, if cir-  
cum-

‘ munication of counsels with *France*, whereby *France*  
 ‘ had its end for nothing. Then arrives here the mar-  
 ‘ quis de *Leda*, as extraordinary ambassador from *Spayne*,  
 ‘ expressing desires of renewing the peace, but returned  
 ‘ *re infecta*. And now there was no more discourse of  
 ‘ a league defensive and offensive with *France*, which  
 ‘ the councill were never for; but the former peace was  
 ‘ renewed with some alterations, in respect of the pre-  
 ‘ sent tyme, which is in print; and an article by it-  
 ‘ self for exclusion of his Majesty, his highnesse the  
 ‘ duke of *Yorke*, presently, and his highnesse the duke  
 ‘ of *Gloucester* after ten years, with some other persons  
 ‘ particularly named, out of *France*. This was all that  
 ‘ passed between *Oliver* and the king or cardinall of  
 ‘ *France*, for some years, save very civil messages and  
 ‘ assurances of mutuall services, as occasion should be.  
 ‘ In the mean tyme *Oliver* cast with himself how to  
 ‘ get footing on the continent, which he always much  
 ‘ longed for. And there was a designe to have drawne  
 ‘ *Flanders* to revolt from *Spayne*; and, to that end, to  
 ‘ have dealt with some of the great towns to have de-  
 ‘ clared themselves a commonwealth, under the pro-  
 ‘ tection of the prince of *Conde*; and he was to be  
 ‘ founded in it, how he would inclyne thereto, if  
 ‘ *England* and *France* did assist hym therein, and so,  
 ‘ by that means, to have satisfied *Conde* to live out of  
 ‘ *France*, and to have eased the cardinall of the feare  
 ‘ of his returne. But proper mediums being not found  
 ‘ out to found the prince of *Conde*, and it being not  
 ‘ relished in *France*, it was no further prosecuted.

‘ Afterwards there were propositions of joining in the  
 ‘ war against the *Spaniard* in *Flanders*, whereupon there  
 ‘ was a treaty made in the year 1657. The effect was,  
 ‘ that *Oliver* should send into *France* or *Flanders* 6000  
 ‘ foot, 3000 at the charge of *England*, and 3000 at the  
 ‘ charge of *France*; that the whole being landed, should  
 ‘ come under the pay of *France*. That with these, and a  
 ‘ *French* army of horse and foot, the king should that yeare  
 ‘ be-

cumstances should alter. But, be this as it

3 APR 1651  
MAY 1651

' besiege *Graveling* or *Dunkirk*; and either being taken,  
 ' to deliver it with all the forts into the *English* hands,  
 ' viz. *Dunkirk* absolutely, and *Graveling* by way of  
 ' caution, until *Dunkirk* should be taken and delivered.  
 ' That the priviledges of the town and the religion  
 ' should remayne in the same state as before; and that  
 ' no peace or truce be made with *Spayne* by either  
 ' during that yeare. The *French* that year took only  
 ' *Mardyke* fort, so that the treaty was in *February* 1657-8  
 ' renewed for another yeare; and, according thereto,  
 ' *Dunkirk* was taken and put into the *English* hands.  
 ' Further treaties were intended for the joint manage-  
 ' ment of the war in *Flanders*, but the death of *Oliver*  
 ' prevented it (p). — These were the motives of  
*Cromwell's* preferring the friendship of *France*, and mak-  
 ing war with *Spain*, of which the intelligent reader  
 will form his own judgment. The world, for the most  
 part, however, has blamed his conduct in this affair,  
 as will appear by the following quotations. '*Cromwell*,'  
 says *Mr. Bethell* (for he, I believe, was the author of  
 the *World's Mistake in Oliver Cromwel*) 'contrary to our  
 ' interest, made an unjust war with *Spain*, and an im-  
 ' politic league with *France*, bringing the first thereby  
 ' under, and making the latter too great for *Christen-*  
 ' dome; and, by that means, broke the ballance be-  
 ' twixt the two crowns of *Spain* and *France*, which his  
 ' predecessors, the long parliament, had always wisely  
 ' preserved. In this dishonest war with *Spain*, he pre-  
 ' tended and endeavoured to impose a belief on the world,  
 ' that he had nothing in his eye, but the advancement  
 ' of the protestant cause, and the honour of the nation;  
 ' but his pretences were either fraudulent, or he was  
 ' ignorant in foreign affairs (as I am apt to think, that  
 ' he was not guilty of too much knowledge in them.)  
 ' For he that had known any thing of the temper of  
 ' the *Popish* prelatie, and the *French* court-policies,  
 ' could not but see, that the way to increase, or pro-  
 ' serve,

(p) Thur-  
loc, Vol. i.  
p. 759—  
762.

may, honour and profit accrued hereby to

the

' serve, the reformed interest in *France*, was by ren-  
 ' dering the protestants of necessary use to their King;  
 ' for, that longer than they were so, they could not  
 ' be free from persecution, and that the way to render  
 ' them so, was by keeping the ballance betwixt *Spain*  
 ' and *France* even, as that which would consequently  
 ' make them useful to their King: but by overthrowing  
 ' the ballance in his war with *Spain*, and joining with  
 ' *France*, he freed the *French* King from his fears of  
 ' *Spain*, enabled him to subdue all factions at home,  
 ' and thereby to bring himself into a condition of not  
 ' standing in need of any of them, and from thence  
 ' hath proceeded the persecution that hath since been,  
 ' and still is, in that nation, against the reformed there;  
 ' so that *Oliver*, instead of advancing the reformed in-  
 ' terest, hath, by an error in his politicks, been the  
 ' author of destroying it. The honour and advantage  
 ' he propounded to this nation in his pulling down of  
 ' *Spain*, had as ill a foundation: for, if true, as was  
 ' said, that we were to have had *Ostend* and *Newport*,  
 ' so well as *Dunkirk*, (when we could get them) they  
 ' bore no proportion, in any kind, to all the rest of the  
 ' King of *Spain's* *European* dominions, which must ne-  
 ' cessarily have fallen to the *French* King's share, be-  
 ' cause of their joining and nearness to him, and re-  
 ' moteness from us, and the increasing the greatness of  
 ' so near a neighbour, must have increased our future  
 ' dangers (g).—Mr. *Burrisb*, after mentioning the  
 ' offers made to *Cromwell* from *France* and *Spain*, in or-  
 ' der to obtain his friendship, says, ' in these circum-  
 ' stances, perhaps, the wisest course had been to have  
 ' fate still, and entertained both sides in suspence, un-  
 ' der favour of which the commerce of *Great Britain*  
 ' could not fail to have flourished. But the protector  
 ' was not easy at home. Some of those who had been  
 ' the means of his elevation, either from envy, or a true  
 ' republican principle, were become his enemies; the  
 ' na-

(g) The  
World's  
Mistake,  
&c. p. 4.

the *English* nation, and such too as it has,

' nation was accustomed to war, and seemed to take  
 ' pleasure in it; all which induced *Cromwell* to break  
 ' with some of his neighbours, that he might find em-  
 ' ployment abroad for those busy spirits, which, if left  
 ' at home, would certainly have engaged in popular  
 ' commotions. Thus the protector having resolved a  
 ' war from a motive of self-interest, the same principle  
 ' made him prefer the alliance of *France* to that of  
 ' *Spain*; because *Philip IV.* was neither so redoubtable  
 ' an enemy as *Lewis XIV.* nor so capable of serving  
 ' *Cromwell* in the quality of a friend. The principal  
 ' dominions of *Spain* were situated at a great distance  
 ' from *England*; and, as to the naval power of that  
 ' crown, which had lately been the terror of the universe,  
 ' it was now so reduced, that when, in consequence of  
 ' the forementioned treaty, monsieur *de Turenne* formed  
 ' the siege of *Dunkirk* with the confederate troops of  
 ' *France* and *England*, a small squadron of *English* ships  
 ' served to block up the port, and prevent the garrison  
 ' from receiving any relief by sea. In these circum-  
 ' stances the *Spaniards* run a very great risque of having  
 ' their flota fall into the hands of the *English*, and to  
 ' this we may add, that the ill condition of their af-  
 ' fairs in the *West-Indies*, gave the protector hopes of  
 ' annexing *Hispaniola* to the dominions of *Great Britain*.  
 ' But this weakness of the *Spaniards*, which invited  
 ' *Cromwell* into the war, and seemed to assure him of  
 ' success, was a very strong reason why he ought not  
 ' to have broke with them; because he could not conti-  
 ' nue to depress the crown of *Spain* without destroying  
 ' the equality of power, that ought to subsist between  
 ' the several great states of *Europe*, and elevating *France*  
 ' to such an exorbitant degree, as would enable her to  
 ' lord it at pleasure over all her neighbours. The pro-  
 ' tector knew this extremely well, and there are those who  
 ' have affirmed, that, before his death, he had taken a  
 ' resolution to reconcile himself with the court of *Madrid*.

• After

and yet continues to enjoy. For though  
the

After having acquired *Dunkirk* and *Jamaica*, during his alliance with *France*, he had a mind to possess himself of *Calais* by the assistance of the *Spaniards*; but, as he did not live to effect this, he left the *French* very great gainers by the measures they had taken with him (r). Lord *Bolingbroke* censures *Oliver* in strong terms likewise. Hear him. '*Cromwell* either did not discern, says his lordship, this turn of the balance of power [from *Spain* to *France*]—or, discerning it, he was induced by reasons of private interest to act against the general interest of *Europe*. *Cromwell* joined with *France* against *Spain*, and tho' he got *Jamaica* and *Dunkirk*, he drove the *Spaniards* into a necessity of making a peace with *France*, that has disturbed the peace of the world almost fourscore years, and the consequences of which have well nigh beggared in our times the nation he enslaved in his. There is a tradition, I have heard it from persons who lived in those days, and, I believe, it came from *Thurlow*, that *Cromwell* was in treaty with *Spain*, and ready to turn his arms against *France*, when he died. If this fact was certain, as little as I honour his memory, I should have some regret that he died so soon. But whatever his intentions were, we must charge the *Pyrenean* treaty, and the fatal consequences of it, in great measure, to his account. The *Spaniards* abhorred the thought of marrying their *Infanta* to *Lewis XIV*. It was on this point that they broke the negotiation *Lionne* had begun: and your lordship will perceive, that if they resumed it afterwards, and offered the marriage they had before rejected, *Cromwell's* league with *France* was a principal inducement to this alteration of their resolution (s).—Mr. *Hume* joins in the cry against *Cromwell*, and peremptorily declares, 'That, if he had understood and regarded the interest of his country, he would have supported the declining condition of *Spain* against the dangerous

(r) *Batavia*  
illustrata,  
vol. ii. p.  
483.

(s) *Letters*  
on the study  
and use of  
history, vol.  
i. p. 232.  
See Lond.



THE LIFE OF  
the expedition to *Hispaniola*, under the

ambition of *France*, and preserved the ballance of power, on which the greatness and security of *England* so much depends. Had he studied only his own interests, he would have maintained an exact neutrality betwixt those two great monarchies; nor would he ever have hazarded his ill acquired and unsettled power, by provoking foreign enemies, who might lend assistance to domestick faction, and overturn his tottering throne. But his magnanimous courage undervalued danger: his active disposition and avidity of extensive glory made him incapable of repose (t).— These are the principal objections to *Cromwell's* entering into the war with *Spain*, and leaguings with *France*: objections it must be owned at this distance of time, and in our view of things, extremely plausible, but which possibly would have been deemed but of little force had they been urged when these important affairs were under deliberation. For let it be considered that *Cromwell* was at liberty to wage war with *Spain*, on account of its cruelties to the *English* in *America*, and the restrictions laid on their commerce. To avenge innocent blood, procure satisfaction for injuries past, and security for the time to come, is worthy a sovereign, and merits praise from all — Again; with *France* the Protector had no quarrel. *Calais* was too old an affair to ground a war on; and the making use of it as a pretence for it, would have been deemed ridiculous and unjust.— *France*, 'tis true, was capable of hurting *Oliver* more than *Spain*; but it must be very idle to make it criminal in him to prefer her friendship for that among other reasons. 'Tis sufficient the public good is not sacrificed to private interest: to expect men in power, how wise and good soever, will have no regard to their own preservation and safety, is perhaps too much. I do not remember many instances of it in latter times. But the great objection we see is, the ballance of power between the two crowns was by *Cromwell's* means broken,

and

(t) History of Great Britain, vol. ii. p. 65.



joint command of *Pen* and *Venables*, through

and *France* thereby enabled to give the law to *Christendom*. But *Oliver*, I presume, must be acquitted on this head, if it appears that it was imagined at that time that the ballance was on the side of *Spain*; that in fact the two crowns were much nearer on an equality than the objectors suppose; that *Cromwell* kept it in his power to turn the scale as he thought fit; and that the *Pyrenean* treaty in reality placed the two crowns in proper situations with respect to each other, and to their neighbours.

1. *Spain* was not then viewed in that weak state which she afterwards appeared. *Cromwell's* parliaments were not over complaisant to him, nor prone to approve his actions merely as such. Yet the parliament, says Mr. *Thurloe* in a letter to general *Montague*, dated *Whitehall*, *October 25, 1656*, 'declared themselves cordially and unanimously concerning the *Spanish* war, having after two days debate declared their approbation thereof *nemine contradicente*: and this before they heard one tittle of your success (u).' The same gentleman writing to the general, *August 28*, preceding, says, 'The *Spaniard* hath had great success in *Flanders* this year against the *French*. To that of raising the siege of *Valenciennes*, he had added the taking of *Conde*, and is very likely to lodge himself this year in *France*; so that the cardinal hath not been able to draw any army to the sea-coast, as was intended, being scarce able to defend his own country (x).'

(u) Ormonde's State Papers, vol. ii. p. 115.

(x) Id. p. 112.

2. There was not in fact that inequality between the two crowns which the objectors suppose. It is well known that through several preceding reigns, 'twas the house of *Austria* only had been formidable; that injured our royal family in the *Palatinate*; and alone threatened the liberties of *Europe*. *France* had not yet given occasion to her neighbours to fear. A long war had been now carried on between the two crowns, with various success. If *Spain* was weakened by the revolt of *Portugal*

gal

*gal* and *Catalonia*, 'tis certain *France* was distracted with domestic contentions even in *Paris* itself, as well as other parts of the kingdom: contentions the more dangerous, as persons of the most elevated rank and greatest power were concerned in them. So that *Spain* carried on the war on a foot of equality, not of defence. If the Prince of *Cende* had cut off their best veterans at *Rocroy*, he now himself headed their troops with the acknowledged reputation of being the best general in *Europe*, though *Turenne* figured in the field, and had performed deeds of renown.—This equality is visible through several campaigns; but the raising of the siege of *Arras* on one side, and that of *Valenciennes* on the other, proves it beyond doubt; to which may be added, that even after the taking of *Mardyke* in pursuance of the league with *England*, by *Turenne*, the *French* met with several losses (y).—We seem therefore to deceive ourselves with our after knowledge, when we blame *Cromwell* for overturning the ballance of power.

(y) Ram-  
say's Life  
of Turenne,  
vol. i. p.  
303. 8vo.  
Lond. 1735.

3. It should be observed, that *Cromwell* held the ballance of power in his own hands the more firmly, by his *French* league. We see from *Thurloe's* account with what caution he engaged in it. The treaty was but for a year, 'till *Dunkirk* should be conquered for *England* by the help of *France*, and when *Cromwell* had got it, he was at liberty, if he saw fit, at the end of that year to make a peace with *Spain*, and use this very town against *France*. The *English* troops conquered little or nothing for the *French* crown; but *France* by giving *England* a footing on the continent just on the confines of the two contending parties, enabled it to hold the ballance of power so much the more steadily between them, and become so much the more formidable to *France* as well as *Spain*. He found the scales even, and in possessing himself of *Dunkirk*, he made the *French* give him hold of the handle of the ballance to keep them so.

If any after this, should condemn *Cromwell* for weakening the *Spaniards* by making this conquest of *Dunkirk*, what must they think of *Charles II.* who by the advice of his chancellor *Hyde* sold it to *France*, and thereby

threw

threw so great a weight into that scale, which then appeared more manifestly to preponderate.

4. The *Pyrenean* treaty placed the two crowns in proper situations with respect to each other, and to their neighbours. — In the treaty between the Emperor, *Spain*, and *Holland* in 1673, the States-General stipulated to 'make no peace with *France*' till the Catholic King 'was put in possession of all that his most Christian Majesty had taken in the *Low Countries* since the peace of the *Pyrenees*.' In the grand alliance between the Emperor, *England* and *Holland*, in 1689, it was agreed, 'That no peace should be made with *France*, till the peace of *Westphalia*, *Osnabrug*, *Munster*, and the *Pyrenean* were by the help of God, and common force vindicated, and all things restored to their former condition, according to the tenor of the same.' And King *William III.* when Prince of *Orange*, though justly warmed with resentment against *France*, declared, 'That whenever *Spain* passed the bounds of the *Pyrenean* treaty, he would become as good a *Frenchman* as he was then a *Spaniard* (x).' These facts I think fully shew, the *Pyrenean* treaty to have been well calculated for the repose of *Europe*, and for the advantage of the contracting powers. However, it was not *Cromwell's* league that produced this treaty and its fatal consequences, as *Lord Bolingbroke* suggests. The proposal of giving the infant to *Lewis XIV.* was rejected by *Spain*, when there was no other heir to that throne; it was accepted when a son was born to ascend it (a). The consequences of this marriage were indeed fatal to *Europe*. But they arose from the ill conduct of *Spain*, and the injustice, ambition, and perjury of *Lewis*, who with the zeal of a bigot, the superstition of a priest, and the sensuality of an epicurean, delighted in sacrificing the blood of millions, to his own foolish idea of glory. — I will conclude this note with observing that *Cromwell's* irresolution and delay in choosing his side in the war seem justly censurable; more especially as he neglected to close in with the offers made him by *France*, even after he had determined, and sent his fleet for the *West Indies*. *Bourdeaux*, the *French* ambassador's letters,

(x) See Sir Wm Temple's Memoirs, p. 128. 8vo.

(a) See Turenne's Life, vol. i. p. 327.

a variety of causes was (EEE) unsuccessful;  
and

are full of the delays he met with in his negotiation for this purpose; \* and Mr. *Thurloe* points out the wrong measures taken on this occasion, when he says above, ' *France* offered a sum of money, in case *England* would declare war against *Spain* in any part of the world; but many difficulties and delays falling out in this treaty, the fleet was sent away into the *West Indies*, and a war followed thereupon between *England* and *Spain*, without the least communication of counsells with *France*, whereby *France* had its end for nothing.'

(EEE) *The expedition to Hispaniola miscarried.*] *Cromwell's* instructions to general *Venables*, commander of the land forces sent to *America*, are to be seen in *Burchett*. From these it appears that no particular place was the object of their destination, but much was left to the prudence of the commanders. Reasons are therein mentioned for attempting the islands, or leaving these, to attack the main land, more especially *Cartagena*; whereby, if conquered, they might be masters of the *Spanish* treasures which come from *Peru* by way of *Panama* in the South-Sea, to *Porto Bello*, or *Nombre de dies* in the North-Sea (b). But where, after all, the descent was to be made, the generals with the commissioners, or any two of them, were, on proper consultation, to determine. So that Lord *Clarendon* was much mistaken in saying, ' Their orders from *Cromwell* were very particular and very positive, that they should land at such a place, which was plainly enough described to them (c).' The fleet left *England*, December 19, 1654, and arrived at *Barbadoes*, January 29, 1654, O. S. Here it was supposed they should meet with many things they stood in need of. But their expectations were not answered. Even a sufficient quantity of arms and ammunition were wanting. ' A sad matter,' says *Venables* in a letter to *Montague*, written from *Barbadoes* February 28, following, ' when we must attempt so high with little or nothing, or return home  
' and


(b) *Burchett*,  
p. 387.

(c) Vol. vi.  
p. 578.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

and subjected the nation to disgrace; yet the taking

' and do nothing! which few of us had a great deal  
 ' more chearfully hear the news of death than be guilty  
 ' of.' The progress and ill success of the fleet and ar-  
 ' my, I will relate in the words of *Venables*. ' We left,  
 ' says he, *Barbadoes* the last of *March*, and came to *St.*  
 ' *Christophers*, where we found a regiment formed;  
 ' and not staying to anchor, we sailed thence without  
 ' setting foot on shore, and in a fortnight's time came  
 ' to *Hispaniola*, where we landed upon *Saturday* the  
 ' 14th of *April*, near forty miles to the west of *Santo*  
 ' *Domingo*. The reason was, our pilots were all ab-  
 ' sent; the chief had outstayed his order, being sent out  
 ' to discover, and none with us save an old *Dutchman*,  
 ' that knew no place but that: whereas we resolved to  
 ' have landed where *Sir Francis Drake* did, except forc-  
 ' ed off by a fort (said to be there;) and then in such  
 ' a case to have gone to the other. From our landing  
 ' we marched without any guide, save heaven, through  
 ' woods; the ways so narrow, that 500 men might  
 ' have extremely prejudiced 20000 by ambushes; but  
 ' this course the enemy held not, save twice. The  
 ' weather extream hot, and little water; our feet scorch-  
 ' ed through our shoes, and men and horse died of  
 ' thirst: but if any had liquor put into their mouths,  
 ' presently after they fell, they would recover, else die  
 ' in an instant. Our men the last fortnight at sea had  
 ' had bread, and little of it or other victuals, notwith-  
 ' standing general *Penn's* order; so that they were very  
 ' weak at landing; and some, instead of three days pro-  
 ' vision at landing, had but one, with which they march-  
 ' ed five days, and therefore fell to eat limes, oranges,  
 ' lemons, &c. which put them into fluxes and fevers.  
 ' Of the former, I had my share for near a fortnight,  
 ' with cruel gripings, that I could scarce stand. Col.  
 ' *Butler* was ordered to land to the east of the city,  
 ' but could not; and therefore he and the *Christopher's*  
 ' regiment under col. *Holdip* were landed where we first

THE LIFE OF   
 taking and settling of *Jamaica*, will always  
 be

' resolved, and were ordered by general *Penn* (whose or-  
 ' der I enjoined them to obey) to stay there for us :  
 ' but they marched away, which contrary to the first  
 ' resolution, with some other reasons, drew us beyond  
 ' their landing (where we were to receive more victuals)  
 ' to secure them who were straggling up and down for  
 ' water. Which put the enemy upon placing of an  
 ' ambush for them, which fell upon our forlorn and  
 ' routed them; but the van immediately beat them  
 ' back with loss, and pursued them near to the city  
 ' walls, who shot at us. Victuals we wanted, having  
 ' fasted two days every man of us; our ammunition  
 ' spent; no water; and our men ready to faint, and  
 ' some died; the eagerness and heat of fight had drawn  
 ' them beyond their strength. Whereupon it was re-  
 ' solved by a council of war, to retreat for meat and  
 ' ammunition; which we did; but our long march and  
 ' this delay did give the enemy time to call in all the  
 ' country to at least 4 or 5,000, and left our men, after  
 ' travel by sea, bad diet, and fasting, very weak; so  
 ' that when we advanced the next, they fell upon our  
 ' forlorn again, routed them, and then in the narrow  
 ' lanes and thick woods routed mine and major general  
 ' *Heane's* regiments, slew my major and three of my  
 ' captains, slew the major general, and wounded his  
 ' lieutenant colonel, who is since dead; and were not  
 ' repulsed, till the regiment of seamen (with whom I  
 ' was) gave stop to this disorder. Never did my eyes  
 ' see men more discouraged, being scarce able to make  
 ' them stand, when the enemy was retreated, who ne-  
 ' ver looked upon us until we were ready to faint for  
 ' water; they having (which I forgot to tell before) flopt  
 ' up all their wells; so that we had not of ten miles at  
 ' least, one drop of water (*d*).—Mr. *Daniel*, audi-  
 ' tor general in this expedition, gives much the same ac-  
 ' count; and then adds, ' I cannot omit to express some-  
 ' thing concerning this great business, which I am sure  
 ' the

(*d*) Or-  
 monde's  
 State Pa-  
 pers, vol. ii.  
 p. 48. See  
 also Thur-  
 loe, vol. iii.  
 p. 504—  
 208. And  
 Howard's  
 collection of  
 Letters, vol.  
 i. p. 1—21.  
 4to, Lond.  
 1753.

' the world will mistake in reportinge; but myself being  
 ' ing a present eye-witness there on the place, and amongst  
 ' mongst the crowd, in the midst of danger, near major-general's  
 ' person, I have not, neither shall I, relate any thing but what I  
 ' know for certain truth. I know a threefold cord cannot be easily  
 ' broken; but where they twist not equally together, they many  
 ' times cut one another; and this I am sure, that in martial  
 ' affairs, where commands execute like lightnings, and those  
 ' variable as the winds, according as the present emergency  
 ' requires, and not for consent of others, to the losse of all. I  
 ' well know his highness would never submit, in all his  
 ' past actions, to such curbs, nor can brave designs ever  
 ' succeed with such bridles, which I hope to see amended.' This  
 ' seems a sensible reflection on joining commissioners and the  
 ' admiral in authority with the general, and thereby rendering  
 ' their advice and consent absolutely necessary in every affair.  
 ' This was one unhappy cause of the ill success they met with,  
 ' we may well enough suppose. Another was the dislike of the  
 ' admiral and some of the sea officers, to the land forces, as the  
 ' same gentleman hints in the following passage. ' The uncharitableness  
 ' of our rear admiral, says he, will not suffer my silence, for  
 ' by that time we were by order shipped from *Hispaniola*, he  
 ' did furiously and most unchristian-like say, before good  
 ' witnesses, where are these cowardly *Spaniards* now? Will they  
 ' not come and cut off these army rogues, that we may noe  
 ' more be troubled with them? And his own lieutenant, my  
 ' former acquaintance, being by accident aboard the ship where  
 ' I came into weak, and so ill not able to stand, after salutes  
 ' and some discourse, told me to my face (like to his profession)  
 ' we were all overboard, that they might be rid of us again;  
 ' speaking the same words to capt. *Fincher*, in his extremity  
 ' of weakness, and also to others (e)

(e) *Thutloe*,  
vol. iii. p.  
507.

On the other hand, great complaint was made of general  
*Venables*. He was looked on as covetous and niggardly,  
 and was possessed but of little esteem amongst the soldiery  
 (f), having prohibited them from plundering

(f) *Id.* p.  
689.

be deemed as an essential service to (FFF)  
*Britain*, and meriting the highest applause.  
 The

(g) *Thurloc*, vol. iii.  
 p. 505.

on pain of death (g). A thing no way pleasing in such an expedition, where every man flattered himself with the hopes of making a fortune.—Such were the causes of the failure of the expedition to *Hispaniola*; causes which will always produce like effects. For unless there is unanimity of counsel, obedience to orders, confidence in the commander, and sufficient store of provisions and ammunition, it can never be expected but that things will go amiss. It were well if this had been the only affair in which dishonor and disgrace had accrued to the nation through the disagreement of commanders, and the envy and ill will of the land and sea officers one towards another! *Cromwell's* genius did not appear in planning this expedition (h).

(h) See Account of the European Settlements in America, vol. ii. p. 64. 8vo. Lond. 1758.

(FFF) *The taking and settling of Jamaica, was an essential service to Britain.*] After the disgrace received by the *English*, as mentioned in the preceding note, the army was reduced to the greatest extremities. ‘ The rains  
 ‘ increasing, says the auditor *Daniel*, our men weak-  
 ‘ ning, all even unto death fluxing, the seamen aboard  
 ‘ neglecting, that forced us to eat all our troop horses,  
 ‘ (the enemy denying all relief, triumphing) and these  
 ‘ miseries increasing, our council resolved by seeking  
 ‘ God, to purge the army. First, *Jackson* [adjutant-  
 ‘ general] found guilty of cowardice, had his sword  
 ‘ broken over his head for a coward, his commission  
 ‘ taken away, and expelled the army, and to be swabber  
 ‘ to hospital ships of sick people, which was accordingly  
 ‘ done. Some women found in mens apparel were pu-  
 ‘ nished, and all suspected whores (*Barbadeses* and those  
 ‘ plantations yielding few else) narrowly fought after;  
 ‘ all officers and soldiers strictly commanded to observe  
 ‘ duty, upon greatest pains; one of major-general (now  
 ‘ *Fortescue*) soldiers, proved to run away, hanged; and  
 ‘ indeed like a wise prudent general, all things by him  
 ‘ ordered; yet our sickness increasing, it was resolved  
 ‘ again



The attempt on *Hispaniola* quickly reached the ears of the Catholic King, who immediately

‘ again to ship, and so directly for *Jamaica* (i).’ — *Venables* himself shall relate the success. ‘ Upon this disaster and our mens fears we fell to new counsel, and resolved to try *Jamaica* (from which nothing diverted our first attempt, but that it wanted a name in the world, our men refusing to march again for *Dominings*) where we landed (having beaten the enemy from off his forts and ordnance) upon the tenth of *May*; and find the country in our judgments equal, if not superior, to *Hispaniola*: and in four miles march here, I saw more cattle and plantations than in forty in *Hispaniola*, and a better air, the site more advantageous to intercept the *Spanish* Plate-fleet. The *Recovery* and *William* of *London* are come to us with some biscuit, which we extremely want, but the fleet claim it as theirs; and then we starve: for the enemy here, after signing articles, have run into the woods, and drove away all the cattle into the mountains, and left us nothing but bare walls and roots to shelter and feed upon. We are getting horse to make troopers and dragoons: and then we hope well, if the Lord bless a party we have sent forth under colonel *Butler*. The people have broke all their promises all along; but we have their governor and another principal man as two hostages; they say the articles are too *harsh* (k).’ All things at last however were settled, and *Venables* and *Penn*, between whom there was an ill understanding, and who had different parties even among the land forces, took the first opportunity of returning to *England*. *Cromwell*, greatly displeas’d at their whole conduct, and disappointed in his high hopes, we may well suppose was angry; and after hearing their mutual accusations and defences, committed them to the *Tower*. Certain it is, many of the officers complain’d greatly of *Venables*’ behaviour, both at *Hispaniola* and *Jamaica* (l). The *Englsh* were no sooner known to be gone to this latter place,

(i) Thurloe, vol. iii. p. 507.

(k) Ormonde’s Papers. vol. ii. p. 50.

(l) See Thurloe, vol. iii. p. 646. 755

diately thereupon seizing the persons and effects of the *English* merchants in his dominions,

but an account was sent by Mr. *Muddiford* from *Barbadoes*, of its great utility and importance. 'It is apparently, says he, in a letter dated *June 20, 1655*, (seeing they would have an island) far more proper for their purposes, than the other or *Porto Rico*, as the situation in the maps will make more visible. It hath an excellent harbour, and is accounted the most healthful and plentiful of them all. It will be sooner filled, and is far more convenient for attempts on the *Spanish* fleet, and more especially the *Cartagena* fleet, which must halt within sight of it, as they go to the *Havannah*. And believe it, this will more trouble the court of *Spain* than ten of the other; and therefore it must be expected more attempts will be by the *Spaniards* to supplant them. If therefore you have an opportunity, press his highness and the council to send speedy and great supplies of men, arms, ammunition, and cloathes.—I am confident that if this place be fully planted, which in three or four years may with ease be done, his highness may do what he will in the *Indies* (m). *Cromwell* was sensible of its importance, and issued out a proclamation for the encouragement of all persons inclined to settle there, promising the erection of civil government; protection against enemies; exemption from customs for a certain number of years, and all other things requisite to induce men to transport themselves thither (n). Incredible were the hardships the first *English* planters, as well as the officers and soldiers met with in the beginning. But *Cromwell* was continually sending them relief, and doing every thing in his power to make them easy and happy (o). Nothing can more fully confirm this than the following letter written by him to major-general *Fortescue*, commander of the forces there, after the departure of general *Venables*.

(m) *Thursloe*, vol. iii, p. 565.

(n) *Id.* p. 733.

(o) *Id.* vol. iv, p. 653, & seq.

minions, caused an open war between the two nations. *Cromwell*, far from being intimidated,

S I R,

YOU will herewith receive instructions for the better carrying on of your business, which is not of small account here, although our discouragements have been many; for which we desire to humble ourselves before the Lord, who hath sorely chastened us. I doe commend, in the midst of others miscarriages, your constancy and faithfulness to your trust, in every \* \* where you are, and taking care of a company of poore sheepe left by their shepherds; and be assured, that as that which you have done hath been good in itself, and becoming an honest man, so it hath a very good favour here with all good christians and all true *Englishmen*, and will not be forgotten by me, as opportunitie shall serve. I hope you have long before this time received that good supplye which went from hence in *July* last, whereby you will perceive, that you have not been forgotten heere. I hope also the ships sent for *New England* are before this tyme with you; and let me tell you, as an encouragement to you and those with you to improve the utmost diligence, and to excite your courage in this business, though not to occasion any negligence in presentinge that affair, nor to give occasion to slacken any improvement of what the place may afford, that you will be followed with what necessary supplies, as well for comfortable subsistence, as for your security against the *Spaniard*, this place may afford or you want. And therefore study first your securitie by fortificing; and although you have not monies for the present, wherewith to do it in such quantities as were to be wished, yet your case being as that of a marching army, wherein every soldier out of principles of nature and according to the practice of all discipline, ought to be at the pains to secure the common quarter; wee hope no man amongst you will be soe wantinge to himself, confideringe

midated, sent immediate orders to *Blake*,  
 who was then in the *Mediterranean*, to act  
 against

deringe food is provided for you, as not to be willinge  
 to help to the uttermost therein; and therefore I re-  
 quire you and all with you for the safetie of the whole,  
 that this be made your principal intention. The do-  
 inge of this will require, that you be verie careful  
 not to scatter, till you have begun a securitie in some  
 one place. Next I desire you, that you would con-  
 sider how to form such a body of good horse, as may,  
 if the *Spaniard* should attempt upon you at the next  
 coming into the *Indies* with his gallions, be in a rea-  
 diness to march to hinder his landinge, who will hard-  
 ly land upon a body of horse; and if he shall land,  
 be in a posture to keep the provisions of the country  
 from him, or him from the provisions, if he shall en-  
 deavour to march towards you. Wee trust wee shall  
 furnish you with bridles, saddles, and horse-shoes, and  
 other things necessary for that worke, desiring you to  
 the uttermost to improve what you have already of  
 those sorts. Should it be knowne that you had 500  
 horse well appointed, ready to march upon all occa-  
 sions in that island, even that alone might deterre the  
*Spaniard* from attemptinge any thing upon you. Wee  
 have sent commissioners and instructions into *New*  
*England*, to trye what people may be drawn thence.  
 Wee have done the like to the *English* windward islands,  
 and both in *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, you will  
 have what men and women we can well transport.  
 Wee thinke, and it is much designed amongst us, to  
 strive with the *Spaniard* for the mastery of all those  
 seas; and therefore wee could heartily wish, that the  
 island of *Providence* were in our hands againe, believ-  
 inge that it lyes so advantagiously in reference to the  
 mayne, and especially for the hindrance of the *Peru*  
 trade and *Cartagena*, that you would not only have  
 great advantage thereby of intelligence and surprize,  
 but even blocke up the same. It is discoursed here,  
 that

against *Spain*. His orders were obeyed, and

‘ that if the *Spaniard* doe attempt you, it is most likely  
 ‘ it will be on the east end of the island towards *Cuba*,  
 ‘ as also *Cuba* upon *Cuba* is a place easily attempted, and  
 ‘ hath in it a very rich copper mine. It would be good  
 ‘ for the first, as you have opportunity, to informe  
 ‘ yourself, and if there be need, to make a good work  
 ‘ thereupon, to prevent them; and for the other, and  
 ‘ all things of that kinde, wee must leave them to your  
 ‘ judgment upon the place, to doe therein as you shall  
 ‘ see cause. To conclude, as we have cause to be hum-  
 ‘ bled for the reproof God gave us at *St. Domingo* upon  
 ‘ the account of our owne sins, as well as others; soe  
 ‘ truly upon the reports brought hither to us of the ex-  
 ‘ treame avarice, pride, and confidence, disorders and  
 ‘ debauchedness, profaneness and wickedness commonly  
 ‘ practised amongst the army; wee cannot onlie bewail  
 ‘ the same, but desire that all with you may doe so,  
 ‘ and that a very special regard may be had soe to go-  
 ‘ verne for tyme to come, as that all manner of vice  
 ‘ may be thoroughly discountenanced and severely punish-  
 ‘ ed, and that such a frame of government may be ex-  
 ‘ ercised, that virtue and godlinesse may receive due en-  
 ‘ couragement.’

He lived not indeed to see the beneficial effects of his care. But the *English* nation has sufficiently experienced it. *Jamaica* for near a century has returned an immense treasure to her mother country, and enabled her to injure *Spain* when necessary, in a very sensible manner. This she long has done, and as it is said, is yet capable of doing much more, if properly cultivated, and improved, and rescued out of the hands of monopolizers. How far this is true, it may become those who have the affairs of our colonies under their inspection to enquire; but whatever be the result, it will be an indisputable truth that *Jamaica* is one great source of wealth to *Britain*.

wealth,

(GGG) *Wealth and honor accrued to his country by Blake's behaviour.*] On the King of Spain's seizing the persons and effects of the *English* by way of retaliation for what had passed in *America*, *Cromwell* published a manifesto in *Latin*, written, as is supposed, by *Milton*, setting forth his reasons for his conduct in that affair. This piece contains a great variety of instances of the barbarity, cruelty and oppression exercised by the *Spaniards* on the *English*, which are little known. Ships were taken, men murdered, and the islands of *Tortuga* and *Providencia* wrested out of the hands of the *English* in times of full peace. Besides these abominable deeds in the new world, an account is given of many hostile acts against the same nation, by the *Spaniards*, even in *Europe*; from all which, says the manifesto, 'We are confident, we have made it plain to all, who weigh things fairly and impartially, that necessity, honor and justice, have prompted us to undertake this late expedition. First, we have been prompted to it by necessity; it being absolutely necessary to go to war with the *Spaniards*, since they will not allow us to be at peace with them: and then honor and justice, seeing we cannot pretend to either of these, if we sit still and suffer such insufferable injuries to be done our countrymen, as those we have shown to be done them in the *West Indies* (p).<sup>2</sup> But *Cromwell* rested not in words. He sent orders to *Blake* to attack the *Spaniards* in the *Mediterranean* or elsewhere, and to seize every thing he could lay his hand on belonging unto them. *Blake* wanted nothing more. Shortly after, cruising, in conjunction with general *Montague*, off of *Cadiz*, to intercept the *Spanish Flota*, captain *Stoynor*, with three ships of the fleet, fell in with eight galleons, with which he dealt so effectually in two or three hours engagement, that one was sunk, another set on fire, two were forced on shore, and two he took, having on board in money and plate, to the value of six hundred

(p) *Milton's Prose Works*, vol. ii. p. 273.

to his country by the behaviour of that gal-  
lant

‘ hundred thousand pounds, and only two escaped into  
 ‘ *Cádiz* (q).’ This action was on the 9th of *September*, <sup>(q) Burchett,</sup>  
 1656. Capt. *Stayner*, in his letter to the generals of <sup>P. 395.</sup>  
 the fleet, written on the day of the engagement, says,  
 ‘ The ship he took was as good as all the fleet besides,  
 ‘ and the other that capt. *Harman* took was very rich; <sup>(r) Thurloe,</sup>  
 ‘ though but little silver in her (r).’ By the calculation <sup>vol. v. p.</sup>  
 of the *Spaniards*, there was taken and lost nine millions <sup>399.</sup>  
 of pieces of eight, of which about five millions fell to <sup>(s) Id. p.</sup>  
 the share of the *English* (s). Besides this great sum of <sup>400.</sup>  
 money, so useful to *Cromwell* at this time, advantage was  
 made of the intelligence given by the young marquis of  
*Baydex*, a prisoner, who was born in *Lima*, and un-  
 derstood well the state of the *West Indies*. *Montague*  
 spent almost a whole afternoon in discourse with him,  
 and obtained such an account from him, as he thought <sup>(t) Id. p.</sup>  
 worth transmitting to *Thurloe* (t). So intent was he on <sup>434.</sup>  
 procuring all possible helps for his country. ‘ The next  
 ‘ year admiral *Blake* went out with a strong squadron on  
 ‘ the same design of intercepting the *Spanish West In-*  
 ‘ *dia* fleet, and took his station off of *Cádiz*, where re-  
 ‘ ceiving intelligence that those ships were arrived at  
 ‘ *Teneriffe*, he made the best of his way to that island.  
 ‘ The *Flota* lay in the bay of *Santa Cruz*, drawn up in  
 ‘ form of a half-moon, with a strong barricado before  
 ‘ them; the bay itself defended by seven forts disposed  
 ‘ round the same, with two castles at the entrance,  
 ‘ which were well furnished with ordnance: in which  
 ‘ posture the *Spanish* admiral thought himself so secure,  
 ‘ that he sent out word by a *Dutch* merchant, *Blake*  
 ‘ might come if he durst. The admiral having taken a  
 ‘ view of the enemy’s situation, sent in captain *Stayner*  
 ‘ with a squadron to attack them, who soon forcing his  
 ‘ passage into the bay, was presently supported by *Blake*  
 ‘ with the whole fleet. Placing some of his ships so as  
 ‘ that they might fire their broadsides into the castles  
 ‘ and forts, himself and *Stayner* engaged the *Spanish*  
 ‘ fleet,

lant admiral. Very few commanders ever shewed like conduct and bravery. Nor were the

(s) Bur-  
chett, p.  
396.

(x) Thur-  
loc, vol. vi.  
p. 312.

‘ fleet, and in few hours obtaining a compleat victory,  
 ‘ possessed himself of all the ships; but being not able  
 ‘ to bring them off, he set them on fire, and they were  
 ‘ every one burnt (u).’ Sixteen galleons were destroy-  
 ed, besides others. Most of them had a great part of  
 their loading aboard, which perished all with the ships (x).  
 ‘ The last intelligence from *Cadix* (says Mr. *Moynard*,  
 ‘ the *English* consul at *Lisbon*, in a letter to Mr *Thurloe*,  
 ‘ dated *June 6, 1657, N. S.*) saies, that the losse of  
 ‘ those ships in the *Canaries* goes near their hearts; they  
 ‘ thinking it a greater losse to them than the galleons  
 ‘ with the plate taken formerly; for the consequence of  
 ‘ this losse will be greate, in respect they are wholly  
 ‘ disappointed of furnishing the *West India* with such ne-  
 ‘ cessaries as they wante; for those ships were designed  
 ‘ to have gone from thence in few days, if general *Blake*  
 ‘ had not prevented them; so now they are driven to  
 ‘ their laste shifte to freight *Hollanders*, and send them  
 (y) *Id. ibid.* ‘ some, and some for the *India* (y).’—Such were the  
 naval exploits under the Protector! Exploits, which Mr.  
*Waller* has celebrated in more than one of his Poems.

—*Britain*, looking with a just disdain  
 Upon this gilded Majesty of *Spain*;  
 And knowing well, that empire must decline,  
 Whose chief support, and sinews are of coin;  
 Our nation’s solid virtue did oppose,  
 To the rich troublers of the world’s repose.  
 And now some months, incamping on the main,  
 Our naval army had besieged *Spain*:  
 They that the whole world’s monarchy design’d,  
 Are to their ports by our bold fleet confin’d;  
 From whence, our red cross they triumphant see,  
 Riding without a rival on the sea.



the *English* less successful on the continent,  
 A body of men being sent into *Flanders*,  
 joined

And again,——

The sea's our own: and now all nations greet,  
 With bending sails, each vessel of our fleet:  
 Your pow'r extends as far as winds can blow,  
 Or swelling sails upon the globe may go.

He has not used too much poetical licence.

*Blake*, ' after this glorious atchievement, returned to  
 ' the coast of *Spain*, and having cruised there some time,  
 ' was coming home with the fleet to *England*, when he  
 ' fell ill of a scorbutic fever, of which he died just as he  
 ' was entring *Plymouth* sound. *Cromwell's* parliament,  
 ' upon the news of his exploit at *Santa Cruz*, had or-  
 ' dered him a jewel of five hundred pound, and now  
 ' upon his death bestowed on him a solemn and sump-  
 ' tuous funeral, interring him in *Henry VII.*'s chap-  
 ' ple (x).<sup>(x) Bur-</sup> This was on the 4th of *September*, 1657,  
 ' When his corps was conveyed from *Greenwich* house  
 ' by water in a barge of state, adorned with mourning,  
 ' escutcheons, standards, &c. and attended by divers of  
 ' his highness's privy council, the commissioners of the  
 ' admiralty, the officers of the army, and navy, the  
 ' Lord Mayor and aldermen of the city of *London*, &c.  
 ' In their passage along the river on the farther side of  
 ' the bridge and at the *Tower*, the great guns were dis-  
 ' charged, as also on this side of the bridge, till they  
 ' came to *Westminster* in the *New-Palace Yard*. From  
 ' thence the corps was by the same persons of honor  
 ' conducted to *Henry VII.*'s chapple in the *Abbey*,  
 ' where it was interred in a vault made on purpose;  
 ' and at the interment, the regiments of horse and foot  
 ' which attended gave many great volleys of shot. The  
 ' whole was very honourably performed, according to  
 ' the merit of that noble person, who had done so ma-  
 ' ny eminent services for his country both by sea and  
 ' land.

joined the *French* under *Turenne*, who taking (HHH) *Dunkirk*, immediately put it in the possession

(a) *Mercu-  
rius Politi-  
cus*, No.  
3<sup>to</sup>, p.  
1606. And  
*Wood's  
Fasti*, vol. i.  
c. 205.

‘land (a).’ I would not have given this detail of the honors paid to the corps of this most virtuous, valiant and disinterested man, who loved his country, and was beloved and praised by men of all parties who had any sense of merit: I say, I would not have done this, were it not to shew how different his treatment was now, from what it was after the return of *Charles II.* when his body (in virtue of his Majesty’s express command) was taken up and buried in a pit with others in *St. Margaret’s* church-yard, September 12, 1661: ‘In which

(b) *Wood’s  
Fasti*, ubi  
supra.

‘place, says *Wood*, it now remaineth, enjoying no other ‘monument, but what is reared by his valour, which ‘time itself can hardly deface (b).’ This base action

(c) *Register  
and Chroni-  
cle*, p. 536.  
F. l. Lond.  
1728.

bishop *Kennet* being, as I suppose, ashamed of, veils over, by saying only ‘his body was taken up and bu- ‘ried in the church-yard (c).’ What authority a late ingenious writer had to say that *Blake’s* ‘remains were

(d) *Biogra-  
phia Britan-  
nica*, p. 216.

with great decency re-interred in *St. Margaret’s* church-yard,’ is hard to say (d). He refers indeed to *Kennet* in the place above cited. His authority will by no means, we see, bear him out.—Some of the other bodies taken up, and treated thus ignominiously at the same time, were admiral *Dean’s*, a man of bravery, who lost his life in the service of his country; col. *Hump. Mackworth’s*; Sir *William Constable’s*; col. *Boscawen’s*, a *Cornish* gentleman, of a family distinguished by its constant attachment to liberty, and flourishing in great reputation, by the well known exploits of the admiral of that name; and many others too long to be here mentioned. Such was the politeness and humanity introduced by the restoration!

(HHH) *Dunkirk* was immediately put in possession of the Protector.] *France* and *England* had been but on indifferent terms. *Bourdeaux* had arrived in *London* and entered on a negotiation for peace. He met with various difficulties and delays; and during the treaty, news arrived

possession of the protector.—Such were the

rived that an embargo was laid on the *English*, in the ports of *France*. This was by way of reprisal for some hostile acts said to be done by them on the subjects and possessions of that crown. Hereupon the treaty was at a stand, and *Cromwell* refused absolutely to conclude on any thing till the embargo was taken off. The *French* were forced to comply, and great was the joy expressed by them for the peace. Cardinal *Mazarine*, in a letter to *Bourdeaux*, dated *Paris*, *December 8, 1655*; N. S. writes as follows. ‘ You will understand by monsieur *de Brienne* all the rejoicings that were made here for the peace. I will only tell you, that amongst other signs of joy, the King hath ordered all the guns to be discharged generally in all the frontier places of this kingdom; a thing which was never done; and likewise his Majesty will have me to have the honor to entertain him to day to dinner in publick, and you may believe we shall not forget to remember in a solemn manner, the health of the lord protector (e).’

After this, in the year 1657, a league offensive and defensive against *Spain*, was made between *France* and *England*; by which the protector engaged to send six thousand foot into *Flanders*, on condition that the *French* should undertake the siege of *Mardyke*, *Gravelin*, or *Dunkirk*, and that if either of the two former places were first taken, it should be put into his hands, to be as a hostage till he should be made master of *Dunkirk*, which he was to keep, restoring the other to *France* (f). These troops were sent into *Flanders* at the joint expense of the contracting powers, but on their landing were taken into *French* pay, and took place of all the regiments of *Turenne*’s army, save the two old regiments of guards (g). *Mardyke* the first campaign being taken, was delivered up to the *English*, who greatly complained of their being ill used by the *French*, in respect of provisions. *Cromwell* was ill pleased that *Dunkirk* had not been besieged instead of *Mardyke*, and therefore

(e) Thurot, vol. iv. p. 254.

(f) Life of Turenne, vol. i. p. 297.

(g) Thurot, loc. vol. vi. p. 287 and 346. And Note (DDD).

the actions of *Cromwell* abroad; ~~and~~ actions which drew the eye of by-standers, and procured

peremptorily insisted on its being undertaken early in the year 1658. *Mazarine* durst not refuse. *Turenne* had orders to invest it. He obeyed, and was soon joined by the *English* forces. *Lockhart*, the *English* ambassador, had the command in chief of these, under whom was *Morgan*, an officer of great bravery and experience. The *Spaniards*, on hearing of the siege, marched to raise it. This produced a battle, in which the victory fell to the allied army, and *Dunkirk* surrendered on conditions. The next day *Lewis XIV.* and all his court entered triumphantly into the town, and then delivered it up, according to treaty, to the *English*, June 15, 1658, O. S.—Thus had *Oliver* his desire, of obtaining a footing on the continent, at the expence almost wholly of *France*. *Lockhart* in his letter to *Thurloe*, written the day before *Dunkirk* was delivered into his hands, has the following expressions. ‘To-morrow before five of the clock at night, his highness’s forces under my command, will be possessed of *Dunkirk*.——I have a great many disputes with the cardinal, about several things. I have agreed he shall have all the cannon in the town, that have the armes of *France* upon them; but some other things, concerning shipping in the harbor, and the quartering the *French* guards, and lodging the chief officers of the army, is yett in controvertie; neverthelesse I must say, I find him willing to hear reason: and though the generality of court and arms are even mad to see themselves part with what they call *un si bon morceau*, or so delicatt a bit, yet he is still constant to his promises, and seems to be as glad in the generall (notwithstanding our differences in little particulars) to give this place to his highness, as I can be to receive it. The King is also exceeding oblyging and civil, and hath more trew worth in him than I could have imagined (b).’—From this letter, it demonstrably appears that the following anecdote of

(5) *Thurloe*, vol. vii. p. 171.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

403

cured him an extraordinary renown!—  
 To these we must add his deeds of real  
 merit, and worthy of the highest praise,  
*viz.*

Dr. *Welwood's*, though confidently delivered, and frequently, from him, repeated, is an absolute fiction. There was an article, says he, between *France* and the protector, that if *Dunkirk* came to be taken, it should immediately be delivered up to the *English*; and his ambassador *Lockhart* had orders to take possession of it accordingly. When the *French* army being joined with the *English* auxiliaries, was in its march to invest the town, *Cromwell* sent one morning for the *French* ambassador to *Whitehall*, and upbraided him publicly for his master's designed breach of promise in giving secret orders to the *French* general to keep possession of *Dunkirk*, in case it was taken, contrary to the treaty between them. The ambassador protested he knew nothing of the matter, as indeed he did not, and begged leave to assure him that there was no such thing thought of. Upon which *Cromwell* pulling a paper out of his pocket, Here (says he) is a copy of the cardinal's order: and I desire you to dispatch immediately an express to let him know, that I am not to be imposed upon; and that if he deliver not up the keys of the town of *Dunkirk* to *Lockhart* within an hour after it shall be taken, tell him I'll come in person, and demand them at the gates of *Paris*. There were but four persons said to be privy to the order, the Queen mother, the cardinal, the marshal *de Turenne*, and a secretary, whose name it is not fit at this time to mention. The cardinal for a long time blamed the Queen, as if she might possibly have blabbed it out to some of her women: whereas it was found after the secretary's death, that he had kept a secret correspondence with *Cromwell* for several years; and therefore it was not doubted but he had sent him the copy of the order above-mentioned (i). What invention! What falshood! Excellent is the use of State

(i) Memoirs,  
 p. 96.  
 18mo.  
 Lond. 1736

viz. his interposition in behalf of the *Vaudois* (111), when under persecution from their

(k) Vol. i.  
p. 119.

Papers, were it only to detect such hasty, credulous, positive writers.—*Burnet* tells us, ‘The trade of *England* suffered more in this, than in any former war (k);’ and *Puffendorf*, if I remember right, says, 1500 ships were taken by the *Spaniards*. ’Tis not improbable. The commerce of *England* was at a greater height now than formerly. And the *Spaniards* by the loss they had sustained, were incapable of making any head, unless by privateering, whereby indeed the merchants of *England* could not but be sufferers. This always will be the case of a commercial nation, with superiour force, braving her enemies, and blocking up, or destroying their fleets. However, in such a case, the merchants, as sufferers, must have leave to complain.

(111) *His interposition in behalf of the Vaudois, &c.*]

(l) See Memoirs of the House of Brandenburg, p. 144.  
(m) See Voltaire’s Age of Lewis XIV. vol. ii. p. 180.

If protestantism was meerly an hatred of the pope; if it consisted barely in receiving the communion in both kinds, or chanting *Clement Marot’s*, or our *Sternhold’s* old Psalms, it would justly be liable to the ridicule and contempt with which it has been treated, of late, by some men of genius (l). Or if indeed it tended to destroy monarchical power (m), to subvert the laws, and throw all things into confusion, princes would do well to be on their guard against it.—But if, on the contrary, protestantism, as such, is merely a revival of the doctrine of Jesus Christ, whereby the knowledge and worship of the one true God of the universe was established, and piety and virtue, in their full extent, recommended, and commanded, under the sanctions of rewards and punishments in another world: if this religion is simple, intelligible, friendly, and benevolent, and void of every thing to amuse or corrupt, then it is worthy of esteem. What is the real state of the case, those only are judges who are well versed in the writings of the New Testament, which the authors above

referred

their sovereign on account of their religion,  
and

referred to, I presume, do not pretend to be. One strong presumption, however, in favour of protestantism is, its being the constant object of the hatred of those kings and priests who delight to trample under foot, the liberties of mankind, and render all subject to their own wicked wills. A doctrine of liberty can ill be digested by men sensible of designs subversive of it. Hence have arisen the persecutions of protestants, and in this light have they, I think, generally been viewed. Almost every where, when in power, have the ruling ecclesiastics stirred up princes, to crush and extirpate a race of men who constantly oppose themselves to their designs. The *Vauds*, who long before *Luther's* time, (perhaps from the first ages of Christianity) had entertained opinions contrary to those of the church of *Rome*, and were for the most part a plain, honest, well-meaning kind of men, (that had been cruelly used for their opinions only) 'had now a new persecution raised against them by the duke of *Savoy*. So *Cromwell* sent to *Mazarine* desiring him to put a stop to that; adding that he knew well they had that duke in their power, and could restrain him as they pleased: and if they did not, he must presently break with them. *Mazarine* objected to this as unreasonable: he promised to do good offices; but he could not be obliged to answer for the effects they might have. This did not satisfy *Cromwell*: so they obliged the duke of *Savoy* to put a stop to that unjust fury: and *Cromwell* raised a great sum for the *Vauds*, and sent over *Morland* to settle all their concerns, and to supply all their losses (x).—Mr. (afterwards Sir *Samuel*) *Morland*, has written 'The history of the Evangelical Churches of the valleys of *Piemont*:' in which, among other things, is 'a most naked and punctual relation of the late bloody massacre, 1655, and a narrative of all the following transactions to the year of our Lord 1658 (a).'

(x) Burnet's  
vol. i. p.  
120.

(a) Folio  
London,  
1658.

and the generous relief he afforded them in  
 their

From authentic papers in this book, it appears that the protestants under the protection of edicts, confirmed the preceding year by their sovereign, and guilty of no crime, were, by an order, dated *January 25, 1655*, obliged to quit houses and estates, within three days, upon pain of death, in case they did not make it appear that they were become Catholics within twenty days. This, though in the depth of winter, old and young complied with. Soon after, a body of troops was sent into the villages and districts of these unhappy creatures, who plundering and spoiling every thing that came in their way, provoked the sufferers who had notice of it so much, that they stood up in their own defence, and put to flight their persecutors. Orders hereupon were given to afford no quarter. In consequence hereof a terrible scene was exhibited. The utmost cruelties were exercised upon persons of every age, sex and condition. Hanging, burning, dismembering, ravishing, and every barbarous and cruel punishment, the most diabolic imagination could invent, was inflicted on them. The *Swiss* Protestant Cantons, alarmed at these proceedings, interposed with the duke of *Savoy*, in behalf of these his much wronged subjects. But in vain. They had little attention paid to them, and were out of hopes of procuring any redress.—The news however reaching *Cromwell*, ‘ He was so deeply affected with the poor  
 ‘ people’s calamities, that he was often heard to say, that  
 ‘ it lay as near, or rather nearer his heart, than if it  
 ‘ had concerned his nearest and dearest relations in the  
 ‘ world. Neither indeed were the effects of his cha-  
 ‘ rity and christian compassion, at all inferior to those  
 ‘ his zealous, earnest, and pathetick expressions (p).’  
 He immediately ordered a collection through the kingdom for a supply of their necessities, which, through the innate generosity of the *English*, amounted to the sum of thirty eight thousand, ninety seven pounds, seven shillings

(p) *Mer-land*, p. 552.



# OLIVER CROMWELL.

their distresses and sufferings. This (with  
(g) Morland, p. 588.

lings and three-pence \*. The protector contributed towards this, out of his own pocket, two thousand pounds (g).—Our forefathers, we see, were not wholly unacquainted with that spirit, which the present age, with some reason, values itself so much upon. With this liberality however *Cromwell* did not rest satisfied. He immediately writ to the Kings of *Sweden* and *Denmark*, to the States-General, and the Protestant *Swiss* Cantons, requesting them to use their interposition in behalf of their persecuted brethren, and declaring that if it should prove ineffectual, that he was ready to advise with them about such means as might be most conducing to their redress and relief (r). And that he might in the most powerful manner effect it, he gave orders to *Mr. Morland*, *May 23, 1655*, to prepare himself, 'in order to carry a message from his highness to the duke of *Savoy*, to intreat him to recal that merciless edict, and to restore the remnant of his poor distressed subjects to their antient liberties and habitations; as likewise in his way to deliver a letter from his highness to the king of *France*, to solicit his Majesty to employ his power and interest with the duke for the same purpose.' The orders were soon obeyed. The letter to the *French* King was delivered, who returned an answer very respectful; containing assurances of his having already mediated in behalf of the protestants in *Piedmont*, and that he would still continue so to do. To this was added, that he had grounds to hope, that his mediation would not be unprofitable. *Morland* then proceeded on to *Turin*, where, after being nobly enter-

\* *Cromwell's* adversaries, who stuck at nothing to blacken him, had the boldness to affirm, 'That most of the money, which was collected for this purpose, was returned, and applied to the levying of a body of *Swiss*, to be brought over to controul the army, and reduce the people to an implicit obedience to his government †.' This is a ridiculous tale, and abundantly confuted by *Morland's* accounts, in which the distribution of the charity appears to have been honestly and exactly made.

† Letter from a true and lawful Member of Parliament p. 56.

very many other instances which might be

men

tained, he had audience of the duke of *Savoy*, in the presence of *Madame Royale*, his mother. Here, in a very eloquent and pathetic speech, he lamented the unheard of cruelties inflicted on the duke's protestant subjects, and said every thing to move him to compassion. After this the protector's letter was delivered on the same subject. *Madame Royale* \* hereupon told the *English* envoy, \* That as on the one side she could not but extremely applaud the singular goodness and charity of his highness the lord protector towards their subjects, whose condition had been represented to him so exceeding sad and lamentable, as she perceived by that discourse of his; so on the other side she could not but extremely admire, that the malice of men should ever proceed so far, as to cloath such fatherlike and tender chastisements of their most rebellious and insolent subjects, with so black and ugly a character, to render them thereby odious to all neighbouring princes and states, with whom they so much desired to keep a good understanding and friendship, especially with so great and powerful a prince as his highness the Lord Protector; and withall, she did not doubt, but that when he should be particularly and clearly informed of the truth of all passages, he would be so fully satisfied with the duke's proceedings, that he would not give the least countenance to those his disobedient subjects. But however, for his highness's sake, they would not only freely pardon their rebellious subjects for those so heinous crimes which they had committed, but also would accord to them such privileges and graces, as could not but give the Lord Protector a sufficient evidence how great a respect they bore both to his person and mediation (s).—In consequence of the Protector's application to the protestant princes and states, a general disposition appeared to fa-

(s) Morland,  
p. 525.

\* The duke was young, and under the tuition of his mother.

mentioned of his concern for the protestant  
interest,

vour the *Vaudois*. And very probable 'tis, the court of *Turin* would have been obliged not only to have given them a pardon, but proper security for the enjoyment of their religion and liberties. Unhappily, they were too hasty in procuring themselves a little ease. For while the *Dutch* ambassador was on his journey in their behalf, and *Oliver* had sent two persons to join with *Morland* in negotiating a peace, a treaty was concluded by means of the *French* ambassador *Servient*, and the ambassadors of the *Swiss* Protestant Cantons; a treaty specious in appearance, but productive of many woes.—*Cromwell*, however, ceased not to take care of the interest of those poor people. For understanding that they were still oppressed in many instances, though a stop was put to the massacres and other notorious acts of violence, he sent a letter to *Lockhart*, his ambassador at the court of *France*, dated *May 26, 1658*, in which he desires him, 'To redouble his instances with the *French* King, in such pathetick and affectionate expressions, as may be in some measure suitable to the greatness of their present sufferings and grievances, which (the truth is, says he) are almost inexpressible.'—In this letter is contained a list of their grievances, whereof *Lockhart* is ordered to make his Majesty thoroughly sensible, and to perswade him to give speedy and effectual orders to his ambassador, who resides in the duke's court, to act vigorously in their behalf (1).—This detail, plainly shews the little exactness there is in the above-cited passage from *Burnet*.—'Tis not impossible however, if *Cromwell* had lived a little longer, he would have fully carried his point with regard to these men; his connections and influence in *France* being about this time at their height.—I will add one relation more on this subject from *Clarendon*, a relation honourable indeed to *Cromwell*, though I am afraid not much to be depended on; as no traces, except of the tumult, are to be found in *Lockhart's* letters.—' In  
' the

(1) *Morland*,  
p. 697, &  
seq.

interest, and the protection he always grant-  
 3479555  
 3112-7079555

the city of *Nismes*, which is one of the fairest in the  
 province of *Languedoc*, and where those of the re-  
 ligion do most abound, there was a great faction at  
 that season when the consuls (who are the chief ma-  
 gistrates) were to be chosen. Those of the reformed  
 religion had the confidence to set up one of them-  
 selves for that magistracy; which they of the *Roman*  
 religion resolved to oppose with all their power. The  
 dissention between them made so much noise, that the  
 intendant of the province, who is the supreme mini-  
 ster in all civil affairs throughout the whole province,  
 went thither to prevent any disorder that might hap-  
 pen. When the day of election came, those of the  
 religion possessed themselves with many armed men of  
 the Town-house, where the election was to be made:  
 The magistrates sent to know what their meaning  
 was; to which they answered, 'They were there to  
 give their voices for the choice of the new consuls,  
 and to be sure that the election was fairly made.'  
 The bishop of the city, the intendant of the province,  
 with all the officers of the church, and the present  
 magistrates of the town, went together in their robes  
 to be present at the election, without any suspicion  
 that there would be any force used. When they came  
 near the gate of the Town-house, which was shut,  
 and they supposed would be opened when they came,  
 they within poured out a volley of musket-shot upon  
 them, by which the dean of the church, and two or  
 three of the magistrates of the town, were killed upon  
 the place, and very many others wounded; whereof  
 some died shortly after. In this confusion, the ma-  
 gistrates put themselves into as good a posture to de-  
 fend themselves as they could, without any purpose of  
 offending the others, till they should be better pro-  
 vided; in order to which they sent an express to the  
 court with a plain relation of the whole matter of  
 fact; and that there appeared to be no manner of  
 7 com-

ed it) yielded just matter of praise to his

ad-  
618-101033

‘ combination with those of the religion in other places  
 ‘ of the province, but that it was an insolence in  
 ‘ those of the place, upon the presumption of their great  
 ‘ numbers, which were little inferiour to those of the  
 ‘ catholics.’ The court was glad of the occasion, and  
 ‘ resolved that this provocation, in which other places  
 ‘ were not involved, and which nobody could excuse,  
 ‘ should warrant all kinds of severity in that city, even  
 ‘ to the pulling down their temples, and expelling ma-  
 ‘ ny of them for ever out of the city; which, with the  
 ‘ execution and forfeiture of many of the principal per-  
 ‘ sons, would be a general mortification to all of the  
 ‘ religion in *France*, with whom they were heartily  
 ‘ offended; and a part of the army was forthwith or-  
 ‘ dered to march towards *Nismes*, to see this executed  
 ‘ with the utmost rigour. Those of the religion in the  
 ‘ town, were quickly sensible into what condition they  
 ‘ had brought themselves; and sent with all possible sub-  
 ‘ mission, to the magistrates to excuse themselves, and  
 ‘ to impute what had been done to the rashness of par-  
 ‘ ticular men, who had no order for what they did.

‘ The magistrates answered, that they were glad they  
 ‘ were sensible of their miscarriage; but that they  
 ‘ could say nothing upon the subject, till the King’s  
 ‘ pleasure should be known; to whom they had sent a  
 ‘ full relation of all that had passed. The others very  
 ‘ well knew what the King’s pleasure would be, and  
 ‘ forthwith sent an express, one *Moulins*, who had liv-  
 ‘ ed many years in that place, and in *Montpelier*, to  
 ‘ *Cromwell*, to desire his protection and interposition.  
 ‘ The express made so much haste, and found so good  
 ‘ a reception the first hour he came, that *Cromwell*,  
 ‘ after he had received the whole account, bad him re-  
 ‘ fresh himself after so long a journey, and he would  
 ‘ take such care of his business, that by the time he  
 ‘ came to *Paris* he should find it dispatched; and that  
 ‘ night, sent away another messenger to his ambassador

admirers (κκκ), and has accordingly been

celebrated

Lockhart; who, by the time *Moulins* came thither, had so far prevailed with the cardinal, that orders were sent to stop the troops, which were upon their march to *Nismes*; and, within few days after, *Moulins* returned with a full pardon, and amnesty from the King, under the great seal of *France*, so fully confirmed with all circumstances, that there was never farther mention made of it, but all things passed as if there had never been any such thing. So that no body

(u) Vol. vi.  
p. 651.

can wonder, that his memory remains still in those parts, and with those people, in great veneration (u).  
—I will not vouch, as I hinted above, for the truth of this relation. 'Tis certain the behaviour of the protestants is misrepresented, as will appear from the following passage of *Lockhart's* to *Thurloe*, dated *Paris*, *January 12, 1658*, N. S.—'Wee were yesterday alarmed with ill news from *Nismes*, one of the most considerable cities of the protestants. It was reported, that they and the *Roman* Catholicks had been by the ears, and that much blood had been shed. Their courier arrived this morning, and informs, there hath been some dispute upon the account, that the governor, by the instigation of their bishops, would have deprived the citizens of their priviledge of choosing their magistrates: the Catholicks, as well as the Protestants opposed the governor, who had armed the garrison against this town. There is not above half a score killed of the garrison, and the chief of the protestants saved the bishops and governor's life (x).  
How different this from *Clarendon*! 'Tis strange he never could adhere to truth in his narratives!

(x) *Thurloe*, vol. vi.  
p. 727.

(κκκ) *This yielded just matter of praise to his admirers, &c.*] Let us hear *Mr. Morland*, a gentleman, a scholar, and a close observer of the actions of the protector. In his dedication of the book, so much made use of in the preceding note, addressing himself to *Oliver*, he speaks as follows, 'It is an observation that

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

celebrated by them.—Let us now take a  
view

view

' that excellent prince, the duke of *Roban*, that the in-  
 ' terest of the chief magistrate of *England* is, by all  
 ' means to become head of the reformed party through-  
 ' out *Europe*; and it is your highness's glory and  
 ' crown, that you have formed all your counsels in  
 ' order thereunto, and laying aside all other reasons of  
 ' state, have adhered only to this, that your own in-  
 ' terest may appear one and the same with the universal  
 ' interest of the evangelical churches in their respective  
 ' nations. The piety of which resolution the Lord him-  
 ' self hath born witness to, by a continued series of  
 ' wonderful providences and heavenly benedictions that  
 ' have always accompanied you in your most honour-  
 ' able and heroic enterprizes; whereas those other prin-  
 ' ces that went before you, who had little regard in  
 ' the administration of their government, either to the  
 ' honest maxims of human policy, or to the wholesome  
 ' rules of the holy Scriptures (which they ought to  
 ' have bound about their necks, and to have graven on  
 ' the tables of their hearts) but miserably spent the  
 ' best of their powerful interests, and precious talents,  
 ' in persecuting tender consciences in their own do-  
 ' minions, and most treacherously betraying the pro-  
 ' testant cause in *Germany*, *France*, and other countries,  
 ' did at last, to their great astonishment, even in the  
 ' height of those their oppressions, and in the midst  
 ' of all their jollities, behold with their eyes a *Mene*  
 ' *Tekel* upon the walls of their palaces and banquet-  
 ' ing houses, and of late years in all the branches of  
 ' their families have tasted the bitter fruits of their own  
 ' unrighteous doings. This is a doom which was long  
 ' since pronounced against them by the most pious pas-  
 ' tors and professors of foreign churches, who oft-times  
 ' heretofore have been heard to say, That God would  
 ' one day render a recompence to *that House* for all  
 ' their perfidious dealings towards his poor servants, and  
 ' now many of those godly men, who have lived to

• see

' see the execution of those his righteous judgments,  
 ' considering on the other side the wonderful passages of  
 ' divine providence leading the way to the extirpation  
 ' of that family, and to the placing of your highness in  
 ' the princely dignity, have of late frequently declar-  
 ' ed (as I myself have been divers times an ear witness)  
 ' with tears of joy in their eyes, that they looked on  
 ' you as a man *miraculously raised up by God*, and en-  
 ' dowed with an extraordinary spirit of wisdom and  
 ' courage, to plead the cause of his afflicted ones against  
 ' the mighty, that they may no more oppress. Who  
 ' is there so ignorant in these our days who knows not,  
 ' that all the peace, tranquillity, and priviledges, which  
 ' those of the reformed religion enjoy at present in any  
 ' part of the *European* world, does some way or other  
 ' own your patronage and protection? And who is  
 ' there likewise that knows not that when first you  
 ' were called forth in the view of the world, and sin-  
 ' gled out as a chosen instrument to go forth to help  
 ' the Lord against the mighty, and to fight his battles  
 ' against the great persecutors, the estate and condition  
 ' of the church militant was but at a very low ebb?  
 ' The mighty floods of popery and atheism were broken  
 ' in upon the isles of *Great Britain* and *Ireland*, and  
 ' the poor protestants in all other parts were even sink-  
 ' ing down under the heavy burthens laid upon their  
 ' shoulders by those cruel task-masters of the church of  
 ' *Rome*; yea, the plowers were almost every where  
 ' plowing and making long furrows upon the backs of  
 ' the faithful ones in all the quarters and corners of their  
 ' habitations! It was a time when the enemies of the  
 ' Lord took crafty counsel together against his people,  
 ' and were confederate against his hidden ones (the ta-  
 ' bernacles of *Edom* and the *Ishmaelites*! *Amaleck* and  
 ' the *Philistines*, with them that dwell at *Tyre*!) they  
 ' said one to another, Come and let us cut them off  
 ' from being a people, that so their name may be had



# OLIVER CROMWELL.



in which there were many things truly laudable

‘ no more in remembrance. And the truth is, they  
 ‘ had undoubtedly compassed their hellish designs, had  
 ‘ not the shepherd of *Israel* awoke as a man out of  
 ‘ sleep, and found out a man (I mean your highness)  
 ‘ to stand in the gap, girding you with strength unto  
 ‘ the battle, and putting his own sword into your hand,  
 ‘ to smite those his enemies in the hinder parts, and  
 ‘ put them to a perpetual reproach (y).’

(y) Dedicat-  
 ion to his  
 History of  
 the Church-  
 es of Pic-  
 mont, p. 2.  
 (z) See Bur-  
 net de futu-  
 ra Judaeo-  
 rum Restau-  
 ratione, p.  
 29. 8vo.  
 Lond. 1727.  
 And Dr.  
 Newton on  
 the Prophe-  
 cies, vol. iii.  
 p. 378. 8vo.  
 Lond. 1760.

This application of antient names of *Gentile* (z) and *Idolatrous* nations, to the *Romish* church, and the opi-  
 nion so publicly avowed of *Cromwell's* being raised up  
 by providence to defend God's true church, and con-  
 found its enemies: these things, I say, render probable  
 the conjecture of a very learned and judicious friend,  
 that *Milton* intended some lines in his *Samson Agoni-  
 stes*, should be applied to *Cromwell* and his followers,  
 and the national desertion of his cause, his family, and  
 his friends. Such are the following, though mixt with  
 a circumstance or two peculiar to the History of *Samson*.

## CHORUS.

In seeking just occasion to provoke  
 The *Philistine*, thy country's enemy,  
 Thou never wast remis, I bear thee witness:  
 Yet *Israel* still serves with all his sons.

## SAMSON.

That fault I take not on me, but transfer  
 On *Israel's* governors, and heads of tribes,  
 Who seeing those great acts, which God had done  
 Singly by me against their conquerors,  
 Acknowledg'd not, or not at all consider'd  
 Deliverance offer'd: I on th' other side  
 Us'd no ambition to commend my deeds,  
 The deeds themselves, though mute, spoke loud the  
 doer, &c. (a).

(a) *Samson*  
*Agonistes*,  
 v. 237.

Had

able. His court was more free from vices  
 than

Had *Judah* that day join'd, or one whole tribe,  
 They had by this possess'd the tow'rs of *Gath*,  
 And lorded over them whom now they serve:  
 But what more oft in nations grown corrupt,  
 And by their vices brought to servitude,  
 Than to love bondage more than liberty,  
 Bondage with ease, than strenuous liberty;  
 And to despise, or envy, or suspect  
 Whom God hath of his special favor rais'd  
 As their deliverer; if he ought begin,  
 How frequent to desert him, and at last  
 To heap ingratitude on worthiest deeds (b)?

(b) *Samson*  
*Agonistes*,  
 v. 265.

\* \* \* \* \*  
 But I a private person, whom my country  
 As a league-breaker gave up bound, presum'd  
 Single rebellion and did hostile acts.  
 I was no private but a person rais'd  
 With strength sufficient and command from heaven  
 To free my country; if their servile minds  
 Me their deliverer sent would not receive,  
 But to their masters gave me up for nought,  
 Th' unworthier they; whence to this day they  
 serve, &c. (c)

(c) *Id. v.*  
 328.

To return.—We find another of his panegyrists speaking of him in yet loftier terms, in the following passages. ‘ He is not only a refuge for good men, and the very sanctuary of religion, not its fortress only and sure castle of defence; but he hath his troops flying to disarm tyrants and oppressors; his forces are ready to march out against the storms and tempests of any menacing enemy. You may see him like a champion with a great spirit and gauntlet, stalking forward like a giant with lightning in his eyes, and an all-conquering look, stretching forth a brawny arm as if he meant to cut off a hundred thousand heads at a blow: you may see him dealing with wild beasts and  
 ‘ fer-

than the generality of courts are supposed to be, nor did he care to countenance (LLL) and

‘serpents, and how he clears the coast amidst a company of devils; how he makes a lane through them, and opens a passage for God’s people through all hazards and difficulties, amidst all the gloomy powers and principalities of darknesse. You may see angels heading his weapons, and his lances sent him from heaven: his graces are all zealous to be serviceable in the advancement and guardianship of the *true Protestant interest* (d).’ In such strains were these generous actions spoken of in his own times!—The following wish of a very modern writer will be deemed perhaps equally as honourable to the memory of *Cromwell*. It is put into the mouth of *Burnet* just after the revolution. ‘Oh! says he, that I might see the day, when our deliverer [*William III.*] shall become, what a bold usurper nobly figured to himself in the middle of this century, the soul and conductor of the Protestant cause through all *Europe*! and, that as *Rome* hath hitherto been the centre of slavish impositions and antichristian politicks, the court of *England* may henceforth be the constant refuge and asylum of sainting liberty and religion (e).’

(d) The unparalleled Monarch, p. 14. 12mo. Lond. 1659.

(e) Moral and Political Dialogues, p. 255. 8vo. Lond. 1759.

(LLL) *His court was more free from vice, &c.*] However it happens, men are generally prejudiced against the morals and integrity of courts. Perhaps, it is through ignorance, or, perhaps, through prejudice, or some other cause equally as unreasonable. But be this as it may, ’tis certain divines and poets, historians and moralists, caution their readers against the danger of such places, and exhort them to fly swiftly from their infection. And some there have been, long versed in them, who have declared them incompatible with virtue (f). Quotations to support these assertions would be needless. Allowances, however, ought to be made for the language of declamation, resentment, disappointment, and the heightnings of poetical compositions.

(f) See *Whiston’s Life*, p. 34. 8vo. Lond. 1749.

and encourage any of profligate manners.

Though, after all, it were well if there was not ground, fully sufficient, to complain.—In this respect, however, as well as many others, the court of the protector was distinguished. All here had an air of sobriety and decency; nothing of riot or debauch was seen or heard of. *Cromwell's* own manners were grave, and such were the manners of those around him, though seasoned, on occasion, with pomp, state and pleasantry. 'What palace,' says a contemporary writer, 'was ever less adulterated than his? Nay, in that very place, where pimps and panders were used to traffique, and sport in the base revellings of lust, there is now sitting a religious covent of our best and most orthodox divines; and whereas formerly it was very difficult to live at court without a prejudice to religion, it is now impossible to be a courtier without it. Whosoever looks now to get preferment at court, religion must be brought with him instead of money for a place: here are none of those usual throngs of vicious and debauched swash bucklers, none of those servile and taylor-shaking spaniels, none of those moe-hair, linsie-wool-sy, nits and lice gentlemen, no such changeable camelions (g).'—Let us add hereunto the testimony of an adversary. 'His own court, says he, was regulated according to a severe discipline; here no drunkard, nor whore-master, nor any guilty of bribery, was to be found, without severe punishment (b).' But that we may not rest wholly on words, we will produce some facts which will fully evince the truth of the text. The two following passages are related by *Whitlock*.—'Being now in *London*, and hearing of the Queen of *Sweden's* intention to come into *England*, I made it known to the protector; but he would not give her any encouragement; he put it all upon the ill example she would give here by her course of life, and would not be satisfied by me to the contrary.—*Graef Hannibal Sesthead*, a lord of  
Den-

(g) Unparalleled Monarch, p. 70.

(b) Bates, p. 191.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



He filled the benches with able and honest judges,

‘ *Denmark*, who had married the king’s half sister there, and been vice-roy of *Norway*, but afterwards grew out of favour with his king, came into *England* to see the protector, and made his applications to me, whom he had been acquainted with in *Germany*. I brought him to the protector, and he used him with all courtesy; he dined with him several times, and the protector was much taken with his company; he being a very ingenious man, spake many languages, and *English* perfectly well, and had been employed in several great charges and ambassies, but he was a very debauched person; which, when the protector knew, he would not admit him any more into his conversation; and, not long after, he departed out of *England* (i).’

(i) Memorials, p. 599. 627.

Bishop *Barnet* informs us, that the earl of *Orrery* told him, ‘ That coming one day to *Cromwell*, during the debates about his accepting the title of king, and telling him he had been in the city all that day, *Cromwell* asked him what news he had heard there: the other answered, that he was told he was in treaty with the King, who was to be restored, and to marry his daughter. *Cromwell* expressing no indignation at this, lord *Orrery* said, in the state to which things were brought, he saw not a better expedient: they might bring him in on what terms they pleased: and *Cromwell* might retain the same authority he then had with less trouble. *Cromwell* answered, the King can never forgive his father’s blood. *Orrery* said, he was one of many concerned in that, but he would be alone in the merit of restoring him. *Cromwell* replied, he was so damnably debauched he would undo us all; and so turned to another discourse without any emotion (k).’ — Lady *Mary Cromwell*, in a letter written to her brother *Henry Cromwell*, June 23, 1656, says, that the reason of her father’s not embracing of the terms offered by the earl of *Warwick*, in confide-

(k) Burnet, vol. i. p. 107.

judges, and caused (MMM) justice, for the most part, to be equally and impartially administered.

ration of the marriage proposed between his grandson Mr. *Rich*, and their sister *Frances*, for some time, 'was not so much eſtat, as ſome private reaſons, — which was a diſlik to the young perſon, which he had from ſom reports of his being a viſious man, given to play and ſuch lik things, which offis was done by ſom that had a mind to brak of the match (l).' The reports, however, on examination, proving falſe, the match was concluded with the conſent of the protector. Theſe paſſages ſufficiently evince the care of *Oliver* to avoid giving even countenance to vice; and alſo the regularity of manners in thoſe who partook of his favour and encouragement. We may well ſuppoſe the nation muſt be improved in their morals by ſuch examples.

(MMM) *He filled the benches with able and honeſt judges, &c.*] The hiſtorians of all parties have, by the notoriety of the fact, been forced to pay this tribute of praife to *Cromwell*. I could mention many; but will content myſelf with the authorities of *Clarendon* and *Coke*, who, though of different principles, were equally foes to the government and memory of the protector.

The former affirms, 'That in matters, which did not concern the life of his juriſdiction, he ſeemed to have great reverence for the law, rarely interpoſing between party and party (m).' The latter aſſures us 'That *Weſtminſter-hall* was never replenished with more learned and upright judges than by him; nor was juſtice either in law or equity, in civil caſes, more equally diſtributed, where he was not a party (n).' The names of his judges, poſſibly, may not be unacceptable to ſome readers. They were as follows: the lord-chieſ-juſtices *Glou* and *St. John*; the juſtices *Warburton*, *Newdigate*, *Atkins*, *Hale*, *Windham*; the barons *Nichols*, *Parker*, *Hil* (o). The commiſſioners of the great Seal, at firſt, were the famous Mr. *Whitlock*, *Widring-*

(l) *Thurloe*,  
vol. v. p.  
146.

(m) *Clarendon*,  
vol. vi.  
p. 650.

(n) *Detection*,  
vol. ii.  
p. 72.

(o) *Catalogue of ſince*  
*Dukes*,  
*Marquiſſes*,  
&c. with all  
the honours  
that his  
Highneſs  
hath be-  
ſtowed ſince  
he began his  
government  
to this pre-  
ſent. By  
*T. W. i. e.*  
*The Walk-*  
*ley*, 8vo.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

421

ministred.—He fought out every where

for

*ton* and *Lentbal*; afterwards *Fiennes*, *Liste* and *Lentbal*. The gentlemen of the long robe still mention the names of some of these persons with great honour. How solicitous *Cromwell* was to appoint the most able and upright persons to fill the important posts of the law, will best appear by the following quotations.—‘*Cromwell* seeing him (Mr. *Hale*) possess of so much practice, and he being one of the eminentest men of the law, who was not at all afraid of doing his duty in those critical times, resolved to take him off from it, and raise him to the bench. Mr. *Hale* saw well enough the snare laid for him, and though he did not much consider the prejudice it would be to himself, to exchange the easy and safer profits he had by his practice for a judge’s place in the common pleas, which he was required to accept of, yet he did deliberate more on the lawfulness of taking a commission from usurpers; but having considered well of this, he came to be of opinion, that it being absolutely necessary to have justice and property kept up at all times, it was no sin to take a commission from usurpers, if he made no declaration of his acknowledging their authority, which he never did. He was much urged to accept of it by some eminent men of his own profession, who were of the King’s party, as Sir *Orlando Bridgman*, and Sir *Geoffery Palmer*; and was also satisfied concerning the lawfulness of it, by the resolution of some famous divines, in particular—Dr. *Sheldom*, and Dr. *Henchman*, who were afterwards promoted to the sees of *Canterbury* and *London*. To these were added the importunities of all his friends, who thought, that in a time of so much danger and oppression, it might be no small security to the nation, to have a man of his integrity and abilities on the bench: and the usurpers themselves held him in that estimation, that they were glad to have him give a countenance to their courts, and, by promoting one

for men of abilities (NNN), in order proper-ly

‘ that was known to have different principles from  
 them; affected the reputation of honouring and trust-  
 ing men of eminent virtues, of what persuasion soe-  
 ver they might be, in relation to publick matters (p).’  
 (p) Burnet’s Life of Sir Matthew Hale, p. 35. Svo. Lond. 1682.  
 — Another work speaks more plainly on this subject.  
 — ‘ He [*Cromwell*] studied to seek out able and ho-  
 nest men, and to employ them. And so having heard  
 that my father had a very great reputation in *Scot-*  
*land*, for piety and integrity, tho’ he knew him to be  
 a Royalist, he sent to him, desiring him to accept of  
 a judge’s place, and to do justice in his own country,  
 hoping only that he would not act against his go-  
 vernment, but he would not press him to subscribe  
 or swear to it (q).’ How great! how generous! it  
 was hardly possible, but a man of such a disposition must  
 be well served.

(q) History of his own Times, vol. 1. p. 125.

(NNN) *He sought out every where for men of abilities, and gave them proper employment.*] That princes have such poor tools oftentimes about them is owing to their own weakness, or negligence. They have not either sense enough to discern, or fortitude to refuse or repel such as, without merit, aspire to their favour. So that their ministers are sometimes of different and contradictory characters, and hinder more than forward the business in which they pretend to engage. Mobs are in most courts; wise men are distinguished alone in those whose princes themselves excel. From the choice of ministers and favourites the character of the sovereign may be oftentimes taken.—*Cromwell* was all eyes. He saw every thing, he judged of every thing; few persons escaped his notice; merit was the object of his choice. The authorities I shall now produce, will, I am persuaded, justify my assertions. The following anecdote is prior, indeed, in point of time, to the protectorate, but ’tis properly a part of *Cromwell*’s history, and tends to illustrate most this part of his character. It is given by Mr. *Morrice*, a gentleman of character,



ly to employ them: endeavouring hereby to

pro

rafter, who had it from lord *Brogbill*.—‘ After the  
 ‘ horrid murder was committed upon the King’s sacred  
 ‘ person, lord *Brogbill*, giving up all *Ireland* for lost,  
 ‘ retired into *England*, to a small estate left him by his  
 ‘ father at *Marston* in *Somerſetſhire*, where he lived till  
 ‘ 1649. During this retirement, his lordſhip lament-  
 ‘ ing the ſad condition of the royal family, and the  
 ‘ ruin of theſe kingdoms, and reflecting upon the cru-  
 ‘ elties and inhumanities of the *Irish* rebels, he, at laſt,  
 ‘ thought it too much below his ſpirit and duty to ſit  
 ‘ ſtill, and ſee all rights thus trampled under foot by  
 ‘ uſurpers. He reſolved, therefore, to attempt ſome-  
 ‘ thing for the publick as well as private good; and,  
 ‘ accordingly, under pretence of going to the *Spa* wa-  
 ‘ ters in *Germany*, he intended to croſs the ſeas, and ap-  
 ‘ ply himſelf to King *Charles II.* for a commiſſion to  
 ‘ raiſe what forces he could to reſtore his Majeſty in  
 ‘ *Ireland*, and to recover his own eſtate, then given for  
 ‘ loſt. But, in order to the accompliſhing this reſolu-  
 ‘ tion, he ſent to the earl of *Warwick*, who had an  
 ‘ intereſt in the prevailing party, deſiring him to pro-  
 ‘ cure a licence for him to paſs beyond the ſeas to *Spa*;  
 ‘ not acquainting that lord with the main intent of his  
 ‘ going, and only communicating his deſign to ſome  
 ‘ friends, whom he imagined to be loyal and ſecret.  
 ‘ He had already made up a conſiderable ſum of money,  
 ‘ and was now arrived at *London*, in order to proſe-  
 ‘ cute his voyage; when a gentleman belonging to *Crom-*  
 ‘ *well*, who was then made general in *Sir Thomas Fair-*  
 ‘ *fax*’s place, came to his lodgings, to let him know  
 ‘ that the general, his maſter, intended to wait upon  
 ‘ him, if he knew but the hour when he would be at  
 ‘ leiſure to receive him. My lord was very much  
 ‘ ſurprized at this paſſage, becauſe he had never any  
 ‘ acquaintance with *Cromwell*, nor ever exchanged one  
 ‘ word with him. Wherefore he told the gentleman,  
 ‘ he preſumed he was miſtaken, and that he was not

provide for his own honour and the nation's

' the person to whom the general had sent him with  
 ' that message. The gentleman made answer, he was  
 ' sent to lord *Brogbill*; and, therefore, if he was that  
 ' lord, he was sent to him. My lord finding that there  
 ' was no mistake in the gentleman, owned that he  
 ' was the lord *Brogbill*; but desired the gentleman to  
 ' present his humble service to the general, and to let  
 ' him know that he would not give him the trouble  
 ' to come to him, but that he would wait on the ge-  
 ' neral, if he knew where he was, and when he might;  
 ' and to that end would immediately make himself rea-  
 ' dy for it. The gentleman told my lord he would ac-  
 ' quaint his excellency with it, and so took his leave.  
 ' His lordship, in the mean time, was mightily con-  
 ' cerned what *Cromwell's* business with him should be.  
 ' While he was thus musing, *Cromwell* came to him;  
 ' and, after mutual salutations, told him, he had a  
 ' great kindness and respect for his lordship, and there-  
 ' fore he was come to acquaint him with something  
 ' that did very nearly concern him, and to give him  
 ' his advice in the matter. He then proceeded to let him  
 ' know, that the council of state was acquainted with  
 ' his designs, that he was come to town in order to  
 ' his passing beyond sea; but, instead of going to the  
 ' *Spa* for his gout, was going to the King for a com-  
 ' mission to raise men, and oppose their government in  
 ' *Ireland*; and that under this pretence the earl of  
 ' *Warwick* had got him a licence from the state to pass  
 ' the seas. As *Cromwell* was going on, my lord inter-  
 ' rupted him, and told him, he presumed his excel-  
 ' lency was mistaken in the matter, for he was not ca-  
 ' pable of doing any thing that way; and therefore  
 ' desired him to believe no such thing. But *Cromwell*  
 ' told him, he had good proof for what he said, and  
 ' could shew copies of his letters to that purpose, and  
 ' therefore desired him not to deceive himself; for the  
 ' council had ordered him to be clapt in the *Tower*  
 ' upon

tion's welfare.—Learning he favoured,

and

' upon his arrival in town; which had been executed  
 ' accordingly, had not he himself interposed in his be-  
 ' half, and procured some time to confer with him,  
 ' to see whether he might not be drawn off from his  
 ' purpose. Upon this, and other circumstances, my  
 ' lord, finding that he was discovered, begged *Crom-*  
 ' *swell's* pardon, and thanked him for his kindness, and  
 ' desired him to advise him what to do. *Cromwell* told  
 ' him, that neither he, nor the council, were strangers  
 ' to his actions in the *Irish* war; and therefore the sub-  
 ' duing of the *Irish* rebels being left to his care, he had  
 ' obtained leave from the council to make an offer to  
 ' lord *Brogbill*, that if he would serve in the wars a-  
 ' gainst the *Irish*, he should have a general officer's  
 ' command, and should have no oaths or engagements  
 ' laid upon him, nor should be obliged to fight against  
 ' any but the *Irish*. My lord did not a little wonder  
 ' at this large offer, and would have excused himself,  
 ' desiring some time to consider of it: but *Cromwell*  
 ' told him, he must resolve presently, for there was no  
 ' time to deliberate, because the council, from whom  
 ' he came, were resolved to send his lordship to the  
 ' *Tower* as soon as ever *Cromwell* should return to them,  
 ' in case this offer was not readily accepted. Lord  
 ' *Brogbill* seeing no subterfuges could any longer be  
 ' made use of, and finding his liberty and life were in  
 ' danger, whereby he might be rendered utterly inca-  
 ' pable of serving his Majesty; and not knowing but,  
 ' by accepting this offer, he might afterwards be ser-  
 ' viceable to the royal party, he resolved to accept of  
 ' it upon the conditions which *Cromwell* mentioned;  
 ' promising upon his word and honour, he would faith-  
 ' fully assist *Cromwell* in subduing the *Irish* rebellion.  
 ' Whereupon *Cromwell* assured him, he should have  
 ' those conditions performed to a tittle; and desired him  
 ' to hasten down to *Bristol*, where men should be sent  
 ' to him, and ships wait for his transportation, and he  
 him-

and was munificent to such as excelled in

(r) Morrice's Life of Lord Orery, prefixed to his State papers, Fol. Lond. 1742. And Budget's Memoirs of the Boyles, p. 43. 8vo. Lond. 1739.

‘ himself would follow him with another army; all  
 ‘ which was accordingly done (r).’—*Bragbill* was  
 ‘ worthy of *Cromwell's* choice: he served him faithfully,  
 ‘ was sincerely attached to the interests of his family,  
 ‘ and did every thing to support it.—The next instance  
 ‘ I shall give from *Wood*, who chose not, we may well  
 ‘ suppose, to falsify in favour of the protector.—‘ In  
 ‘ 1649, says he, one *Mr. Greaves* of *Gray's-Inn*, an  
 ‘ intimate acquaintance with *Dr. Meric Casaubon*,  
 ‘ brought him a message from *Oliver Cromwell*, then  
 ‘ lieutenant-general of the parliament's forces, to bring  
 ‘ him to *Whitehall* to confer with him about matters of  
 ‘ moment, but his wife being then lately dead, and not,  
 ‘ as he said, buried, he desired to be excused. After-  
 ‘ wards *Greaves* came again, and our author [*Casaubon*]  
 ‘ being in some disorder for it, fearing that evil might  
 ‘ follow, he desired him to tell him the meaning of the  
 ‘ matter, but *Greaves* refusing, went away the second  
 ‘ time. At length he returned again, and told him,  
 ‘ that the lieutenant-general intended his good and ad-  
 ‘ vancement, and that his particular errand was, that  
 ‘ he would make use of his pen to write the history of  
 ‘ the late war, desiring, withall, that nothing but mat-  
 ‘ ters of fact be impartially set down, &c. To which  
 ‘ he returned answer, that he desired his humble ser-  
 ‘ vice and hearty thanks be returned for that great ho-  
 ‘ nour done unto him, and withall, that he was un-  
 ‘ capable, in severall respects, for such an employment,  
 ‘ and could not so impartially engage in it, but that  
 ‘ his subject would force him to make such reflections  
 ‘ as would be ungrateful, if not injurious to his lord-  
 ‘ ship. Notwithstanding this answer, *Cromwell* seemed  
 ‘ so sensible of his worth, that tho' he could not win  
 ‘ him over to his desires, yet he acknowledged a great  
 ‘ respect for him, and, as a testimony thereof, he or-  
 ‘ dered that, upon the first demand, there should be de-  
 ‘ livered three or four hundred pounds by a certain book-  
 ‘ feller

' feller in *London* (whose name was *Cromwell*) whenso-  
 ' ever his occasions should require, without acknowledg-  
 ' ing any benefactor at the receipt of it. But this of-  
 ' fer, as I have been informed by our author's son *John*  
 ' *Casaubon*, he scorned to accept, though his condition  
 ' was then mean. At the same time it was proposed  
 ' by the said *Greaves* (who belonged to the library at  
 ' *St. James's*) that if our author would gratify him in  
 ' the foregoing request, *Cromwell* would restore unto  
 ' him all his father's [*Isaac Casaubon's*] books, which  
 ' were then in the royal library there (given by King  
 ' *James*, who had invited him into *England*) and, with-  
 ' all, a patent for three hundred *per annum*, to be paid  
 ' to the family so long as the youngest son of *Dr. Isaac*  
 ' *Casaubon* should live. But this also was refused (s).

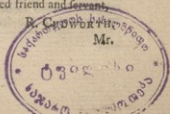
(s) Wood's  
 Athenæ,  
 vol. ii. c.  
 485.

—It appears from a letter of *Dr. Cudworth's*, that he  
 was consulted by *Mr. Thurloe* (no doubt but by the  
 protector's orders) with regard to the characters of such  
 persons in the university, as were proper to be employed  
 in political and civil affairs. The doctor mentions se-  
 veral men of distinguished learning and abilities, and  
 then adds, ' many more names I could set down; but  
 ' these may suffice for your choice; and you may, if  
 ' you think good, enquire further concerning any of  
 ' them from some others, and, if you please, from this  
 ' gentleman, whom I have, for that purpose, desired to  
 ' present this to you, *Mr. George Rust*, fellow of *Christ-*  
 ' *Colledge*, who can further inform and satisfy you con-  
 ' cerning them. He is an understanding, pious,  
 ' discreet man, and himself I know to be a man of ex-  
 ' ceeding good parts, and a general scholar, but one that  
 ' seems not so willing to divert himself from preaching  
 ' and divinity, which he hath of late intended; other-  
 ' wise I know his parts are such, as would enable him  
 ' for any employment. If you please to enquire fur-  
 ' ther from him, and by him signify your further plea-  
 ' sure to me, I shall be ready in this, or any thing else,  
 ' that I am able to expresse myself,

Sir, your affectionately devoted friend and servant,

R. CUDWORTH

Mr.



(t) Cudworth's Life by Dr. Birch, prefixed to the first vol. of the Intellectual System, p. 3. 4to Lond. 1743.

(v) Birch's Life of Boyle, p. 117, 8vo. Lond. 1744.

(x) Wood's Athenæ, vol. ii. c. 8:3.

(y) Id. c. 645.

Mr. *Zachary Cradock* was recommended to the secretary by this gentleman, for the place of chaplain to the *English* merchants at *Lisbon*. He was afterwards provost of *Eaton*, and greatly celebrated for his genius and learning (t). Dr. *John Pell*, eminent for his skill in the mathematics, in the *Latin*, *Greek*, *Hebrew*, *Arabic*, *Italian*, *French*, *Spanish*, and *High* and *Low Dutch* languages, was appointed envoy from the protector to the protestant cantons in *Switzerland* (u). Mr. (afterwards Sir) *William Petty* was ordered by *Oliver*, to take a survey, and make maps of the kingdom of *Ireland*, for which he had a salary of 365*l.* per ann. besides many other advantages which enabled him to raise a great estate (x). And it is said, however improbably, 'That *Cromwell* was so pleased with many of Mr. *Hobbes's* principles laid down in the *Leviathan*, which tended to justify and support his usurpation, that the great place of being secretary was proffered to him (y).'

If to these instances, we add *Milton*, Mr. *Marvel*, and Mr. *Aerland* before mentioned, together with *Nat. Bacon*, author of the celebrated discourses on government, who was one of *Cromwell's* masters of requests, *Francis Osborn*, a writer of good repute, who had public employments under him, and Mr. *Samuel Hartlib*, to whom he allowed one hundred pounds a year for his industry and expences in several publick services; we shall be convinced that he was not destitute of men of abilities, or negligent of employing them in a manner honourable to themselves, as well as advantagious to the nation.

(ooo) *He favoured learning, and was munificent to such as excelled in science.*] We have seen in the two preceding notes, the care of the protector to select men capable of transacting public business in an honourable and useful manner to the community of which he had taken on himself to be the head. Most of these were well versed in the sciences, and consequently would,

use of the methods of kindness and conde-  
scen-

well enough, have served for proofs of *Cromwell's* favour to the learned. I shall add however others, that his regard to learning may be put out of a possibility of doubt.—*Oliver* was chancellour of the university of *Oxford*, and within a year after his assuming the protectorate, 'at his own charge, he bestowed on the public library there, twenty five antient manuscripts; ten of which were in folio, and fourteen in quarto, all in *Greek*, except two or three. He moreover ordered to a private divinity reader there (newly chosen to that place) an annuity of one hundred pounds *per annum*, out of the exchequer, for the said reader's encouragement (z).'  
 (z) *Mercurius Politicus*, No. 223. P. 3773. And *Whitlock*, p. 605.

When the great design was on foot of publishing the *Polyglott*, by *Dr. Walton*, the protector permitted the paper to be imported duty free\*. And 'tis a fact, attested by his very enemies, that he hindered the sale of archbishop *Usher's* valuable library of prints and manuscripts, to foreigners, and caused it to be purchased, and sent over to *Dublin*, with an intention to bestow it on a new college or hall, which he had proposed to build and endow there (o). *Dr. Parr* and *Dr. Smith* say, the purchase was made by the officers and soldiers of the army in *Ireland*, but how this is consistent with *Parr's* saying afterwards, that 'when this library was brought over into *Ireland*, the usurper and his son, who then commanded in chief there, would not bestow it on the college of *Dublin*,' is very hard to say. I presume they would not have claimed the right of bestowing, if they had not acquired that right by purchasing. *Dr. Smith*, sensible of this, has varied from his original, (for he is little more than a translator of *Parr*) and attributes both purchase, re-

(o) See *Parr's Life of Usher*, p. 102.

\* Towards the close of *Walton's* preface we find the following words: *Primo autem commemorandi quorum favore Chartam a Vestigialibus immunem habuimus, quod quinque ab hinc annis, a Concilio secretiori primo concessum, postea a Serenissimo D. Protectori ejusque Concilio, operis promovendi causa, benigne confirmatum et continuatum erat.*

scention, in several respects, to conciliate  
the

(b) Vita  
Jacobi Uffie-  
rii Scriptore,  
Thoma  
Smitho S.  
Theologie,  
Doctore &  
Ecclesie  
Anglicane  
Presbytero,  
prefixed to  
Uffer's An-  
nals, Gene-  
va, 1722.  
Folio, p. 55.

fusal of bestowing on the college of *Dublin*, and inten-  
tion of erecting a new building for its reception, to the  
officers and soldiers only (b) — *Smith* however allows  
with *Parr*, that *Cromwell* had the merit of hindering the  
exportation of this valuable library into foreign parts ;  
and with astonishment cries out, ‘ Quis autem crederet  
‘ hominem, enthusiasmi furoribus subindè correptum,  
‘ & humanioris literaturæ osorem, cavisse, ne thesau-  
‘ rus iste extra *Angliam*, non sine summa injuria genti inu-  
‘ rendâ, exportaretur?’ His astonishment would have  
ceased, had he known the true character of the pro-  
tector. — But to go on. — A representation hav-  
ing been made to the parliament of the commonwealth  
of *England*, by the gentlemen of the county of *Durham*,  
and sent up by the high sheriff to the parliament, *inter*  
*alia*, that the college and houses of the dean and chap-  
ter, being then empty and in decay, might be employed  
for erecting a college, school, or academy for the be-  
nefit of the northern counties, which are so far from the  
universities ; and that part of the lands of the dean  
and chapter near the city, might be set out for pious  
uses : it was referred to a committee to state the busi-  
ness and report their opinion. This was in *May*, 1650.  
From this time till about seven years after, we hear no  
more of it. But on the 15th of *May*, 1657, the Lord  
Protector, by writ of privy seal, erected a college at  
*Durham*, consisting of one provost or master, two preach-  
ers or senior fellows, and twelve other fellows. ‘ And  
‘ for the endowment of the said college, the cathedral  
‘ church and church-yard of *Durham*, and the several  
‘ messuages with their appurtenances thereunto belong-  
‘ ing were granted. To these were added a yearly  
‘ rent-charge of one hundred and seventeen pounds,  
‘ fifteen shillings and eight pence, and another of five  
‘ hundred pounds issuing out of the manors of *Gateshead*  
‘ and *Wickham* in the said county of *Durham*, as also  
‘ one other of two hundred eighty-four pounds, four  
‘ shil-



the (PPP) affections of his enemies to his person

‘ shillings and four-pence, issuing out of lands lately  
 ‘ belonging to the bishop or dean and chapter of that  
 ‘ diocese. Besides all these donations, the books prin-  
 ‘ ted and manuscript belonging to the late bishop dean  
 ‘ and chapter were added, and a liberty of purchasing  
 ‘ or receiving lands, not exceeding the yearly value  
 ‘ of six thousand pounds (c).’ We may see by this, that  
*Oliver* was a friend to learning, and zealous to promote it:  
 but whether the means in this instance made use of, were  
 the most eligible, must be left to the reader to determine.  
 —I had forgot to add, that this foundation of a college  
 at *Durham* was opposed by the universities of *Oxford*  
 and *Cambridge*, and that it was but of a short duration.  
 For on *Richard's* resignation, it of course dropped. —  
 I will mention but one instance more of the Protec-  
 tor's regard and encouragement of literary merit. —  
*Dr. Seth Ward*, who was afterward bishop of *Exeter*  
 and *Sarum* successively, standing candidate, in the year  
 1657, for the principalship of *Jesus college* in *Oxford*,  
 lost it through means of *Cromwell's* pre-engagement to  
 another. But upon being informed of the merit and  
 learning of *Ward*, (who had succeeded the very learned  
*Mr. John Greaves* as astronomy professor in that uni-  
 versity) he received and conversed with him with great  
 freedom, and enquiring of the value of the principalship,  
 promised to allow him the like sum annually (d). This  
*Dr. Ward* became after the restoration a thorough-  
 paced court-bishop, applying himself to politics, and  
 adhering to the interest of those to whom he owed his  
 preferments. I think he never shewed any return of  
 kindness to the friends of *Cromwell*.

(PPP) *He made use of the methods of kindness and con-  
 descention to his enemies.*] Here are my authorities.

‘ The nobles and great men, says *Bates* (for with some  
 few of them he had an intimacy) he delighted with  
 raillery and jesting, contended with them in mimical  
 gestures, and entertained them with merry collations,  
 musick,

(c) Peck's  
 Memoirs of  
 Oliver  
 Cromwell,  
 among the  
 Collection  
 of curious  
 historical  
 Pieces, p.  
 60. 4to  
 Lond. 1740.

(d) Howe's  
 Life by Ca-  
 lamy, p. 19.

person and government. These were some

of

(e) Part ii.  
p. 195.

musick, hunting and hawking.—When he was in the country, he used once or oftner a year, to give the neighbours a buck, to be run down in his park, and money to buy wine to make merry with (e).—The following account, we are told, was delivered by Dr. *Thomas Smith*, and was first published by Mr. *Thomas Hearne*, in his Appendix to the *Chronicon de Dunstable*.  
 ‘ I will relate a passage, that the marquis told me concerning the old marquis of *Hartford*. A little after the death of the lord *Beaucamp* his son, in the year 1656, (which was of unspeakable grief to him) the Protector sent Sir *Edward Sidenham* to him, to console with him for the great loss he had sustained, and many fine words and compliments besides. The marquis of *Hartford* would have been glad *Cromwell* had spared that ceremony; but however received it in the best manner he could; and returned a suitable acknowledgment for the same. Some time after this *Cromwell* sent again to invite the marquis to dine with him: which this great and brave nobleman knew not how to wave or excuse; considering it was in *Cromwell*’s power to ruin him, and all his family. Therefore sent him word he would wait upon his highness. In a little time after he went accordingly, and *Cromwell* received him with open arms; and at dinner drank to him, and carved for him with the greatest kindness imaginable. After dinner, he took him by the hand, and led him into his drawing-room, where (only they two being alone) he told the marquis, he had desired his company, that he might have his advice what to do. For, said he, I am not able to bear the weight of business that is upon me; I am weary of it; and you, my lord, are a great and wise man, and of great experience, and have been much versed in the business of government; pray advise me what I shall do. The marquis was much surprized at this discourse of the Protector’s, and  
 ‘ desired

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

433

of the illustrious actions of *Cromwell*: actions  
still

desired again and again to be excused: telling him, he had served King *Charles* all along, and been of his private council; and that it no ways consisted with his principles, that either the Protector should ask, or he (the marquis) adventure to give him any advice. This notwithstanding would not satisfy *Cromwell*, but he prest him still, and told him he would receive no excuses nor denials; but bid the marquis speak freely, and whatever he said, it should not turn in the least to his prejudice. The marquis seeing himself thus prest, and that he could not avoid giving an answer, said, Sir, upon this assurance that you have given me, I will declare to your highness my thoughts, by which you may continue to be great, and establish your name and family for ever. Our young master that is abroad (that is, my master, and the master of us all) restore him to his crowns, and by doing this you may have what you please. The Protector, no way disturbed at this, answered very sedately, that he had gone so far, that the young gentleman could not forgive. The marquis replied, that if his highness pleased, he would undertake with his master, for what he had said. He replied again, that in his circumstances; he could not trust. Thus they parted, and the marquis had never any prejudice hereby so long as *Cromwell* lived (f). Lord *Clarendon* speaks also of *Cromwell's* making addresses to some principal noble-men of the kingdom, and some friendly expostulations with them, why they reserved themselves, and would have no communication or acquaintance with him (g)?

—From these facts, we may judge of *Cromwell's* address, and his knowledge of the human heart, which by flattery is soonest of all things captivated and ensnared. His method of treating his enemies was many times also very mild and generous. He understood says *Burnet*, that one Sir *Richard Willis* was chancellor *Hyde's* chief confidant; to whom he wrote of-

(f) Peck's  
Preface to  
his Memoirs  
of Oliver  
Cromwell,  
p. 37.  
(g) See vol.  
vi. p. 593

still more remarkable, as his reign was short,

and

‘ ten, and to whom all the party submitted, looking on  
 ‘ him as an able and wise man, in whom they con-  
 ‘ fided absolutely. So he found a way to talk with  
 ‘ him: He said, he did not intend to hurt any of the  
 ‘ party; his design was rather to save them from ruin:  
 ‘ they were apt after their cups to run into foolish and  
 ‘ ill-concerted plots, which signified nothing but to ruin  
 ‘ those who engaged in them: he knew they consulted  
 ‘ him in every thing: all he desired of him was to  
 ‘ know all their plots, that he might so disconcert them  
 ‘ that none might ever suffer for them: if he clapt any  
 ‘ of them up in prison, it should only be for a little  
 ‘ time: and they should be interrogated only about  
 ‘ some trifling discourse, but never about the business  
 ‘ they had been engaged in. He offered *Willis* whate-  
 ‘ ver he would accept of, and to give it when or as he  
 ‘ pleased. He durst not ask or take above 2000 pounds  
 ‘ a year. None was trusted with this but his secretary  
 ‘ *Tourlet*, who was a very dexterous man at getting in-  
 ‘ telligence. Thus *Cromwell* had all the King’s party  
 ‘ in a net. He let them dance in it at pleasure: and  
 ‘ upon occasions clapt them up for a short while; but  
 ‘ nothing was ever discovered that hurt any of them (b).’

(b) Vol. i.  
 p. 107.

—What is about to be related, will still more dis-  
 play the truth of the text. ‘ One day, in a gay man-  
 ‘ ner, *Oliver* told *Lord Broghill* that an old friend of  
 ‘ his was just come to town. The *Lord Broghill* de-  
 ‘ siring to know, whom his highness meant? *Cromwell*  
 ‘ to his great surprize, answered, The marquis of *Or-*  
 ‘ *mond*. The *Lord Broghill* protesting he was wholly  
 ‘ ignorant of it: I know that well enough (says the  
 ‘ Protector;) however, if you have a mind to preserve  
 ‘ your old acquaintance, let him know, that I am not  
 ‘ ignorant either where he is, or what he is doing.  
 ‘ He then told him the place where the marquis lodged;  
 ‘ and *Lord Broghill* having received this generous per-  
 ‘ mission to save his friend, went directly to him, and

‘ ac-

and his revenue (QQQ) scanty.—But his go

ver

acquainted him with what had passed; who finding himself discovered, instantly left *London*, and with the first opportunity returned to the King. Soon after *Cromwell* being informed that the *Lady Ormond* was engaged in several practices against the government, and corresponded with her husband, for the better accomplishing of them, had resolved to use her with great severity; and told the *Lord Broghill* with a frown, the first time he saw him, you have passed your word for the quiet behaviour of a fine person: the *Lady Ormond* is in a conspiracy with her husband against me, though at your request, I permit her to stay in *London*, and allow her 2000*l.* per annum. I find she is an ungrateful woman, and shall use her accordingly. *Lord Broghill*, who saw the Protector was thoroughly provoked, but knew that a soft answer usually appeased him, told him in the most submissive manner, That he was sorry the *Lady Ormond* had given his highness any occasion to be displeas'd with her, but humbly desired to know, what ground he had for suspecting her? Enough: (says *Cromwell*) I have letters under her own hand, which were taken out of her cabinet: and then throwing him a letter, bid him read it. He had no sooner perused it, than he assured the Protector with a smile, that what he had read, was not the hand of *Lady Ormond*, but of *Lady Isabella Thyn*, between whom and the marquis of *Ormond*, there had been some intrigues. *Cromwell* hastily asked him, how he could prove that? *Lord Broghill* answered very easily; and shewed him some other letters from the *Lady Isabella*; of whom he told two or three stories, so pleasant, as made *Cromwell* lose all his resentment in a hearty laugh (i).

(QQQ) His revenue scanty.] Whoever considers what *Cromwell* did at home and abroad; the greatness of his fleets and armies; his spies and intelligencers; his ambassadors and envoys, and the state he on some occa-

(i) Budgell's  
Memoirs of  
the Boyles,  
p. 59. Bio-  
graphia Bri-  
tannica, p.  
399. 1661

vernment, however, was far from being free from blame. His edict against the (RRR) episcopal

sions assumed; I say, whoever considers his government which made so great a figure in the eyes of *Europe*, and is still talked of with admiration, will be astonished to find that the whole revenue of *England, Scotland and Ireland*, amounted to but 1,900,000 *l.* (k) His enemies moreover add, that when he assumed the government, 'The publick stock was five hundred thousand pounds in ready money, the value of seven hundred thousand pounds in stores, and the whole army in advance, some four, and none under two months; so that though there might be a debt of near five hundred thousand pounds upon the kingdom, he met with above twice the value in lieu of it (l).' Mr. *Cowley* says, 'He found the commonwealth in a ready stock of about 800,000 pounds, and left it some two millions and an half in debt (m).'—Allowing all this to be true, *Cromwell* must have been an excellent oeconomist. For what prince almost, could have done so much on so little? We may be sure there could have been no great waste of the public treasure on favourites, no needless parade, or expensive follies, when the sum to be managed for every purpose was so contracted. But the force of oeconomy is great; its efficacy powerful; and he who spends or gives when 'tis proper, and only when 'tis so, may do things beyond the imagination of most\*.

(RRR) *His edict against the episcopal clergy, was very cruel.*] *Cromwell* by nature, as I have more than once had an opportunity of shewing, was generous and humane, kind and compassionate; but when he was provoked he shewed his resentment, and made his enemies feel the weight of it. With respect to religion he was no bigot (n); and yet, exasperated by the conduct of the

(k) Protector's Speech, April 21, 1657.

(l) World's Mistake in Oliver Cromwell, p. 3.

(m) Discourse concerning the Government of Oliver Cromwell, p. 92.

(n) See Note (k).

\* Turning to *Thurloe*, I find the following estimate of the charge of a year, ending the first of November 1657. This estimate is something

episcopal clergy was very cruel, as it depriv-

the cavaliers, who had so foolishly risen against him under *Walsstaff*, *Penruddock*, and *Grove* in the west, he treated the clergy of that party very rigorously. In a declaration bearing date, *October 4, 1655*, we find the following prohibitions. ‘ His highness, by the advice of ‘ his council, doth publish, declare and order, that no ‘ person or persons aforesaid [whose estates had been se- ‘ questered for delinquency, or who had been in arms ‘ against the parliament] do, from and after the first day ‘ of *January 1655*, keep in their houses and families, ‘ as chaplains or school-masters, for the education of ‘ their children, any sequestered or ejected minister, fel- ‘ low of any college, or school-master, nor permit any ‘ of their children to be taught by such, upon pain of ‘ being proceeded against in such sort, as the said or- ‘ ders do direct in such cases. And that no person who ‘ hath been sequestered or ejected out of any benefice, ‘ college or school for delinquency or scandal, shall, ‘ from and after the first day of *January*, keep any ‘ school, either public or private, nor any person who ‘ after that time shall be ejected for the causes aforesaid.

thing beyond what I have given from the protector’s speech; but as it has the air of exactness it possibly may deserve the attention of the public.

	l.	s.	d.
The charge at sea	594,500	0	4
The charge of the army in the three kingdoms	1,132,489	0	0
The government	200,000	0	0
Sum is	2,326,989	0	0

## The present Revenue.

	l.	s.	d.
The assessment in England, Scotland and Ireland	1,464,000	4	0
The excise and customs, estimated at	700,000	0	0
The other revenue payable into the receipt, estimated at	198,000	0	0
Sum is	2,362,000	4	0

N. B. Cromwell had only 400,000 l. from his parliament towards the war with Spain. See *Thurloc*, Vol. iv. p. 596.

ed them in a good measure of their mainte-

6118-11 nance.

† And that no person, who for delinquency or scan-  
 † dal, hath been sequestered or ejected, shall from and  
 † after the first day of *January* aforesaid, preach in any  
 † public place, or at any private meeting of any other  
 † persons than those of his own family, nor shall ad-  
 † minister baptism or the Lords Supper, or marry any  
 † persons, or use the book of Common-Prayer, or the  
 † forms of prayer therein contained, upon pain that  
 † every person so offending in any of the premises, shall  
 † be proceeded against, as by the said orders is provided  
 † and directed. And to the end all persons concerned  
 † may take notice hereof, and avoid the danger of any  
 † of the said penalties, his highness doth charge and  
 † command all sheriff's within their respective counties,  
 † cities and towns, to cause this declaration to be pro-  
 † claimed and published. Nevertheless his highness  
 † doth declare, that, towards such of the said persons,  
 † as have since their ejection or sequestration given, or  
 † shall hereafter give, a real testimony of their godliness  
 † and good affection to the present government, so much  
 † tenderness shall be used, as may consist with the safety  
 † and good of the nation (\*).—It would be useless  
 † to spend words in exposing the cruelty of this declara-  
 † tion. Persecution is written on the face of it, nor is it  
 † capable of a vindication. We are told that some of the  
 † most considerable episcopal clergy, on the issuing forth  
 † of this decree, applied to archbishop *Usher*, to use his  
 † interest with the Protector, † That as he granted liberty  
 † of conscience to almost all sorts of religions, so the  
 † episcopal divines might have the same freedom of serv-  
 † ing God in their private congregations, (since they  
 † were not permitted the public churches) according to  
 † the liturgy of the church of *England*; and that nei-  
 † ther the ministers, nor those that frequented that ser-  
 † vice, might be any more hindered or disturbed by his  
 † soldiers. So according to their desires, continues Dr.  
 † *Parr*, he went and used his utmost endeavours with

(†) Harleian  
 Miscellany,  
 vol. v. p.  
 249. Mer-  
 curius Poli-  
 ticus, No.  
 255. P.  
 5774.



# OLIVER CROMWELL.



nance, and of their liberty of worshipping  
 God according as appeared best to their own  
 under-

‘ *Cromwell*, for the taking off this restraint, which was  
 ‘ at last promised, (though with some difficulty) that  
 ‘ they should not be molested, provided they medled  
 ‘ not with any matters relating to his government: but  
 ‘ when the lord primate went to him a second time, to  
 ‘ get this promise ratified, and put into writing,——

‘ *Cromwell* answered him to this effect, that he had since  
 ‘ better considered it, having advised whith his council  
 ‘ about it, and that they thought it not safe for him to  
 ‘ grant liberty of conscience to those sort of men, who  
 ‘ are restless and implacable enemies to him and his go-  
 ‘ vernment; and so took his leave of him, though with  
 ‘ good words, and outward civility: the lord primate  
 ‘ seeing it was in vain to urge it any farther, said little  
 ‘ more to him, but returned to his lodgings very much  
 ‘ troubled, and concerned that his endeavours had met  
 ‘ with no better success; when he was in his chamber,  
 ‘ he said to some of his relations and myself, that came  
 ‘ to see him, This false man hath broken his word with  
 ‘ me, and refuses to perform what he promised; well,  
 ‘ he will have little cause to glory in his wickedness,  
 ‘ for he will not continue long; the King will return;  
 ‘ though I shall not live to see it, you may: the go-  
 ‘ vernment both in church and state is in confusion,  
 ‘ the papists are advancing their projects, and making  
 ‘ such advantages as will hardly be prevented (p).’

(p) *Life of*  
*Usher*, p.  
 75.

This truly venerable primate had reason to be out of  
 humour. For whatever might have been the practices  
 of many of the episcopal clergy, 'tis certain there were  
 amongst them wise, pious, learned, and peaceable men,  
 who merited a very different treatment from this which  
 was given them by *Oliver*. Not to take notice that it  
 is a very barbarous thing to prohibit men the use of  
 those forms of address to the Deity, which they ima-  
 gine are most honourable and acceptable to him.——

However, in justice to the Protector, it must be said,

understandings. The cavaliers had hard measure from him, as they were (sss) with-  
out

(q) See Walker's Suffering's of the Clergy, part ii. p. 23, 24. 26. 69. Fol. Lond. 1714. Nelson's Life of Bishop Bull, p. 29. 47. 8vo Lond. 1713.

that notwithstanding this declaration, he winked at, or permitted some worthy episcopalians to officiate in the public places of worship, nor do we find that they suffered any inconveniences on account of it. The books referred to in the margin will be deemed full authority by those acquainted with the character of their authors (q). So that some tenderness was used towards such as were not of obnoxious characters, though it cannot be doubted but many innocent and worthy men must have received very hard measure.

(sss) *The cavaliers had hard measure from him, being subjected to heavy taxes, &c.*] Cromwell, though an enemy, had shewn favour to the cavaliers in a variety of instances, and zealously promoted the act of oblivion whereby they obtained many solid advantages. But they could not be quiet. They were continually plotting how to bring in the young King, and restore him to what they called his right. For in the eyes of these men nations and kingdoms were patrimonial estates, and as such were to pass from father to son, without asking the consent of those who constituted them.— What made them more forward was the discontent which had arisen among their adversaries, on Cromwell's seizing the government, and exercising the supreme rule. For many zealous republicans now turned against him, and even joined with their sworn foes, to complete his destruction. So blind is revenge! Among these were *Overton* and *Wildman*, men of parts and interest in the army (r). But nothing was concealed from the eye of Cromwell. He seized many of the conspirators, and disappointed their intended insurrections. *Grove* and *Penrudduck* appeared however in the west, and with a small body of men, carried off the judges on the circuit at *Salisbury*; but being pursued, were taken, and executed at *Exeter*. Had Cromwell stopt here, had he only punished such as had appeared in arms,

(r) See Note (xxx).

out exception, almost, rendered subject to heavy

arms, or truly engaged in the plot against him, there had been no blame. Men who will venture on such exploits, must take the consequences; nor is a government to be blamed for making them examples. But provoked, *Cromwell* went much farther. He punished the whole body of cavaliers, and made little distinction between them. An order was made that 'all those who had ever borne arms for the King, or declared themselves to be of the royal party, should be decimated, that is, pay a tenth part of all that estate which they had left, to support the charge which the commonwealth was put to, by the unquietness of their tempers and the just cause of jealousy which they had administered.'—By another declaration, 'they were rendered incapable to be elected, or give their vote in the election of any person or persons to any office or place of trust or government, within the commonwealth; or to hold or execute by themselves or deputies, any such office or place till his highness's command was farther known (s).' And a great number of persons of quality were clapt up in prison, against whom little more was to be alledged than that they had been of the royal party. This treatment could not but be deemed by many, hard, and unjust. But *Cromwell* and his council undertook to vindicate it, in a declaration, published *October 31, 1655*, wherein, after taking notice of the events of the late war; the punctual performance of the articles granted to the cavaliers; and the act of grace and oblivion granted to them, in order to heal and cement, and take away all seeds of difference and separation: I say, after taking notice of these things, the declaration goes on to observe, 'That there can be no other construction made of the actings of that party, to the disturbance of the publick peace, and to the subversion of the government, but that they are implacable in their malice and revenge, and never to be drawn from their adhering to that

(s) See *Clarendon*, vol. vi. p. 570. *Mercurius Politicus*, No. 276. p. 5639.

heavy taxes and other inconveniences, upon

‘ that cursed interest, which hath been the shedding of  
 ‘ so much innocent blood, and almost the ruin and  
 ‘ destruction of these lands.’—As to the act of obli-  
 ‘ vion, against which these proceedings were deemed  
 ‘ contrary, it was answered,—‘ That the parliament,  
 ‘ by that act, intended not only an oblivion of the of-  
 ‘ fences of the party, [the cavaliers] but that this kind-  
 ‘ nefs should be answered with obedience on their part,  
 ‘ and produce a real change in their principles and in-  
 ‘ terest, as to the common cause this great contest had  
 ‘ been about, for otherwise this act cannot be considered  
 ‘ as obligatory to those who gave it: and in this case  
 ‘ forbearance from outward action will not avail, to  
 ‘ intitle to the benefit of the pardon, if yet there be  
 ‘ malice and revenge in the heart, and such a leaning  
 ‘ and adhering to the old interest, that nothing is want-  
 ‘ ing in the discovery thereof, but a fitting opportunity;  
 ‘ for as such men cannot in justice and ingenuity, claim  
 ‘ the benefit of an act of favour from the supream ma-  
 ‘ gistrate, to whom they themselves be enemies, so nei-  
 ‘ ther is that magistrate bound in justice before God or  
 ‘ men to give it to them, if he hath reason to believe  
 ‘ from the course of their conversations that they are  
 ‘ such, and that their intentions towards the govern-  
 ‘ ment, under which they live, are the same as when  
 ‘ they were in open arms against it, and is at liberty to  
 ‘ carry himself towards them, as if no such act had  
 ‘ been. Nay, he may proceed against them with greater  
 ‘ severity, inasmuch as he hath used the last means to  
 ‘ reclaim them without fruit, and knows by experience,  
 ‘ that nothing but the sword will restrain them from  
 ‘ blood and violence. Then if this be the case between  
 ‘ us and the late King’s party, to wit, that they have  
 ‘ notoriously manifested it to the consciences of all men,  
 ‘ that they do not only retain their old principles and  
 ‘ still adhere to their former interest, in direct opposi-  
 ‘ tion to the government established, but have been all  
 ‘ along

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

account of the rashness and imprudence of

some

along hatching new disturbances, and endeavouring as well by secret and bloody assassinations, as by open force to introduce the one, and overthrow and subvert the other; it will not be thought strange upon any account whatsoever, that we did lately secure so many of the men of that interest, although they were not visibly in arms upon the late insurrection; nor that we have laid a burden upon some of their estates, beyond what is imposed upon the rest of the nation, towards the defraying of that charge which they are the occasion of, with some other things which we have found necessary in this time of danger to direct concerning them, for the peace and safety of the whole (t). After this follows a clear and distinct narrative of the plot, supported by such evidence as appeared to the government convincing.——But what was all this to the innocent?——Yes, proceeds the declaration, ‘Admit that some of that party were as innocent, as they would now have it believed they were, enough hath been done by their fellows in a common cause (which hardly any of them know how to disown, which they love, and of which they glory) to draw the whole party under a just suspicion, and the consequences thereof: all that are peaceably minded in the nation are ready to say, these are the men of whom we go in danger, and certainly it is both just and necessary, that all those of whom the people have reason to be afraid (not only as their profest enemies, but also numerous) should pay for securing the state against that danger which they are the authors of (u).’

—— That character of difference between them and the rest of the people, which is now put upon them, is occasioned by themselves, not by us; there is nothing they have more industriously laboured in than this, to keep themselves separated, and distinguished from the well-affected of this nation: to which end they have kept their conversation apart, as if they

would

(t) Declaration, p. 12. 4to. Printed at London, by Henry Hills and John Field, Printers to his Highness the Lord Protector, 1655.

(u) Id. p. 36.

some of their party. Nor must it be for-

gotten

‘ would avoid the very beginnings of union, have bred  
 ‘ and educated their children by the sequestred and  
 ‘ ejected clergy, and very much confined their mar-  
 ‘ riages and alliances within their own party, as if they  
 ‘ meant to entail their quarrel, and prevent the means  
 ‘ to reconcile posterity; which, with the great pains  
 ‘ they take upon all occasions to lessen, and suppress the  
 ‘ esteem and honour of the *English* nation, in all their  
 ‘ actions and undertakings abroad, striving withal to  
 ‘ make other nations distinguish their interest from it,  
 ‘ gives us ground to judge that they have separated  
 ‘ themselves from the body of the nation; and there-  
 ‘ fore we leave it to all mankind to judge, whether we  
 ‘ ought not to be timely jealous of that separation, and  
 ‘ to proceed so against them, as they may be at the  
 ‘ charge of those remedies which are required against  
 ‘ the dangers they have bred (x).’ Such are the prin-  
 ciples on which this rigour was justified! Principles un-  
 just and tyrannous, and fit to support the most arbitrary  
 and destructive measures! And accordingly they have  
 been made use of by *L’ Estrange* professedly, to insti-  
 gate the magistrate to crush the party that opposed him.  
 — ‘ That which is sawce to a goose, says he, is sawce  
 ‘ to a gander. They that thought this proceeding law-  
 ‘ ful and reasonable, from *Cromwell* to the cavaliers,  
 ‘ will certainly never think it hard in return, from a  
 ‘ rightful prince to a band of traytors (y).’ It were to  
 have been wished, some have thought, that no such  
 principles had been acted on in a much more modern  
 period, by men who professed and gloried, in words at  
 least, in asserting the cause of liberty (z). It is said  
 this declaration was drawn up by the lord commissioner  
*Fiennes*, once governor of *Bristol*, for the surrender of  
 which he was sentenced to death by a court-martial,  
 but pardoned by the kindness of the Earl of *Essex*, then  
 lord general for the parliament. Lord *Clarendon* tells us,  
 ‘ That when this declaration was sent to *Cologne*, the

(x) Decla-  
 ration, &c.  
 P. 38.

(y) Obser-  
 vator, No.  
 367.  
 (z) See the  
 Debates on  
 laying an  
 extraordina-  
 ry Tax on  
 the Estates  
 of the Pa-  
 pists, in  
*Torbock’s*  
*Parliamen-  
 tary De-  
 bates*, vol.  
 viii. p. 285.  
 8vo. Lond.  
 1741.

‘ King

gotten here to mention his institution of m<sup>a</sup>-

3105-10101000

3105-10101000

' King caused an answer to be made to it upon the  
 ' grounds that were laid down in it; and as if it was  
 ' made by one who had been always of the parliament  
 ' side, and who was well pleased to see the cavaliers  
 ' reduced to that extremity; but with such reflections  
 ' upon the tyranny that was exercised over the king-  
 ' dom, and upon the foulness of the breach of trust the  
 ' Protector was guilty of, that it obliged all the nation  
 ' to look upon him as a detestable enemy, who was to <sup>(a)</sup> Vol. vi.  
 ' be removed by any way that offered itself <sup>(a)</sup>. The P. 572.  
 writer of this, it seems, was his lordship himself, who has  
 also assumed the merit, such as it is, of most of the  
 answers to the parliament's declarations before the war,  
 which have been generally given to *Charles* himself <sup>(b)</sup>.  
 The ' *letter from a true and lawful member of parlia-  
 ment, and one faithfully engaged with it from the begin-  
 ning of the war to the end,*' I believe is the answer in-  
 tended; it exactly suiting the description given by his  
 lordship, and should therefore be added to the list of his  
 writings. Sir *Peter Pett*, I know, in his '*Future hap-  
 py state of England,*' says it was attributed to Lord  
*Holles*; though I cannot find it mentioned by any writ-  
 ter among his works. I will conclude this note with a  
 specimen of the answer to this declaration contained in  
 the above letter, that it may appear how deeply *Crom-  
 well's* proceeding was resented by the royal party.  
 ' You have, says the writer, cancelled all obligations of  
 ' trust, and taken away all possible confidence from all  
 ' men that they can ever enjoy any thing that they can  
 ' call their own during this government; and having so  
 ' little pleasure left them in life, they will prefer the  
 ' losing it in some noble attempt to free their country  
 ' and themselves from the bondage and servitude they  
 ' live under, to the dying ignobly in some loathsome  
 ' prison, when you please to be afraid of them.—  
 ' When the despair you have put them into shall make  
 ' them consider, that as the misery, calamity, servitude  
 ' and

<sup>(b)</sup> Claren-  
 don's Life,  
 vol. i, p.  
 263, & pas-  
 sim.

major-generals (TTT), who in a variety of in-

stances

and infamy under which the three kingdoms suffer, proceed entirely from you, so, that they will be determined by you. That the general hatred and detestation of you is such, that it is very probable that those noble patriots, whose spirits shall be raised to destroy you, shall not only reap unutterable honour from it, but find safety in it, either from the confusion that must instantly attend, or from the abhorring your memories to those that shall survive you. If they shall perish in or upon their attempt, what a glorious fame will they leave behind them? What a sweet odour will their memories have with the present and succeeding ages? Statues will be erected to them, and their names recorded in those roles, which have preserved the *Bruti*, the *Horatii*, the *Fabii*, and all those who have died out of debt to their country, by having paid the utmost that they owed it; their merits will be remembered, as those of the primitive martyrs, and their children and kindred will be always looked upon as the descendants from the liberators of their country, and esteemed accordingly; their fate will be like his in the son of *Sirach*, If he die, he shall leave a greater name than a thousand: and if he live, he shall increase it (c).'

(c) Letter from a true and lawful Member of Parliament, p. 62, 63.

(TTT) Major-generals who lorded it over, and oppressed the country.] At the same time that *Cromwell* had determined to decimate the cavaliers, he projected a division of the kingdom into several districts, over which he placed officers of trust and confidence, who were to inspect into the conduct of the inhabitants, and treat them according to orders received from the Protector. The number of these men were eleven, distinguished by the title of major-generals, who presided over the counties of *England*, in the manner following.

*Kent and Surry*, Colonel KELSEY.

*Suffex, Hampshire, Berkshire*, Colonel GOFFE.

*Glou-*



OLIVER CROMWELL.

stances lorded it over and oppressed the country.

*Gloucester, Wilts, Dorset, Somerset, Devon, Cornwall,*  
General DISBOROWE.

*Oxon, Bucks, Hertford, Cambridge, isle of Ely, Essex, Norfolk, Suffolk,* Lord Deputy FLEETWOOD.

*London,* Major-General SKIPPON.

*Lincoln, Nottingham, Derby, Warwick, Leicester,* Com-  
missary-General WHALLEY.

*Northampton, Bedford, Rutland, Huntington,* Major  
BUTLER.

*Worcester, Hereford, Salop, North Wales,* Colonel  
BERRY.

*Cheshire, Lancashire, Staffordshire,* Colonel WORSLEY. (d) Mercurius Politicus, No. 281. p. 511.

*Yorkshire, Durham, Cumberland, Westmorland, Northumberland,* Lord LAMBERT. Thurloe, vol. iv. p. 117.

*Westminster, Middlesex,* the Lieutenant of the Tower,  
Colonel BARKSTEAD (d).

The commission given to *Disborowe* is preserved in *Thurloe's* collections. As it may be acceptable to some readers, I will here insert it.—‘*Oliver* Lord Protector of the commonwealth of *England, Scotland* and *Ireland*, and the dominions thereunto belonging, to our right trusty and well beloved major-general *John Disbrowe*, greeting. We reposing special trust and confidence in your fidelity, discretion, courage, experience, and conduct in military affairs, do hereby constitute and appoint you the said major-general *Disbrowe* to be major-general of all the militia forces raised and to be raised within the counties of *Cornwall, Devon, Somerset, Dorset, Wilts* and *Gloucester*; which said forces you are by virtue of this commission to receive into your charge as major-general, and the same to train and exercise in arms, and to command, lead, and conduct for the service of us and the commonwealth, keeping them in good order and discipline. And all officers and soldiers of the said forces are hereby required to obey you as their major-general  
‘ for

country.—But there was yet farther rea-

son

(e) Thurloe,  
vol. iii. p.  
426.

for the said service. And you are to observe and follow such directions as you shall from time to time receive from ourself. Given at *Whitehall* the 28th day of *May*, 1655. Signed *Oliver P.* (e)

Part of the instructions to the major-generals were, To endeavour to suppress all tumults, insurrections, rebellion or other unlawful assemblies which shall be in the said counties; to disarm all papists, and such as have been in arms against the parliament, and all others who are dangerous to the peace of the nation; to apprehend thieves and robbers, and prosecute them according to law; to have a strict eye upon the conversation and carriage of all disaffected persons within the several counties; to permit no horse-races, cock-fightings, bear or stage-plays; to compel the idle to labour, and provide employment and maintenance for the poor and impotent. To these were added orders to encourage godliness and virtue in their constant carriage and conversation, and to discourage their contraries; as well as to take an exact account of what proceedings had been upon the ordinance for ejecting of ignorant, insufficient and scandalous ministers and schoolmasters (f). Moreover, all persons who had borne arms against the parliament, or that lived dissolutely, or without a calling, or at a high rate, having no visible estate answerable thereunto, were to give bond with two sureties in such sums as the major-generals should think fit (with respect to their qualities) for their own peaceable demeanor; for revealing any plots or conspiracies that came to their knowledge; and for their personally appearing at such time and place as the major-general or his deputy should appoint, and as often as they should direct; and also that they should not change their places of abode without giving notice, and declaring to the major-general or his deputy the place to which they were about to remove (g). It is very evident from these instructions

(f) Mercurius Politicus, No. 289, p. 5251.

(g) Id. No. 288, p. 5229.

son to complain.—He made use of pack'd  
juries

tions that the major-generals had the country very much in their power: and it appears that they made use of it in the manner which the Protector intended. The cavaliers were forced to dance attendance; to submit to decimations; to have their houses searched, and their persons imprisoned. But nothing can convey so good an idea of their actions as their own accounts, which are to be found in *Thurloe's* papers, one or two of which I will insert.—Major-general *Worsley* in a letter to secretary *Thurloe*, dated *Stofford*, *December 8, 1655*, writes as follows:—‘ Yesterday we had a meeting  
‘ at this town; and I have made a good progress in our  
‘ business. We have assessed divers, and the rest must  
‘ expect it with all speed, I doubt not but before the  
‘ five and twentieth of this instant. I hope we shall  
‘ pay our county troope out of what we have done  
‘ already, and provide you a considerable sum for other  
‘ uses. We have sent out warrants to give notice to  
‘ the whole county, and our day of meeting, when  
‘ we shall sit upon the ordinance for ejecting of scanda-  
‘ lous ministers. We have disarmed the disaffected in  
‘ this county. Wee shall now fall of snapping some of  
‘ our old blades, that will not let us be quiet. There  
‘ is so few in that ordinance for scandal, that they have  
‘ much adoe both here and in other countries to get a  
‘ coram. I commend that to you from the commis-  
‘ sioners upon their desire; and alsoe in their name to  
‘ believe, that what is in their power shall not be want-  
‘ ing to effect what they have received from his high-  
‘ ness and council,——P. S. Wee understand that  
‘ Mr. *Halsae* is taken at *London*: if soe, he may, I be-  
‘ lieve, discover divers of our *Lancashire* and *Cheshire*  
‘ gentlemen. Wee have found an estate of *Penridock*,  
‘ that was executed, and have ordered it to be seques-  
‘ tered; for I have taken orders for the takeing of secu-  
‘ rity for all disaffected persons in that country. I hope  
‘ shortly to give you a good account of the rest of the  
‘ countyes

juries on some occasions, and displaced  
judges

(d) Thurloc, vol. iv.  
p. 300.

countyes (B).—*Disbrowe*, another of these gentlemen, writes as follows to the protector, in a letter, dated *Sarum*, Dec. 18, 1655.—‘I have received your letter, in reference to the lord *Seymour*, and have perused his to your highness; wherein I find no more than any Cavalier in the west of *England* shall pretend for himself. I must confess I should be glad of a real change; but I humbly conceive, without some publicque declarattion to the world by him of the alteration of his spirit and principles, and of his real engagement to the present government, it will but open a door, and give occasion to the enemy to cry out of our partiality; especially if favour and respect shall be shewn to him, and denied to others, that will doe as much, if not more, than he hath done. If his spirit be such as he can cordially close with the people of God, (as capt. *Burgesi* seems to hold forth) he will not be ashamed to disown that interest, wherein he formerly engaged; and for satisfaction of friends manifest his integrity to the publick. However, for the present, the commissioners understanding your highness’s pleasure, seem willing to let him alone, untill they be ascertained, whether there be any difference betwixt him and his former practices. Yesterday we proceeded upon taxing 7 or 8 of this county, amongst whom was Sir *James Thynn*, who was at the first a little averse, and did plead as much innocency as my lord *Seymour* hath done; but, at last, having no refuge, was constrained to comply; and I think of those 8, which we have already dealt withall, the sum will amount to 6 or 700 *l. per annum*. There are four more to appear this morning; and then I intend for *Blandford* to attend the *Dorsetshire* gentlemen, and so to *Mairborough*, where there are 20 more to be summoned. In my last, I gave Mr. Secretary a list of some names for *Cornwall*, *Devon*, *Somerset* and *Dorset*, to be sheriffs; and have presented your highness

ness with 3 for *Wilts*, the two former being of the last parliament, and signing the recognition. For *Gloucester* I must crave leave till I come upon the place (i). — But fining the Cavaliers was not the sole business of the major-generals: other employment they had, as we find in another letter from *Disbrowe* to the protector, dated *Wells*, Jan. 7, 1655. — 'I had not tyme by my last to give your highness an account of all my proceeds, therefore shall take the boldness at present to acquaint your highness, that at *Bristol* intimation was given me by some honest people, that sundry of the aldermen and justices were enemies to the publique interest, retayninge their old malignant principles, discountenancinge the godly, and upholding the loose and prophane which indeed is a disease predominatinge in most corporations. Now I judged it my duty to declare against such, wheresoever I find them, but resolved to do it with as little noyse as I could; and in order thereunto I made my repair to Mr. Mayor, and acquainted him, that such of his bretherene I understood were foe and foe; and desired him from me to advise them tacitly to resigne, otherwise I should be necessitated to make them publique examples. Whereupon Mr. Mayor engaged to deale faithfully with them, and, as I understand, they have taken my advice, which will make way for honest men. There were also articles of delinquency proved against nine of the magistrates of *Tewkesbury*, and particularly against *Hill* their towne clarke: I have also dismissed them, and four of the common councill of *Gloucester*, for adheringe to the *Scotts* King's interest (k). — One instance more of the behaviour of these major-generals will give the reader a tolerable good view of them. It is contained in a letter from major-general *Haynes* to *Thurloe*, dated *Bury*, August 15, 1655. — 'I am going into *Norfolke* to morrow, where we shall make the most use of it; [a letter from his highness] and I hope it will quicken them in their endeavours upon the election-day at hand, in which they have been much discouraged by the potencie of the adverse pat-

(i) Thurloes, vol. iv. p. 324.

(k) Id. p. 396 and 632.

judges for refusing (UUU) to follow his directions.

(l) Thurloe,  
vol. v. p.  
311.

ty. Yett all the strength can be gott is endeavoured to crowde in my lord-deputy [*Fleetwood*] amongst them, that the honest people may have some one in parliament to address themselves to. I am doing my most to avoid the election of *John Hubbert* of *Norwich*, and *Mr. Ph. Woodhouse*, against whom you have something already by you from major *Harvy*, which it's hoped, if they should carry it here, will not pass with you (l).—These proceedings of the major-generals, founded on no law, but the will of the protector, rendered them generally odious, and raised a mighty clamour against them in the kingdom. A parliament being called they were spoken against, even by court dependants, and soon afterwards abolished by *Cromwell*, as unacceptable and burthensome to the people. From henceforth we read of no more decimations.

(UUU) *He pack'd juries on occasion, and displaced judges for refusing to follow his directions.*] Here are my proofs.—When judge *Hale* was on a circuit, he understood that the protector had ordered a jury to be returned for a tryal in which he was more than ordinarily concerned: upon this information he examined the sheriff about it, who knew nothing of it; for he said he referred all such things to the under-sheriff, and having next asked the under-sheriff concerning it, he found the jury had been returned by order from *Cromwell*; upon which he shewed the statute that all juries ought to be returned by the sheriff or his lawful officer; and this not being done according to law, he dismissed the jury, and would not try the cause: upon which the protector was highly displeased with him, and at his return from the circuit, he told him in anger, he was not fit to be a judge, to which all the answer he made was, That it was very true (m).

(m) *Hale's*  
*Life*, p. 43.

That

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



453

rections.—He committed men illegally

to

That this may be true is rendered very probable by letters to *Thurloe*, part of which I will here transcribe. The first is from Mr. *Dove*, high-sheriff of *Wilts*, dated *Sarum*, *March 29*, 1655, relating to the intended trials for rebellion against the protector.—‘ I understand a commission of *Oyer and Terminer* is issued out for tryall of the rebels in the west; and ther is a mistrust of my under-sheriffe. Sir, I resolve, that noe one man shall be returned in the one or other juries, but such as may be confided in, and of the honest well affected party to his highness, and the present government. Yf there be but enough to be found of them through the whole county (which I hope there is) it is and will be my greatest care for that business to see it punctually done, and not trust my under-sheriffe therewith (n).’ I suppose he was as good as his word, for both the juries I find highly commended by the solicitor, and other of his highness’s agents, in their accounts of the trials of the unhappy sufferers.—Colonel *Lilburne*, in a letter to the secretary, dated *Yorke*, *April 10*, 1655, has the following passage, on a like subject. ‘ As for jurors, happily the law may give liberty to choose them without the liberties of this city, both fact and act rising in the county, and then we shall doe pretty well: but, if otherwise, there shall be no diligence or care wanting to pick upp such as are right (o).’—Practices of this nature could not but be dangerous to the subject.—What is said in the text concerning *Oliver’s* displacing of judges, is founded on the authority of *Whitlock*. ‘ *Baron Thorpe*, and judge *Newdigate*, says he, were put out of their places, for not observing the protector’s pleasure in all his commands (p).’ I know not, whether I ought to insert under this head the displacing *Whitlock* and *Widdrington*, commissioners of the great Seal, for refusing to proceed according to an ordinance made ‘ for the better regulating and limiting the jurisdiction of the

(n) *Thurloe*,  
vol. iii. p.  
118.

(o) *Id.* p.  
360.

(p) *Memorials*, p. 625.

to prison, and permitted them not to enjoy  
(www) the benefit of the laws. He caused  
men

‘ High Court of Chancery.’ Possibly the protector, however he might be mistaken, really thought his regulation for the public good, and therefore could not be blamed for dismissing such as were not to be prevailed on to concur with him therein.—These gentlemen, however, as they were deemed by the protector men of honour and abilities, were employed in other departments, and enjoyed his countenance and encouragement. His speech, on the taking away the seal from these commissioners, was remarkable. ‘ The protector, in the council-chamber, very gravely told us, says *Whitlock*, that he was sorry some of us could not satisfy our own consciences, to execute the ordinance concerning the Chancery, which they were informed had much good in it to the publick, but he confessed, that every one was to satisfy himself in matters to be performed by him, and that he had not the worse opinion of any man for refusing to do that whereof he was doubtful; but in this particular the affairs of the commonwealth did require a conformity of the officers thereof, and their obedience to authority, and (being some of us refused to execute this act, as was enjoined) they were compelled thereby to put this charge of the custody of the great Seal into the hands of some others, who might be satisfied that it was their duty to perform this command, and to put the ordinance in execution (q)!’ I have said the protector possibly was not to be blamed for his conduct in this affair: the reader, however, must judge of this.

(q) *Id.* p.  
626.

(www) *He committed men illegally to prison, and permitted them not the benefit of the laws.* The author of ‘ the World’s Mistake in *Oliver Cromwell*’ will supply me with sufficient proofs of this. ‘ To prove, says he, that *Oliver*’s time was full of oppression and injustice, I shall but instance, in a few of many particulars, and begin with *John Lilburne*, not that I think him in any  
kind



# OLIVER CROMWELL.



455

men to be tried before new created tribunals,

kind one that deserved favour or respect, but that equal justice is due to the worst, so well as to the best men, and that he comes first in order of time.

1. *John*, in 1649, was, by order of the then parliament, tryed for his life, with an intent, I believe, of taking him away, but the jury not finding him guilty, he was immediately, according to law, generously set at liberty by those that had quarrel enough against him. This example in the parliament, of keeping to the laws in the case of one, who was a professed implacable enemy to them, ought to have been copied by *Cromwell*; but, in the contrary, to shew that there was a difference betwixt his and his predecessors (the long parliament's) principles, when the law had again, upon a second trial (occasioned by *Oliver*) cleared *Lilburne*, the parliament's submitting to the law was no example to him; for, contrary to law, he kept him in prison, untill he was so far spent in a consumption, that he only turned him out to dye.

2. Mr. *Conie's* case is so notorious that it needs but little more than naming: he was a prisoner at *Cromwell's* suit, and being brought to the King's-Bench barr by a *Habeas Corpus*, had his counsell taken from the barr, and sent to the *Tower* for no other reason, than the pleading of their client's cause; an act of violence, that, I believe, the whole story of *England* doth not parallel. This was on the 18th of *May*, 1655. The gentlemen thus committed, were *Maynard*, *Twisden* and *Windbam*, men of great eminence in their profession, who could find no release from their imprisonment, but by humbly petitioning the protector

(r) See Mercurius Politicus, No.

298. p.

535+

—But to go on.—

3dly, Sir *Henry Vane*, above any one person, was the author of *Oliver's* advancement, and did so long and cordially espouse his interest, that he prejudiced himself (in the opinion of some) by it, yet so ungrate-

nals, and adjudged to death without the  
verdict

ful was this monster of ingratitude, that he studied to destroy him, both in life and estate, because he could not adhere to him in his perjury and falseness. The occasion he took was this: he appointing a day of humiliation, and seeking of God for him, invited all God's people in his declaration, to offer him their advice in the weighty affairs then upon his shoulders: Sir *Henry* taking a rise from hence offered his advice by a treatise called the *Healing Question*; but *Cromwell*, angry at being taken at his word, seized, imprisoned, and endeavoured to proceed further against him, for doing only what he invited him to do.—

4thly, In *Richard's* assembly, certain prisoners in the *Tower*, under the then lieutenant, and some sent thence to *Jersey*, and other places beyond the sea, complained of false imprisonment. Their goaler was sent for, and being required to shew by what authority he kept these persons in hold, produceth a paper all under *Oliver's* own hand, as followeth. Sir, I pray you seize such and such persons, and all others whom you shall judge dangerous men; do it quickly, and you shall have a warrant after it is done. The nature of this warrant was by *Richard's* assembly debated, and having first *Richard's* own counsel's opinion in the case, as serjeant *Maynard*, &c. they voted the commitments of the complainants to be illegal, unjust and tyrannical; and that, first, because the warrant by which they were committed, was under the hand of the then (as they called him) chief magistrate, who, by law, ought not to commit any by his own warrant. Secondly, Because no cause was shewn in the warrant; and thirdly (in the case of those sent out of the reach of a *Habeas Corpus*, which in law is a banishment) Because no *Englishman* ought to be banished by any less authority than an act of parliament. And, therefore, for these reasons they  
voted

verdict of a jury. These courts were stiled High

‘ voted farther, that the prisoners should be set at liber-  
 ‘ ty without paying any fees or charges. But the turn-  
 ‘ ing out and punishing the lieutenant by the assembly  
 ‘ (for obeying so unjust a warrant) was prevented by  
 ‘ their sudden dissolution (s).’ Most of the facts here  
 recited are well known to those versed in this part of  
 the *English* history, and may be established on the best  
 authorities. But on consulting the Journals of the  
 parliament, here referred to, I find a mistake relating  
 to the commitments by *Oliver*.—On *Saturday* the  
 26th of *Feb.* 1658, say the Journals, *Mr. Terill* ‘ re-  
 ‘ ported from the grand committee of the house for  
 ‘ grievances and courts of justice, the state of the case,  
 ‘ concerning *Mr. John Portmans*, a prisoner in the  
 ‘ *Tower*, as it appeared to the committee; viz. That  
 ‘ the lieutenant of the *Tower*, the third of *February*,  
 ‘ 1657, received a letter from the late lord protector,  
 ‘ early in the morning, directing him to apprehend *Mr.*  
 ‘ *John Portmans* (amongst others) forthwith: that the  
 ‘ same day, in the afternoon, a warrant was sent to the  
 ‘ lieutenant of the *Tower*, under the hand of the late  
 ‘ lord protector, to require and authorize him to ap-  
 ‘ prehend and imprison *Mr. Portmans*: that the same  
 ‘ night, or shortly after, upon that warrant, *Mr. Port-*  
 ‘ *mans* was taken by a lieutenant and about six soldiers,  
 ‘ under the command, and by the order and direction,  
 ‘ of the lieutenant of the *Tower*; and hath ever  
 ‘ sithence remained a prisoner there, without any tryal,  
 ‘ or other proceedings had against him.’—‘ On the  
 ‘ 26th of *March* following, the warrant for the com-  
 ‘ mitment and detaining major-general *Overton* in the  
 ‘ *Isle of Jersey* was read; and was signed *Oliver P.*;  
 ‘ and directed to the governor of the *Isle of Jersey* or  
 ‘ his deputy; and was in these words; viz. These are  
 ‘ to will and require you forthwith to receive into your  
 ‘ charge the bodies of *Robert Overton*, major *Norwood*,  
 ‘ and *Sir Thomas Armstrong*, and ——— *Weston*, esq;  
 and

(s) *World's*  
*Mistake,*  
 p. 12—14.

' and them detain, under secure imprisonment, in the  
 ' castle of *Jersey*, until you shall receive further orders  
 ' from us: and, for so doing, this shall be your war-  
 ' rant. Given at *Whitchhall*, the 8th of *January*, 1657.  
 ' These commitments were voted by the house illegal  
 ' and unjust, and the gentlemen were ordered to be dis-  
 ' charged from their imprisonment.'—It appears al-  
 ' so from the Journal of the same day, that the commit-  
 ' tee found, ' that divers commoners of *England* had, by  
 ' illegal warrants, been committed to prison into the  
 ' islands of *Jersey*, and other the islands belonging to  
 ' this commonwealth, out of the reach of the *Habeas*  
 ' *Corpus*.' Thus we see that *Cromwell*, who had op-  
 ' posed and punished *Charles* for his illegal acts, became an  
 ' imitator of him, and, in some of these instances, went even  
 ' beyond him: for I question whether all *Charles's* reign  
 ' can produce so daring a violation of the right of the  
 ' subject, as his imprisoning *Maynard* and his brethren, for  
 ' pleading in behalf of *Coney* their client: nor is there a  
 ' greater, than the imprisoning and banishing men on his  
 ' own warrant, and depriving them of the benefit of the  
 ' laws made for their relief. Vain, indeed, might the  
 ' unhappy sufferers have said, were the efforts made against  
 ' the King, when the effect of them was still slavery and  
 ' oppression!

(xxx) *The high courts of justice.* The creation of a  
 high court of justice for the trial of *Charles* gave rise  
 to many others. When the nature of the supposed  
 crime was such as fell not under the cognizance of the  
 common law; when the persons accused were of a qua-  
 lity which might incline a jury to treat them with com-  
 passion and regard; or when they had been engaged in  
 actions popular, though illegal, it was then thought  
 proper by those in power to erect high courts of justice,  
 in order that offenders might not escape punishment.  
 These courts were constituted of commissioners named  
 by the government, who performed the several offices

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

the Royalists, as their enemies were their judges!

of judges and juries, and determined concerning the law and the fact. The Attorney-General generally managed the evidence against the prisoners, and few escaped who were cited before these tribunals. The Duke of *Hamilton*, and the lords *Holland* and *Capel*, *Christopher Love* and *Mr. Gibbons*, with some others, were sentenced to die by courts thus constituted, who, probably, before another kind of judicature, would have met with a milder treatment, though, as the laws then were, they could not but be deemed offenders.——When *Cromwell* came to the government, he made use of the same methods of trial on several occasions: and in the year 1656, the parliament passed ‘an act for the security of his highness the lord protector his person, and continuance of the nation in peace and safety.’ In the preamble it is said, ‘Forasmuch as the prosperity and safety of this nation——very much dependeth, under God, upon the security and preservation of the person of his highness; and, for that it hath manifestly appeared, that divers wicked plots and means have been of late devised and laid——to the great endangering his highness person, and the embroyling this commonwealth in new and intestine wars and seditions; therefore be it enacted, that if any person shall attempt, compass or imagine the death of the lord protector, and declare it by open deed; or shall advisedly and maliciously proclaim, declare, publish or promote *Charles Stuart*, or any other person claiming from the late King; or shall aid and assist, hold intelligence with, or contribute money towards the assistance of the said *Charles Stuart*, his brothers or mother, &c. then all and every the offences above-mentioned shall be adjudged to be high treason: and that in all such cases, and upon all such occasions, the lord chancellor, the lord keeper, or lords commissioners of the great seal of *England* for the time being, are authorized and required from time to time,

judges!—If to all these things we add

the

‘ by warrant from his highness to issue out one or more  
 ‘ commission or commissions, under the great seal of  
 ‘ *England*, to — &c ——— or any seventeen or more  
 ‘ of them: which said commissioners shall have author-  
 ‘ rity to hear, examine and determine all matters,  
 ‘ crimes and offences aforesaid; and also to hear and  
 ‘ determine all misprisions of the treasons in this act  
 ‘ mentioned, and to take order for charging the offend-  
 ‘ er or offenders, with all or any the crimes aforesaid,  
 ‘ and for the receiving their personal answer there-  
 ‘ unto; and for examination of witnesses upon oath,  
 ‘ and thereupon, or upon the confession of the party,  
 ‘ or, in default of such answer, to proceed to conviction  
 ‘ and final sentence, as in cases of high treason, and  
 ‘ misprision of treason, according to justice and the  
 ‘ merits of the cause. — Commissioners were also ap-  
 ‘ pointed for the same purpose in *Scotland* and *Ireland*.  
 ‘ ——— This act was to continue in force unto the  
 ‘ end of the last session of the next parliament, and no  
 ‘ longer (t).’ By this last clause it seems sufficiently  
 evident that the framers of this law were sensible of its  
 severity and ill consequences. However, this seemed  
 to give a sanction to it. But what is unreasonable never  
 satisfies. It was urged that trials by juries were  
 the birthrights of *Englishmen*; that all trials for trea-  
 son were to be had and used only according to the due  
 order and course of the common laws of the realm,  
 and not otherwise, upon inquest and presentment by  
 the oaths of twelve good and lawful men, upon good  
 and probable evidence and witness; and that if any  
 thing be done to the contrary, it shall be void in law,  
 redressed and holden for error and nought: and if any  
 statute be made to the contrary, that shall be holden for  
 none. That to proceed against any without legal in-  
 dictment, presentment and trial, in the way of the  
 high courts of justice, was very unequitable; the com-  
 missioners themselves being both grand and petty jury,

and

(t) Scobel.

the violation of the privileges of (YYY) par-

and judges likewise, if not parties interested, to whom no peremptory or legal challenges could be made; and, finally, that such proceedings were contrary to *Magna Charta*; the petition of right; the declarations of the parliament: and to an article in the instrument of government which was sworn to by the protector himself (u).—How good soever these pleas might have been, they were not suffered to be of use to the prisoners. Judges are generally well enough satisfied of the authority by which they act, and will not have it questioned. To demur to the jurisdiction, or refuse to answer, is equivalent to the clearest proof of guilt, and judgment is accordingly given. However, the protector had his end by this method of proceeding. ‘He thought it more effectual, says *Whitlock*, than the ordinary course of tryals at the common law, and would the more terrify the offenders (x):’ and terrify it did; for, on the erection of the last high court of justice, according to *Clarendon*, ‘it put all those who knew how liable they themselves were, under a terrible consternation. *Whitlock* would not sit when nominated as a commissioner, it being, as he says, against his judgment.—This is to his reputation.—

(u) See the Tryals of Gerard, Vowel, and Dr. Hewet, in the 2d vol. of State Tryals, Fol. 2730.

(x) Memorials, p. 673.

(YYY) *The violation of the privileges of parliament, &c.*] *Cromwell* seems to have had honest intentions, when he adopted the form of choosing members of parliament, which his old masters had prescribed. ‘He did not observe, therefore, the old course in sending writs out to all the little boroughs throughout *England*, which use to send burgeses (by which method some single counties send more members to the parliament than six other counties do) he took a more equal way, by appointing more knights for every shire to be chosen, and fewer burgeses; whereby the number of the whole was much lessened; and yet, the people being left to their own election, it was not, by him, thought an ill temperament, and was then

‘ge-

parliament, so much and so justly com-

plained

(y) Clarendon, vol. vi. p. 495. generally looked upon as an alteration fit to be more warrantably made, and in a better time (y). Indeed, at first sight, it appears that very little room was, or could be given in this way, for bribery and corruption, whether from private hands or the publick exchequer. The first speech to the parliament that met *September 3, 1654*, was calculated to sooth the members, as well as give them great hopes from the new government. After having told them what things he had already done, and what a prospect there was, through their means, of advancing the happiness of the nation, the protector added, 'Having said this, and, perhaps, omitted many other material things through the frailty of my memory, I shall exercise plainness and freedom with you, in telling you, that I have not spoken these things as one that assumes to himself dominion over you; but as one that doth resolve to be a fellow servant with you, to the interest of these great affairs, and to the people of these nations.' The parliament, after some needful preliminaries, fell upon business. On the 5th of *September* it was resolved by them that the house do take the matter of the government into debate the first business to morrow morning. On that day it was again resolved upon the question, that the subject-matter of the debate to morrow morning shall be, whether the house shall approve the government shall be in one single person and a parliament. Accordingly, on the three following days, this important subject was debated, wherein the courtiers and republicans exerted themselves (z). *Cromwell* was alarmed at these proceedings, and, on the 12th of the same month, sent a message to the parliament, desiring them to meet him in the painted chamber. The members being come, he made, according to his custom, a long speech, expressing his resentment at their conduct, telling them what he expected from them, or else what they must trust to. Among others we find the following passages.

pages.



# OLIVER CROMWELL.

plained of, by writers of different parties  
and

pages. ' At that meeting [the opening of the parlia-  
' ment] I did acquaint you what the first rise was of  
' this government which hath called you hither; and,  
' in the authority of which you came hither. Among  
' other things that I told you of then, I said you were  
' a free parliament, and so you are, whilst you own the  
' government and authority that called you hither; for,  
' certainly, that word implied a reciprocation, or it  
' implied nothing at all. Indeed there was a recipro-  
' cation implied and expressed; and, I think, your ac-  
' tions and carriages ought to be suitable: but I see it  
' will be necessary for me now a little to magnify my  
' office; which I have not been apt to do.——I had  
' this thought within myself, that it had not been dis-  
' honest, nor dishonourable, nor against true liberty, no  
' not of parliaments, when a parliament was so chosen,  
' in pursuance of, in conformity to, and with such an  
' approbation and consent to the government, so that  
' he that runs might read by what authority you came  
' hither, that an owning of your call, and of the au-  
' thority bringing you hither, might have been required  
' before your entrance into the house; but this was de-  
' clined, and hath not been done, because I am per-  
' swaded scarce any man could reasonably doubt you  
' came with contrary minds. And I have reason to be-  
' lieve the people that sent you least doubted thereof at  
' all; and therefore I must deal plainly with you: what  
' I forbore upon a just confidence at first, you necessi-  
' tate me unto now; that, seeing the authority that  
' called you is so little valued, and so much slighted,  
' till some such assurance be given and made known,  
' that the fundamental interest of the government be  
' settled and approved, according to the proviso con-  
' tained in the return, and such a consent testified as  
' will make it appear that the same is accepted, I have  
' caused a stop to be put to your entrance into the par-  
' liament house. I am sorry, I am sorry, and I could  
' be

and persuasions, we shall be able to form

some  
34105710  
318-1110333

' be sorry to the death, that there is cause for this : but  
 ' there is cause, and if things be not satisfied that are  
 ' reasonably demanded, I, for my part, shall do that  
 ' which becomes me, seeking my counsel from God.  
 ' There is therefore somewhat to be offered to you,  
 ' that, I hope, will answer, being understood with the  
 ' qualifications that I have told you of ; reforming cir-  
 ' cumstantials, and agreeing in the substance and fun-  
 ' damentals, which is the government settled, and is  
 ' expressed in the indenture not to be altered. The  
 ' making your minds known in that, by your giving  
 ' your assent and subscription to it, is that which will  
 ' let you in to act those things as a parliament, which  
 ' are for the good of the people. And this thing shew-  
 ' ed to you, and signed as afore said, doth determine  
 ' the controversy, and may give a happy progress and  
 ' issue to this parliament. The place where you may  
 ' come thus and sign, as many as God shall make free  
 ' thereunto, is in the Lobby without the parliament  
 ' door (a).——In this strain spoke the protector,  
 ' who, agreeably to his threats, caused a stop to be put  
 ' to their entrance into the parliament house, by guards,  
 ' till such time as they had subscribed the following re-  
 ' cognition : ' I do hereby freely promise and engage, to  
 ' be true and faithful to the lord protector, and the  
 ' commonwealth of *England, Scotland and Ireland* ; and  
 ' shall not, according to the tenor of the indenture,  
 ' whereby I am returned to serve in this present parlia-  
 ' ment, propose, or give my consent, to alter the go-  
 ' vernment, as it is settled in one person and a parlia-  
 ' ment (b). This was immediately subscribed by the  
 ' speaker, *Lentball*, and many others ; and after its being  
 ' explained ' to comprehend not the whole instrument  
 ' of government, but only what concerned the govern-  
 ' ment of the commonwealth, as it was then settled  
 ' in one person and a parliament (c). Much the great-  
 ' er part of the house followed the example. However,

(a) *Parliamentary History*, vol. xx. p. 349-353.

(b) *Journals*.

(c) *Journals*.

some tolerable judgment of his illegal and tyrannical actions.

Pos-

this act stuck deep in the minds of the members; between whom and the protector there was so little good will that he dismissed them at the end of five months, the term fixed by the instrument of government for their sitting, with a speech full of reproaches. Mr. Ludlow, and many others, speak loudly against these proceedings of Cromwell, and scruple not to tax them with tyranny.—— So soon, says he, as this visible hand of violence appeared to be upon them [in the affair of the recognition] most of the eminent assertors of the liberty of their country withdrew themselves, being persuaded they should better discharge their duty to the nation by this way of expressing their abhorrence of his tyrannical proceedings, than by surrendering their liberties under their own hands, and then treating with him who was possessed of the sword, to recover some part of them again (d).—— Another contemporary speaks in a like strain. ‘ These grave, necessary and important debates, says he, were no sooner entered into, than in contempt of all privileges of parliament, which will not allow matters in debate to be taken notice of, the Protector, like a King, *Nam impune qualibet facere, id est, regem esse*, summons them into his presence, with the highest and sharpest language, reproaches them for disputing his authority, by whom they were called together; requires them to renounce and disclaim that liberty, before they proceeded to farther consultation, and to that purpose delivered an instrument, without subscribing to which, the band of soldiers which guarded the door of the parliament house, would not suffer any man to enter, whereupon a major part of the parliament departed to their houses, and they only went in who submitted to the conditions, which many afterwards did, who in detestation of the violence, at that time had forborne to subscribe. Thus he, who without

(d) Ludlow, vol. ii. p. 501.

' the consent or privity of a dozen persons, had assumed  
 ' to himself the title and stile of Protector of three  
 ' kingdoms, and therefore found a general submission,  
 ' because he had bound himself within a short time to  
 ' call a parliament, that might settle the government,  
 ' when it was now met and possessed of the power it  
 ' was to have, because they came together upon his  
 ' call, would not suffer them to question any thing he  
 ' had done, or what he should do hereafter, their sub-  
 ' mission (as he said) to his authority of summoning  
 ' them, being a tacit acknowledgment of his power,  
 ' which he would not endure to be argued against, with-  
 ' out calling to mind (besides the practice of these last  
 ' ill years) that by the express letter of the law, any  
 ' restraint from altering or revoking an ordinance or act  
 ' of parliament itself, is void, being against the jurif-  
 ' diction and power of parliament (e).’—But this  
 treatment was nothing when compared with that which  
 he gave many members returned to the parliament *Septem-  
 ber 17, 1656*. After it was deemed expedient (by  
 reason of the *Spanish* war) to call a parliament to meet at  
 this time, every art was made use of usual on those oc-  
 casions, money excepted, to procure a choice of such  
 members as might fall in with the views of the Protec-  
 tor. *Scotland* and *Ireland* were in his own hands, and  
 the members sent from thence were to be depended on,  
 three only of the latter excepted, who met not with  
 approbation (f). In *England* things went not so well.  
 For though, it is said, 182 of *Cromwell's* kinsmen, de-  
 pendants, placemen or officers, were chosen (g), yet  
 were a great number of zealous republicans and anti-  
 courtiers, of different principles, returned; who wanted  
 not will or ability to give much interruption to the bu-  
 siness and designs of the government. This was well  
 known, and therefore without ceremony, admission was  
 given to none who produced not a certificate, signed by  
 the clerk of the commonwealth in chancery, ‘ that he  
 ‘ was returned to serve in this present parliament, and  
 ‘ approved by the council, [*Oliver's*] (h).’ This was  
 undoubtedly an high act of tyranny, and surpassed any  
 thing to be met with in our histories. The gentlemen  
 unap-

(e) Letter  
 from a true  
 and lawful  
 Member of  
 Parliament,  
 p. 54.

(f) Thur-  
 loc, vol. v.  
 p. 477.

(g) See Nar-  
 rative of the  
 late Parliam-  
 ent, in the  
 3d vol. of  
 the Harlei-  
 an Miscel-  
 lany, p. 440.

(h) Jour-  
 nals. And  
 Thurlow,  
 vol. v. p.  
 453.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

467  
 7070333  
 7070333

unapproved were about one hundred; fifty six of whom sent a letter to the Speaker, Sir *Thomas Widdrington*, which was read in the house the next day, in these words. ‘ Sir, We whose names are subscribed (with others) being chosen, and accordingly returned to serve with you in this parliament; and, in discharge of our trust, offering to go into the house, were, at the lobby door, kept back by soldiers: which, lest we should be wanting to our duty to you, and to our country, we have thought it expedient to represent unto you, to be communicated to the house, that we may be admitted therinto.’ After the reading this letter it was ordered That the clerk of the commonwealth in chancery be ordered to attend the house to morrow morning, with all the indentures of returns of knights, citizens, and burgeses, chosen to serve in this parliament.’ The deputy of the clerk of the commonwealth attended then with the returns, which being examined, confirmed the truth of what the secluded members had written.—The house being acquainted that the clerk of the commonwealth was himself at the door: he was called in; and by order of the house, Mr. Speaker acquainted him, That upon the perusal of the indentures, it appears, divers persons are elected, which are not returned to the house: and he was demanded by what order it was done. He returns this answer: that he received an order from his highness’s council, that he should deliver tickets to all such persons, and such only, as being returned to serve in parliament, should be certified unto him, from the council, as persons by them approved: and that he did receive several orders of approbation for several persons; and so he made out the tickets.’ Being demanded whether he had the order itself: answered he knew not whether it were at the door. But being withdrawn; and again brought in by the serjeant; he delivered in the order, subscribed by Mr. *Jefferp*, clerk of the council. This order being read, it was resolved the next day, ‘ That this house doth desire the council to give unto this house on Monday next, their reasons, why those members, who are returned from the several counties and boroughs

' for members, are not approved; and why they are  
 ' not admitted to come into the house.' Accordingly on  
*Monday, the 22d of September,* ' The lord commissioners  
 ' *Fienes* reported by word of mouth, from the council,  
 ' their answer to the order made by the house, to this  
 ' effect: Whereas the parliament did desire the council  
 ' to give unto them, their reasons, why those mem-  
 ' bers who are returned for the severall counties and bo-  
 ' roughs for members are not approved; and why they  
 ' are not admitted into the house; the council have  
 ' commanded me to return this humble answer: That  
 ' whereas by a clause in the government it is ordered,  
 ' that the clerk, called the clerk of the commonwealth,  
 ' &c. as in the one and twentieth article; and by ano-  
 ' ther clause in the government, it is ordained, That  
 ' the persons who shall be elected to serve in parliament,  
 ' shall be such, as are persons of known integrity, fear-  
 ' ing God, and of good conversation: That the coun-  
 ' cil in pursuance of their duty, and according to the  
 ' trust reposed in them, have examined the said returns,  
 ' and have not refused to approve any who have ap-  
 ' peared to them to be persons of integrity to the go-  
 ' vernment, fearing God, and of good conversation:  
 ' and those who are not approved, his highness hath  
 ' given order to some persons to take care that they do  
 ' not come into the house.'—This was very plain  
 language, and perfectly well understood by the mem-  
 bers. As it appeared therefore in vain to contend with  
 the master of legions, as there might be little disposi-  
 tion, it was resolved on the question by a majority of  
 125 to 29, ' That the persons who have been returned,  
 ' from the severall counties, cities, and boroughs, to  
 ' serve in this parliament, and have not been approved,  
 ' be referred to make their application to the council  
 ' for an approbation; and that the house do proceed  
 (i) Journals. ' with the great affairs of the nation (i).' Thus ended  
 this affair in parliament. But the secluded mem-  
 bers, far enough from being satisfied with this de-  
 termination, made an appeal to the public in a  
 remonstrance which does honor to their courage and  
 abilities. Some parts of it I will here insert.—

\* We believe, say they, the rumour is now gone through  
 \* the nation, that armed men employed by the Loyd  
 \* Protector have prevented the free meeting and sitting  
 \* of the intended parliament, and have forcibly shut  
 \* out of doors such members as he and his council sup-  
 \* pose would not be frightened, or flattered to betray their  
 \* country, and give up their religion, lives and estates  
 \* to be at his will, to serve his lawless ambition. But  
 \* we fear that the slavery, rapines, oppressions, cruel-  
 \* ties, murders and confusions that are comprehended  
 \* in this one horrid fact, are not so sensibly discerned,  
 \* or so much laid to heart as the case requires; and we  
 \* doubt not but, as the common practice of the man  
 \* hath been, the name of God, and religion, and for-  
 \* mal fasts and prayers, will be made use of to colour  
 \* over the blackness of the fact; we do therefore in  
 \* faithfulness unto God, and our country hereby remon-  
 \* strate; First, That whereas by the fundamental laws  
 \* of this nation, the people ought not to be bound by  
 \* any laws but such as are freely consented unto by their  
 \* deputies in parliament, and it is a most wicked usur-  
 \* pation, even against the very laws of nature, for any  
 \* man to impose his will or discretion upon another as  
 \* a rule, unless there be some pact, or agreement be-  
 \* tween the parties for that intent. And whereas by  
 \* the mercy of God only in preserving the fundamen-  
 \* tal law and liberty, the good people of *England* have  
 \* beyond memory of any record preserved their estates,  
 \* families and lives, which had been otherwise destroy-  
 \* ed, at the will of every wicked tyrant; and by keep-  
 \* ing this only, as their undoubted right, they have  
 \* been kept from being brutish slaves to the lusts of their  
 \* kings, who would otherwise have despoiled them of  
 \* their persons, lives, and estates, by their proclama-  
 \* tions, and the orders of themselves, and their cour-  
 \* tiers as they pleased: and by virtue of this their un-  
 \* doubted right the people have commonly disputed, re-  
 \* sisted, and made void the proclamations of their  
 \* kings, and the orders of their council-table, where  
 \* they have crossed the laws unto which they have  
 \* consented in their parliaments. Now the Lord Pro-

' tector hath by force of arms invaded this fundamental  
 ' right and liberty, and violently prevented the meet-  
 ' ing of the peoples chosen deputies in parliament.  
 ' And he and his council boldly declare, That none of  
 ' the peoples deputies shall meet in parliament, unless  
 ' they agree to the measure of their phantasies, hu-  
 ' mours, or lusts; they now render the people such  
 ' fools or beasts, as know not who are fit to be trusted  
 ' by them with their lives, estates, and families. But  
 ' he and his council that daily devour their estates, and  
 ' liberties, will judge who are fit to counsel and ad-  
 ' vise about laws to preserve their estates and liberties :  
 ' thus doth he now openly assume a power to pack an  
 ' assembly of his confidentes, parasites and confederates,  
 ' and to call them a parliament, that he may thence  
 ' pretend that the people have consented to become his  
 ' slaves, and to have their persons and estates at his dis-  
 ' cretion. And if the people shall tamely submit to  
 ' such a power, who can doubt but he can pack such a  
 ' number as will obey all his commands, and consent  
 ' to his taking of what part of our estates he pleaseth,  
 ' and to impose what yokes he thinks fit to make us  
 ' draw in. Secondly, And whereas the parliament of  
 ' *England*, consisting of the peoples chosen deputies,  
 ' always have been, and ought to be the ordainers, and  
 ' creators of dignities, offices, and authorities in this na-  
 ' tion, and have always of right exercised the power of  
 ' disposing even the kingly office, and authority of en-  
 ' larging and restraining the kingly power, and of  
 ' questioning, making void, or confirming all com-  
 ' missions, proclamations, charters, and patents of any  
 ' of our former kings; and have questioned, censured  
 ' and judged even the persons of our kings for abusing  
 ' their trusts, and invading the peoples laws, rights,  
 ' and liberties; and by this means the highest officers,  
 ' and the kings themselves have acknowledged their  
 ' power to be only trusted to them for the peoples wel-  
 ' fare; and they have always dreaded the peoples par-  
 ' liaments who could call them to an account for any  
 ' injustice, or violence done upon the person, or estate  
 ' of any man; and hereby the people were secured un-  
 ' der



Under the laws from the rapine, and oppression of the highest grandees, and courtiers; even the kings themselves, fearing the peoples complaints in their parliaments, and well knowing the peoples custom to choose for their deputies the most known champions for their liberties, against the arbitrary powers, and injustice of the kings and their courtiers; and none of the most wicked kings in their highest hope to erect a tyranny, ever daring since members were sent to parliaments by elections, to throw aside by force as many of the chosen members as they thought would not serve their ends; they knowing it to be the undoubted right of the people to trust whom they think fit, and as much the right of every man duly chosen and trusted to meet and vote in parliament without asking their leave or begging their tickets. And although here hath been frequently secret designs for many years to subvert religion, liberty and property in this nation, and to that end the designs of tyranny have attempted to destroy, sometimes the being, and sometimes the power, privileges and freedom of parliaments, yet the mercy of God hath almost miraculously preserved the being, privileges and authority of parliaments, and therein religion, liberty and property, until the time of the Lord Protector. But now he hath assumed an absolute arbitrary sovereignty (as if he came down from the throne of God) to create in himself, and his confederates, such powers and authorities, as must not be under the cognizance of the peoples parliaments. His proclamations he declares shall be binding laws to parliaments themselves, he takes upon him to be above the whole body of the people of *England*, and to judge and censure the whole body, and every member of it, by no other rule or law than his pleasure, as if he were their absolute lord, and had bought all the people of *England* for his slaves. Doubtless, if he would pretend only to have conquered *England* at his own expence, and were there as much truth as there is falshood in that pretence, yet he could not but know that the right of the peoples deputies in parliament to their

' ancient powers and privileges, would remain good  
 ' against him, as against their publick capital enemy,  
 ' whom every man ought to destroy, until by some  
 ' agreement with the body of the people in parliament,  
 ' some sort of governing power in him were submitted  
 ' unto, that hereby he might cease to be a publick ene-  
 ' my and destroyer, and become a king or governor  
 ' according to the conditions accepted by the people,  
 ' and if he would so pretend, he could not be so dis-  
 ' charged from his publick enmity by any conditions or  
 ' agreement made with a part of the peoples chosen de-  
 ' puties, whilst he shut out the other part; for no part  
 ' of the representative body are trusted to consent to  
 ' any thing in the nation's behalf, if the whole have not  
 ' their free liberty of debating, and voting in the mat-  
 ' ters propounded. If he would pretend no higher than  
 ' to be our conqueror, who for peace and his own safe-  
 ' ty's sake was content to cease from being a publick  
 ' enemy, and to be admitted a governor, he could not  
 ' compass those ends by forcibly excluding (as now he  
 ' hath done) whom he pleased of the representative  
 ' body of the people, who were to submit to him in  
 ' the people's behalf; therefore either takes upon him to  
 ' be such a conqueror as scorns the peoples acceptance  
 ' of him by their representative as their governor, and  
 ' fears not to remain a publick enemy, or else he takes  
 ' himself to be such an unheard-of sovereign, that  
 ' against him the people have no claim of right, or pro-  
 ' perty in themselves, or any thing else; for he hath  
 ' now declared that the people's choice cannot give any  
 ' man a right to sit in parliament, but the right must be  
 ' derived from his gracious will and pleasure, with that  
 ' of his counsellors; and his clerks ticket only must be  
 ' their evidence for it. Thus hath he exalted himself  
 ' to a throne like unto God's, as if he were of himself,  
 ' and his power from himself, and we were all made  
 ' for him, to be commanded and disposed of by him,  
 ' to work for him, and serve his pleasure and ambition.  
 ' Seeing therefore this total subversion of all law and  
 ' right, and the distractions, miseries, blood and con-  
 ' fusions, that will be the most certain consequences of  
 ' it,

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

473  
 10000000  
 10000000

it, and withall, remembering the late effusion of blood upon no other account than to secure religion, liberty and property, and the freedom, power and privileges of parliaments, as the bulwarks thereof; and that by those very hands who now overturn the very foundations of all liberty, right and property, and of the beings of parliaments; and our very souls trembling at the loud cries of that sea of blood, and at the horrid clamours of the many falsified oaths and promises made upon the same account.'—'For the acquitting therefore of their souls, they solemnly protested and remonstrated unto all the good people of *England*, that the violent exclusion of the people's deputies in parliament, doth change the state of the people from freedom into meer slavery; that such members of parliament as shall approve the forcible exclusion complained of, or shall sit, vote and act, while many members are by force shut out, are betrayers of the liberties of *England*, and adherents to the capital enemies of the commonwealth; and that the present assembly at *Westminster*, being under the awe and terror of the Lord Protector, is not the representative body of *England*, nor can tax or tallage be justly or lawfully raised by them (k).'

(k) Whitlock, p. 654.

This remonstrance being printed was sent in great white boxes some 1000 of them, to be left in several houses in *London*, and by them to be delivered out when called for.'—But the court having private intelligence of the matter, 'got four or five of the boxes from the owners of the houses,' and thereby prevented their being dispersed according to the intention of the subscribers (l).—I am sorry to add, that many of the gentlemen, who put their hands to this admirable remonstrance, were but meer talkers, and soon found a way to ingratiate themselves with the Protector, take their seats in the house, and servilely adore him whom in such terrible colours they here blacken! So uncertain are the signs of patriotism! But in justice it must be said that there were others of them who were true to their principles, and above being worked on by fear or flattery. These at length, in virtue of an article in the *Humble*

(l) Thurloe, vol. v. p. 456.

Possibly, however, some persons will find

*Petition and Advice*, which required 'that those persons  
 ' who were legally chosen by a free election of the peo-  
 ' ple to serve in parliament, should not be excluded from  
 ' sitting therein, but by judgment and consent of the  
 ' house whereof they were members,' were also admit-  
 ' ted to their seats *January 20, 1657, O. S.* The oath  
 ' taken by them on this occasion, was in these words.  
 ' I *A. B.* do, in the presence, and by the name of God  
 ' Almighty, promise and swear, that, to the uttermost  
 ' of my power, in my place, I will uphold and main-  
 ' tain the true reformed, protestant, christian religion,  
 ' in the purity thereof, as it is contained in the Holy  
 ' Scriptures of the Old and New Testament, and en-  
 ' courage the profession and professors of the same; and  
 ' that I will be true and faithful to the Lord Protector  
 ' of the commonwealth of *England, Scotland and Ireland,*  
 ' and the dominions and territories thereunto belonging,  
 ' as chief magistrate thereof; and shall not contrive or  
 ' design, or attempt any thing against the person or  
 ' lawful authority of the Lord Protector; and shall en-  
 ' deavour, as much as in me lies, as a member of par-  
 ' liament, the preservation of the rights and liberties of  
 ' the people (*m*).'  
 '—Thus was the wise taken in his  
 ' own craftiness! Men under a deep sense of injury,  
 ' were now admitted into the house, who, it might have  
 ' been foreseen, would use their utmost endeavour to  
 ' embarrass and perplex that government, which they had  
 ' looked on and treated as usurped and tyrannical. It  
 ' must not be omitted that this parliament was dissolved  
 ' also in great resentment by the protector.—These  
 ' were the high and arbitrary proceedings of *Cromwell*;  
 ' proceedings which might easily induce a very ingenious  
 ' writer to observe that 'he who hated the tyrant, ad-  
 ' mired the tyranny (*n*).'  
 ' For what more odious in the  
 ' reign of the conquered King, than these? What more  
 ' opposite to the principles of liberty and freedom? ' In  
 ' the reign, or rather under the tyranny, of this single  
 ' hand,

(m) Jour-  
 nals.

(n) Liberty  
 and Right;  
 part i. p.  
 39. 8vo.  
 Lond. 1747.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

an apology for some of these (zzz) proceedings,

‘ hand, the whole government and administration contradicted the national constitution; but this contradiction, was planned by a craft and policy as dexterous, as it was new; and carried on by a genius as bold, as cunning. *Cromwell*, when mounted to the head of affairs, found the materials of liberty and freedom rooted in the people, but saw, that these materials were without form, without orders, and without laws, to bind and secure them. The people were powerful, but ignorant and divided; divided in opinion, and ignorant of true government and real security. *Cromwell* therefore applied himself to the times; encouraged, discountenanced, protected and oppressed by turns, different sects and parties; and thus artfully keeping them divided in their religious and civil views, prevented the nation from uniting in any thing that was natural and proper to freedom and liberty. The same army which had conquered for the people, he taught by mutilation, augmentation, largesses and privileges, to oppress the people (o).’—How far this is a just representation, the foregoing notes will enable the reader to determine.

(o) Liberty and Right, part. P. 39.

(zzz) *Some may find an apology—in the situation and circumstances of the Protector.*] ‘ Civil war is naturally more subject to rigour, says *Mr. Ascham*, than other wars: because they who yesterday were enemies, would be inhabitants always. The conqueror suspects that these will be the first infringers of his new laws; the violation of which ought at the beginning to be severest censured, as of dangerous consequence.—— Wherefore for these reasons though the usurper thought not of establishing himself in an absolute jurisdiction, yet at last he will find himself obliged to secure his conquest by the same means he obtained it. And *Dido* gave *Aeneas* the true reason of the same case (p).’

(p) Confusions and Revolutions of Governments, p. 97. 12mo. Lond. 16, 9.

Res

Res dura & regni novitas me talia cogunt  
Moliri, & latè fines custode tueri.

VIRG.

————— My cruel fate,  
And doubts attending an unsettled state,  
Force me to guard my coasts ———

DRYDEN.

This had long before, been taught by *Machiavel*, in the following words: ‘ When a prince would keep his subjects united and faithful, he must not heed the reproach of cruelty; for if he makes a few examples of justice, he acts with less cruelty than those who, through an excess of mercy, suffer many disorders to arise, which occasion rapine and murder. Now these are prejudicial to the whole society; whereas particular executions, which are ordered by the prince, affect only particular men. Besides, all new governments are exposed to so many dangers, that it is impossible for a new prince to avoid the scandal of being cruel.’ Thus *Virgil* makes *Dido* say,

Res, &c. (g)

If ever any prince upon earth had reason to act on these principles, it was *Cromwell*. Without some acts of severity what could he have done? How tottering would have been his throne? How precarious his life? The cavaliers, the presbyterians, the republicans, and the fifth-monarchy men were all his foes, and even his most intimate friends did not approve his management in a variety of respects.—Mr. *St. John*, between whom and the Protector there had been the nearest union, highly disliked his setting up himself. ‘ He, [*St. John*] says Mr. *Thurler*, was so far from advising *Olivier* to set up himself, that to the best of my knowledge and observation he was a great enemy to it, and hath often to me spake against it. And as for that  
‘ called

(g) Prince, c. 17. Consult also *A-melot de la Houllay's* notes on the place.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

477

0000000000  
0000000000

of the Protector.—Had he accepted the king

' called the *Instrument of Government*, I never spake with  
 ' my Lord St. *John*, either about the whole, or any  
 ' part of it (nor ever heard that any body else did) un-  
 ' til some months after it was published in print, when  
 ' going to visit him after a long and dangerous sickness,  
 ' — he told me, he had just then read our govern-  
 ' ment; and taking it up in his hands, he cast it from  
 ' him in great dislike, and sayed, is this all the fruit the  
 ' nation shall have of their warre? or words to that  
 ' purpose; and then tooke occasion to speak much a-  
 ' gainst it. And as he had nothing to doe in settinge  
 ' up this government, soe neither was there, soe farr as  
 ' I knowe or have heard, any communication of coun-  
 ' sell between *Oliver* and him, mediately or ymme-  
 ' diately, touchinge the management of any part of the  
 ' publique affairs, my Lord St. *John* always refusinge to  
 ' meddle in any thinge, but what concerned his place  
 ' as a judge; and in that he refused to proceed upon any  
 ' of the laws made under that government; for which  
 ' he was complaind of to the counsell, and it was im-  
 ' puted to his example, that the judges refused to act  
 ' upon the last high court of justice. Nor was hee  
 ' (to my knowledge) advised with in the *Petition and*  
 ' *Advice*. The truth is, that my Lord St. *John* was so  
 ' far from being a confident, that some, who loved and  
 ' valued him, had something to doe to preserve him <sup>(r)</sup> *Thur-*  
 ' under that government (r).<sup>loc, vol. vii,</sup> In a letter to *Henry*  
 ' *Cromwell* dated 16 December, 1656, he says, ' His high- <sup>P. 914.</sup>  
 ' nesse meetes with his tryals here at home of all sorts,  
 ' beinge under daylye exercises from one hand or other;  
 ' and I wish he may not have occasion to say, My fa-  
 ' miliar friends, in whom I trusted, have listd up the <sup>(s)</sup> *Vol. v.*  
 ' heele against me (s).<sup>P. 708.</sup> It appears also from a variety  
 ' of Mr. Secretary's letters, that the Protector's govern-  
 ' ment was clogged with great difficulties, and that the  
 ' opposition made to it was fierce and violent. In a letter  
 ' to *Henry Cromwell*, then major-general of the army in

*Ire-*

kingship, which was offered by his parlia-

ment,

*Ireland*, dated 20th *May*, 1656, he says, 'Blessed be God, that all things remain quiet in *Ireland*; for they doe all for here. Both is very much against the intentions of enemies of all sorts, who have their daily meetings for begetting trouble. The *Spanyard*, cavaleir, papists and levellers, are all come into a confederacy. What monstrous birth this wombe will bring forth, I cannot tell. They threaten hard, but I perceive they are not yet quite ready. The commonwealths-men looke also for a sudden turne, and hope they shall play next (r).'

(r) Vol. v.  
P. 45.

In another letter written to the same 16 *June*, 1656, he says, 'Wee are yet very much troubled with the fifth-monarchy-men and the levellers, who have their constant meetinge to put us in blood. By the levellers, I meane those, who pretend to a republicque or popular forme of government.—It is certain it doth behove us to have a watchful eye upon that interest (u).'

(u) Id. p.  
122.

There was reason for it. *Algernon Sydney* (a name ever venerable!) called *Cromwell*, as he said on his tryal, 'A tyrant every day of his life, and acted against him too (x).'  
—And to such a height of resentment had some warm men of the party carried it, as to join with their old and sworn foes in order to destroy him. 'The levellers, Mr. *Thurloe* tells the same gentleman, in a letter dated *December* 9, 1656, are very buissie, and are in perfect conjunction with the Kinge of *Spain*. The part they have first undertaken, is to assassinate my Lord Protector, and have laid the way of doing it. This I know with as much certeintye, as that your lordship is in *Ireland*. I trust the Lord will dis-

(x) Tryal,  
P. 33, Lond.  
folio, 1681.

sapoint them, as he hath done; but wee see hereby the spirit of these men (y).'  
—With regard to his parliaments after his assuming the protectorate, they were composed of men, a good part of whom were his ill-willers. 'In the debates, concerning *Cromwell's* accepting the crown, some of the cavalier party, or rather their children, came to bear some share. They

(y) Vol. v.  
P. 694.

were



ment, a firmer settlement and a milder ad-

mini

‘ were then all zealous commonwealths-men, accord-  
 ‘ ing to the directions sent them from those about the  
 ‘ King. Their business was to oppose *Cromwell* on all  
 ‘ demands, and so to weaken him at home, and expose  
 ‘ him abroad. When some of the other party took no-  
 ‘ tice of this great change, from being the abettors of  
 ‘ prerogative to become the patrons of liberty, they  
 ‘ pretended their education in the court, and their ob-  
 ‘ ligation to it had engaged them that way; but now  
 ‘ since that was out of doors, they had the common  
 ‘ principles of human nature and the love of liberty in  
 ‘ them. By this means, as the old republicans assisted  
 ‘ and protected them, so at the same time they strength-  
 ‘ ned the faction against *Cromwell*. But these very men  
 ‘ at the restoration shook off this disguise, and reverted  
 ‘ to their old principles for a high prerogative and ab-  
 ‘ solute power. They said they were for liberty, when  
 ‘ it was a mean to distress one who they thought had no  
 ‘ right to govern; but when the government returned to  
 ‘ its old channel, they were still as firm to all preroga-  
 ‘ tive notions, and as great enemies to liberty as ever (z) Burnet,  
 ‘ ————— vol. i. p. 70.

—In certain conjunctures this may again happen, notwithstanding the smooth talk of coalition or extinction of parties!

Mr. *Maidstone* speaking of the Protector's first parliament, says, ‘ The house consisting of many dis-  
 ‘ obliged persons (some upon the king's account, and  
 ‘ others upon a pretence of right to sit upon the for-  
 ‘ mer foundation, as not being legally, though forcea-  
 ‘ bly, dissolved; and others judging that the powers  
 ‘ given by the instrument of government to the Pro-  
 ‘ tector were too large; professing that though they were  
 ‘ willing to trust him, yet they would not trust his suc-  
 ‘ cessors with so large a jurisdiction) fell into high ani-  
 ‘ mosities; and after five months spent in framing ano-  
 ‘ ther instrument instead of the former (which they said  
 ‘ they could not swallow without chewing) they were  
 ‘ by

(a) Thurloe, vol. i. p. 765.

(b) P. 610.

‘ by the Protector dissolved (a).’ Mr. *Whitlock* informs us, ‘ That this parliament continued their debates touching the government, wherein many things were spoken, which gave great offence to the Protector and his council, and cause of suspicion that no good was to be expected from them (b).’ Many of these same men, in spite of court influence, were chosen in the next parliament, and *Cromwell*, that matters might go on the more smoothly, ordered them to be denied admittance. In pursuance however of the *humble Petition and Advice*, as before mentioned, they afterwards took their seats, and gave the Protector great vexation by spurning at the new erected house of Lords, and controverting their title. I need not add that the government was continually alarmed with plots and conspiracies, and that juries were but ill disposed to do justice on state criminals.—These are some of the chief arguments that may be urged in favour of the violent and illegal acts of *Cromwell*. His situation and circumstances were perplexed and dangerous, and would he secure himself, or those who depended on him, severity and rigour seemed requisite.—‘ What would you have one in my station do? said he to some who talked to him about his excesses and usurpation. He was well answered, says Mr. *Gordon*, Sir, we would have nobody in your station. To vindicate murder continues this writer, from the necessity of committing it, in order to conceal robbery; is to argue like a murderer and a robber; but it is honest logic, to reply, Do not rob, and then you need not be tempted to murder; but if you will do one, and consequently both, remember that punishment does or ought to follow crimes, and the more crimes the more punishment. If, by a repetition of crimes, you become too mighty to be punished, you must be content to be accursed and abhorred as an enemy to human race; you must expect to have all men for your enemies, as you are

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

481  
 2471353-10  
 308-00701033

most intimate friends (AAAA) opposing, he,

con

are an enemy to all men; and since you make sport of the lives and liberties of men, you must not wonder, nor have you a right to complain, if they have all of them memories and feeling, and some of them courage and swords (c). It would be injustice however to Cromwell, not to add, that his severities were but few, and those exercised only on real criminals, as the laws then stood.

(c) Discourses on Tacitus, vol. iv. p. 207. 2amo. Lond. 1753.

(AAAA) *He refused the offered kingship.*] Cromwell was no enemy to the name or office of King. He had helped to pull down and punish Charles, but he was disposed enough to sit on the throne. The times then would not bear it. But in a few years he thought seriously of the affair, and was inclined to try the experiment. Prudence however restrained him. But when he had got a parliament to his mind, as that called in 1656, in the beginning was, it was no longer to be delayed. The settlement of the nation was deliberated on, and a writing framed, which the parliament stiled *The humble petition and advice of the parliament of England, Scotland and Ireland to his highness.* The first business of it was, says *Whitlock*, for the Protector to have the title of King. This petition and advice was presented to his highness by the house, and he desired that a committee might be appointed to confer with him about it (d). Accordingly a committee was appointed, who on the 16th of April, 1657, Had audience of his highness, and gave him such reasons as he declared to be weighty, and to require deliverance, and therefore desired some time till the next afternoon to give answer to them (e). In this conference it was urged by the lawyers, particularly by the lord chief justice *Glanville*, That the office of a King was a lawful office, and a title too, approved of by the word of God: that it was an office that had been exercised in the nation, from the time of its being a nation, and that there never had been a quar-

(d) P. 655.

(e) Journals,

contrary to his own inclinations and supposed

interest,

' rel with the office, but the male administration.—  
 ' The name of King, said he, is a name known by the  
 ' law, and the parliament doth desire that your high-  
 ' nefs would assume that title. These are the grounds  
 ' why the parliament make it their humble advice and  
 ' request to your highness, that you would be pleased to  
 ' assume that title; and I think there is something more  
 ' in it: you are now Lord Protector of the three na-  
 ' tions by the *Instrument*, and there is a clause of this  
 ' government that you should govern according to law,  
 ' and your highness is sworn to that government. The  
 ' parliament doth apprehend that it is almost impossible  
 ' for your highness to answer the expectation of the peo-  
 ' ple to be governed by the laws, because you are so tied  
 ' up, that neither they can rationally call for it, nor you  
 ' conscientiously do it, and so there is neither Lord Pro-  
 ' tector, nor the people upon a sure establishment. For  
 ' here stands the case: a King hath run through so ma-  
 ' ny ages in this nation, and hath governed the nation  
 ' by that title and style, that it is known to the law;  
 ' for the law of the nation is no otherwise, than what  
 ' hath been a custom to be practised, as is approved by  
 ' the people to be good. That's the law, and nothing  
 ' else, excepting acts of parliament. And now they  
 ' have been governed by that title, and by that minister,  
 ' and by that office, if so be your highness should do  
 ' any act, and one should come and say, My Lord Pro-  
 ' tector, why are you sworn to govern by the law, and  
 ' you do thus and thus as Lord Protector?—Do I?  
 ' Why how am I bound to do?—Why, the King  
 ' could not have done so.—Why, but I am not King,  
 ' I am not bound to do as the King, I am Lord Pro-  
 ' tector; shew me that the law doth require me to do  
 ' it as Protector; if I have not acted as Protector, shew  
 ' me where the law is.—Why you put any one to a  
 ' stumble in that case.

' This



interest, declined it; and after experiencing

many

‘ This is one thing that I humbly conceive, did stick  
 ‘ in the parliament as to that particular. Another thing  
 ‘ is this: you are Protector, which is a new office not  
 ‘ known to the law, and made out of doors: you are  
 ‘ called upon, that you would be pleased to accept the  
 ‘ office of a King, that is, by the whole people. It’s  
 ‘ the first government that since these troubles hath  
 ‘ been tendred by a general and universal consent of the  
 ‘ people. Another thing is this,—If any man should  
 ‘ find fault with them and say, why how came you to  
 ‘ make governments in this case? the answer is,—We  
 ‘ are a parliament, and have your suffrage; you have  
 ‘ ever trusted us with all your votes, and we will jus-  
 ‘ tify it: but besides we have not done it neither; we  
 ‘ have but settled it upon the old foundations.—Then  
 ‘ the kingship; however some may pretend a King’s  
 ‘ prerogative is so large we know it not, it is not  
 ‘ bounded.—But the parliament are not of that opi-  
 ‘ nion.—The King’s prerogative is known by law: if  
 ‘ he should expatiate it beyond the duty, that is the evil  
 ‘ of the man: but in *Westminster-hall* the King’s prero-  
 ‘ gative was under the courts of justice, and was bound-  
 ‘ ed as well as any acre of land, or any thing a man  
 ‘ hath, as much as any controversy between party and  
 ‘ party.—And therefore the office being lawful in its  
 ‘ nature, known to the nation, certain in itself, and  
 ‘ confined and regulated by the law, and the other of-  
 ‘ fice not being so, that was a great ground of the rea-  
 ‘ son why the parliament did so much insist upon this  
 ‘ office, not as circumstantial, but as essential (f) ’—

(f) Monar-  
 chy asserted,  
 p. 16. And  
 Parliamen-  
 tary History,  
 vol. xxi. p.  
 78.

What force there is in all this the gentlemen of the long  
 robe can best determine. ’Tis certain it would not have  
 been judged sound doctrine by those who possessed the  
 supream authority of the commonwealth of *England*,  
 after the death of *Charles*.——Lord *Broughill*, after  
 mentioning some things of a like nature, proceeded to  
 the advantages which would accrue to his highness and

(g) See Cla-  
rendon, vol.  
vi. p. 389.

the people in accepting the crown which was then ten-  
 ' dered.— ' By your highness's bearing the title of King,  
 ' said he, all those that obey and serve you, are secured  
 ' by a law made long before any of our differences had  
 ' a being, in the 11d *Hen.* 7 (g), where a full provision  
 ' is made for the safety of those who shall serve who-  
 ' ever is King: 'tis by that law that hitherto our ene-  
 ' mies have pleaded indemnity; and by your assuming  
 ' what is now desired, that law which hitherto they  
 ' pretended for their disobedience, ties them even by  
 ' their own profession and principles to obedience. And  
 ' I hope taking off all pretences from so numerous a  
 ' party may not be a thing unworthy consideration.  
 ' That law seems very rational; for it doth not provide  
 ' for any particular person or family, but for the peace  
 ' and safety of the people, by obeying whoever is in that  
 ' office and bears that title. The end of all govern-  
 ' ment is to give the people justice and safety; and the  
 ' best means to attain that end is to settle a supream  
 ' magistrate. It would therefore seem very irrational,  
 ' that the people having attained the end, should de-  
 ' cline that end only to follow the means, which are but  
 ' conducing to that end; so that if the title and office  
 ' of King, be vested in your highness, and that there-  
 ' by the people enjoy their rights and peace, it wou'd  
 ' be little less than madness, for any of them to cast off  
 ' those blessings, only in order to obtain the same ends  
 ' under another person. There is, added his lordship,  
 ' at present but a divorce between the pretending King  
 ' and the imperial crown of these nations; and we  
 ' know that persons divorced may marry again; but if  
 ' the person be married to another, it cuts off all hope.  
 ' These may be some of those reasons, which invited  
 ' the parliament to make that desire, and give that ad-  
 ' vice to your highness of assuming the title of King.  
 ' There is another, and a very strong one, which is,  
 ' that now they have actually given you that advice;  
 ' and

# OLIVER CROMWELL.



ment, he died (of a double tertian ague) on the

‘ and the advices of parliaments are things which al-  
 ‘ ways ought, and therefore I am confident will carry  
 ‘ with them very great force and authority : nor doth  
 ‘ this advice come singly, but accompanied with many  
 ‘ other excellent things, in reference to our civil and  
 ‘ spiritual liberties, which your highness hath borne a  
 ‘ just and signal testimony to. It is also a parliament,  
 ‘ who have given unquestionable proofs of their affec-  
 ‘ tion to your highness; and who, if listned to in this  
 ‘ particular, will be thereby encouraged to give you  
 ‘ more (b).’—These arguments no doubt had great  
 force with *Cromwell*, who long ago had thought much  
 on the subject (i). To settle and secure the peace of  
 the nation, to conciliate the minds of the adverse party,  
 and establish himself and family on the throne in a legal  
 manner, were indeed worthy both the ambition and  
 public-spiritedness of the man. But his situation re-  
 quired caution; he had difficulties to encounter, and  
 therefore took time to ballance. This will be best ex-  
 plained by the following quotations. Mr. *Maidstone*  
 tells us, ‘ That the Protector would have closed with  
 ‘ the parliament, as he thought, in this affair, not out  
 ‘ of lust to that title, (I am perswaded, says he,) but  
 ‘ out of an apprehension that it would have secured,  
 ‘ in a better way, the nation’s settlement : but the party,  
 ‘ to whom the Protector ever professed to owe himself  
 ‘ (being of the generality of his standing friends) rose  
 ‘ so high in opposition to it (by reason of the scandal,  
 ‘ that thereby would fall upon his person and profession)  
 ‘ as it diverted him, and occasioned him to take in-  
 ‘ vestiture in his government, though from them, yet  
 ‘ under his former title of Protector (k).’—It appears  
 from a letter of *Thurloe’s* to *Henry Cromwell*, dated 21  
*April, 1657*, that the Protector deliberated much on  
 the affair, and kept every body in suspense about it.  
 ‘ Certainly, says he, his highness hath very great dif-  
 ‘ ficulties in his owne minde, although he hath had the

(b) Clarendon, p. 27, and p. 28.  
 (i) See note (ww).

(k) Thurloe, vol. i. p. 765.

the third of *September*, one thousand six hun-

dred

clearest call that ever man had ; and for ought I see, the parliament will not be perswaded, that there can be any settlement any other way. The title is not the question, but it's the office, which is knowne to the laws and this people. They know their duty to a Kinge, and his to them. Whatever else there is will be wholly new, and be nothing else but a probationer, and upon the next occasion will be changed againe. Besides, they say, the name Protector, came in by the sword out of parliament, and will never be the ground of any settlement; nor will there be a free parliament soe long as that continues; and as it favours of the sword now, soe it will at last bringe all things to be military. These and other considerations, make men, who are for settlement, steady in their resolutions as to this government now in hand; not that they lust after a Kinge, or are peevish upon any account of opposition; but they would lay foundations of libertye and freedome, which they judge this the next way to. My Lord Deputy [*Fleetwood*] and General *Desbrowe*, oppose themselves with all earnestness against this title, but think the other things in the petition and advice are very honest. The other gentleman [*Lambert* I suppose] stands at distance, has given over his opposition, and lets things take their owne course. Many of the soldiers are not only content, but are very well satisfied with this change. Some indeed grumble, but that's the most, for ought I can perceive. And surely whatever resolutions his highness takes, they will be his owne, there being nothing from without, that should be any constraint upon him, either to take or refuse it (1). — On the 5th of *May* the Secretary informs the same gentleman, that *Fleetwood* and *Desbrowe* seemed to be very much fixed against the Protector's beinge Kinge, And says he, speak of nothing but giving over their commands: and all imployment, if he doth accept that title;

(1) *Thrice*,  
vol. vi. p.  
219.



# OLIVER CROMWELL.

487

dred fifty-eight; aged somewhat more than  
 fifty-nine years and four months. By *Elizabeth*,

‘ title; others also, speak the same language; so that  
 ‘ our difficulties are many (m).’

(m) Thur-  
 loc, vol. vi.  
 p. 261.

But *Cromwell*, who had been used to difficulty and op-  
 position, was not easily to be daunted. He took those  
 measures which prudence suggested, and endeavoured to  
 win over his old friends by rallery and persuasion. From  
 time to time he delayed giving his answer on this im-  
 portant subject, and tried by ‘ all possible means, says  
 ‘ *Ludlow*, to prevail with the officers of the army to  
 ‘ approve his design; and knowing that lieutenant-gene-  
 ‘ ral *Fleetwood* and col. *Desbrowe* were particularly a-  
 ‘ verse to it, he invited himself to dine personally with  
 ‘ the colonel, and carried the lieutenant-general with  
 ‘ him, where he began to droll with them about mo-  
 ‘ narchy, and speaking slightly of it, said it was but a  
 ‘ feather in a man’s cap, and therefore wondered that  
 ‘ men would not please children, and permit them to  
 ‘ enjoy their rattle. But he received from them, as  
 ‘ col. *Desbrowe* since told me, such an answer as was  
 ‘ not at all sutable to his expectations or desires. For  
 ‘ they assured him there was more in this matter than  
 ‘ he perceived; that those who put him upon it were  
 ‘ no enemies to *Charles Stuart*; and that if he accepted  
 ‘ of it, he would infallibly draw ruin on himself and  
 ‘ friends. Having thus founded their inclinations, that  
 ‘ he might conclude in the manner he had begun, he  
 ‘ told them they were a couple of scrupulous fellows,  
 ‘ and so departed. The next day he sent a message to  
 ‘ the house, to require their attendance in the painted  
 ‘ chamber the next morning, designing as all men be-  
 ‘ lieved, there to declare his acceptance of the crown.  
 ‘ But in the mean time meeting with col. *Desbrowe* in  
 ‘ the great walk of the park, and acquainting him with  
 ‘ his resolution, the colonel made answer, that he then  
 ‘ gave the cause and *Cromwell’s* family also for lost;  
 ‘ adding, that though he was resolved never to act



*betb*, his only wife, he had several children; of whom six survived him, viz. two sons and

‘ against him, yet he would not act for him after that  
 ‘ time; so after some other discourse upon the same  
 ‘ subject, *Desbroue* went home, and there found col.  
 ‘ *Pride*, whom *Cromwell* had knighted with a saggot-  
 ‘ stick; and having imparted to him the design of *Crom-*  
 ‘ *well* to accept the crown, *Pride* answered he shall  
 ‘ not: Why, said the colonel, how wilt thou hinder  
 ‘ it? To which *Pride* replied, get me a petition drawn,  
 ‘ and I will prevent it (n).’—A petition was drawn,  
 ‘ and by colonel *Mosen*, in the name of divers officers of  
 ‘ the army, delivered to the house, *May* 8, 1657 (o).  
 ‘ The contents of it were to this purpose: ‘ That they  
 ‘ had hazarded their lives against monarchy, and were  
 ‘ still ready so to do, in defence of the liberties of the  
 ‘ nation: that having observed in some men great en-  
 ‘ deavours to bring the nation again under their old  
 ‘ servitude, by pressing their general to take upon him  
 ‘ the title and government of a King, in order to de-  
 ‘ stroy him, and weaken the hands of those who were  
 ‘ faithful to the publick; they therefore humbly desired  
 ‘ that they would discountenance all such persons and  
 ‘ endeavours, and continue stedfast to the old cause,  
 ‘ for the preservation of which, they for their parts,  
 ‘ were most ready to lay down their lives.—This pe-  
 ‘ tition was subscribed by two colonels, seven lieuten-  
 ‘ ant-colonels, eight majors, and sixteen captains, who  
 ‘ with such officers in the house as were of the same  
 ‘ opinion, made up the majority of those relating to  
 ‘ that part of the army which was then quartered about  
 ‘ the town. It’s difficult to determine whether the house  
 ‘ or *Cromwell* was more surprized at this unexpected  
 ‘ address; but certainly both were infinitely disturbed  
 ‘ at it. As soon as the notice of it was brought to  
 ‘ *Cromwell*, he sent for lieutenant-general *Fleetwood*,  
 ‘ and told him, that he wondered he would suffer such  
 ‘ a petition to proceed so far, which he might have  
 ‘ hin-

(n) Ludlow,  
 vo. ii. p.  
 586.

(o) Journals,

OLIVER CROMWELL.

and four daughters. 1. *Richard* his successor, married to the eldest daughter of *Richard*

hindered, since he knew it to be his resolution not to accept the crown without the consent of the army; and therefore desired him to hasten to the house, and to put them off from doing any thing farther therein. The lieutenant-general immediately went thither, and told them that the petition ought not to be debated, much less to be answered at this time, the contents of it being to desire them not to press the Protector to be King, whereas the present business was to receive his answer to what had been formerly offered him, and therefore desired that the debate of it might be put off, till they had received his answer. To this the house having consented, they received a message from *Cromwell*, that instead of meeting him in the painted chamber, which was the place where he used to give his consent, they would meet him in the banquetting-house: so the members came to *Whitehall*, and *Cromwell* with great ostentation of his self-denial refused the title of King (p). This refusal was on the 12th of *May*, 1657. The conclusion of the speech made by the Protector on this memorable occasion, was in these words: 'I should not be an honest man, if I should not tell you, that I cannot accept of the government, nor undertake the trouble and charge of it; which I have a little more experimented than every body, what troubles and difficulties do befall men under such trusts, and in such undertakings: I say, I am persuaded to return this answer to you; that I cannot undertake this government, with the title of King: and that is my answer to this great and weighty business (q).'  
 —Mr. *Thurloe's* account of this affair, written soon after it was transacted, to *Henry Cromwell*, as it in a good measure confirms the above relation of *Ludlow's*, will, I believe, not be unacceptable to the reader. 'His Highness, saith he, hath declared that he could not give his consent to the parliament's

(p) Ludlow, vol. ii. p. 589.

(q) Journal.

\* See Appendix.

*Richard Major, Esq* \*; 2. *Henry*, who married a daughter of *Sir Francis Russell of Chippenham*

liament's advice, because of the title Kinge. I perceive this hath strucke a great dampe upon the spirits of some, and much raised and elevated others. His Highnesse was pleased upon the *Wednesday* and *Thursday* before, to declare to severall of the house, that he was resolved to accept it with that title; but just in the very nicke of tyme he took other resolutions, the three great men professinge their great unfreenesse to act, and sayd, that ymmediately after his acceptance thereof, they must withdraw from all publick employment, and soe they believed would severall other officers of quality, that had been engaged all alonge in this warre. Besides, the very morning the house expected his Highnesse would have come to have given his consent to the bill, some 26 or 27 officers came with a petition to the parliament, to desire them not to presse his Highnesse any farther about kingship. The petition was brought to the barr by lieutenant-colonel *Mason*, who was the cheife man, who promoted it, and went up and down from man to man to get hands thereunto. The petition was not read, but layed by, and some moved, that the house would take it into their consideration, as a breach of priviledge; but that was neither thought fit to be hearkned unto. It is hard to guesse what will be done next (r).<sup>r</sup> However, it was on the 22d of *May* resolved by the parliament that, instead of the paragraph relating to the title of King in the humble petition and advice, the following clause should be inserted; viz. 'That your Highness would be pleased, by and under the name and style of Lord Protector of the commonwealth of *England, Scotland and Ireland*, and the dominions and territories thereunto belonging, to hold and exercise the office of chief magistrat of these nations; and to govern according to this petition and advice, in all things therein contained;

(r) Vol. vi. p. 281.

*penham* in *Cambridgeshire*. His daughters were, 1. *Bridget*, married to commiffary general *Ireton*, and afterwards to lieutenant-gene-

tained; and in all other things according to the laws of these nations and not otherwise (t).—On the 25th, the humble petition and advice being presented by the parliament, was solemnly sworn to by his Highness, who with great pomp was then anew inaugurated (t)—Thus *Cromwell* was baulked in his hopes of the diadem by his near relations and intimate friends! Men of principle we may suppose, who chose rather to disoblige him, and forfeit their employments than to build again what they had destroyed. Rare examples of integrity.—Had the crown been placed on the head of the Protector, in pursuance of the advice of the parliament, 'tis not improbable it might have strengthened his own government, and enabled him to transmit to posterity many very valuable privileges (u). But for want of this, his house of peers was of no weight; his army was necessary, but troublesome; and he was perpetually exposed to the clamours or conspiracies of several factions.—Certain 'tis, it was eligible in his own eye, and in the eye of *Thurloe*, and therefore it may well be supposed they saw many advantages in it.—It appears at first sight that it would have restored the constitution, as founded on an original contract. As mention has been made more than once of *Cromwell's* house of lords, 'tis proper the reader should have some information concerning them. The second article of the petition and advice recommended the calling of parliaments consisting of two houses. This suited well with the title of King, which was at first intended for the Protector; and probably, if that had been assumed, many of the ancient nobility and gentry would have been pleased to have had seats in the upper house. But though the crown was refused, the project of a house of lords was continued. The number was not to exceed seventy,

(t) Journals. And *Thurloe*, vol. vi. p. 310.

(t) See *Whitlock's* account of it in note (u).

(u) See the humble Petition and Advice.

general Fleetwood. 2. Elizabeth, wife to John Cleypole, Esq; 3. Mary, married to lord Fauconberg. 4. Frances, wife to Mr. Rich,

seventy, nor to be less than forty. Their nomination was placed in the Protector, with the approbation of the house of commons. Cromwell was under some difficulty about the choice. Some were fit, but not willing to serve; others willing and desirous, but very unfit. At length, on the 10th of December, 1657, another house was nominated, and writs issued out for summoning the members of it; who on the 20th of January following, sat in that which was formerly the house of lords. The number of the members of this house were sixty two, among whom were the earls of Manchester, Mulgrave, and Warwick; the lords Say and Sele, Fauconberg, Wharton, Eure, and Howard, afterwards earl of Carlisle; the viscount Lisle, eldest son of the earl of Leicester, the lord Broghill, and the earl of Cassils; besides many gentlemen of the best families, such as Montague, Russel, Hobart, Onslow, St. John, Pierpoint, Crew, Popham, Hampden, and others. Intermixed with these were men who had risen by their own valour and interest from very small beginnings and mean employments; of which sort were Jones, Pride, Hewson, Barkstead, Whalley, Goff, Berry and Cooper. To these were added the Protector's two sons, his sons-in-law Cleypole and Fleetwood, the commissioners of the Great Seal, and of the treasury, with others of near relation to the court (\*). All the old nobility, lord Eure excepted, refused to sit in this new assembly, on account, I suppose, of the mean original of some of the company, or of the authority by which they were convened.—However, they did nothing of any importance. The secluded members being admitted into the house of

(\*). Walkley's New Catalogue of Lords, &c. and second Narrative of the late Parliament, &c. printed in the 5th year of England's slavery under its new monarchy. 4to. 1658.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

403

*Rich*, grandson of the Earl of *Warwick*, and afterwards to Sir *John Russel*, of *Chippenham*, in *Cambridgeshire*.

In

commons, as before observed, turned all things against the court; refused any intercourse with the new house of lords, and behaved so ill in the eye of the protector, that, in great heat, he dissolved them.—This was the last parliament that sat during *Cromwell's* life, 'he being compelled to wrestle with the difficulties of his place, says *Mr. Maidstone*, so well as he could, without parliamentary assistance, and in it met with so great a burden, as (I doubt not to say it, drank up his spirits, of which his natural constitution yielded a vast stock) and brought him to his grave (u).' This seems to confirm what *Burnet* says, 'that it was generally believed that his life and all his arts were exhausted at once, and that if he had lived much longer, he could not have held things together (x).' *Mr. Costly* observes, 'that he seemed evidently to be near the end of his deceitful glories, and his own army grew at last as weary of him as the rest of the people (y).' In another place he tells us, 'it was believed *Cromwell* died with grief and discontent, because he could not attain to the honest name of a king, and the old formality of a crown, though he had before exceeded the power by a wicked usurpation.'—That care, anxiety, disappointment and vexation prey on the spirits, and waste the constitution, is known to all; that these were the lot of *Cromwell*, as they are of most of those who are placed on the pinnacle of glory, and attentive to their duty and their fame, may very easily be conceived by such as have read the foregoing notes; that the government of *Cromwell* was greatly embarrassed by the madness of parties, the estrangement of friends, and the want of money to pay the armies which it was necessary to keep on foot: I say that this was so, is too evident to be denied.—But had the

(u) *Thursoe*, vol. i. p. 76.

(x) Vol. I. p. 63.

(y) *Discourse on the government of Oliver Cromwell*, p. 96.

In his death he displayed his wonted (BBBB) firmness and enthusiasm. His body was buried with more than regal magnificence (\*) in *Westminster-Abbey*, from whence,

the life of the protector been prolonged, 'tis not impossible he might have got the better of his difficulties, and maintained his post in spite of all opposition. For we are to remember it was *Cromwell* who had dared to seize the government; to raise money by his own authority; to create and dissolve parliaments; to combat with Kings, and to scatter terror through the nations. — By what means he would have done this, whether by securing *Fleetwood* and *Desbrowe*, to whom he owed his disappointment, in assuming the crown, and calling another parliament, must be left to the conjecture of the reader. The latter he certainly had thoughts of before his sickness (z).

(z) *Thurloc*, vol. vii. p. 59.

(BBBB) *In his death he displayed his wonted firmness and enthusiasm*] \* When the symptoms of death, says Mr. *Ludlow*, were apparent upon him, and many ministers and others assembled in a chamber at *Whitehall*, praying for him, whilst he manifested so little remorse of conscience for his betraying the publick cause, and sacrificing it to the idol of his own ambition, that some of his last words were rather becoming a mediator than a sinner, recommending to God the condition of the nation that he had so infamously cheated, and expressing a great care of the people whom he had so manifestly despised. But he seemed, above all, concerned for the reproaches he said men would cast upon his name, in trampling on his ashes when dead. In this temper of mind he departed this life (a) — I fancy Mr. *Ludlow* had in his eye the following expressions which *Cromwell* is said to have made use of in his sickness, in a prayer addressed to the Su-

(a) Vol. ii. p. 612.

(\*) The expences of his funeral are said to have amounted to 60,000 l.



whence, after the restoration, it was removed, and treated with all possible indignity. His character has been very differently

preme Being. 'Lord, although I am a miserable and wretched creature, I am in covenant with thee, through grace, and I may, I will come to thee for thy people, thou hast made me (though very unworthy) a mean instrument to do them some good, and thee service; and many of them have set too high a value upon mee, though others wish, and would be glad of my death; but Lord, however thou dost dispose of mee, continue and go on to do good for them. Give them consistency of judgment, one heart, and mutual love, and go on to deliver them, and with the work of reformation, and make the name of Christ glorious in the world. Teach those, who look too much upon thy instruments, to depend more upon thyself; pardon such as desire to trample upon the dust of a poor worm, for they are thy people too (b).'

(b) Collection of several passages concerning his late Highness, in the time of his sickness, by one that was groom of his bed-chamber. 4to. Lond. p. 12. 1659. (\*) Id. p. 6. See the quotation from Bates in note [F].

—This was all in character.—Two or three more of his expressions, when death was in his view, will shew us in what temper he left the world. Lord, thou knowest, if I do desire to live, it is to shew forth thy praise, and declare thy works (\*).—Again he said, 'I would be willing to live to be further serviceable to God and his people, but my work is done, yet God will be with his people.'—These sayings seem to evince the greatness of his mind; the main thing he had in view, to have been the publick good; and strongly confirm what is said to have been the avowed opinion of the most excellent *Tillotson*, 'That at last *Cromwell's* enthusiasm got the better of his hypocrisy.'—The night before his death, and not before, lord *Fauconberg* says, he declared his son *Richard* his successor, in presence of four or five of his council (c).

(c) Thurloe, vol. vii. P. 375.

rently (cccc) represented by different per-

(cccc) *His character has been very differently represented.*] Mr. *Thurlor*, in a letter to *H. Cromwell*, the day after his father's decease, tells him, it 'is not to be said, what affection the army and all people shew to his late highness; his name is already precious. Never was there any man soe prayed for as he was duringe his sicknes, solemn assemblies meetinge every day, to beseech the Lord for the continuance of his life; soe that he is gone to heaven, embalmed with the tears of his people, and upon the wings of the prayers of the saints. He lived desired, and dyed lamented, every body bemoaning themselves, and saying, a great man is fallen in *Israel* (d).' Lord *Faulconberg* styles him 'the greatest personage and instrument of happiness, not only our own but indeed any age else ever produced (e).'  
 'I do believe, says Mr. *Maidstone*, if his story were impartially transmitted, and the unprejudiced world well possess'd with it, she would add him to her nine worthies, and make up that number a *Decemviri*. He lived and died in comfortable communion with God, as judicious persons near him well observed. He was that *Mordecai* that sought the welfare of his people (f).'  
 These are high eulogiums from his friends, and, doubtless, proceeded from the affection and gratitude of those who uttered them. Mr. *Voltaire* styles *Cromwell* 'an usurper worthy to reign (g);' and tells us, 'he died in the midst of the projects he was forming to strengthen his own power, and increase the glory of his nation.'  
 And that he left behind him the reputation of a dextrous villain, an intrepid commander, a bloody usurper, and a sovereign that knew the art of governing (h).'  
 —*Mazarine*, who had abjectly courted *Cromwell* during life, and received the law in almost all things from him, after his death, is said to have characterized him as 'a fortunate fool (i).'  
 Lord *Clarendon* does him less injustice, I am perswaded, most readers will think,

(d) *Thurlor*, vol. vii. p. 373.

(e) *Id.* p. 375.

(f) *Id.* vol. i. p. 66.

(g) *Age of Lewis XIV.* vol. i. 12mo. p. 70.

(h) *Id.* p. 77.

(i) *Vol.* vi. p. 653.

# OLIVER CROMWELL.

497  
 171000000  
 by 171000000

sons; though his memory was celebrated

when he describes him 'as a brave wicked man.' I will add no more but the following description of this extraordinary man, drawn by a celebrated and illustrious pen. 'Europe, says he, had granted the surname of Great to three sovereigns, who reigned almost at the same time, namely, *Cromwell*, *Lewis XIV.* and *Frederick-William*. To *Cromwell*, for having sacrificed every civil duty to the desire of reigning; for having prostituted his talents, which, instead of being useful to his country, were subservient only to his ambition; for having concealed his impostures under the mask of fanaticism; for having enslaved his country under a pretence of fighting for her liberties; for becoming the executioner of his King, whom he sacrificed to his fury: to *Cromwell*, a bold, cunning, and ambitious man, but unjust, violent, and void of virtue; a man, in fine, who had great qualities, but never a good one. *Cromwell*, therefore, did not deserve the surname of Great, which is due only to virtue; and it would be degrading *Lewis XIV.* and *Frederick-William*, to compare them to such a rival (k). What degradation it might be to *Frederick-William* to compare him with the protector, I pretend not to say: but, with all due submission, if *Cromwell* did not deserve the surname of Great, much less did *Lewis XIV.* What were the faults imputed to *Cromwell*? Dissimulation, hypocrisy, bringing *Charles* to the block, and ingratitude towards the Long parliament.—Let these crimes be weighed in the nicest balance, they must be light as air when opposed to those of *Lewis*, who was an adulterer, who was not ashamed to confess that he waged war merely for his glory (disdaining so much as even to avow any reasonable pretence for overrunning *Holland*, and subjecting its inhabitants to innumerable woes) and wasted the finest country with fire and sword. Two cities and twenty-five towns in flames at one time, were a spectacle suf-

(k) Memoirs  
 of Branden-  
 burg, p. 153.

by the finest pens (DDDD) of his age, and

(f) Voltaire's sufficient to imprint the worst ideas of the immortal *Lewis* and the godlike *Turenne* (l). Where, but among barbarians, was such a scene ever exhibited?—Nor was this all—*Lewis* broke through all oaths and treaties, every thing sacred. Nothing, in a word, was ever equal to his villany. Witness his wars in *Flanders*, his breach of the Partition Treaty, and, above all, his revocation of the edict of *Nantz* (at the instigation of priests) whereby thousands of his innocent subjects were ruined, his kingdom impoverished, and its manufactures carried abroad. Was there any thing in *Cromwell's* character to be compared with all this?—*Cromwell*, with all his faults, had many real virtues. Not so *Lewis*: he was a bigot; he was priest-ridden; superstitious; with little personal valour, and much vanity; who, but for his love and encouragement of the fine arts, would have been ranked with the *Neros*, the *Caligulas*, the *Domitians*, the tyrants and destroyers of mankind. He did not deserve then 'the surname of Great, which is 'due only to virtue.' The painting out such enemies of liberty and mankind in the finest colours, by the finest pens, is the greatest reproach of letters, and most dangerous to the interests of common humanity; and what, I hope, will justify the warmth of these reflections.

(DDDD) *His memory was celebrated by the finest pens of his age.*] The verses of Mr. *Waller*, *Dryden* and *Sprat*, afterwards bishop of *Rochester*, are well known. Besides these, I have now before me a pamphlet, intitled, 'Musarum Cantabrigiensium Luctus & Gratulatio: Ille in Funere Oliveri Angliæ, Scotiæ & Hiberniæ Protectoris; Hæc de Ricardi successione felicissima ad eundem (m).' In the first copy of verses, by *Tuckney*, master of *St. John's* college, *England* is introduced speaking in the following strains:

Ergo Jaces, Dux magne? Jaces, Pater alme? nec ultra  
Permittis circum victicia tempora laurum

Ser-

(m) Cantabrigiæ: apud Johannem Field, Almæ Academiæ Typographum. 1658.

he left behind him a never-dying fame.

Serpere? Pacificos an dedignaris honores?  
 At Populi miseresce tui, quibus ipse salutem  
 Impertire soles, & qui tua scepra colebant  
 Obsequio affectuque pari. Sed Carmina nulla  
 Non exorandas potuerunt flectere Parcas.  
 Occidit Anglorum decus ingens, occidit, cheu!  
 Gentis Presidium! Quis me jam vindicet armis?  
 Quis poterit nimium dubiis succurrere rebus?  
 Sæpius illa *Patrem, Patrem* tristissima dixit,  
 Effuditque istas non exaudita querelas.

Dr. *Whichcot* celebrates his mild government and peaceful end in these lines:

Sobrius ausculta veterum quid pagina narrat.  
 Fata trahunt homines cruciatibus ingeniosos.  
 Decumbunt tremuli non sicca morte Tyranni.  
 Arte sua pereant semper (justissima Lex est)  
 Artifices nequam, quos inclementia pulsat.  
 At Pater hic Patriæ non est tormenta minatus,  
 Annosusque expirat, & alta in pace quiescit.

*Horton, Minshul, Seaman*, celebrate his character in the highest terms, as did *Worthington, Dillingham, Arrowsmith*, and others. Dr. *Cudworth* has an *Hebrew* poem in this collection. There was also published on this occasion, 'Beatis Manibus invictissimi Herois Olivarii Magni, magnæ Britannæ Protectoris Parentatio, Scripta ab Equite Polono,' which I have not seen (n).

Thus was the fame of *Cromwell* founded abroad; thus was he lamented on his decease. At the restoration, indeed, his ashes were trampled on (o), and his memory was branded; but time, the great friend to truth, has, in some measure, cleared up his character, and done justice to his abilities; and, if he cannot be ranked amongst the best, he, undoubtedly, is to be placed amongst the greatest of princes.

(n) *Mercurius Politicus*, No. 548. p. 242.

(o) See Appendix.





That the chiefe officers of the army, (though pretending to keepe up the forces under them for the people's good, and to see the same accomplished in a short time) have yet made noe other use of their power, than to continue and enlarge their own commands:

That besides our being dissappointed of the fruit so long expected, and being made more slaves every day than other to committees, and sundry other arbitrary courses; even in the most legal proceedings wee find soe much corruption, tediousnesse, chargablenesse, and obscurity practised and abetted by officers of all sorts, that the law itself is become noe protection to us in our properties or liberties:

Wee find that barbarous course still maintained of imprisoning men for debt, thereby hindering them from the use of their lawful callings; though they have nothinge else wherewith to satisfy their creditors, or to preserve themselves, and their families from starvinge:

Wee find that the restraining men's persons att pleasure, without cause rendered, and during pleasure, was never more frequent:

Wee find that tythes, whose beginnunge was superstitious, and is found by experience to oppress the poor husbandman, and to be vexatious to all manner of people, and prejudicial to the commonwealth; were never soe rigorously and cruelly exacted as at present:

Wee find taxes to be multiplied without number, or hopes of end, and excise soe cruelly exacted, that noe man knows what is, or what shall be his owne; and although many millions of moneys hath been levied and payed, both voluntarily and by compulsion, yet noe accompt is given how they have beene expended; but the public debts are dayly increased instead of beinge satisfied, and such vast sums of money payed dayly out of the public treasure for interest unto some with usurers, as is almost incredible:

Wee find the trade of the nation (which the parliament promised at the first to advance) to be generally decayed, that without speedy remedy the nation cannot long subsist:

Wee find the poore to be wholly disregarded and oppressed, and thousands of families suffered to beg their bread, and many to perish with hunger:

But herein our condition hath beene rendered most desperate, that wee have not beene suffered to represent our



miseriēs to the parliament, and petition for redress; but persons have beene imprisoned for petitioning, and orders issued out from parliament to suppress petitions: Considering therefore this deplorable estate of the commonwealth, and the apparent danger of being imbroyled againe each in others blood, unless a speedy settlement prevent it; and considering not only, that wee have attempted all regular wayes to procure reliefe for our long oppressed country, but also that wee cannot with safety any longer offer our grievances and desires to parliament in petitions; and likewise consideringe that our slavery under arbitrary power is occasioned by the want of a settlement of a just and equal government, which if it were established would speedily ease us of all our common burthens; wee cannot bethinke ourselves of a more probable remedy, than to put ourselves, and invite our countrymen to joine with us, in a posture of defence, whereby wee may be secure from danger, and from being prevented of our good intentions by the opposition of such as have designed our slavery, while wee propound to all our dear countrymen (who are sure to bee concerned in sufferinge as much as if they were in office) some certaine grounds of common right and freedome, wherein they and wee might see reason to agree amongst ourselves, and thereupon to establish a firme and present peace.

The particulars wee offer are as followeth.

1. That a period of time be set, wherein this present parliament shall certainly end.

2. That the people be equally proportioned for the choice of the deputies in all future parlements; and that they doe of course meete upon a certaine day (once at least in two years) for that end.

3. That a contract be drawne and sealed betweene the people and their severall deputies respectively, upon the day of the elections, wherein the bounds, limits, and extent of their trust shall be clearly expressed. As that they bee impowered with sufficient authoritie for executinge, alteringe and repealinge of lawes; for erectinge and abolishinge, judicatories; for appointinge, removing and callinge to account magistrates, and officers of all degrees; for makinge warre and peace, and treating with soveraigne states. And that their power do not extend to the bindinge of any

man in matters of religion, or in the way of God's worship; nor to compell the person of any innocent man to serve against his will either by sea or land, nor to the making of any law, that shall be either evidently pernicious to the people, or not equally obligatory unto all persons without exception.

4. That for the security of all parties, who have acted on any side in the late public differences since the year 1640, and for preventing all contentions amongst them; the people may agree amongst themselves, that no future parliaments shall question or molest any person for any thinge sayed or done in reference to these public differences.

5. That the great officers of the nation, as well civil as military, be often removed, and others put into their room, either every yeare, or every second yeare at farthest; to the end the persons employed may discharge themselves with greater care, when they know themselves lyable to a speedy account, and that other men may be encouraged to deserve preferment when they see the present incumbents not affixed to their offices as to freeholds.

6. That all determinating committees (except such as are necessary to be kept up for the managing of forces by sea and land) the chancery, and all other arbitrary courts, be forthwith dissolved; or at least all power taken from them, which they have hitherto exercised over men's persons or estates: and henceforward, as well ordinances as acts of parliament be executed in the antient way of tryals by juries.

7. That the huge volumes of statute laws and ordinances, with the penalties therein imposed, as well corporal as pecuniary, be well revised; and such only left in force, as shall be found fit for the commonwealth; especially that men's lives be more precious than formerly, and that lesser punishment than death, and more useful to the public, be found out for smaller offences: that all lawes, writs, commissions, pleadings and records be in the *English* tongue; and that proceedings be reduced to a more certaine charge, and a more expeditious way than formerly: That no fees at all be exacted of the people in courts of justice; but that the public ministers of state be wholly maintained out of the public treasury.

8. That

# A P P E N D I X,

8. That estates of all kinds, real and personal, be made liable to debts; but noe imprisonment at all by way of punishment, nor in order to makinge satisfaction, which possibly can never be made, but only by way of security in order to a tryal for some criminal fact, to be determined within some short and certaine space of time; and that this power of restraining mens persons be very cautiously allowed, to which end the benefit of *Habeas Corpus* to be in noe case denied by those whom it concerns to grant them.

9. That tythes be wholly taken away, the parishioners from whom they are due paying in lieu thereof to the state where they are not appropriate, and to the owners where they are, moderate and certaine rent-charge out of their lands: the ministers to be maintained, either by the voluntary contribution of such as desire to hear them, or else by some settled pensions out of the public treasury.

10. That as speedy and as perfect an account as may be, be given and published for the satisfaction of the people how those vast sums of money have been disposed of, that have been disbursed, voluntarily and otherwise, since the beginning of these troubles.

11. That soe soone as public occasions will possibly permit, the imposition of excise, and all other taxes upon the people be wholly taken away, and that in the mean time all care and diligence be used in taking away those occasions, and in the husbandly managing of the public revenues; and to that end that a ballance be made and declared of all public revenues and expences, and that a course be taken for paying all public debts and damages, so far as may be, and that the debts upon interest be discharged by sale of such lands and goods as are eyther properly belonginge or any wayes accrued to the state, and that they be sold to the best advantage.

12. That there be no less care taken for the growing wealth of the nation, consistinge originally in trade, which being our strength and glory, ought by mitigating the customs, and by all other good meanes, to be cherished & promoted.

13. That (though restoring peace and commerce be the surest way of providinge for the poor) yet some more effectual course may be found out than hitherto hath beene

for the setting those to worke who are able, for bringinge up of children to profitable employments, and for relievinge such as are past their labor, especially such as became so in the service of their country duringe the late warre.

14. That the affairs of *Ireland* be taken into a more serious consideration than heretofore, and that a peaceable way for reducing that nation may be once endeavoured, and in case that succeed not, the war to be prosecuted with vigour and unanimity, as by God's blessinge wee may promise to ourselves a speedy end of those troubles, a timely reliefe to many famishing families there, and better intend the affairs of *England*.

Now considering that the settlement of the nations peace and freedome, hath beene constantly declared by the parliament to be their only end in engaging in this last warre; and considering the many promises solemn vowes and oathes made by them to the people, to confirme them in the belief of their sincere intentions therein, wee should hope to find no opposition from them in our desires. But however wee cannot but be confident, that the souldiery of the army (who solemnly engaged at *Newmarket* in *June* last [*June 5, 1647*] to procure the same things in effect for the people, which are here propounded,) will so remember that solemn engagement as to shew their ready concurrence with us; and wee hope it will be clear to them, that there is noe other possible way to provide that sufficient indemnity (the want whereof first occasioned their refusal to disband) than what is here propounded; neither that there is any probable way to secure the arrears of the supernumeraries, (who are disbanded contrary to the solemn engagement) or of those continuing in armes. And at least wee cannot but promise ourselves the assistance of all the commons, who are not blinded by some self-interest, or engaged to continue the present consuming distractions by virtue of some affect or employment dependinge thereon.

But however wee intending wrong to noe man, nor any private advantage to ourselves, and the cause for which we appear beinge soe clearly just, wee repose our confidence in the most high God, to protect us from the malice and rage, both of all selfseekinge ambitious men, who affect lordinesse and tyranny, and have designed the people's

ple's slavery, and a perpetuation of their own rule, and of all such mercenary vassals as they shall hire to destroy us, and keepe the yoke of slavery upon the people's necks. And wee doe hereby promise and engage to all our countrymen, that whensoever the settlement of the peace and freedome herein propounded shall be effected (all delays wherein wee shall to our utmost possibilities prevent) wee shall gladly and chearfully return to our private habitations, and callings, enjoying only our equal share of freedome with all others in the nation.

*Copy of a letter from O. Cromwell to (then) major Saunders of Derbyshire, dated June 17, 1648; superscribed 'For your selfe'; and endorsed in major Saunders's hand writing as followeth, 'The L. generalls order for taking Sir Trevor Williams, and Mr. Morgan, sheriffe of Monmouthshire.'*

In the hands  
of Hans  
Wintrop  
Mortimer,  
Esq;

S I R,

I Send you this enclosed by it selfe, because it's of greater moment. The other you may communicate to Mr. *Ramsay* as far as you thinke fitt, and I have written. I would not have him or other honest men bee discouraged that I thinke itt not fitt at present to enter into contests, itt will be good to yeeild a little for publicke advantage, and truly that is my end, wherein I desire you to satisfie them.

I have sent as my letter mentions, to have you remove out of *Breckneshire*, indeed into that part of *Glamorgan-shire* w<sup>ch</sup> lyeth next *Munmouthshire*, for this end.

Wee have plaine discoveries that *Sir Trevor Williams* of *Langevie* about two miles from *Uske* in the countye of *Munmouth* was very deepe in the plott of betrayinge *Chepstowe* castle, soe that wee are out of doubt of his guiltynesse thereof.

I doe hereby authorize you to seize him, as also the high sheriffe of *Munmouth* *Mr. Morgan*, whoe was in the same plott.

But because *Sir Trevor Williams* is the more dangerous man by farr, I would have you to seize him first, and the other will easilye bee had. To the end you may

not

not be frustrated, and that you bee not deceived, I thinke fitt to give you some characters of the man, and some intimations how things stand. Hee is a man (as I am informed) full of craft and subtiltye, very bould and resolute, hath a house at *Langevie* well stored with armes, and very stronge, his neighbours about him very malignant and much for him, whoe are apt to rescue him if apprehended, much more to discover any thinge w<sup>ch</sup> may prevent itt. Hee is full of iealofie, partly out of guilt, but much more because hee doubts some that were in the businesse have discovered him, which indeed they have, and alsoe because hee knows that his servant is brought hither, and a minister to bee examined here, whoe are able to discover the whole plott. If you should march directly into that countye and neere him, itt ods hee either fortefyes his house, or gives you the slip, soe alsoe if you should goe to his house and not finde him there, or if you attempt to take him and misse to effect itt, or if you make any knownen enquirye after him, itt will be discovered.

Wherefore to the first you have a faire pretence of goeing out of *Brecknock shiire* to quarter about *Netoport* and *Carleon*, which is not above 4 or 5 miles from his house. You may send to col. *Herbert*, whose house lyeth in *Munmouthshiire*, whoe will certenly acquaint you where hee is. You are alsoe to send to capt. *Nicolas*, whoe is at *Chepstowe*, to require him to assist you if hee should gett into his house, and stand upon his guard. *Sam. Jones*, whoe is quarterm<sup>r</sup> to col. *Herbert's* troupe, will be very assisting to you if you send to him to meete you att your quarters; both by lettinge you know where hee is, and alsoe in all matters of intelligence. If there shal be neede capt. *Burge* his troupe now quarteringe in *Glamorganshiire* shal be directed to receive orders from you. You perceave by all this, that wee are (it may bee) a little too much sollicitous in this businesse, it's our fault, and indeed such a temper causeth us often to overact businesse, wherefore without more adoe wee leave itt to you, and you to the guidance of God herein, and rest

June 17, 1648.

Yours O. CROMWELL.

If you seize him bring & lett him bee brought with a stronge guard to mee. If capt. *Nicolas* should light on him at

at *Chepstowe*, doe you strengthen him with a good guard to bring him.

If you seize his person, disarme his house, but lett not his armes bee imbeziled.

If you need capt. *Burge* his troupe, it quarters betweene *Newport* and *Cardiffe*.

*Grimwell* went into *Wales* the beginning of *May*, 1648; *Chepstow* castle was surprized for the King about the same time, but retaken the 25th. It does not appear whether *Sir Trevor Williams* was secured, or not.

*The six following letters are in the possession of Theodosius Forrest, Esq; of George-street, Yorke-Buildings, London.*

*Dearest Robin,*

**N**Owe (blessed bee God) I can write, and thou receive, freely. I never in my life sawe more deepe sense, and lesse will to shewe itt unchristianly, then in that, w<sup>ch</sup> thou diddest write to us when wee were at *Windsor*, and thou in the midst of thy tentation, w<sup>ch</sup> indeed (by what wee understood of itt) was a great one, and occasioned the greater, by the letter the generall sent thee, of w<sup>ch</sup> thou wast not mistaken, when thou diddest challenge mee to bee the pener. How good has God beene to dispose all to mercy, and although itt was trouble for the present, yett glory is come out of itt, for w<sup>ch</sup> wee prayse the Lord with thee, and for thee, and truly thy carriage has biene such, as occasions much honor to the name of God, and too religion, Goe onn in the strength of the Lord, and the Lord bee still with thee. But (*deere Robin*) this businesse hath beene (I trust) a mightye providence to this poore kingdome, and too us all. The house of comons is very sensible of the Kg<sup>s</sup> dealinges, and of our brethrens, in this late transaction, You should doe well (if you have any thing that may discover iuglinge) to search itt out and lett us knowe itt, itt may bee of admirable use at this tyme, because wee shall (I hope) instantly goe upon businesse in relation to them, tendinge to prevent danger. The house of comons has this day voted as follows. First that

that they will make noe more addressess to the King. 2. None shall applye to him w<sup>th</sup>out leave of the two houses upon paine of beinge guilty of high treason. 3dly, They will receive nothinge from the Kinge, nor shall any other bringe any thinge to them from \* him, nor receive any thinge from the Kinge. Lastly the members of both houses, whoe were of the committee of both kingdoms, are established in all that power in themselves for *England*, and *Ireland*, w<sup>ch</sup> they had to act with both kingdoms, and Sr. *John Evelin* of *Wilts* is added in the roome of Mr. Recorder, and *Rath. F. Fienis* in the roome of Sir *Phillip Stapleton*, and my Lord of *Kent*, in the roome of the Earl of *Effex*. I thinke it good you take notice of this, the sooner the better.

Lett us knowe how its with you in point of strength, and what you neede from us, some of us thinke the Kinge well with you, and that itt concernes us to keepe that island in great securitie, because of the *French*, et. And if soe, where can the Kinge bee better. If you have more force you will suer of full provision for them. The Lord blesse thee, pray for

Thy deere friend and servant

My L<sup>d</sup> *Wharton's* Jan. 3d.

neere tenn at night, 1647.

O. CROMWELL.

For Col. *Robert Hamond* Governor  
of the isle of *Wight* theise

For the service of the kingdom hast post hast.

OLIVER CROMWELL.

S I R,

WE have received yo<sup>r</sup> letter of the 28th instant, wherein you desire to have the approbation of this committee concerning the sower gentlemen by you appointed to watch in their courses at the Kinges chamber dore, Wee thinke it fitt that in this businesse you should make your application to the houses, from whom wee doubt not you will receive orders in that particular. For the money appointed for the fortification of the castle it was to be furnished by the committee of the army by the

\* 'Tis believed him is the word, though there is some doubt of it.



A P P E N D I X.

appointm<sup>t</sup> of this committe w<sup>ch</sup> accordingly they presently did, & desired them to send thither with all speed, and of this, informacon hath beene given to the gentleman you mention, who sollicitis yo<sup>r</sup> businesse w<sup>ch</sup> is all that can be done at this committee for it.

Derby House Signed in the name & by the warrant of the committee at *Derby House* 31<sup>o</sup>. January by your affectionate friend 1647.

To Colonel *Robert Hammond* Governour of the isle of *Wight* W. SAY & SEALE. These are

Sr.

YOU see by these inclosed votes how great a burthen the parliam<sup>t</sup> hath laid upon mee. I doe hereby send to you, That you would instantlie send mee a list of such as are att present about the Kinge who are p<sup>er</sup>sons fitt to be confided in, if you have any in the island worthy of that trust, I would desire you to send their names also in the same list: and if you cannot fill upp the number of thirtie with you, which I should be glad you could, then I desire you to send mee the qualitie of those that will be wanting, that soe they may be supplied from hence: It will be necessarie, That you hasten this businesse seeing the parliam<sup>t</sup> expects a speedy & effectuall observance of their command herein. I propose soe soone as I have received yo<sup>r</sup> list to make the number uppe, and lay it before the parliam<sup>t</sup> to receive their approbation and allowance for my indempnitie; you see by the votes, That the number of thirtie (of all sortes) gentlemen and their servants, cookes, butlers, *etc.* may not bee exceeded, and therefore itt will bee fitt, That a respect bee had to all occasions and necessities of the household; wishing you all successie in yo<sup>r</sup> great trust and charge:

I rest: Yo<sup>r</sup> assured friend

Queenstreete. 5<sup>o</sup>.  
Februarij 1647.

T. FAIRFAX.

For Colonell *Robert Hammond* Governour of the isle of *Wight*.

Sr.

WE have received informacon that there are now some designs in agitation concerning the Kings escape, who is to be carried into France; and that there are two of those y<sup>e</sup> now attend the King upon whom they rely for electing this escape. Who they are we cannot discover, nor yet what grounds they have to expect their service in it. Yet wee thought fitt to give you this advertizement that you might the more carefully watch against it.

Derbie House  
13<sup>o</sup>. Martij  
1647.

Signed in the name & by y<sup>e</sup> warrant of the com<sup>tees</sup> at Derby House  
by yo<sup>r</sup> very loveing friend

## NORTHUMBERLAND.

Note, all those parts that are in *Italic*, are in cypher in the original, and were decyphered by Col. Hammind.

*Sweete Robin,*

OUR relation is so nigh upon the best account, that nothing can concerne you or us, but wee believe they are of a mutual concern<sup>t</sup>. And therefore wee hold ourselves much obliged to transmitt you this inclosed (coming from a sure hand to us) not onely as relating to yours or o<sup>r</sup> particular, but likewise as a matter of vast importance to the publick.

Itt hath pleased God (and wee are perswaded in much mercy) even miraculously to dispose the hearts of yo<sup>r</sup> freinds in the army, as one man (together with the concurrence of the godly from all parts) to interpose in this treatie, yet in such wise both for matter & manner, as we believe, will not onely refresh the bowells of the faints, and all other faithfull people of this kingdome, But bee of satisfacion to every honest member of parliam<sup>t</sup> when tendred to them and made publick w<sup>ch</sup> will bee w<sup>th</sup>in a very few dajes; and considering of what a consequence the escape of the King from you (in the interim) maie proove, Wee hast this dispatch to yow together w<sup>th</sup> o<sup>r</sup> most earnest request, That (as yow tender the interest of this nation,

tion, of God's people, or of aine morall men: or as you tender the ending of *England's* troubles, or desire the justice & righteousness maie take place) you would see to the securing of that person from escape, whether by retorning of him to the castle, or such other waie as in thy wisdom and honesty shall seeme meetest. Wee are confident you will receive in few daies a duplicate of this desire, & an assurance from the generall & army to stand by you in itt; and in the meane time for o' parts (though itt maie not be very considerable to yow) wee doe hereby ingage to owne yow with o' lives & fortunes therein, w<sup>ch</sup> wee should not see forwardly expresse, but that wee are impelled to the premises in dutie & conscience to God and man. The Lord (yo<sup>r</sup> & o' God) bee your widome and in all things, however wee have done or duty & witnessed the affections of

Deare *Hamond*

Yo<sup>r</sup> most intire, & faithfull  
brethren, friends, & servants.

*Windsor*. 14<sup>th</sup> gber  
1648.

H. IRETON.

T. HARRISON.

JOHN DISBROWE.

\*E. GROSVENER.

S I R,

Since our last wee have received againe advertisem<sup>t</sup> from a good hand that the designe holdes for the King's escape; and to escape all suspicion from you, he intends to

\* Grosvenor I believe to be the name, though there is some doubt. What renders it more probable is, that there was a colonel Edward Grosvenor, quarter master of the army, chosen member of parliament for Westminster, in 1646, and again in Richard's parliament, January 27, 1648, O. S. See Wood's *Fashi*, vol. ii. c. 79. and *Mercator's Politicus*, No. 550. p. 176.

In *A narrative of the late parliament* (so called) begun at Westminster September 17, 1646, &c. with an account of the places of profit, salaries and advantages which they hold and receive under the present power, &c. appears, \* Colonel Grosvenor, as quarter-master general, 419 l. 10 s. 0 d. per annum, and it's said hath captain of horse pay; and the better to carry it in the choice at Westminster, the soldiers were bid pull off their red coats and put on others, and to give their votes for him, which is contrary to the eighteenth article of the old decayed instrument of government, which allows none that is not worth 200 l. to choose parliament men.

walke out on foote a mile or two, as usually in the day time, & there horses are layd in the isle to carry him to a boate. If he cannot do this, then either over the house in the night, or at some privat window in the night he intends his passage; which wee thought fitt againe to give you notice of, that you may make such use of it for prevention, as you shall see cause.

*Darby House*  
18 *Novemb.*  
1648.

Signed in the name & by the warrant of the committee of lords & commons at *Darby House*, by

Your very affectionate friend

P. S. Wee desire you to communicate this to the commission<sup>rs</sup> there; and also if you shall finde the Kinge hath escaped to give us notice with all possible speed.

SALISBURY.

For Collonel *Robert Hammond* Governor of the isle of *Wight*.

*The three following letters are in the possession of Robert Symmer, Esq; of Mount street, Grosvenor Square.*

*Deere Norton,*

I Have sent my sonn over to thee, beinge willinge to answer providence, and although I confesse I have had an offer of a very great proposition from a father of his daughter, yett truly I rather encline to this in my thoughts, because though the other bee very farr greater, yett I see different tyes, and not that assurance of godlynesse, yett indeed fairnes. I confesse that which is tould mee concerning estate of Mr. *M.* is more then I can looke for as thinges now stand,

If God please to bring itt about, the consideration of pietye in the parents, and such hopes of the gentlewoeman in that respect, make the businesse to mee a great mercy, concerninge w<sup>ch</sup> I desier to waite upon God.

I am confident of thy love, and desier thinges may be  
car-

## A P P E N D I X.

575

carried with privacie. The Lord doe his will, thats best,  
to w<sup>ch</sup> submitinge I rest your humble servant,

Feb. 25, 1647.

O. CROMWELL.

For my noble friend Col. *Richard Norton*, theise.

*Deare Dick,*

IT had beene a favour indeed to have mett you heere at *Farnham*, but I heere you are a man of great businesse.—Therefore I say noe more, if it be a favor to the house of commons to enioy you, what is itt to mee? But in good earnest when wi . . . you and your brother *Ruffel* be a lit . . . honest and attend your charge suerly fo. . [some] expect itt, especially the good fellowes wh . . . chose you.

I have mett w<sup>th</sup> M<sup>r</sup> *Maier*, wee spent two or 3 howers together last night. I perceave the gentleman is very wise and honest, and indeed much to be vallewed, some thinges of comon fame did a little sticke, I glad . . . heard his doubts, and gave such answare as was next att hand, I beleive to some satisfaction, never the lesse I exceedingly liked the gentlemans plainnesse, and free dealinge w<sup>th</sup> mee. I knowe God has beene above all ill reports, and will in his owne tyme vindicate mee, I have noe cause to cumplaine. I see nothinge but that this particular businesse betweene him and mee may go onn, The Lords will be donn. For newes out of the north there is little, only the Mal. partye is prevailinge in the par<sup>ty</sup> of S. They are earnest for a warr, the ministers oppose, as yett.

Mr. *Marshall* is returned, whoc sayis foe. And foe doe many of our letters, their great committee of dangers have 2 malig. for one right. Its sayd they have voted an armie of 40000 in par<sup>ty</sup> foe some of yesterdayes letters, but I account my newes ill bellowed, because upon an idle person.

I shall take speedy course in the businesse concerninge my tenants, for w<sup>ch</sup> thanks, my service to your lady, I am really  
Your affectionate servant

March 28, 1648.

O. CROMWELL.

*Farnham.*

For my noble friend Col. *Richard Norton*, theise.

L 1 2

*Deare*

Deere Norton,

I Could not in my last give you a perfect account of what passed betweene mee and Mr. *M.* because wee were to have a conclusion of our speed that morninge after I wrote my letter to you, which wee had, and havinge had a full enterview of one anothers mindes, wee parted with this, that both would consider with our relations, and accordinge to satisfactions given there, acquaint each other with our minde.

I cannot tell how better to doe itt, to receive or give satisfaction then by you, whoe (as I remember) in your last, sayd that if things did stick betweene us, you would use your endeavor towards a close.

The things insisted upon were theise, (as I take itt) Mr. *M.* desired 400 *p. annum* of inheritance lyinge in *Cambridge shiire*, and *Norfolke*, to bee presently settled, and to be for maintenance, wherein I desired to bee advised by my wife.

I offered the land in *Hampshire*, for present maintenance, w<sup>ch</sup> I dare say with copses and ordinarie fells will be *communibus annis* 500<sup>l</sup> *p. annum*, besides 500<sup>l</sup> *per annum*, in tennants handes houldinge but for one life, and about 300<sup>l</sup> *p. ann.* some for two lives, some for three lives. But as to this if the latter bee not liked off I shall bee willing a farther conference bee had in the first.

In point of jouncture I shall give satisfaction. And as to the settlement of landes given mee by the par<sup>ty</sup> satisfaction to be given in like manner, accordinge as wee discoursed.

In what else was demanded of mee I am willing (soe farr as I remember any demand was) to give satisfaction.

Only I havinge beene enformed by Mr. *Robinson* that Mr. *M.* did upon a former match offer to settle the mannor wherein hee lived, and to give 2000<sup>l</sup> in monie, I did insist upon that, and doe desire itt may not bee with difficultye, the monie I shall neede for my two little wenches, and therby I shall free my sonn from beinge charged with them. Mr. *M.* parts w<sup>ch</sup> nothing in present but that monie, savinge their board, w<sup>ch</sup> I shoulde not bee unwillinge to give them to enioy the comfort of their societie,

w<sup>ch</sup>

# A P P E N D I X.

w<sup>ch</sup> itt<sup>s</sup> reason hee smarte for, if hee will robb mee altogether of them. Truly the land to bee settled both what the par<sup>l</sup> gives mee, and my owne, is very lesse then 3000<sup>l</sup> per annum all things considered, if I bee rightly informed. And a lawyer of *Lincoln's Inn* havinge searched all the marques of *Worcester's* writings, w<sup>ch</sup> were taken at *Rogland*, and sent for by the par<sup>l</sup> and this gentleman appointed by the committee to search the sayd writings, assures mee, there is noe scruple concerninge the title, and itt see felt out that this gentleman whoe searched was my owne lawyer, a very godly able man, and my deere friend, w<sup>ch</sup> I reckon noe smale mercy, hee is also possesst of the writings for mee.

I thought fitt to give you this account, desiringe you to make such use of itt as God shall direct you, and I doubt not but you will doe the part of a friend betweene two friendes, I account my selfe one, and I have heard you say Mr. *Mair* was entirely foe to you. What the good pleasure of God is I shall waite, there is only rest, present my service to your lady, to Mr. *Mair*, et.

I rest

April the 3<sup>d</sup> 1648.

Your affectionate servant,

O. CROMWELL.

I desier you to carrie this busines with all privacie, I beseech you to doe foe as you love mee, lett me entreat you not to loose a day herein, that I may knowe Mr. *Mair's* minde for I thinke I may be att leizure for a weeke to attende this businesse to give and take satisfaction, from w<sup>ch</sup> perhaps I may bee shutt up afterwards by imployment. I know thou art an idle fellowe, but prethee neglect mee not now, delay may bee very inconvenient to mee, I much rely upon you. Lett me here from you in two or 3 days. I confesse the principall consideration as to mee is the absolute settlement of the mannor where he lives, w<sup>ch</sup> he would doe but conditionally in case he prove to have noe sonn, and but 3000<sup>l</sup> in case he have a sonn. But as to this I hope farther reason may work him to more.

Parliamentary History,  
vol. ix. p.  
40.

N. B. In a sheet list ' of the names of the members  
' yet living of both houses of parliament forcibly seclud-  
' ed by the army in 1648, &c.' appears *Southampton, col-  
Richard Norton, Esq; Knight, &c.* He was chosen Knight  
of the Shire for *Southampton*, in the room of Sir *Henry  
Wallop, Knt.* who deceased in 1644, in virtue of writs  
issued Oct. 24, and Nov. 10, 1645.

In another list intituled ' A more exact and necessary ca-  
' talogue of pensioners in the long parliament than is ex-  
' tant,' appears *Richard Norton, colonel, governor of  
Southampton.*

And in a third intituled ' A perfect list of the lords of  
' the ether house, and of the knights, citizens and bur-  
' gesses, and barons of the Cinque Ports, now assembled  
' in this present parliament holden at *Westminster*, for the  
' commonwealth of *England, Scotland and Ireland, Jan.  
' 27, 1658,*' appears county of *Southampton, Richard Nir-  
ton of Southwick, Esq.*

Sir *Gregory Norton*, one of *Charles I.* judges, was of *Suf-  
sex or Kent*, and, as I apprehend, of a different family from  
the colonel.

*The following seventeen letters were transcribed from  
the originals which were found at Pusey, the  
seat of the Dunches, in Berkshire \*, by the hon.  
Horace Walpole, Esq;*

*For my very loving Friend Mr. Robinson, Preacher at  
Southampton. Tulse.*

*Sr.*

I Thanke you for your kinde letter, as to the businesse  
you mention I desire to use this playennesse with you.  
When the last overture was betweene mee and Mr. *Ma-  
jor*, by the mediation of coll. *Norton*, after the meetinge  
I had with Mr. *Majer* att *Farnham*, I desired the coll.  
(findinge as I thought some scruples and hesitation in Mr.

\* John Dunch of Pusey, in Berks, son of Sam. Dunch of North Bad-  
disley in Hampshire, Esq; married Anne, Daughter and coheiress of Rich-  
ard Major, of Hursley, Esq;—Wood's Fasti, vol. ii. c. 120.

*Majer* )



*Major*) to knowe of him whether his minde was free to the thinge or not. *Coll. Norton* gave me this account, that *Mr. Major*, by reason of some matters as they stood, was not very free thereunto, whereupon I did acquiesce submitinge to the providence of God. Upon your revivinge of the businesse to mee, & your letter, I thinke fitt to returne you this answare, & to say in plainnesse of spirit to you, That upon your testimonie of the gentlewoeman's worth & the common report of the petye of the familie I shall be willinge to entertayne the renewinge of the motion upon such considerations as may bee to mutuall satisfacion, only I thinke that a speedye resolution will be very convenient to both partes. The Lord direct all to his glory. I desier your prayers therein, and rest

Your very affectionate friend,

Feb. 1<sup>st</sup> 1648.

O. CROMWELL.

*For my very worthye Friend Richard Major, Esq; Thise.*

Sr.

I Received some intimations formerly & by the last returne from *Southampton* a letter from *Mr. Robinson* concerninge the revivinge the last yeare's motion touchinge my sonne & your daughter. *Mr. Robinson* was alsoe pleased to send inclosed in his a letter from you to him, bearing date the 5<sup>th</sup> of this instant *February*, wherin I finde your willingenesse to entertaine any good meanes for the complextinge of that businesse. From whence I take encouragement to send my sonn to wayte upon you & by him to lett you knowe that my desires are (if providence soe dispose) very full & free to the thinge, if upon an enter-view there prove alsoe a freedom in the younge persons thereunto. What liberty you will give heerein I wholly submit to you. I thought fitt in my letter to *Mr. Robinson* to mention somewhat of expedition, because indeed I knowe not how soone I may be called into the feild, or other occasions may remove mee from hence, havinge for

the present some liberty of stay in *London*. The Lord direct all to his glorye. I rest

S<sup>r</sup>Feb. 12<sup>th</sup> 1648.Y<sup>r</sup> very humble servant,

O. CROMWELL.

*For my very worthye Friend Richard Major, Esq; Thise.*

S<sup>r</sup>.

I Received yours by Mr. *Stapleton* together with an account of the kinde reception & the many civilties afforded them, especilly to my sonn in the libertye given him to waite upon your worthye daughter, the report of whose vertue and godlynesse has soe great a place in my hart that I thinke fitt not to neglect any thinge on my part which may conduce to consummate a close of the businesse, if God please to dispose the younge ones harts thereunto & other suiteable orderinge affaires towards mutuall satisfaction appeare in the dispensation of providence, for which purpose and to the end matters may be brought to as neere an issue as they are capable off (not beinge at libertye by reason of publicke occasions to waite upon you, nor, as I understand your health permitinge) I thought fitt to send this gentleman Mr. *Stapleton* instructed with my minde to see how neere wee may come to an understandinge one of another therein, & although I could have wished the consideration of things had bene betweene us two itt beinge of so neere concernente, yet providence for the present not allowinge, I desier you to give him credence on my behalfe. S<sup>r</sup> all things which yourselfe & I had in conference att *Farnham* doe not occur to my memorie thorough multiplicitye of businesse interveninge, I hope I shall with a very free hart testifie my readynesse to that which may bee expected from mee. I have noe more at present but desiringe the Lord to order this affair to his glorye & the comfort of his servants. I rest

S<sup>r</sup>

Feb. 26, 1648.

Your humble servant

O. CROMWELL.

A P P E N D I X.

324

(No Direction.) (In another hand but signed by himself.)

Sr.

Yours I have recieved, & have given further instructions to this bearer Mr. *Stapilton* to treat with you about the businesse in agitation betweene your daughter and my sonne. I am ingag'd to you for all your civility's, & respects already manifested. I trust there will bee a right understanding betweene us and a good conclusion: and though I cannot particularly remember the things spoken off at *Farnham*, to which your letter seemes to referre mee; yet I doubt not but I have sent the offer of such thinges now, which will give mutuall satisfaction to us both. My attendance upon publique affairs will not give mee leave to come downe unto you myselfe; I have sent unto you this gentleman with my mind. I salute M<sup>r</sup> *Major*, though unknowne, with the rest of your family. I commit you, with the progresse of the businesse to the Lord; and rest

Sr

March the 8<sup>th</sup> 1648. Your assured friend to serve you

O. CROMWELL.

(No Direction, but wrote on the Back, *L. G. Cromwell's Letter of Exceptions*—)

Sr.

I Received your paper by the handes of M<sup>r</sup> *Stapilton*. I desier your leave to returne my dissatisfaction therewith. I shall not neede to premise how much I have desired (I hope upon the best groundes) to match with you, the same desier still continues in me, if providence see itt fit. But I may not be soe much wantinge to myselfe nor familye as not to have some equallitye of consideration towards itt. I have two younge daughters to bestowe if God give them life, & oportunitye. Accordinge to your offer I have nothinge for them, nothing at all in hand, if my sonne dye, what consideration is there to mee? And yet a jouncture parted, with, if shee dye there is little; if

if you have an heire male then but 3000 £. without tyme ascertained. But for these things I doubt not but one interview betweene you & my selfe they might be accommodated to mutual satisfaction, and in relation to these I thinke wee should hardly part, or have many wordes, soe much doe I desier a cloasure with you. But to deale freely with you, the settling of the mannor of *Hursley* as you propose itt stickes soe much with mee that either I understand you not, or else it much fayles my expectation. As you offer itt there is 400 £. *pr. annum* charged upon itt. For the 150 £. to your lady for her life as a jouncture I stick not att that, but the 250 £. *pr. annum* untill Mr. *Ludlowe's* lease expires the teanure whereof I knowe not, & soe much of the 250 £. *pr. annum* as exceeds that lease in anual valew for some tyme alsoe after the expiration of the 2<sup>d</sup> lease, gives such a maim to the mannor of *Hursley* as indeed renders the rest of the manor very inconsiderable. Sr. if I concurr to denye my selfe in point of present monies as alsoe in the other things mentioned as aforesaid, I may and I doe expect the mannor of *Hursley* to be settled without any charge upon itt after your decease savinge your ladyes jouncture of 150 £. *per annum*, which if you should thinke fitt to encrease I should not stand upon itt: your own estate is best known to you, but suerlye your personall estate beinge free for you to dispose, will with some smale matter of addition begitt a neerenesse of equallitye, if I heere well from others, & if the difference in that were not very considerable I should not insift upon itt. What you demand of me is very high in all pointes, I am willinge to settle as you desier in every thinge savinge for present maintenance 400 £. *p. annum*, 300 £. *p. annum* I would have somewhat free to be thanked by them for, The 300 £. *p. annum* of my ould land for a jouncture after my wifes decease. I shall settle, and in the meane tyme out of other landes att your election, & trulye Sr. if that bee not good nor will any landes I doubt, I doe not much distrust your principles in other things have acted you towards confidence. You demand in case my sonn have none issue male but only daughters, then the lands in *Hantsheire*, *Monmouth* and *Gloucestersheire* to descend to the daughters, or 3000 £. a peice; the first woud most unquall, the latter is too high, they will be well provided

provided for by beinge inheritrixes to their mother, & I am willinge to 2000 $\text{£}$ . a peice to bee charged upon those landes.

Sr. I cannot but with very many thankes acknowledge your good opinion of mee & of my sonn, as alsoe your great civilities towards him & your daughter's good respects (whose goodnesse though known to mee only at such a distance by the report of others) I much valed, & indeed that causeth mee soe cheerfully to denye myselfe as I doe in the point of monies, & soe willingly to complye in other thinges, but if I should not insift as before, I should in a greater measure denye both my owne reason & the advise of my freindes then were meete which I may not doe. Indeed Sr. I have not cloas'd with a farr greater offer of estate, but rather chose to fix heere, I hope I have not beene wantinge to providence in this, I have made myselfe plaine to you, desiring you will make my sonn the messinger of your pleasure & resolution herein as speedily as with conveniency you may. I take leave & rest

Your affectionate servant

I desier my service may be presented to your lady & daughters.

O. CROMWELL.

March 14, 1648.

For my worthy Friend Richard Major, Esq; at Hursley.  
These.

Sr.

YOU will pardon the brevitye of these lines, the haste I am in by reason of businesse occasions it. To testifye the earnest desier I have to see a happy period to this treatye betweene us, I give you to understand that I agree to 150 $\text{£}$ . *pr. annum* out of the 300 $\text{£}$ . *pr. annum* of my ould land, for your daughters jouncture over the 150 $\text{£}$ . where you please.

400 $\text{£}$ . *p. annum*, for present maintenance where you shall choose either in *Hantsbire*, *Gloucester* or *Monmouthsbire*.

Those lands settled upon my son & his heires males by your daughter, & in case of daughters only 2000 $\text{£}$ . a peice charged upon those landes.

400 $\text{£}$ .

400 *l.* *p. annum* free to raise portions for my two daughters. I expect the mannor of *Hursley* to be setled upon your eldest daughter & her heires, the heires of her body.

Your lady a jounture of 150 *l.* *p. annum* out of itt.

For compensation to your younger daughter I agree to leave itt in your power after your decease to charge it with as much as will buye inn the lease of the *Ferme* at *Allington* by a just computation.

I expect soe long as they live with you their diet as you expressed, or in case of voluntarie partinge 150 *l.* *p. annum*, 3000 *l.* in case you have a sonn to bee payed in two yeares next followinge.

In case your daughter die without issue 1000 *l.* within six months. Sr. if this satisfie I desier a speedye resolution, I should the rather desier soe because of what your kinsman can satisfie you in. The Lord blesse you & your familie to whome I desier my affections and service may bee presented. I rest

Your humble servant

March 25<sup>th</sup> 1649.

O. CROMWELL.

For my esteemed good Friend Richard Major, Esq;  
Thise at Hursley.

Sr.

I Received yours of the 28<sup>th</sup> instant. I desier the matter of compensation may bee as in may last to you, you propose another way, which trulye seemes to mee very inconvenient, I have agreed to all other things as you take mee (& that rightly) repeating particulars in your paper. The Lord dispose this great businesse (greate betweene you & mee) for good. You mention to send by the post on *Tuesday*. I shall speede things heere as I may, I am designed for *Ireland*, which wil be speedye. I should bee very glad to see things setled before I goe, if the Lord will. My service to all your familie. I rest

Sr.

March 30<sup>th</sup> 1649.

Your affectionate

(Name torn off.)

For

A P P E N D I X.

525

For my worthy Friend Richard Major, Esq; at Hursley. *Thise.*

Sr.

I Received your papers inclosed in your letter although I knowe not howe to make soe good use of them as otherwise might have beene to have saved expence of tyme if the arrest of your lawyer had not fallen out at this tyme. I conceive a draught to your satisfaction by your owne lawyer would have saved much tyme, which to mee is precious. I hope you will send some up perfectlye instructed. I shall endeavour to speed what is to be donn on my part, not knowing how soone I may bee sent downe towards my charge for *Ireland*. And I hope to perform punctually with you. Sr. my sonn had a great desier to come downe & waite upon your daughter. I perceave hee minds that more then to attend businesse heere. I should bee glad to see him settled and al things finished before I goe. I trust not to bee wantinge therein. The Lord direct all our hartes into his good pleasure. I rest

Sr.

My service to your      Your affectionate servant  
 lady & family.

O. CROMWELL.

April 6, 1649.

For my worthy Friend Richard Major, Esq; *Thise.*

Sr.

Your kindisman Mr. *Barton* and my selfe repayinge to our councell for the perfectinge this businesse soe much concerninge us, did upon *Saturday* this 15<sup>th</sup> of *Aprill* drawe our councell to a meetinge whereupon consideration had of my letter to your selfe expressinge my consent to particulars which Mr. *Barton* brought to your councell, Mr. *Hales* of *Lincolnes Inn*; upon the readinge that which expresseth the way of your settlinge *Hursley*, your kindisman expressed a fence of yours contrarie to the paper under my hand as alsoe to that under your hand of the 28<sup>th</sup> of *March* which was the same with mine, as to that peticular, and

I knowe nothinge of doubt in that which I am to doe but doe agree itt all to your kindfman his fatisfaction, nor is there much materiall difference save in this, wherein both my paper sent by you to your councell and yours of the 28<sup>th</sup> doe in all litterall and all equitable construction agree, viz. to settle an estate in fee simple upon your daughter after your decease, which Mr *Barton* affirms not to be your meaninge, although hee has not (as to mee) formerlye made this any objection nor can the words beare itt, nor have I any thinge more considerable in lewe of what I part with then this. And I have appealed to yours or any counsel in *England* whether it bee not just and equal that I insist thereupon. And this misunderstandinge (if it bee yours as it is your kindfman's) putt a stop to the businesse, so that our counsel could not proceede untill your pleasure herein were known, wherefore itt was thought fitt to desier Mr. *Barton* to have recourse to you to knowe your minde, hee alledginge hee had noe authoritye to understand that expression soe, but the contrarie, which was thought not a little strange even by your owne councell. I confesse I did apprehend wee should bee incident to mistakes treatinge att such a distance, although I may take the boldnesse to say there is nothinge expected from mee, but I agree itt to your kindfman's sense to a tittle. Sr. I desired to knowe what commission your kindfman had to helpe this doubt by an expedient who denied to have any, but did think it were better for you to part with some monie, and keepe the power in your owne handes, as to the land, to dispose thereof as you should see cause, whereupon an overture was made and himselfe & your councell desired to drawe itt up; the effect whereof this enclosed paper conteynes, and although I should not like change of agreements, yet to shew how much I desier the perfecting of this businesse, if you like thereof (though this bee farr the worse bargaine, I shall submitl thereunto your councell thinkinge that things may bee settled this way with more clearnesse & lesse intricacie. There is mention made of 900 *£. pr. annum* to bee reserved, but itt comes to but about 800 *£.* my landes in *Glamorgan shire* being but little above 400 *£. pr. annum.* and the 400 *£. p. annum* out my manour in *Gloucester & Monmouth shire.* I wish a cleere understandinge may bee betweene us. Truly I would not wil-



A P P E N D I X.

willinglye mistake, desfringe to waite upon providence in  
this businesse. I rest

Sr.

Ap. 15<sup>th</sup> 1649.

Your affectionate friend & servant

I desier my service may bee pre-  
sented to your lady & daughters.

O. CROMWELL.

*For my very loving Brother Richard Major, Esq;  
att Hurslye. Theise.*

(Rec<sup>d</sup> 27 July, 1649. p. Messenger  
expresse from Newbery.)

*Lovinge Brother,*

I Received your letter by major *Longe*, and doe in answare  
thereunto accordinge to my best understandinge, with  
a due consideration of those gentlemen whoe have abid the  
brunt of the service. I am very glad to heere of your  
welfare, & that our children have so good leisure to make  
a journie to eate cherries, it's very excuseable in my daugh-  
ter, I hope she may have a very good pretence for it. I  
assure you Sr. I wish her very well & I belcive shee knowes  
itt. I pray you tell her from mee, I expect shee writes  
often to mee, by which I shall understand how all your  
familie doth, & shee will be kept in some exercife. I  
have delivered my sonn up to you, & I hope you will  
councell him, he will neede itt and indeed I belcive he  
likes well what you say, & will be advised by you, I wish  
he may be serious the tymes requier itt. I hope my sister  
is in health, to whome I desier my very hartye affectiones  
and service may bee presented, as also to my cozen *Ann*  
to whom I wish a good husband. I desire my affectiones  
may be presented to all your familie, to which I wish a  
blessinge from the Lorde. I hope I shall have your pray-  
ers in the businesse to which I am called. My wife I trust  
will be with you before itt bee longe in her way towards  
*Bristoll*. Sr. discompose not your thoughts nor estate for  
what you are to pay mee. Lett me knowe wherein I may  
complye with your occasions and minde, and be confident  
you will finde mee to you as your owne heart wishinge  
your

your prosperitie & contentment very synceerlyve with the remembrance of my love. I rest

Your affectionate brother & servant

*Bristol,*

July 19<sup>th</sup> 1649.

O. CROMWELL.

(On the back of the foregoing letter, besides short hand, there is an account in Mr. Major's hand, of his sheep and other cattle.)

*For my beloved Brother Richard Major, Esq; at Hurslye in the County of Hampton. These.*

*Deere Brother,*

I Am not often at leisure, nor nowe to salute my freindes, yet unwillinglye to loose this opportunitye, I take itt only to lett you knowe that you and your familye are often in my prayers. I wish the younge ones well, though they vouchsafe not to write to mee. As for Dick I doe not much expect itt from him, knowinge his idlenesse, but I am angrie with my daughter as a promise breaker, pray you tell her soe, but I hope shee will redeeme herselfe.

It has pleased the Lord to give us (since the taking of *Wexford & Rosse*) a good interest in *Munster* by the access of *Corke* and *Youghall*, which are both submitted, their commissioners are nowe with mee. Diverse other lesser guarrisons are come in alsoe. The Lord is wonderfull in these things, it's his hand aloane does them; O that all the praise might be ascribed to him. I have beene crazie in my health, but the Lord is pleased to sustaine mee. I begg your prayers. I desier you to call upon my sonn to minde the thinges of God more & more, alas what profit is their in the thinges of this world, except they bee enjoyed in Christ they are snares. I wish he may enjoy his wife soe and shee him, I wish I may enjoy them both soe. My service to my deere sister cozen *Ann*, my blessing to my children, and love to my cozen *Barton* and the rest. Sr.

I am

*Rosse, No. 13<sup>th</sup> 1649.* Your affectionate brother & servant

Rec<sup>d</sup> 12<sup>o</sup> Dec. 49.

O. CROMWELL.

For my very louinge Brother Richard Major, Esq<sup>r</sup>,  
Hurtlye in Hampshair. These.

(This direction is in a Woman's hand: underneath are wrote in Mr. Major's hand these words; 15<sup>o</sup> May I wrote in behalfe of Mr. Bonny, &c. of Dorset.)

Deere Brother,

FOR mee to write unto you the state of our affaires heere were more then indeed I have leisure well to doe, and therefore I hope you doe not expect itt from me seeinge when I write to the par<sup>ty</sup>: I usually am (as becomes mee) very particular with them, and usually from thence the knowledge thereof is spread. Only this lett mee say (which is the best intelligence to friendes that are trulye christian) the Lord is pleased still to vouchsafe us his presence, & to prosper his owne worke in our handes which to us is the more eminent because trulye wee are a companie of poore weake and worthlesse creature. Trulye our worke is neither from our braines, nor from our courage and strength, but wee followe the Lord whoe goeth before and gather what hee skattereth, that soe all may appeare to bee from him. The takinge of the cittye of *Kilkenny* hath beene one of our last workes, which indeed I beleeve hath beene a grate discomposeinge the enimie, its soe much in their bowells, wee have taken many considerable places latelye without much losse. What can wee say to these thinges, If God bee for us, whoe can be against us, whoe can fight against the Lord & prosper? Whoe can resist his will? The Lord keepe us in his love. I desier your prayers, your familye is often in mine, I rejoyced to heere how it hath pleased the Lord to deale with my daughter, the Lord blesse her and sanctifie all his dispensations to them and us, I have committed my sonn to you, I pray counsell him. Some letters I have lately had from him, have a good savor, the Lord treasure up grace there, that out of that treasurie hee may bringe forth good thinges. Sr. I desier my very entyer affection may be presented to my deere sister, my cozen *Ann*, and the rest of my cozens,

M m

and

and to idle *Dick Norton* when you see him. Sr. I  
rest

Your most loving brother

Ap. y<sup>e</sup> 2<sup>d</sup> 1650.  
*Carrick.*

O. CROMWELL.

*For my very lovinge Brother Richard Major, Esq; att his  
House at Hurlye. Theije.*

*Deere Brother,*

THE exceedinge croude of businesse I had att *London*  
is the best excuse I can make for my silence this way.  
Indeed Sr. my heart beareth me witnesse, I want noe af-  
fection to you or yours, you are all often in my poore  
prayers. I should be glad to heere how the little bratt  
doth. I could chide both father and the mother for their  
neglects of mee, I knowe my sonn is idle, butt I had bet-  
ter thoughts of *Doll*, I doubt now her husband hath spoyled  
her, I pray tell her soe from mee. If I had as good lei-  
sure as they, I should write sometimes. If my daughter  
bee breedinge I will excuse her, but not for her nurserie,  
the Lord blesse them. I hope you give my sonn good  
councell, I beleive he needes itt. Hee is in the dangerous  
time of his age, and its a very vaine world, O how good  
itt is to close with Christ betimes, there is nothinge else  
worth the lookinge after. I beseech you call upon him,  
I hope you will discharge my dutye and your owne love:  
you see how I am employed, I neede pittye, I knowe what  
I feele, great place and businesse in the world is not worth  
the lookinge after, I should have no comfort in mine,  
but that my hope is in the Lord's presence, I have not  
sought these things, truly I have beene called to them  
by the Lord, and therefore am not without some good  
assurance that hee will inable his poore worrne, and weake  
servant to doe his will, & to fullfill my generation. In  
this I begg your prayers, desiringe to be lovinglye remem-  
bred to my deere sister, to our sonn & daughter, my cozen  
*Ann* and the good family. I rest

Your very affectionate brother

*Alwick, July 17, 1650.*

O. CROMWELL.

For my lvinge Brother Richard Mayor, Esq; at Hurley.  
*These. In Handwreite neere Winchester.*

*Deere Brother,*

**H**Avinge soe good an occasion as the impartinge soe great a mercie as the Lord hath vouchsafed unto us in *Scotland* I would not omitt the impartinge thereof to you, though I bee full of businesse. Upon *Wedensd.* wee fought the *Scottish* armie: They were in number accordinge to all computation above twentye thousand, wee hardly eleven thousand, havinge greate sicknesse upon our armie, after much apealinge to God, the fight lasted above an hower, wee killed (as most thinke) three thousand, tooke neere ten thousand prisoners, all their traine, about thirtye gunns great and smale besides bullet, match and powder, very considerable officers, about two hundred colors, above ten thousand armes, lost not thirtie men. This is the Lords doeing, and it is marvelous in our eyes. Good Sr. give God all the glorie, stirr up all yours & all about you to doe soe, pray for your affectionate brother

O. CROMWELL.

I desier my love may bee presented to my deere sister and to all your familie. I pray tell *Doll* I doe not forgett her nor her little bratt, shee writes very cunninglye & complementally to mee, I expect a letter of plaine dealinge from her; shee is too modest to tell mee whether shee breeds or not. I wish a blessinge upon her & her husband, the Lord make them fruitfull in all that's good, they are att leisure to write often but indeed they are both idle & worthis of blame.

*Dunbarr, Sept. 4<sup>th</sup> 1650.*

(No Direction.)

*Deere Brother,*

**I** Was glad to receive a letter from you, for indeed any thinge that comes from you is very welcome to mee. I beleive your expectation of my sonn's cominge is deferred.

ferred. I wish hee may see a happie delivrye of his wife first, for whom I frequently pray.

I heere my sonn hath exceeded his allowance, and is in debt; truly I cannot comend him therein, wisdom requireinge his livinge within compasse and callinge for it his handes: And in my judgment the reputation arisinge from thence would have beene more real honour then what is attained the other way. I beleive vain men will speake well of him that does ill. I desier to bee understood that I grudge him not laudible recreations, nor an honorable carriage of himselfe in them, nor is any matter of charge like to fall to my share, a stick with mee. Truly I can finde in my heart to allow him not only a sufficiency but more for his good, but if pleasure and selfe satisfaction bee made the businesse of a man's life, soe much cost layd out uppon it, soe much tyme spent in itt as rather answers appetite then the will of God, or is comely before his Saints, I scruple to feede this humor and God forbid that his being my sonn should bee his allowance to live not pleasinge to our Heavenly Father, whoe hath raised mee out of the dust to what I am. I desier your faythfullnesse (hee beinge alsoe your concernment as well as mine) to advise him to approve himselfe to the Lord in his course of life, and to search his statutes for a rule to conscience, & to seeke grace from Christ to enable to walke therein. This hath life in itt, and will come to somewhat; what is a poore creature without this? This will not abridge of lawfull pleasures but teach such an use of them as will have the peace of a good conscience goinge alonge with itt. Sr. I write what is in my heart; I pray you communicate my minde herein to my sonn and be his remembrancer in these things. Truly I love him, hee is deere to me; soe is his wife, and for their sakes doe I thus write. They shall not want comfort nor incoragement from mee so far as I may afford itt; but indeed I cannot thinke I doe well to feede a voluptuous humor in my sonn, if he should make pleasures the businesse of his life in a time when some precious Saincts are bleeding and breathinge out their last for the good and safetie of the rest. Memorable is the speeche of *Urijah* to *David*, 2<sup>d</sup> *Cron.* 11<sup>th</sup> 11<sup>th</sup>.

Sr. I beseech you beleive I heere say not this to save my purse for I shall willingly do what is convenient to satisfie

A P P E N D I X.

533/

6800000000  
0000000000

fe his occasions as I have opportunitye, but as I pray hee may not walke in a course not pleasing to the Lord, soe thinke itt lyeth upon mee to give him (in love) the best councell I may, and know not how better to convey it to him then by soe good a hand as yours.

Sr. I pray you acquaint him with these thoughts of mine, and remember my love to my daughter for whose sake I shall be induced to doe any reasonable thinge. I pray for her happie deliverance frequently and earnestly.

I am forrie to heere my baylye in *Hantsheire* should do to my sonn as is intimated by your letter. I assure you I shall not allowe any such thinge. If there bee any suspition of his abuse of the woode I desier it may be looked after and inquired into, that soe if things appeare true he may bee removed, although indeed I must needs say he had the repute of a godly man by diversie that knew him when I placed him there:

Sr. I desier my hartye affection may bee presented to my sister, my cozen *Ann* and her husband though unknown.

I praise the Lord I have obteyned much mercye in respect of my health, the Lord give mee a truly thankfull hart. I desier your prayers, & rest

Your very affectionate brother and servant

June 28<sup>th</sup>  
1651.

O. CROMWELL.

For my lovinge Brother Richard Major, Esq; at Hurlye in Hantsheire. *These.*

Deere Brother,

I Received your lovinge letter for which I thanke you, and fuerly were itt fitt to proceed in that businesse, you should not in the least have beene putt upon any thinge but the trouble, for indeed the land in *Essex*, with some monie in my hand & some other remnants should have gone towards itt. But indeed I am soe unwillinge to bee a seeker after the world, havinge had so much favor from the Lord in givinge me soe much without seekinge, & soe unwillinge that men should think mee soe, which they will though you only appeare in itt (for they will by one

meanes or other knowe it) that indeed I dare not meddle, nor proceede therein. Thus I have told you my plain thoughts. My hartyc love I present to you & my sister, my blessinge and love to deere *Doll* & the little one, with love to all. I rest

Your lovinge brother

May the 4<sup>th</sup> 1654.

OLIVER P.

For my lovinge Friend John Dunch, Esq;

Sr.

I Desier to speake with you, & heeringe a report from *Hursey* that you was goinge to y<sup>r</sup> father's in *Berke-shire*, I send this expresse to you desiringe you to come to mee to *Hampton Court*: with my respects to y<sup>r</sup> father, I rest

Y<sup>r</sup> lovinge friend

Aug. 27<sup>th</sup> 1657.

OLIVER P.



*Copies of original Letters and Papers of Oliver Cromwell's in the British Museum: Copied by leave of a Committee, by the Rev. A. Gifford, D. D. for the Use of the Author.*

*A Copy of Oliver Cromwell's Letter to his Daughter Ireton, exactly taken from the Original.*

*Deere Daughter,*

I Write not to thy husband, partly to avoyd trouble, for one line of mine begitts many of his, w<sup>ch</sup> I doubt makes him sitt up too late, partly because I am my selfe indisposed att this tyme, havinge some other considerations. Your friends att *Ely* are well, your sifter *Clapole* is (I trust in mercye) exercised with some perplexed thoughts, shee sees her owne vanitye, and carnal minde, bewailinge itt, shee seekes after (as I hope alsoe) that w<sup>ch</sup> will satisfie, and thus to bee a secker, is to bee of the best sect next a finder, and such an one shall every saythfull humble secker bee att the end. Happie secker, happie finder. Whoe ever tasted that the Lord is gracious, without some sence of self vanitye, and badnesse? Whoe ever tasted that graciousnesse of his, and could goe lesse in desier, and lesse then pressinge after full enjoyment. Deere hart presse on; lett not husband lett not any thinge coole thy affections after Christ. I hope hee wil be an occasion to enflame them. That w<sup>ch</sup> is best worthy of love in thy husband, is that of the image of Christ hee beares, looke on that, and love it best and all the rest for that, I pray for thee, and him, doe soe for me. My service and deere affections to the generall, an generaleffe, I heere she is very kind to thee, it adds to all other obligations. My love to all, I am thy deere father

OLIVER CROMWELL.

*Osab. 25,*  
*1646,*  
*London.*

*The Supercription.*

For hys beloved daughter *Bridget Ireton* at *Corntury*, the Gen<sup>l</sup>s quarters, theise.

*This is a true copy taken Septemb. 14, 1759, from Hatl. Mss. No. 6988.* M m 4 *For*

*For the Honorable Will<sup>m</sup> Lenthall, Esq; Speaker of the  
Parliament. Tbeise.*

Sr.

I Beseech you upon that scoare of favor (if I be not too bould to call it friendship) which I have ever had from you, lett me desier you to promote my partners humble suite to the house, and obtaine (as farr as possiblye you may) some just satisfaction for him, I know his sufferings for the publick have beene great, besides the losse of his callinge by his attendance heere: His affections have beene true, and constant, and I beleive his decay great in his estate, it wil be justice and charitye to him, and I shall acknowledge itt as a fauor to

Your most humble servant

July 10,  
1649.

O. CROMWELL.

*This is exactly copied from the original in Harl. Miss. 6988;  
Sept. 13, 1759.*

*To Colonel Hacker. (Wrote in another Hand.)*

Sr.

I Have the best consideration I can for the præsent in this businesse, and although I beleieve capt. *Hubbert* is a worthy man, and heere soe much, yett as the case stands, I cannott with satisfaction to my selfe, and some others revoake the commission I had given to capt. *Empson*, w<sup>th</sup>out offence to them, and reflection upon my owne judgment, I pray lett capt. *Hubbert* knowe, I shall not be unmindefull of him, and that noe disrespect is intended to him. But indeed I was not satisfied with your last speech to mee about *Empson*, that hee was a better præcher then a fighter or souldier, or words to that effect. Truly I thinke hee that prayses & præches best will fight best, I know nothing will giue like courage and confidence as the knowledge of God in Christ will, and I blefs God to see any in this armee able and willinge to impart the knowledge they have  
for

537c

APPENDIX.

for the good of others. And I expect itt be encouraged by all cheife officers in this armye especially, and I hope you will do soe. I pray receive capt. *Empson* lovinglye, I dare assure you hee is a good man and a good officer, I woud wee had noe worse. I rest

Your louinge freind

*Dec. 25, 1650.*

O. CROMWELL.

*An exact copy from Harl. Mss. No. 5. 7502. 18 Sept. 1759.*

*My Dearest,*

I Could not satisfie my selfe to omitt this poast, although I have not much to write, yet indeed I love to write to my deere whoe is very much in my heart, it joyes mee to heere thy soule prospereth, the Lord increase his favors to thee more and more. The great good thy soule can wish is that the Lord lift upon thee, the light of his countenance which is better then life. The Lord bleffe all thy good councell and example to those about thee, and heere all thy prayers, and accept thee always. I am glad to heere thy sonn and daughter are with thee. I hope thou wilt have some good oportunitye of good advise to him. Present my duty to my mother, my love to all the familie. Still pray for thine

O. CROMWELL.

*Edinburgh 3d of May, 1651.*

*Exactly copied from the original in Harl. Mss. 7502. No. 6. Sept. 19, 1759.*

*Bibliotheca Sloaniana, Micc. 345. pag. 126.*

Sr.

I Desire you to send mee the reasons of the *Scotts* to enforce ther \* desier of uniformity in religion expressed in ther \* 8 article, I mean that which I had before of you, I would peruse itt against wee fall upon that debate which will be speedily.

Yours OL. CROMWELL.

To his loving friend Mr. *Willingham*, at his house in *Swithins Lane*,

\* *Whether the lost letter is an e or r I am not certain, the rest is exactly copied.* Sept. 22, 1759.

*In the possession of James Lamb, Esq; of Fairford, in Gloucestershire.*

For y<sup>e</sup> Hon<sup>ble</sup> the Committee for the army these.

Gentl.

IT was not a little wonder to me to see that you should send Mr. *Symonds* so great a journey about a business importinge so little as far as it relates to me, when as if my poore opinion may not be rejected by you, I have to offer to that w<sup>ch</sup> I thinke the most noble end, to witt the comemoracion of that great mercie att *Dunbar*, & the gratuitie to the army, w<sup>ch</sup> might better be expressed upon the meddal by engraving as on the one side the parliam<sup>t</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> I heare was intended & will do singularly well, so on the other side an army w<sup>th</sup> this inscription over the head of it, The Lord of Hosts, w<sup>ch</sup> was o<sup>r</sup> word that day; wherefore if I may begg it as a favo<sup>r</sup> from you I most earnestly beseech you if I may doe it w<sup>th</sup>out offence that it may be soe, & if you thinke not fit to have it as I offer, you may alter it as you see cause, only I doe thinke I may truely say it will be verie thankfully acknowledged by me, If you will spare the having my effigies in it.

The gentlemans paynes & trouble hither have been verie great, & I shall make it my second suite unto you that

you will please to conferr upon him that employm<sup>t</sup> in yo<sup>r</sup> service w<sup>ch</sup> *Nicholas Briott* had before him, indeed the man is ingenious & worthie of encouragem<sup>t</sup>. I may not presume much, but if at my request & for my sake he may obteyne this favo<sup>r</sup>, I shall putt it upon the accompt of my obligacons w<sup>ch</sup> are not a few, & I hope shal be found readie gratefully to acknowledge & to approve myself,  
Gentl.

*Edinburgh, 4th  
of Feb. 1650.*

Yo<sup>r</sup> most reall serv<sup>t</sup>,

O. CROMWELL.

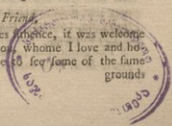
An oval medal in silver of general *Cromwell* in profile, was struck, in commemoration of the victory at *Dunbar*, as it is thought, by his own appointment; being the first drawn for him from the life, by *Simon*; and is remarkable for his likeness when lieutenant-general; as it does appear, by comparing it with a picture drawn of him by *Walker*, his painter, about that time. The profile of this medal, differing in some respects from a medal copied by *Simon* also from a curious limning drawn by *Samuel Cooper*; the original whereof is preserved in the collection of the duke of *Devenshire*.—But these are frequently seen in silver, and sometimes in gold; and when fairly struck, and well preserved, do great honour to the ingenious artist who engraved these curious and memorable medals.—See *Medals, great seals, impressions, from the elaborate works of Thomas Simon, chief engraver of the mint to King Charles I. to the Commonwealth, the Lord Protector Cromwell, and in the reign of King Charles II. to 1665. By George Vertue. 4to 1753. p. 13.*

*In the Possession of the Rev. Dr. Birch.*

*Copy of Oliver Cromwell's Letter to Mr. Cotton,  
Octob. 2, 1651.*

*Worthy Sir and my Christian Friend,*

I Received yours a few dayes since, it was welcome to mee, because signed by you, whome I love and honour in the Lord. But more to see some of the same grounds



grounds of our actings stirring in you, that have in us to quiet us in our worke, and support us therein, which hath had greatest difficultye in our engagement with *Scotland*, by reason wee have had to doe with some, whoe were (I verily thinke) godly, but through weaknesse and the subtiltie of *Sathan*, involved in interest against the Lord, and his people. With what tendernesse wee have proceeded with such, and that in synceritie, our papers (which I suppose you have seen) will in part manifest, and I give you some comfortable \* \* \* \* \* assurance off. The Lord hath marvelously appeared even against them. And now againe when all the power was devolved into the *Scottish* Kinge, and the malignant partie, they invading *England*, the Lord rayned upon them such snares as the enclosed will shew, only the narrative is short in this, that of their whole armie when the narrative was framed, not five of their whole armie returned. Surely Sr. the Lord is greatly to bee feared, as to be praised. Wee need your prayers in this as much as ever, how shall wee behave ourselves after such mercyes? What is the Lord a doeing? What propheties are now fulfilling? Who is a God like ours? To knowe his will, to doe his will are both of him.

I tooke this libertye from businesse to salute you thus in a word, truly I am ready to serve you, and the rest of our brethren and the churches with you, I am a poor weak creature, and not worthy the name of a worme, yet accepted to serve the Lord and his people; indeed my dear friend between you and mee you know not mee, my weaknesse, my inordinate passions, my unskillfulnesse, and every way unfitnesse to my worke, yett, yett, the Lord who will have mercye on whome hee will, does as you see. Pray for mee, salute all christian friends though unknown. I rest

Your affectionate friend to serve you,

Oct. 2, 1651.

O. CROMWELL.

For my esteemed friend Mr. *Cotton* pastor to the church at *Boston* in *New England*. Theise.

*Copy of a Letter to L. General Fleetwood (who married Bridget, eldest Daughter of O. Cromwell, and Widow of General Ireton,) in the Possession of Mrs. Cook of Newington in Middlesex, Grand Daughter of that General.*

*Deere Charles,*

**A**lthough I doe not see often (as is desired by me) acquaint you howe itt is with mee, yett I doubt not of your prayers in my behalfe that in all thinges I may walke as becometh the Gospell. Truly I never more needed all helps from my christian friends than nowe, fayne would I have my service accepted of the Saincts (if the Lord will) but it is not soe, beinge of different judgments, and of each sort, most seekinge to propagate their owne, that spirit of kindnesse that is to them all, is hardly accepted of any. I hope I can say it my life has beene a willinge sacrifice and I hope is, for them all. Yett it much falls out as when the two *Hebrews* were rebuked, you know upon whom they turned their displeasure; but the Lord is wise, and will I trust make manifest that I am no enimie, Oh how easy is mercye to bee abused. Perswade friends with you to be very sober. If the day of the Lord be so neere (as some say) how should our moderation appeare. If every one (instead of contending) would justifie his forme by love and meeknesse, wisdom would be justified of her children, but alas I am in my tentation ready to say, Oh would I had wings like a dove, then would I, &c. but this I feare is my hast. I blesse the Lord I have somewhat keepees me alive some sparkes of the light of his countenance, and some synceritye above mans judgment, excuse me thus unbewellinge my selfe to you, pray for mee and desire my freindes to doe soe also, my love to thy deere wife whom indeed I entyerly love, both naturally, and upon the best account, and my blessinge (if it be worth any thinge) upon thy little babe. *St. George Ascaugh* havinge occasions with you desired my letters to you on his behalfe; if hee come or send, I pray you shew him what favour you can. Indeed his services have beene considerable for the state, and I doubt hee hath not been answered with suitable respect. Therefore again

I desier you, and the commissioners to take him into a very particuler care & helpe him soe farr as justice and reason will any wayes afford. Remember my hartty affections to all the officers. The Lord blesse you all,  
Soe prayeth

August 22<sup>th</sup>,  
1653.

Your truly lovinge father,

O. CROMWELL.

All heere love you, and are in health, your children and all.

Communi-  
cated by  
Nicolas  
Munckley,  
of Lincoln's  
Inn, Esq;

The following was taken from the impressiō from a copper plate gilt, found in a leaden canister, lying on the breast of the corpse, when the grave and coffin of *Oliver Cromwell* were broke open by order of the government after the restoration, in order to have his body hanged up at Tyburn.

The plate and canister were preserved by serjeant *Norfolk*, then serjeant at arms to the house of commons, who left it to his only daughter and child *Mary*, who married *Hope Gifford*, Esq; J. C. at *Colchester*, whose only daughter and child *Mary*, married Sir *Anthony Abdy* of *Felix-Hall, Essex*, near *Kelvedon*, Bart. who left it to his third wife, by whose permission Dr. *Morimer*, S. R. Secr. obtained the impressiō from the original plate in the year 1739.

‘ Oliverius Protector Reipublicæ Angliæ, Scotiæ, et  
‘ Hiberniæ, Natus 25<sup>o</sup> Aprilis Anno 1599<sup>o</sup>, Inaugura-  
‘ tus 16<sup>o</sup> Decembris 1653, Mortuus 3<sup>o</sup> Septembris Anno  
‘ 1658<sup>o</sup>, hic situs est.’

Jan. 30. O. S. “ The odious carcasses of *O. Cromwell*,  
‘ *H. Irton*, and *J. Bradshaw* drawn upon sledges to Ty-  
‘ burn, and being pulled out of their coffins, there hanged  
‘ at the severall angles of that triple tree till sun set. Then  
‘ taken down, beheaded, and their loathsome trunks  
‘ thrown into a deep hole under the gallowes. Their  
‘ heads were afterwards set upon poles on the top of *West-*  
‘ *minster-Hall*.’ *Gesta Britannorum*, at the end of *Wbar-*  
*ton's Almanack* for 1663.

The



# A P P E N D I X.

The mason's receipt for taking up the corpse; from a copy under Dr. *Cromwell Merrimer's* hand, taken from the original receipt.

' *May* the 4th day, 1661, Rec<sup>d</sup> then in full of the  
' worshipful serjeant *Norfolke*, fiveteen shillings, for tak-  
' ing up the corpes of *Cramell, & Ierten & Brasaw*.

' Rec. by mee *John Lewis*.'

## F I N I S.



საქართველოს  
ხელნაწილების ეროვნული ბიბლიოთეკა